

E A N T A M C L A S S I C

THE
ANNOTATED MILTON
COMPLETE ENGLISH POEMS



Edited and with Annotations Lexical, Syntactic,
Prosodic, and Referential by Burton Raffel

THE ANNOTATED MILTON

*Complete English Poems with annotations
lexical, syntactic, prosodic, and referential*

Edited by
Burton Raffel



B A N T A M C L A S S I C

CONTENTS

[Title Page](#)

[Chronology](#)

[Preface](#)

[Introduction](#)

[A PARAPHRASE ON PSALM 114](#)

[PSALM 136](#)

[ON THE DEATH OF A FAIR INFANT](#)

[AT A VACATION EXERCISE](#)

[ON THE MORNING OF CHRIST'S NATIVITY](#)

[THE PASSION](#)

[SONG: ON MAY MORNING](#)

[ENGLISH SONNETS](#)

[No. 1 O nightingale](#)

[No. 7 How soon hath time](#)

[No. 8 Captain or colonel](#)

[No. 9 Lady, that in the prime](#)

[No. 10 Daughter to that good earl](#)

[No. 11 I did but prompt the age](#)

[No. 12 A book was writ, of late](#)

[No. 13 Harry, whose tuneful](#)

[No. 14 When faith and love](#)

[No. 15 Fairfax, whose name in arms](#)

No. 16 Cromwell, our chief of men

No. 17 Vane, young in years

No. 18 Avenge, O Lord

No. 19 When I consider

No. 20 Lawrence, of virtuous father

No. 21 Cyriack! Whose grandsire

No. 22 Cyriack, this three years day.

No. 23 Methought I saw

ON SHAKESPEARE

ON THE UNIVERSITY CARRIER

ANOTHER ON THE SAME

AN EPITAPH ON THE MARCHIONESS OF WINCHESTER

L'ALLEGRO

IL PENNEROSO

ARCADES

COMUS: A MASQUE

ON TIME

UPON THE CIRCUMCISION

AT A SOLEMN MUSIC

LYCIDAS

THE FIFTH ODE OF HORACE, BOOK ONE

ON THE NEW FORCERS OF CONSCIENCE

PSALMS 1–8:

#1

[#2](#)

[#3](#)

[#4](#)

[#5](#)

[#6](#)

[#7](#)

[#8](#)

[PARADISE LOST](#)

[Book I](#)

[Book II](#)

[Book III](#)

[Book IV](#)

[Book V](#)

[Book VI](#)

[Book VII](#)

[Book VIII](#)

[Book IX](#)

[Book X](#)

[Book XI](#)

[Book XII](#)

[PARADISE REGAINED](#)

[Book I](#)

[Book II](#)

[Book III](#)

[Book IV](#)

[SAMSON AGONISTES](#)

[*Suggestions for Further Reading*](#)

[*Ask your Bookseller for these Bantam Classics*](#)

[*About the Author*](#)

[*Copyright*](#)

CHRONOLOGY

1608	Milton born, 9 December, in London
1618?– 20?	tutored by Thomas Young
1615?	
1620?–25	St. Paul's School
1625	begins at Cambridge University, enrolled in Christ's College
1629	March, B.A. degree
1632	March, M.A. degree
1632–38	residence at his father's house
1634	September, <i>Comus</i> performed at Ludlow
1637	3 April, death of Milton's mother
1638–39	European tour: France, Italy, Switzerland
1640	schoolteacher, in London
1641	<i>Of Reformation in England</i> <i>Of Prelatical Episcopacy</i> <i>Animadversions upon the Remonstrant's Defense</i>
1642	May/June, married Mary Powell <i>The Reason of Church Government</i> <i>An Apology for Smectymnuus</i> October, Civil War begins
1643	<i>The Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce</i> April, Milton's father comes to live with him
1644	<i>Of Education</i> <i>The Judgment of Martin Bucer Concerning Divorce</i> <i>Areopagitica</i> <i>Milton's sight begins to fail</i>
1645	<i>Tetrachordon</i>

Colasterion

- 1646 *Poems*
29 July, daughter Anne born
- 1647 March, death of Milton's father
- 1648 25 October, daughter Mary born
- 1649 30 January, Charles I executed
The Tenure of Kings and Magistrates
March, appointed Secretary for Foreign Tongues, Council of State
- 1650 left eye fails
- 1651 *Defensio pro Populo Anglicano*
16 March, son John born
- 1652 February/March, complete blindness
2 May, daughter Deborah born
May, Mary Powell Milton's death
16 June, death of son, John
- 1654 *Defensio Secunda*
- 1655 *Pro Se Defensio*
- 1656 November, married Katherine Woodcock
- 1657 19 October, daughter Katherine born
- 1658 February, death of Katherine Woodcock Milton
17 March, death of daughter Katherine
3 September, Oliver Cromwell's death
- 1659 *A Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes*
Likeliest Means to Remove Hirelings out of the Church
- 1660 *The Ready and Easy Way to Establish a Free Commonwealth*
May, Charles II restored to the throne
Milton arrested, released
- 1663 February, married Elizabeth Minshull
- 1665 resided at Chalfont St. Giles during plague
- 1667 February, ten-book edition of *Paradise Lost*
- 1669 *Accidence Commenced Grammar*
- 1670 *History of Britain*

- 1671 *Paradise Regained* and *Samson Agonistes*
- 1672 *Joannis Miltoni Angli, Artis Logicae Plenior Institutio*
- 1673 *Minor Poems* (enlarged edition)
Of True Religion, Heresy, Schism, Toleration
- 1674 *Paradise Lost*, twelve-book edition
8 November, Milton's death, in London

PREFACE

THE FIRST version of what would become this book was written into the pages of another editor's deservedly famous edition of Milton. Principally lexical and syntactic commentary, these early annotations stemmed directly from an extremely common quandary, namely, a teacher fundamentally (though by no means completely) dissatisfied with the textbook from which, for lack of anything better suited to *his* classroom, he goes on teaching. That sort of dissatisfaction can be lived with; it can finally be put to the side; or it can lead, as mine has, to a completely new book.

I teach Milton as an English poet, one of the very greatest, most influential, important, and deeply challenging the language has ever known. Although I firmly believe, like most scholars, that the more we know about any writer the more we can understand and also appreciate the resonating excellences and profundities of his or her work, I also believe that some of the things we can know are more useful than are others. Milton's English poetry seems to me so overwhelmingly primary to both appreciation and understanding of his place in English literature that his Latin poetry shrinks to tertiary significance, and his profusely vigorous prose to secondary significance. Accordingly, this edition of Milton contains none of the Latin (or the Italian) poems, either in the original language(s) or in translation. It contains none of Milton's prose.

The text of the English poems, however, is not only complete, but has been conservatively modernized and edited for maximum accessibility. Nothing has been done to interfere in any way whatever with the prosody of these poems. The vexing problem of syllabified versus unsyllabified vowels has been preempted by (1) the use of spelling to indicate each prosodically suppressed vowel (usually by means of an apostrophe, sometimes by such spellings as "shouldst" or "didst"), and (2) the addition of an accent mark each time a vowel is syllabified ("wingèd," "blessèd"). My prosodic markings are consistent throughout this book. When, therefore, a word such as "winged" is mono-rather than bisyllabic, I have added neither an

apostrophe nor an accent mark; the reader can assume that any word without one of those marks does not in my judgment require one.

Rather too much has been made of Milton's spelling, much of which is conventional and, though appropriate to his time, without significance in ours. His punctuation is in general (though not universally) a reliable guide to verse movement. I have punctuated, and capitalized, as conservatively as possible. But I have not hesitated to interpret Milton's use of semicolons and colons as requiring, in our time, a sentence-ending period. Nor have I hesitated to add reader-friendly paragraphing.

I would have been happier had my annotations been able to be placed alongside the line they refer to. The economics of publishing makes this impossible. But since I do not believe that lexical annotations consisting only of a single word are truly satisfactory, I have often given three or four or even more words in each gloss. Placing all annotations at the bottom of the page does, therefore, have at least the advantage of clearly separating annotations one from the other.

Most of my lexical annotations are to words rather than to phrases, clauses, or sentences. As a teacher, I have found that students need to know what the components mean, just as much as they need to know the meaning of the finished product. Indeed, understanding syntax becomes a good deal easier when the components are clearly understood—and many of my annotations are syntactic as well as lexical. All syntactic material is placed in square brackets: [verb]. If, as is usually the case, annotations are both lexical *and* syntactic, the lexical portion always precedes the syntactic.

I have tried to annotate everything a student—any student, all students—might need to know. Not being able to predict on which page a student might first come upon material opaque to him or her, I have annotated repeatedly, tirelessly, and for some readers surely excessively. But I would much rather be safe than sorry.

Translations of the original (and it is striking how often Milton, though writing in a form of English, requires something very like translation) are always set in quotation marks. Renderings of anything more than a single word, however, are signaled first by a repetition of the words being annotated, and second by an equal sign placed immediately after that repetition:

evil store = an abundance of evil

those in servitude: servants

When the annotation is more commentary than rendering, the colon is replaced by an equal sign:

due time = in the time that, properly, it should take

When there are multiple meanings (and Milton is enormously fond of layered meaning, as also he is far fonder of wordplay, including puns, than his reputation would suggest) that are sufficiently distinct from one another, I have grouped them under numbered headings:

(1) *perilous, rash, risky*, (2) *enterprising*

Lexical glosses involving more than one word, but not involving semantic layering, simply employ commas: common, ordinary, uneducated

The slash is used to indicate that one of the words or phrases in a multiword annotative definition has distinct alternative possibilities:

having no material being/body

care for/prediction of the future

Note that the slash places in the alternative *only* the word immediately before it. Thus the first example above should be understood as “having no material being or body,” and the second as “care for or prediction of the future.” One additional example may make this clearer:

not maternal/the mother of

This should be understood, accordingly, as “not maternal, not the mother of.”

Referential (informational) annotations use both the colon and, somewhat differently, the equal sign:

*a Titan, daughter of Gaia (earth) by Zeus: goddess of justice
Horeb = Sinai, in Exodus and Deuteronomy*

Nimrod (“hunter”) : see Genesis 10:8–10

When I do not know with reasonable certainty what Milton is referring to or saying, I have said so, using a simple question mark:

not specified: the basic nature of the Godhead?

face (defiantly) ? await?

Although commentary, in the usual scholarly meaning, has been almost completely avoided in these annotations, it has sometimes been unavoidable. I have kept it as brief as possible, and have usually introduced it by the signal “i.e.”:

i.e., the act of building, not the structure being built

The pronunciation of Greek names and, on occasion, of certain other words, often requires elucidation, which I have kept as minimal as possible:

Calliope [4 syllables, 2nd and 4th accented]

Hecate [trisyllabic], *ghost-world goddess*

One early reader commented that users of this book might sometimes find themselves dizzy, forced constantly to look up and down the page, from text to footnotes and back, on and on and on. Depending on the opacity of Milton’s vocabulary, the turgidity of his syntax, and the frequency and insistence of his allusions, these pages necessarily vary enormously in their density of annotation. Lexically confident readers are advised to ignore as many of my annotations as they can. But it would be much appreciated if lexically well informed readers, and indeed anyone who finds any of the errors, omissions, and unclarities I have struggled to eliminate, would send me corrections.

INTRODUCTION

UNDERSTANDING AND appreciating John Milton—Milton, that is, as an English poet—depends less on a knowledge of Christian doctrine or the rise and then the decline and fall of Puritanism as a governing force in British life, less on a wide-ranging familiarity with classical poetry and medieval and Renaissance European scholarship (including but certainly not limited to alchemy, astronomy, and astrology), and less on an awareness of the intellectual currents of seventeenth-century Europe than on the ability to understand why poetry such as the following—*not* by Milton, but written nearly a hundred years before the publication of *Paradise Lost*—maintained a continuing and sometimes worshipful readership well into the twentieth century:

*Lo I the man, whose Muse whilom did mask,
As time her taught, in lowly Shepherd's weeds,
Am now enforced a far unfitter task,
For trumpets stern to change mine oaten reeds,
And sing of Knights' and Ladies' gentle deeds;
Whose praises having slept in silence long,
Me, all too mean, the sacred Muse areeds*
[advises, teaches]
*To blazon broad amongst her learnèd throng:
Fierce wars and faithful loves shall moralize my song.*

*Help then, O holy Virgin, chief of nine,
Thy weaker Novice to perform thy will,
Lay forth out of thine everlasting scryne* [chest for books/documents]
*The antique rolls which there lie hidden still,
Of Faery knights and fairest Tanaquil* [wife of Tarquinius; here Queen Elizabeth]
Whom that most noble Briton Prince so long

*Sought through the world, and suffered so much ill,
That I must rue his undeservèd wrong:
O help thou my weak wit, and sharpen my dull tongue.*

The scholarly (but not necessarily merely literate) reader will immediately recognize these lines, and their author, and will know the massive and so long beloved English epic from which they come, Edmund Spenser's *The Fairie Queene*. And any reader at all, after a quarter of an hour's exposure to *Paradise Lost* in particular, will have at least some sense of the similarities of Milton's work to that of Spenser. These include:

- insistently lofty, elevated diction, expressive of the urgent conviction that poet and reader are engaged not in some casual, friendly dialogue or in mere entertainment, but in an activity at once both serious and highly moral; note that in line 7 the Muse is called "sacred"
- constant, even fundamental reference to past persons and events, including regular allusions to past intellectual belief structures (and note, please, the use of the plural; we here meet classical Muses and shepherds along with medieval knights, Roman along with British history, pagan along with Christian religion, and so on)
- frequent reliance on archaically tinted vocabulary (I have here modernized spelling, but the attentive reader will not be fooled)
- markedly convoluted syntax, with sentences being stretched (and bent) over many lines
- what modern poets and readers might call a long breath line—rhythms that elongate and tend to roll like the waves of the sea, rather than (as in much modern poetry) poke and dart even as they loll
- reliance on more or less objectified conventions, which are the very farthest thing from "personal" to either the poet or his poem: e.g., the confession in line 3 not only of the poet's incapacity for

this task but of his general poetic ineptitude (he is here called to “a far unfitter task”—and see also “Me, all too mean,” in line 7, and the reference to his “weak wit” and “dull tongue” in the final line of the second stanza)

- a set of assumptions, apparently fixed and settled for all time, about trumpets being “stern” (line 4), knights and ladies “gentle” (line 5) and their prior praises plainly insufficient (line 6), poets and their readers being “learnèd” (line 8), what is old being always good (the “antique rolls” of line 13), royalty invariably “noble” if male and “fair” or even “fairest” if female (lines 14 and 15), and princely suffering being both romantic and unfair (lines 16 and 17)

And there is more. But this is the introduction to a book about John Milton, not Edmund Spenser, vastly influential on Milton as Spenser clearly was. All the same, to nail the point home, let me quickly carry the story of Spenser’s fame and influence into the nineteenth and, just barely, the twentieth century. William Wordsworth, at age thirty-one, was reported on Monday, the sixteenth of November, 1801, to be feeling “some what weakish,” but in compensation (and perhaps as a curative) “now at 7 o’clock reading Spenser” (*Journals of Dorothy Wordsworth*, 59). Eight days later, “after tea William read Spenser[,] now and then a little aloud to us,” his wife and sister (62). And on Thursday, the first of July, 1802, said to be “a very rainy day,” we learn that “we had a nice walk, and afterwards sate by a nice snug fire and William read Spenser and I read ‘As you like it’”(144). Plainly, Spenser traveled and was seen to belong in some pretty special company. Indeed, the very first poem in *The Complete Poetical Works and Letters of John Keats*, identified therein as “the earliest known composition of Keats,” is an “Imitation of Spenser” (1). Spenser’s tracks are all over the Keats volume, from a “Spenserian Stanza, written at the close of book v. of THE FAERIE QUEENE” (8–9), a sonnet “To Spenser” (42), and three more “Spenserian Stanzas” aimed in 1819 at Charles Armitage Brown, in response (in Keats’ own words) to “Brown this morning...writing some Spenserian stanzas against Mrs., Miss [Fanny] Brawne and me.”

And Spenser's reach extends, as I have indicated, a good century further. In an 1858 letter to his sister, sent from Oxford, John Addington Symonds requests that he be sent his copy of Spenser (the request placed, in sequence, between Chaucer and "the large Milton" [*The Letters of John Addington Symonds*, I, 167]). In another letter home the next year, he asks, "Has a small Spenser in 6 diamond volumes, come for me from Jeffries in Redcliffe Street? I ordered it when I was last in Clifton" (I, 200). Nor did Symonds' interest flag in later years. Almost thirty years along, he writes to Edmund Gosse, 16 May 1886, from Germany, expressing genuine concern about the possible misattribution of a sixteenth-century poem the style of which "seems to me suspiciously like that of Spenser" (III, 139). Writing in 1896 from his prison cell in Reading, Oscar Wilde requested "Spenser's Poems," among other books (*The Letters of Oscar Wilde*, 405 n). And, finally, in August 1912 Edward Dowden writes that "most of my reading hours were given to Spenser, and once again I went through the 'Faerie Queene' (though I can't say, as Southey did, that I have read it once a year" [*Letters of Edward Dowden*, 381]).

Yet Milton not only participates in a long and strong tradition, connecting to it in more ways than I can here comment upon, but he has always been, and still remains, an immensely significant, powerful contributor to that tradition. He draws upon Shakespeare (he was born eight years before Shakespeare's death), as has everyone else. But he also adds to Shakespeare, as most others neither have done nor could do.

*He scarce had ceased when the superior fiend
Was moving toward the shore, his ponderous shield,
Ethereal¹ temper,² massy, large, and round,
Behind him cast. The broad circumference
Hung on his shoulders like the moon, whose orb
Through optic glass the Tuscan³ artist ⁴ views
At evening, from the top of Fesolé,
Or in Valdarno, to descry ⁵ new lands,
Rivers, or mountains in her spotty ⁶ globe.
His spear—to equal which the tallest pine
Hewn on Norwegian hills to be the mast
Of some great ammiral,⁷ were but a wand ⁸ —
He walked with, to support uneasy⁹ steps*

Over the burning marl,¹⁰ not like those steps
On Heaven's azure. And the torrid clime
Smote¹¹ on him sore besides, vaulted ¹² with fire.

PARADISE LOST, 1:284–98

The sweep and grandeur of this portrait of Satan, struggling to preserve his dignity (not to mention his power) even though newly fallen from the glories of heaven to the sulfurous and smoking fields of hell, is unmatched in English verse. Virgil and even Homer, had they seen (or heard) Milton's description of the "ponderous shield, / Ethereal temper, massy, large, and round, / Behind him cast," the "broad circumference" of which "Hung on his shoulders like the moon," would have recognized and perhaps envied a colleague in and competitor for poetic glory. Milton's uniquely majestic rhetoric, his commanding poetic "voice," seem almost the effect of some marvelously benign Midas touch, turning even tawdriness into magnificent resonance.

It is not difficult, of course, to find this side of Milton, especially in *Paradise Lost* and *Samson Agonistes* but also, in different and younger ways, in *Lycidas* and, fittingly, in his quite early "On Shakespeare," probably written when he was only twenty-two. This is the Milton of whom Douglas Bush could declare, "Whoever the third of English poets may be [Shakespeare and Chaucer being overwhelming consensus choices for numbers 1 and 2], Milton's place has been next to the throne" (*English Literature in the Earlier Seventeenth Century*, 359). But whether writing about angels or demons, Milton's touch can also be delicate and lyrically shimmering:

...how he fell
From Heaven they fabled,¹³ thrown by angry Jove
Sheer¹⁴ o'er the crystal battlements.¹⁵ From morn
To noon he fell, from noon to dewy eve,

A summer's day, and with the setting sun
Dropt from the zenith,¹⁶ like a falling star....

PARADISE LOST, 1:740–45

His psychological insights, as well as his sense of inner drama, exceed those of every English poet or dramatist but Shakespeare. Here is Satan, newly arrived in view of the Garden of Eden:

...Horror and doubt distract

*His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir
The Hell within him, for within him Hell
He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell
One step, no more than from himself, can fly
By change of place.*

PARADISE LOST, 4:18–23

This patient, careful, almost tender delineation of devilish torment is a good deal more impressive even than that offered in Marlowe's fine play *Doctor Faustus*: "How comes it, then," asks Faustus of the devil, "that thou art out of hell?" And the devil replies, "Why, this is hell, nor am I out of it" (*The Works of Christopher Marlowe*, ed. Brooke, 155). Marlowe gives us high drama, as does Milton. But Milton gives us more.

And who can forget, once read, the achingly stupendous close to *Lycidas*, composed when Milton was twenty-nine:

*Thus sang the uncouth¹⁷ swain to th' oaks and rills,¹⁸
While the still morn went out with sandals gray.
He touched the tender stops of various quills,¹⁹*

*With eager thought warbling his Doric²⁰ lay.
And now the sun had stretched out²¹ all the hills,
And now was dropped into the western bay.
At last he rose and twitched²² his mantle blue:
Tomorrow to fresh woods, and pastures new.*

LYCIDAS, 186–93

The very moment he heard (by e-mail) that this edition was in preparation, a friend of mine, many years away from any connection with schools or colleges, promptly wrote out from memory a remarkably accurate transcript of almost fifty lines of *Lycidas*. That is exactly the sort of response, and the

sort of tribute, that this edition of Milton's English poems is intended to elicit.

The principal function of the introduction to a book like this is to inform prospective readers of the editor's goals and intentions and of the nature of the material offered in support of those goals and intentions in the pages that follow. Introductions to editions of Milton customarily explain the editor's view of Milton's theological concerns, usually discussing the poetry's relationship to those concerns. Biographical information is often set out as well. (Biographical material is here offered, in capsule form, in the Chronology, which immediately follows the Contents listing above.) In this volume, however, much of the necessary theological and other informational material is spread throughout the book, being contained in the annotations (affixed to the poems for which such information is necessary), these comprising whatever value the book may possess. Those who employ this edition as a university textbook, which in all likelihood will be its chief use, will have an informed and communicative instructor to frame additionally needed contexts. And the brief list of suggested reading at the end of this volume offers, I trust, whatever further guidance may be required, at least in the initial stages of coming to know John Milton's English poetry. Most of the items there cited, of course, contain references to still further critical and historical materials.

A PARAPHRASE ON PSALM 114

1624

*When the blest seed of Terah's faithful son²³
After long toil their liberty had won,
And passed from Pharian²⁴
fields to Canaan land,
Led by the strength of the Almighty's hand,
Jehovah's wonders were in Israel shown,
His praise and glory was in Israel known.
That saw the troubled sea,²⁵
and shivering fled,
And sought to hide his froth-becurlèd head
Low in the earth. Jordan's clear streams recoil,
As a faint²⁶ host²⁷ that hath received the foil.²⁸
The high, huge-bellied mountains skip like rams
Amongst their ewes, the little hills like lambs.
Why fled the oceans and why skipped the mountains?
Why turned Jordan toward his crystal fountains?
Shake earth, and at the presence be aghast
Of Him that ever was, and aye²⁹ shall last,
That³⁰ glassy floods from ruggèd rocks can crush,
And make soft rills³¹ from fiery flint-stones gush.*

PSALM 136

1624

*Let us with a gladsome mind
Praise the Lord, for He is kind,
For His mercies aye endure,
Ever faithful, ever sure.*

*Let us blaze ³² His name abroad, ³³
For of gods He is the God,
For His, etc.*

*O let us His praises tell,
Who doth the wrathful tyrants quell, ³⁴
For His, etc.*

*That with His miracles doth make
Amazèd Heav'n and earth to shake,
For His, etc.*

*Who by His wisdom did create
The painted ³⁵Heav'ns so full of state, ³⁶
For His, etc.*

*Who did the solid earth ordain
To rise above the wat'ry plain,
For His, etc.*

*Who by His all-commanding might
Did fill the new-made world with light,*

For His, etc.

*And caused the golden-tressèd sun
All the day long his course to run,
For His, etc.*

*The hornèd moon to shine by night,
Amongst her spangled sisters bright,
For His, etc.*

*He with His thunder-clasping hand
Smote the first-born of Egypt land,
For His, etc.*

*And in despite of Pharaoh fell,^{[37](#)}
He brought from thence His Israel,^{[38](#)}
For His, etc.*

*The ruddy waves He cleft in twain,
Of the Erythraean main,^{[39](#)}
For His, etc.*

*The floods stood still like walls of glass
While the Hebrew bands did pass,
For His, etc.*

*But full soon they did devour
The tawny ^{[40](#)} king with all his power,
For His, etc.*

*His chosen people He did bless
In the wasteful ^{[41](#)} wilderness,
For His, etc.*

*In bloody battle He brought down
Kings of prowess and renown,
For His, etc.*

*He foiled bold Seon and his host,
That ruled the Amorrean ⁴²coast,
For His, etc.*

*And large-limbed Og ⁴³He did subdue,
With all his over-hardy ⁴⁴crew,
For His, etc.*

*And to His servant Israel ⁴⁵
He gave their land, therein to dwell,
For His, etc.*

*He hath with a piteous eye
Beheld us in our misery,
For His, etc.*

*And freed us from the slavery
Of the invading enemy,
For His, etc.*

*All living creatures He doth feed,
And with full hand supplies their need,
For His, etc.*

*Let us therefore warble ⁴⁶ forth
His mighty majesty and worth,
For His, etc.*

*That His mansion hath on high,
Above the reach of mortal eye,
For His mercies aye endure,
Ever faithful, ever sure.*

ON THE DEATH OF A FAIR INFANT DYING OF A COUGH

1625–26? 1628?

I

*O fairest flower no sooner blown ⁴⁷ but blasted, ⁴⁸
Soft silken primrose fading timelessly,
Summer's chief honor if thou hadst outlasted
Bleak winter's force, that made thy blossom dry,
For he being amorous on that lovely dye
 That did thy cheek envermeil, ⁴⁹ thought to kiss,
But killed, alas, and then bewailed his fatal bliss.*

II

*For since grim Aquilo, ⁵⁰ his ⁵¹ charioteer,
By boisterous ⁵² rape th' Athenian damsel ⁵³ got,
He thought it touched ⁵⁴ his deity full near
If likewise he some fair one wedded not, ⁵⁵
Thereby to wipe away the infamous ⁵⁶ blot
 Of long-uncoupled bed and childless eld, ⁵⁷
Which 'mongst the wanton ⁵⁸ gods a foul reproach was held.*

III

*So mounting up in icy-pearlèd car ⁵⁹
Through middle empire of the freezing air
He wandered long, till thee he spied from far.*

*There ended was his quest, there ceased his care:
Down he descended from his snow-soft chair,
 But all unwares with his cold-kind embrace
Unhoused thy virgin soul from her fair bidding ⁶⁰place.*

IV

*Yet art thou not inglorious ⁶¹in thy fate,
For so Apollo, with unweeting ⁶²hand,*

*Whilom ⁶³did slay his dearly lovèd mate, ⁶⁴
Young Hyacinth, born on Eurotas' strand, ⁶⁵
Young Hyacinth, the pride of Spartan land,
 But then transformed him to a purple flower:
Alack, that so to change thee winter had no power.*

V

*Yet can I not persuade me thou art dead
Or that thy corpse corrupts in earth's dark womb,
Or that thy beauties lie in wormy bed,
Hid from the world in a low-delved ⁶⁶tomb.
Could Heav'n, for pity, thee so strictly doom?
 Oh no! for something in thy face did shine
Above mortality that showed thou wast divine.*

VI

*Resolve ⁶⁷me, then, O soul most surely blest
(If so it be that thou these plaints ⁶⁸dost hear)!
Tell me, bright spirit, where'er thou hoverest,
Whether above that high, first-moving sphere
Or in the Elysian fields (if such there were),
 Oh say me true if thou were mortal wight ⁶⁹*

And why from us so quickly thou didst take thy flight.

VII

*Were thou some star which from the ruined roof
Of shaken Olympus by mischance didst fall?
Which careful Jove in Nature's true behoof ⁷⁰
Took up, and in fit ⁷¹place did reinstall?
Or did, of late, earth's sons besiege the wall
 Of shiny Heav'n, and thou some goddess fled
Amongst us here below to hide thy nectared head?*

VIII

*Or were thou that just maid who once before
Forsook the hated earth, ⁷²O tell me sooth,
And cam'st again to visit us once more?
Or wert thou Mercy, that sweet smiling youth?
Or that crowned matron, sage white-robèd Truth?
 Or any other of that heav'nly brood
Let down in cloudy throne to do the world some good?*

IX

*Or wert thou of the golden-wingèd host,
Who having clad thyself in human weed ⁷³
To earth from thy prefixèd seat didst post, ⁷⁴
And after short abode fly back with speed,
As if to show what creatures Heav'n doth breed,
 Thereby to set the hearts of men on fire
To scorn the sordid ⁷⁵world, and unto Heav'n aspire?*

X

*But oh, why didst thou not stay here below
To bless us with thy Heav'n-loved innocence?
To slake his wrath, whom sin hath made our foe?
To turn swift-rushing black perdition hence,
Or drive away the slaughtering pestilence?
To stand 'twixt us and our deservèd smart? [76](#)
But thou canst best perform that office where thou art.*

XI

*Then thou, the mother of so sweet a child,
Her false-imagin'd loss cease to lament,
And wisely learn to curb thy sorrows wild.
Think what a present thou to God has sent,
And render Him with patience what he lent.
This if thou do, He will an offspring give
That till the world's last end shall make thy name to live.*

AT A VACATION EXERCISE IN THE COLLEGE, PART LATIN, PART ENGLISH

1628

The Latin speeches ended, the English thus began:

*Hail, native language, that by sinews weak
Didst move my first endeavoring tongue to speak
And mad'st imperfect words with childish trips,
Half unpronounced, slide through my infant lips,*

*Driving dumb silence from the portal door,
Where he had mutely sat two years before!
Here I salute thee, and thy pardon ask,
That now I use thee in my later task.
Small loss it is that hence can come unto thee:
I know my tongue but little grace can do thee.
Thou needst not be ambitious to be first:
Believe me, I have thither ⁷⁷packed the worst—
And, if it happen, as I did forecast,
The daintiest dishes shall be served up last.
I pray thee, then, deny me not thy aid
For this same small neglect that I have made,
But haste thee straight to do me once a pleasure,
And from thy wardrobe bring thy chiefest treasure,
Not those new-fangled toys and trimming slight
Which takes our late fantastics with delight,
But cull those richest robes and gay'st attire
Which deepest spirits and choicest wits desire.
I have some naked ⁷⁸thoughts that rove about*

*And loudly knock to have their passage out,
And, weary of their place, do only stay
Till thou has decked them in thy best array,
That so they may without suspect ⁷⁹or fears
Fly swiftly to this fair assembly's ears.*

*Yet I had rather, if I were to choose,
Thy service in some graver subject use,
Such as may make thee search thy coffers⁸⁰round ⁸¹
Before thou clothe my fancy in fit sound—
Such where the deep transported mind may soar
Above the wheeling poles, and at Heav'n's door
Look in, and see each blissful deity*

*How he before the thunderous throne doth lie,
Listening to what unshorn Apollo sings
To the touch of golden wires, while Hebe ⁸²brings
Immortal nectar to her kingly sire.
Then passing through the spheres of watchful fire,
And misty regions of wide air next under,
And hills of snow and lofts ⁸³of piled thunder,
May tell at length how green-eyed Neptune raves,
In Heav'n's defiance mustering all his waves.
Then sing of secret things that came to pass
When beldam ⁸⁴Nature in her cradle was.
And last, of kings and queens and heroes old,
Such as the wise Demodocus⁸⁵once told,
In solemn songs at king Alcinous' feast,
While sad Ulysses' soul and all the rest
Are held with his melodious harmony
In willing chains and sweet captivity.
But fie, my wand'ring muse! How thou dost stray!
Expectance calls thee now another way:
Thou know'st it must be now thy only bent
To keep in compass ⁸⁶of thy predicament.⁸⁷
Then quick, about thy purposed business come,
That to the next I may resign my room.⁸⁸*

Then Ens is represented as father of the [ten Aristotelian] predicaments, his ten sons, whereof the eldest stood for substance, with his canons, which Ens, thus speaking, explains:

*Good luck befriend thee, son, for at thy birth
The fairy ladies danced upon the hearth.
Thy drowsy nurse hath sworn she did them spy
Come tripping to the room where thou didst lie,
And sweetly singing round about thy bed
Strew all their blessings on thy sleeping head.
She heard them give thee this: that thou should'st still
From eyes of mortals walk invisible.
Yet there is something that doth force my fear,
For once it was my dismal ⁸⁹hap ⁹⁰to hear
A sibyl⁹¹ old, bow-bent with crooked age,
That far events full wisely could presage,
And in time's long and dark prospective glass
Foresaw what future days should bring to pass:
"Your son," said she, "(nor can you it prevent)
Shall be subject to many an accident.
O'er all his brethren he shall reign as king,
Yet every one shall make him underling,
And those that cannot live from him asunder⁹²
Ungratefully shall strive to keep him under.
In worth and excellence he shall out-go⁹³ them,
Yet being above them, he shall be below them.
From others he shall stand in need of nothing,
Yet on his brothers shall depend for clothing.
To find a foe it shall not be his hap,
And peace shall lull him in her flow'ry lap.
Yet shall he live in strife, and at his door
Devouring war shall never cease to roar.
Yea, it shall be his natural property⁹⁴
To harbor those that are at enmity."*

*What power, what force, what mighty spell, if not
Your learned hands, can loose this Gordian knot?*

The next, *Quantity* and *Quality*, spoke in prose. Then *Relation* was called by his name:

*Rivers ⁹⁵arise, whether thou be the son
Of utmost ⁹⁶Tweed, ⁹⁷or Ouse, or gulfy Dun, ⁹⁸
Or Trent, who like some earth-born giant spreads
His thirty ⁹⁹arms along the indented meads,
Or sullen Mole, that runneth underneath,
Or Severn swift, guilty of maiden's death, ¹⁰⁰
Or rocky Avon, or of sedgy Lea,
Or coaly Tyne, ¹⁰¹or ancient hallowed Dee,
Or Humber loud, that keeps ¹⁰²the Scythian's name,
Or Medway smooth, or royal-towered Thame. ¹⁰³*

ON THE MORNING OF CHRIST'S NATIVITY

1629

I

*This is the month, and this the happy morn
Wherein the son of Heav'n's eternal king,
Of wedded maid and virgin mother born,
Our great redemption from above did bring.
For so the holy sages once did sing,
That he our deadly forfeit¹⁰⁴ should release,
And with his Father work us a perpetual peace.*

II

*That glorious form, that light unsufferable,¹⁰⁵
And that far-beaming blaze of majesty
Wherewith he wont,¹⁰⁶ at Heav'n's high council-table
To sit, the midst of Trinal Unity,
He laid aside, and here with us to be
Forsook the courts¹⁰⁷ of everlasting day,
And chose with us a darksome house of mortal clay.*

III

*Say Heavenly Muse, shall not thy sacred vein¹⁰⁸
Afford ¹⁰⁹a present to the infant God?
Hast thou no verse, no hymn, or solemn strain,¹¹⁰*

*To welcome him to this his new abode,
Now while the Heav'n by the sun's team¹¹¹ untrod,
Hath took no print¹¹² of the approaching light
And all the spangled host keep watch in squadrons bright?*

IV

*See how, from far, upon the eastern road
The star-led wizards ¹¹³haste, with odors sweet!
O run, prevent ¹¹⁴them with thy humble ode,
And lay it lowly at his blessed feet!
Have thou the honor, first thy Lord to greet,
And join thy voice unto the Angel choir
From out his secret altar, touched with hallowed fire.*

THE HYMN

I

*It was the winter wild,
While the Heav'n-born child
All meanly¹¹⁵ wrapped in the rude ¹¹⁶manger¹¹⁷ lies.*

*Nature in awe¹¹⁸ to him
Had doffed ¹¹⁹her gaudy ¹²⁰trim, ¹²¹
With her great master so to sympathize.
It was no season then for her
To wanton with the sun, her lusty ¹²²paramour.*

II

*Only with speeches fair
She woos the gentle air
To hide her guilty front¹²³ with innocent snow,*

*And on her naked shame,
Pollute [124](#)with sinful blame,
 The saintly veil of maiden white to throw,
Confounded¹²⁵that her Maker's eyes
Should look so near upon her foul deformities.*

III

*But he, her fears to cease,
Sent down the meek-eyed Peace.
 She, crowned with olive green, came softly sliding
Down through the turning sphere,
His ready harbinger,¹²⁶
 With turtle wing the amorous clouds dividing,
And waving wide her myrtle wand
She strikes a universal peace through sea and land.*

IV

*No war or battle's sound
Was heard the world around.
 The idle spear and shield were high up hung,
The hookèd ¹²⁷chariot stood
Unstained with hostile blood,
 The trumpet spoke not to the armèd throng,
And kings sat still, with awful¹²⁸eye,
As if they surely knew their sov'reign Lord was by.*

V

*But peaceful was the night
Wherein the Prince of Light
 His reign of peace upon the earth began.
The winds, with wonder whist,¹²⁹
Smoothly the waters kissed,*

*Whispering new joys to the mild ocean,
Who now hath quite forgot to rave,¹³⁰
While birds of calm sit brooding on the charmèd wave.*

VI

*The stars with deep amaze
Stand fixed in steadfast gaze,
 Bending one way their precious influence,
And will not take their flight,
For all the morning light,
 Or Lucifer ¹³¹that often warned them thence,
 But in their glimmering orbs did glow,
 Until their Lord himself bespoke, and bid them go.*

VII

*And though the shady gloom
Had given day her room,¹³²
 The sun himself withheld his wonted speed,
And hid his head for shame,
As ¹³³his inferior flame
 The new-enlightened world no more should need;
He saw a greater sun appear
Than his bright throne or burning axletree could bear.*

VIII

*The shepherds on the lawn,
Or ere the point ¹³⁴of dawn,
 Sat simply chatting in a rustic row.
Full little thought they then
That the mighty Pan
 Was kindly come to live with them below.
Perhaps their loves, or else their sheep,*

Was all that did their silly [135](#)thoughts so busy keep.

IX

*When such music sweet
Their hearts and ears did greet,
 As never was by mortal finger struck,
Divinely-warbled voice
Answering the stringèd noise
 As all their souls in blissful rapture took. [136](#)*

*The air such pleasure loath to lose
With thousand echoes still prolongs each heavenly close. [137](#)*

X

*Nature that heard such sound
Beneath the hollow round
 Of Cynthia's [138](#)seat, the airy region thrilling,
Now was almost won
To think her part was done,
 And that her reign had here its last fulfilling.
She knew such harmony alone
Could hold all Heav'n and earth in happier union.*

XI

*At last surrounds their sight
A globe of circular light,
 That with long beams the shame-faced night arrayed. [139](#)
The helmèd Cherubim
And swordèd Seraphim
 Are seen in glittering ranks, with wings displayed,
Harping in loud and solemn choir,*

With unexpressive [140](#)notes to Heav'n's new-born heir.

XII

Such music (as 'tis said)
Before was never made
 But when of old the sons of morning sung,

While the Creator great
His constellations set,
 And the well-balanced world on hinges hung,
And cast the dark foundations deep,
And bid the weltering [141](#)waves their oozy channel keep.

XIII

Ring out, ye crystal spheres,
Once bless our human ears
 (If ye have power to touch our senses so),
And let your silver chime
Move in melodious time,
 And let the bass of Heav'n's deep organ blow,
And with your ninefold harmony
Make up full consort to the angelic symphony.

XIV

For if such holy song
Enwrap our fancy long,
 Time will run back and fetch the Age of Gold,
And speckled [142](#)vanity
Will sicken soon, and die,
 And leprous sin will melt from earthly mould,
And Hell itself will pass away,

And leave her dolorous¹⁴³ mansions¹⁴⁴ to the peering day.

XV

*Yea, Truth and Justice then
Will down return to men,*

*Orbed in a rainbow; and like¹⁴⁵ glories wearing
Mercy will sit between,
Throned in celestial sheen,*

*With radiant feet the tissued ¹⁴⁶clouds down steering,
And Heav'n, as at some festival,
Will open wide the gates of her high palace hall.*

XVI

*But wisest Fate says no,
This must not yet be so,*

*The Babe lies yet in smiling infancy
That on the bitter cross
Must redeem our loss,*

*So both himself and us to glorify.
Yet first to those ychained in sleep
The wakeful trump of doom must thunder through the deep*

XVII

*With such a horrid clang
As on Mount Sinai rang*

*While the red fire and smoldering clouds out-break.
The aged earth aghast
With terror of that blast*

*Shall from the surface to the center shake;
When at the world's last session¹⁴⁷*

The dreadful [148](#) Judge in middle air shall spread His throne,

XVIII

And then at last our bliss

Full and perfect is—

*But now begins, for from this happy day
Th' old dragon under ground*

In straiter [149](#) limits bound

*Not half so far casts his usurpèd sway,
And wroth [150](#) to see his kingdom fail
Swinges [151](#) the scaly horror of his folded tail.*

XIX

The oracles are dumb;

No voice or hideous hum

Runs through the archèd roof in words deceiving.

Apollo from his shrine

Can no more divine, [152](#)

*With hollow shriek the steep [153](#) of Delphos leaving.
No nightly trance or breathèd spell
Inspires [154](#) the pale-eyed priest from the prophetic cell.*

XX

The lonely mountains o'er,

And the resounding shore,

A voice of weeping heard, and loud lament.

From haunted spring and dale

Edged with poplar pale [155](#)

*The parting genius [156](#) is with sighing sent.
With flower-inwoven tresses torn*

The Nymphs in twilight shade of tangled thickets mourn.

XXI

*In consecrated earth,
And on the holy hearth,
 The lars and lemures ¹⁵⁷ moan with midnight plaint.
In urns and altars round,
A drear and dying sound
 Affrights the flamens ¹⁵⁸ at their service quaint, ¹⁵⁹
And the chill marble seems to sweat,
While each peculiar ¹⁶⁰ power ¹⁶¹ forgoes his wonted seat.*

XXII

*Peor ¹⁶² and Baalim ¹⁶³
Forsake their temples dim,
 With that twice-battered god of Palestine
And moonèd Ashtaroth, ¹⁶⁴
Heav'n's queen and mother both,
 Now sits not girt ¹⁶⁵ with tapers' holy shine.*

*The Libyc Hammon ¹⁶⁶ shrinks ¹⁶⁷ his horn.
In vain the Tyrian maids their wounded Thammuz ¹⁶⁸ mourn,*

XXIII

*And sullen Moloch, ¹⁶⁹ fled,
Hath left in shadows dread
 His burning idol all of blackest hue.
In vain with cymbals' ring
They call the grisly king,
 In dismal dance about the furnace ¹⁷⁰ blue.
The brutish ¹⁷¹ gods of Nile as fast,*

Isis [172](#) and Orus, [173](#) and the dog Anubis, [174](#) haste.

XXIV

Nor is Osiris [175](#) seen
In Memphian grove or green,
 Trampling th' unshowered grass with lowings loud,
Nor can he be at rest
Within his sacred chest: [176](#)
 Nought but profoundest Hell can be his shroud.

In vain with timbreled [177](#) anthems [178](#) dark
The sable-stolèd [179](#) sorcerers bear his worshipped ark.

XXV

He feels from Judah's land
The dreaded infant's hand,
 The rays of Bethlehem blind his dusky eyn. [180](#)
Nor all the gods beside
Longer dare abide,
 Not Typhon [181](#) huge, ending in snaky twine. [182](#)
Our Babe, to show his Godhead true,
Can in his swaddling bands control the damnèd crew.

XXVI

So when the sun in bed,
Curtained with cloudy red,
 Pillows his chin upon an orient [183](#) wave,
The flocking shadows pale
Troop to the infernal jail.
 Each fettered ghost slips to his several [184](#) grave
And the yellow-skirted fays [185](#)

Fly after the night-steeds, leaving their moon-loved maze. [186](#)

XXVII

*But see, the Virgin blest
Hath laid her Babe to rest.*

*Time is our tedious [187](#) song should here have ending.
Heav'n's youngest-teemèd [188](#) star
Hath fixed her polished car,
Her sleeping Lord with handmaid lamp attending,
And all about the courtly stable
Bright-harnessed [189](#) angels sit in order serviceable.* [190](#)

THE PASSION

1630: “This subject the author finding to be above the years he had when he wrote it, and nothing satisfied with what was begun, left it unfinished.”

I

Erewhile [191](#) of music and ethereal mirth,
Wherewith the stage of air and earth did ring,
And joyous news of Heav’nly infant’s birth,
My muse with Angels did divide to sing.[192](#)
But headlong joy is ever on the wing,
 In wintry solstice like the shortened light
Soon swallowed up in dark and long outliving night.

II

For now to sorrow must I tune my song,
And set my harp to notes of saddest woe,
Which on our dearest Lord did seize[193](#) ere long
Dangers, and snares, and wrongs, and worse than so,
Which he for us did freely undergo,
 Most perfect hero, tried in heaviest [194](#) plight[195](#)
Of labors huge and hard, too hard for human wight.[196](#)

III

He sov’ reign priest, stooping his regal head
That dropped with odorous oil down his fair eyes,

Poor fleshly tabernacle [197](#) entered,
His starry front low-roofed beneath the skies.
Oh what a mask was there, what a disguise!
Yet more: the stroke of death he must abide, [198](#)
Then lies him meekly down fast by his brethren's side.

IV

These latter scenes confine my roving verse;
To this horizon is my Phoebus [199](#) bound:
His Godlike acts, and his temptations fierce,
And former sufferings elsewhere are found.
Loud o'er the rest Cremona's trump doth sound. [200](#)

Me softer airs befit, [201](#) and softer strings
Of lute, or viol still, [202](#) more apt for mournful things.

V

Befriend me, night, best patroness of grief,
Over the pole thy thickest mantle throw,
And work my flattered fancy to belief
That Heav'n and earth are colored with my woe,
My sorrows are too dark for day to know.
The leaves should all be black wheron I write,
And letters, where my tears have washed, a wannish white.

VI

See, see the chariot, and those rushing wheels
That whirled the prophet [203](#) up, at Chebar flood!
My spirit some transporting Cherub feels,
To bear me where the towers of Salem [204](#) stood,
Once glorious towers, now sunk in guiltless blood.

*There doth my soul in holy vision sit,
In pensive²⁰⁵ trance,²⁰⁶ and anguish, and ecstatic fit.²⁰⁷*

VII

*Mine eye hath found that sad sepulchral rock
That was the casket of Heav'n's richest store,²⁰⁸*

*And here though grief my feeble hands uplock²⁰⁹
Yet on the softened quarry ²¹⁰ would I score²¹¹
My plaining²¹² verse, as lively²¹³ as before,
For sure so well instructed are my tears
That they would fitly fall in ordered characters.²¹⁴*

VIII

*Or should I, thence hurried on viewless wing,
Take up a weeping on the mountains wild,
The gentle neighborhood of grove and spring
Would soon unbosom all their echoes mild,
And I (for grief is easily beguiled)
Might think th' infection²¹⁵ of my sorrows loud
Had got a race of mourners on some pregnant cloud.*

SONG: ON MAY MORNING

1630–31

*Now the bright morning star, day's harbinger,²¹⁶
Comes dancing from the east, and leads with her
The flow'ry May, who from her green lap throws
The yellow cowslip, and the pale primrose.*

*Hail bounteous May, that dost inspire
Mirth and youth and warm desire,
Woods and groves are of thy dressing,²¹⁷
Hill and dale²¹⁸ doth boast thy blessing.*

*Thus we salute thee with our early song,
And welcome thee, and wish thee long.*

ENGLISH²¹⁹ SONNETS²²⁰

SONNET 1

1628? 1630?

*O nightingale, that on yon bloomy spray ²²¹
Warblest at eve, when all the woods are still,
Thou with fresh hope the lover's heart dost fill,
While the jolly hours lead on propitious²²² May.
Thy liquid notes that close the eye of day,
First heard before the shallow cuckoo's bill,
Portend success in love. O if Jove's will
Have linked that amorous power to thy soft lay ²²³
Now timely²²⁴ sing, ere the rude²²⁵ bird of hate²²⁶
Foretell my hopeless doom, in some grove nigh,
As thou from year to year hast sung too late*

*For my relief, yet hadst no reason why.
Whether the muse or love call thee his mate,
Both them I serve, and of their train²²⁷ am I.*

SONNET 7

1632

*How soon hath time, the subtle ²²⁸ thief of youth,
Stol'n on his wing my three and twentieth year!
My hasting days fly on, with full career,²²⁹*

But my late spring no bud or blossom show'th.
Perhaps my semblance might deceive the truth
That I to manhood am arrived so near,
And inward ripeness doth much less appear,
That some more timely-happy spirits indu'th.²³⁰
Yet be it less or more, or soon or slow,
It shall be still ²³¹ in strictest measure ev'n ²³²
To that same lot, ²³³ however mean ²³⁴ or high,
Towards which time leads me, and the will of Heav'n.
All is, if I have grace to use it so,
As ever in my great task-master's eye.

SONNET 8

1642

Captain or colonel, ²³⁵ or knight in arms,
Whose chance ²³⁶ on these defenseless doors may seize, ²³⁷
If ever deed of honor did thee please
Guard them, and him within ²³⁸ protect from harms.
He can requite ²³⁹ thee, for he knows the charms
That call fame on such gentle ²⁴⁰ acts as these,
And he can spread thy name o'er lands and seas,
Whatever clime the sun's bright circle warms.
Lift not thy spear against the muses' bow'r! ²⁴¹
The great Emathian conqueror ²⁴² bid spare
The house of Pindarus, ²⁴³ when temple and tow'r
Went to the ground, and the repeated air ²⁴⁴
Of sad Electra's poet ²⁴⁵ had the power
To save th' Athenian walls from ruin bare.

SONNET 9

1643–45

Lady,²⁴⁶ that in the prime of earliest youth
Wisely hath shunned the broad way,²⁴⁷ and the green,
And with those few art eminently²⁴⁸ seen
That labor up the hill of Heav'nly truth,
The better part with Mary, and with Ruth,²⁴⁹
Chosen thou hast, and they that overween ²⁵⁰
And at thy growing virtues fret²⁵¹ their spleen
No anger find in thee, but pity and ruth.²⁵²
Thy care²⁵³ is fixed, and zealously attends ²⁵⁴
To fill thy odorous lamp with deeds of light,
And hope that reaps not shame. Therefore be sure,
Thou, when the bridegroom with his feastful friends
Passes to bliss, at the mid hour of night,
Hast gained thy entrance, virgin wise and pure.

SONNET 10

1643–45

Daughter to that good earl,²⁵⁵ once president
Of England's Council and her Treasury,
Who lived in both unstained with gold or fee,
And left them both, more in himself content,
Till the sad breaking of that Parliament
Broke him,²⁵⁶ as that dishonest victory
At Chaeronéa,²⁵⁷ fatal to liberty
Killed with report that old man, eloquent.²⁵⁸
Though later born than to have known the days
Wherein your father flourished, yet by you,
Madam, methinks I see him living yet,
So well your words his noble virtues praise
That all both judge you to relate ²⁵⁹ them true
And to possess them, honored Margaret.

SONNET 11

1645?

*I did but prompt the age to quit their clogs [260](#)
By the known rules of ancient liberty [261](#)
When straight a barbarous noise environs [262](#) me
Of owls and cuckoos, asses, apes, and dogs.
As when those hinds [263](#) that were transformed to frogs
Railed at Latona's twin-born progeny, [264](#)
Which after held the sun and moon in fee.
But this is got by casting pearl to hogs,
That bawl for freedom, in their senseless mood,
And still [265](#) revolt when truth would set them free.
Licence, they mean, when they cry "liberty,"
For who loves that must first be wise and good.
But from that mark how far they rove we see
For all this waste of wealth and loss of blood.*

SONNET 12

1647?

*A book was writ, of late, called Tetrachordon, [266](#)
And woven close both matter, form, and style.
The subject new, it walked the town a while,
Numb'ring good intellects—now seldom pored on. [267](#)
Cries the stall-reader, "Bless us! What a word on
A title page is this!" And some in file [268](#)
Stand spelling false, while [269](#) one might walk to Mile-
End Green. Why is it harder, sirs, than Gordon, [270](#)
Colkitto, [271](#) or MacDonnell, [272](#) or Galasp? [273](#)
Those rugged names to our like mouths grow sleek,
That would have made Quintilian [274](#) stare and gasp!
Thy age, like ours—O soul of Sir John Cheek!—[275](#)
Hated not learning worse than toad or asp,
When thou taught'st Cambridge, and King Edward, Greek.*

SONNET 13

1646

Harry,²⁷⁶ whose tuneful and well-measured ²⁷⁷ song
First taught our English music how to span ²⁷⁸
Words with just ²⁷⁹ note and accent, not to scan
With Midas ears,²⁸⁰ committing²⁸¹ short and long.
Thy worth and skill exempts thee from the throng,
With praise enough for envy to look wan.
To after age thou shalt be writ the man
That with smooth air²⁸² couldst humor best our tongue.
Thou honor'st verse, and verse must lend her wing
To honor thee, the priest of Phoebus choir,
That tun'st their happiest lines, in hymn or story.
Dante shall give Fame leave to set thee higher
Than his Casella,²⁸³ whom he wooed to sing,
Met in the milder shades of Purgatory.

SONNET 14

1646

When faith and love, which parted from thee²⁸⁴ never,
Had ripened thy just soul to dwell with God,
Meekly thou didst resign this earthly load
Of death, called life, which us from life doth sever.
Thy works and alms, and all thy good endeavor,
Stayed not behind nor in the grave were trod,
But as faith pointed with her golden rod
Followed thee up to joy and bliss forever.
Love led them on, and faith, who knew them best—
Thy handmaids—clad them o'er with purple beams
And azure wings, that up they flew, so dressed,
And spoke the truth of thee in glorious themes²⁸⁵
Before the judge, who thenceforth bid thee rest

And drink thy fill of pure immortal streams.

SONNET 15

1648

*Fairfax,²⁸⁶ whose name in arms through Europe rings,
Filling each mouth with envy, or with praise,
And all her jealous monarchs with amaze
And rumors loud, that daunt remotest kings,
Thy firm unshaken virtue ever brings
Victory home, though new rebellions raise
Their hydra heads, and the false North²⁸⁷ displays
Her broken league,²⁸⁸ to imp ²⁸⁹ her serpent wings:²⁹⁰
O yet a nobler task awaits thy hand,
For what can wars but endless wars still breed,
Till truth and right from violence be freed,
And public faith cleared from the shameful brand
Of public fraud. In vain doth valor bleed
While avarice and rapine²⁹¹ share the land.*

SONNET 16

1652

*Cromwell, our chief of men, who through a cloud
Not of war only, but detractions²⁹² rude,²⁹³
Guided by faith and matchless fortitude
To peace and truth thy glorious way hath ploughed,
And on the neck of crownèd Fortune proud
Hast reared God's trophies, and His work pursued,
While Darwen²⁹⁴ stream with blood of Scots embru'd,²⁹⁵
And Dunbar²⁹⁶ field resounds thy praises loud,
And Worcester's²⁹⁷ laureat wreath, yet much remains
To conquer still. Peace hath her victories*

*No less renowned than war, new foes arise,
Threat'ning to bind our souls with secular chains!
Help us to save free conscience from the paw
Of hireling wolves, whose gospel is their maw.*²⁹⁸

SONNET 17

1652

*Vane,*²⁹⁹ *young in years but in sage counsel old,
Than whom a better senator ne'er held
The helm of Rome, when gowns,*³⁰⁰
*The fierce Epeirut*³⁰¹ *and th' African*³⁰² *bold:
Whether to settle peace, or to unfold
The drift*³⁰³ *of hollow*³⁰⁴ *states, hard to be spelled;*³⁰⁵
*Then to advise how war may best, upheld,
Move by her two main nerves, iron and gold,
In all her equipage;*³⁰⁶ *besides, to know
Both spiritual power and civil, what each means,
What severs each—thou hast learned, which few have done.
The bounds of either sword to thee we owe.
Therefore, on thy firm hand religion leans
In peace, and reckons thee her eldest son.*

SONNET 18

1655

*Avenge, O Lord, Thy slaughtered Saints,*³⁰⁷ *whose bones
Lie scattered on the Alpine mountains cold—
Ev'n them who kept Thy truth so pure of old,
When all our fathers worshipped stocks and stones!
Forget not! In Thy book record*³⁰⁸ *their groans,
Who were Thy sheep, and in their ancient fold*³⁰⁹
Slain by the bloody Piemontese, who rolled

Mother with infant down the rocks. Their moans
The vales redoubled to the hills, and they
To Heav'n. Their martyred blood and ashes sow
O'er all th' Italian fields where still doth sway
The triple tyrant,³¹⁰ that from these may grow
A hundred-fold, who having learned Thy way
Early, may fly³¹¹ the Babylonian woe.³¹²

SONNET 19

1655

When I consider how my life is spent,³¹³
Ere ³¹⁴ half my days in this dark world and wide,
And that one talent³¹⁵ which is death to hide
Lodged with me, useless, though my soul more bent ³¹⁶
To serve therewith my Maker, and present ³¹⁷
My true account, lest He, returning, ³¹⁸ chide—³¹⁹
“Doth God exact day labor, light denied?”
I fondly ask, but patience, to prevent
That murmur, soon replies, “God doth not need
Either man's work or His own gifts. Who best
Bear His mild yoke, they serve Him best. His state
Is kingly. Thousands at His bidding speed
And post ³²⁰ o'er land and ocean, without rest.
They also serve who only stand and wait.”

SONNET 20

1655

Lawrence,³²¹ of virtuous father, virtuous son,
Now that the fields are dank, and ways ³²² are mire,³²³
Where shall we sometimes meet, and by the fire
Help waste a sullen ³²⁴ day, what ³²⁵ may be won

From the hard season³²⁶ gaining? ³²⁷ Time will run
On smother, till Favonius ³²⁸ re-inspire
The frozen earth, and clothe in fresh attire
The lily and rose, that neither sowed nor spun.³²⁹
What neat ³³⁰ repast shall feast us, light and choice,
Of Attic taste, with wine, whence we may rise
To hear the lute well touched, or artful voice
Warble immortal notes and Tuscan ³³¹ air?
He who of those delights can judge, and spare ³³²
To interpose ³³³ them oft, is not unwise.

SONNET 21

1655

Cyriack! ³³⁴ Whose grandsire on the Royal Bench ³³⁵
Of British Themis, ³³⁶ with no mean ³³⁷ applause
Pronounced ³³⁸ and in his volumes ³³⁹ taught our laws,
Which others at their Bar ³⁴⁰ so often wrench ³⁴¹ —
Today deep thoughts resolve with me to drench ³⁴²
In mirth, that after no repenting draws. ³⁴³
Let Euclid rest, and Archimedes pause,
And what the Swede³⁴⁴ intends, and what the French!
To measure life, learn thou betimes³⁴⁵ and know
Toward solid ³⁴⁶ good what leads the nearest way.
For other things, mild Heav'n a time ordains,
And disapproves that care, though wise in show,
That with superfluous burden loads the day
And, when God sends a cheerful hour, refrains!

SONNET 22

1655

Cyriack, this three years day these eyes, though clear

To outward view of blemish or of spot,
Bereft [347](#) of light their seeing have forgot,
Nor to their idle [348](#) orbs doth sight appear
Of sun, or moon, or star throughout the year,
Or man, or woman. Yet I argue not
Against Heav'n's hand or will, nor bate [349](#) a jot [350](#)
Of heart or hope, but still bear up and steer
Right onward. What supports me, dost thou ask?
The conscience, friend, t' have lost them overplied [351](#)
In liberty's defense, my noble task,
Of which all Europe talks from side to side.
This thought might lead me through the world's vain mask,
Content, though blind, had I no better guide.

SONNET 23

1656–58?

Methought I saw my late espoused saint [352](#)
Brought to me, like Alcestis, [353](#) from the grave,
Who Jove's great son to her glad husband gave,
Rescued from death by force, though pale and faint.
Mine as whom, washed from spot of child-bed taint, [354](#)
Purification in th' old law [355](#) did save,
And such as yet once more I trust to have
Full sight of her in Heav'n, without restraint, [356](#)
Came vested [357](#) all in white, pure as her mind.
Her face was veiled, yet to my fancied sight
Love, sweetness, goodness in her person shined
So clear, as in no face with more delight.
But O, as to embrace me she inclined, [358](#)
I waked, she fled, and day brought back my night.

ON SHAKESPEARE

1630

*What needs my Shakespeare, for his honored bones,
The labor of an age in pilèd stones,
Or that his hallowed relics should be hid
Under a star-ypointing pyramid?
Dear son of memory,³⁵⁹ great heir of fame,
What need'st thou such weak witness of thy name?
Thou in our wonder and astonishment
Hast built thyself a livelong monument!
For whilst to th' shame of slow-endeavoring ³⁶⁰ art
Thy easy numbers ³⁶¹ flow, and that each heart
Hath from the leaves of thy unvalued ³⁶² book
Those Delphic³⁶³ lines with deep ³⁶⁴ impression ³⁶⁵ took,
Then thou our fancy, of itself bereaving,³⁶⁶
Dost make us marble ³⁶⁷ with too much conceiving,³⁶⁸
And so sepulchred ³⁶⁹ in such pomp ³⁷⁰ dost lie
That kings for such a tomb would wish to die.*

ON THE UNIVERSITY CARRIER³⁷¹

1631

*who sickened in the time of his vacancy,³⁷² being forbid to
go to London by reason of the Plague.
Here lies old Hobson.³⁷³ Death has broke his girt ³⁷⁴
And here, alas, hath laid him in the dirt,
Or else the ways ³⁷⁵ being foul, twenty to one
He's here stuck in a slough,³⁷⁶ and overthrown.
'Twas such a shifter,³⁷⁷ that if truth were known,
Death was half glad when he had got him down,
For he had any time this ten years full ³⁷⁸
Dodged³⁷⁹ with him, betwixt Cambridge and The Bull.³⁸⁰
And surely, Death could never have prevailed
Had not his weekly course of carriage ³⁸¹ failed,
But lately finding him so long at home,
And thinking now his journey's end was come,
And that he had ta'en up his latest inn,
In the kind office of a chamberlain ³⁸²
Showed him his room where he must lodge that night,
Pulled off his boots, and took away the light.³⁸³
If any ask for him, it shall be said,
"Hobson has supped, and's newly gone to bed."*

ANOTHER ON THE SAME

1631

*Here lieth one who did most truly prove
That he could never die while he could move,
So hung ³⁸⁴ his destiny never to rot ³⁸⁵
While he might still jog on and keep his trot,
Made of sphere-metal, ³⁸⁶ never to decay
Until his revolution ³⁸⁷ was at stay. ³⁸⁸
Time numbers ³⁸⁹ motion, yet (without a crime
'Gainst old truth) motion numbered out his time,
And like an engine ³⁹⁰ moved with wheel and weight,
His principles ³⁹¹ being ceased, he ended straight. ³⁹²
Rest that gives all men life, gave him his death,
And too much breathing ³⁹³ put him out of breath.
Nor were it contradiction to affirm
Too long vacation hastened on his term. ³⁹⁴
Merely to drive the time away ³⁹⁵ he sickened,
Fainted, and died, nor would with ale be quickened. ³⁹⁶
"Nay," quoth he, on his swooning bed outstretched,
"If I may not carry, sure I'll ne'er be fetched, ³⁹⁷
But vow, though the cross doctors all stood hearers,
For one carrier put down ³⁹⁸ to make six bearers." ³⁹⁹
Ease was his chief disease, and to judge right
He died for heaviness ⁴⁰⁰ that his cart went light.
His leisure ⁴⁰¹ told him that his time was come,
And lack of load ⁴⁰² made his life burdensome,
That ⁴⁰³ even to his last breath (there be that say't)
As ⁴⁰⁴ he were pressed to death, ⁴⁰⁵ he cried, "More weight!"*

*But had his doings lasted as they were
He had been an immortal carrier.^{[406](#)}
Obedient to the moon, he spent his date ^{[407](#)}
In course reciprocal,^{[408](#)} and had his fate
Linked to the mutual flowing of the seas,
Yet (strange to think) his wain^{[409](#)} was his increase.
His letters are delivered all and gone,
Only remains this superscription.^{[410](#)}*

AN EPITAPH ON THE MARCHIONESS OF WINCHESTER

1631

*This rich marble doth inter [411](#)
The honored wife of Winchester,[412](#)
A Viscount's daughter,[413](#) an Earl's heir,[414](#)
Besides what her virtues fair
Added to her noble birth,
More than she could own from earth.
Summers three times eight save one
She had told [415](#) —alas, too soon,
And so short time of breath,
To house[416](#) with darkness and with death.
Yet had the number of her days
Been as complete as was her praise,
Nature and Fate had had no strife
In giving limit to her life.
Her high birth and her graces sweet
Quickly found a lover meet;[417](#)
The virgin choir for her request
The god that sits at marriage feast.[418](#)
He at their invoking came
But with a scarce well-lighted flame,[419](#)
And in his garland as he stood
Ye might discern a cypress bud.[420](#)
Once had the early matrons run
To greet her of a lovely son,[421](#)
And now with second hope she goes,
And calls Lucina [422](#) to her throes.[423](#)
But whether by mischance or blame*

Atropos ⁴²⁴ for Lucina came,
And with remorseless cruelty
Spoiled at once both fruit and tree:
The hapless babe before his birth
Had burial, yet not laid in earth,
And the languished mother's womb
Was not long a living tomb. ⁴²⁵
So have I seen some tender slip ⁴²⁶
Saved with care from winter's nip,
The pride of her carnation train, ⁴²⁷
Plucked up by some unheedy ⁴²⁸ swain ⁴²⁹
Who only thought to crop ⁴³⁰ the flower
New shot up from vernal ⁴³¹ shower.
But the fair blossom hangs the head
Sideways as on a dying bed,
And those pearls of dew she wears
Prove to be presaging ⁴³² tears
Which the sad morn had let fall
On her hastening funeral.

Gentle lady, may thy grave
Peace and quiet ever have.
After this, thy travail sore,
Sweet rest seize thee evermore,
That to give the world increase
Shortened hast thy own life's lease.
Here besides the sorrowing
That thy noble house doth bring,
Here be tears of perfect moan
Wept for thee in Helicon, ⁴³³
And some flowers and some bays ⁴³⁴
For thy hearse to strew the ways, ⁴³⁵
Sent thee from the banks of Came, ⁴³⁶
Devoted to thy virtuous name,
Whilst thou, bright Saint, high sitt'st in glory,
Next her much like to thee in story,
That fair Syrian shepherdess ⁴³⁷

*Who after years of barrenness
The highly-favored Joseph bore
To him that served for her before,^{[438](#)}
And at her next birth, much like thee,
Through pangs fled to felicity,^{[439](#)}
Far within the bosom bright
Of blazing Majesty and Light.
There with thee, new-welcome Saint,
Like fortunes may her soul acquaint,
With thee there clad in radiant sheen,
No Marchioness, but now a Queen.*

L'ALLEGRO⁴⁴⁰

1631?

Hence, loathèd melancholy,
Of Cerberus⁴⁴¹ and blackest midnight born,
In Stygian⁴⁴² cave forlorn
Mongst horrid shapes, and shrieks, and sights unholy!
Find out some uncouth⁴⁴³ cell⁴⁴⁴
Where brooding darkness spreads his jealous wings,
And the night-raven sings.
There under ebon shades and low-browed⁴⁴⁵ rocks
As ragged as thy locks,
In dark Cimmerian⁴⁴⁶ desert ever dwell.

But come thou, goddess fair and free,
In Heaven yclept⁴⁴⁷ Euphrosyne,⁴⁴⁸
And by men heart-easing mirth,
Whom lovely Venus at a birth
With two sister Graces more
To ivy-crownèd Bacchus bore—
Or whether (as some, sager, sing)
The frolic wind that breathes⁴⁴⁹ the spring,
Zephyr with Aurora playing,
As he met her once a-Maying,
There on beds of violets blue
And fresh-blown roses washed in dew,
Filled her with thee, a daughter fair,
So buxom,⁴⁵⁰ blithe,⁴⁵¹ and debonair.⁴⁵²
Haste thee, nymph, and bring with thee
Jest and youthful jollity,

Quips and cranks,⁴⁵³ and wanton wiles,⁴⁵⁴
Nods, and becks,⁴⁵⁵ and wreathèd smiles
Such as hang on Hebe's ⁴⁵⁶ cheek
And love to live in dimple sleek,
Sport ⁴⁵⁷ that wrinkled care derides,
And laughter, holding both its sides.
Come, and trip it as ye go
On the light-fantastic toe,
And in thy right hand lead with thee
The mountain nymph, sweet liberty.
And if I give thee honor due,
Mirth, admit me of thy crew
To live with her, and live with thee,
In unprovèd ⁴⁵⁸ pleasures free,
To hear the lark begin his flight
And, singing, startle the dull ⁴⁵⁹ night
From his watch-tower in the skies,
Till the dappled ⁴⁶⁰ dawn doth rise,
Then to come, in spite of sorrow,
And at my window bid good-morrow
Through the sweet-briar, or the vine,
Or the twisted eglantine,
While the cock, with lively din,
Scatters the rear of darkness thin,⁴⁶¹
And to the stack ⁴⁶² or the barn door
Stoutly ⁴⁶³ fierce struts his dames before.⁴⁶⁴
Oft listening how the hounds and horn
Cheerly rouse the slumbering morn
From the side of some hoar ⁴⁶⁵ hill,
Through the high wood echoing shrill.
Sometime walking not unseen ⁴⁶⁶
By hedgerow elms, on hillocks green,
Right against the eastern gate
Where the great ⁴⁶⁷ sun begins his state,⁴⁶⁸
Robed in flames and amber light,
The clouds in thousand liveries ⁴⁶⁹ dight,⁴⁷⁰

While the ploughman, near at hand,
Whistles o'er the furrowed land,
And the milkmaid singeth blithe,
And the mower whets [471](#) his scythe,
And every shepherd tells his tale
Under the hawthorn in the dale.

Straight, mine eye hath caught new pleasures
Whilst the landscape round it measures, [472](#)
Russet [473](#) lawns, and fallows [474](#) gray,
Where the nibbling flocks do stray,
Mountains on whose barren breast
The laboring clouds do often rest,
Meadows trim with daisies pied, [475](#)
Shallow brooks and rivers wide.
Towers and battlements [476](#) it sees,
Bosomed high in tufted trees,
Where perhaps some beauty [477](#) lies, [478](#)
The cynosure [479](#) of neighboring eyes.
Hard by, a cottage chimney smokes
From betwixt two aged oaks,
Where Corydon and Thyrsis, [480](#) met,
Are at their savory dinner set
Of herbs [481](#) and other country messes, [482](#)
Which the neat-handed [483](#) Phyllis dresses. [484](#)
And then in haste her bow'r [485](#) she leaves,
With Thestylis to bind [486](#) the sheaves, [487](#)
Or if the earlier season [488](#) lead [489](#)
To the tanned [490](#) haycock [491](#) in the mead, [492](#)
Sometimes with secure [493](#) delight
The upland [494](#) hamlets [495](#) will invite,
When the merry bells ring round,
And the jocund [496](#) rebecks [497](#) sound
To many a youth and many a maid,
Dancing in the checkered shade,
And young and old come forth to play
On a sunshine holiday,

Till the livelong daylight fail.
Then to the spicy nut-brown ale,
With stories told of many a feat,
How fairy Mab⁴⁹⁸ the junkets ⁴⁹⁹ eat.
She was pinched and pulled, she said,
And he, by friar's lantern led,
Tells how the drudging goblin sweat
To earn his cream-bowl, duly set,
When in one night, ere glimpse of morn,
His shadowy flail ⁵⁰⁰ hath threshed the corn ⁵⁰¹
That ten day-laborers could not end,
Then lies him down (the lubber fend!)⁵⁰²
And, stretched out all the chimney's length,
Basks at the fire his hairy strength,
And, crop-full,⁵⁰³ out of doors he flings,
Ere the first cock his matin⁵⁰⁴ rings.
Thus done the tales, to bed they creep,
By whispering winds soon lulled asleep.

Tow'ring cities please us, then,
And the busy hum of men,
Where throngs of knights and barons bold
In weeds ⁵⁰⁵ of peace high triumphs⁵⁰⁶ hold,
With store ⁵⁰⁷ of ladies, whose bright eyes
Rain influence, and judge the prize
Of wit or arms, while both contend
To win her grace, whom all commend.
There let Hymen⁵⁰⁸ oft appear
In saffron⁵⁰⁹ robe, with taper ⁵¹⁰ clear,
And pomp,⁵¹¹ and feast, and revelry,
With masque and antique pageantry,
Such sights as youthful poets dream
On summer eves by haunted stream.
Then to the well-trod stage anon,
If Jonson's ⁵¹² learned sock be on,⁵¹³
Or sweetest Shakespeare, Fancy's ⁵¹⁴ child,
Warble his native wood-notes wild.

And ever, against eating [515](#) cares,
Lap me in soft Lydian airs, [516](#)
Married to immortal verse,
Such as the meeting [517](#) soul may pierce
In notes, with many a winding bout [518](#)
Of linkèd sweetness long drawn out,
With wanton [519](#) heed [520](#) and giddy [521](#) cunning, [522](#)
The melting voice through mazes running,
Untwisting all the chains that tie
The hidden soul of harmony,
That Orpheus [523](#) self may heave [524](#) his head
From golden slumber on a bed
Of heaped Elysian [525](#) flowers, and hear
Such strains [526](#) as would have won the ear
Of Pluto, [527](#) to have quite set free
His half-regained Eurydice. [528](#)
 These delights if thou canst give,
Mirth, with thee I mean to live. [529](#)

IL PENSEROSO⁵³⁰

1631?

Hence, vain deluding joys,
The brood of folly without father bred!
How little you bestead,⁵³¹
Or fill the fixèd⁵³² mind with all your toys! ⁵³³
Dwell in some idle brain,
And fancies fond⁵³⁴ with gaudy⁵³⁵ shapes possess
As thick and numberless
As the gay motes⁵³⁶ that people the sun beams,
Or likest hovering dreams,
The fickle pensioners ⁵³⁷ of Morpheus ⁵³⁸ train.
But hail thou, goddess, sage and holy,
Hail divinest Melancholy,
Whose saintly visage is too bright
To hit ⁵³⁹ the sense of human sight
And, therefore, to our weaker view
O'er laid with black, staid wisdom's hue—
Black, but such as in esteem
Prince Memnon's ⁵⁴⁰ sister might beseem,⁵⁴¹
Or that starr'd Ethiop ⁵⁴² Queen that strove
To set her beauty's praise above
The sea nymphs, and their powers offended.
Yet thou art higher far descended,
Thee, bright-haired Vesta,⁵⁴³ long of yore
To solitary Saturn bore:
His daughter she (in Saturn's reign
Such mixture was not held a stain),
Oft in glimmering bow'rs and glades

He met her, and in secret shades
Of woody Ida's [544](#) inmost grove,
While yet there was no fear of Jove.

Come, pensive nun, [545](#) devout and pure,
Sober, steadfast, and demure, [546](#)
All in a robe of darkest grain, [547](#)
Flowing with majestic train,
And sable [548](#) stole [549](#) of cypress lawn [550](#)
Over thy decent [551](#) shoulders drawn!
Come, but keep thy wonted [552](#) state
With even step and musing gait,
And looks commercing [553](#) with the skies,
Thy rapt [554](#) soul sitting in thine eyes.
There held in holy passion still,
Forget thyself to marble, till
With a sad, [555](#) leaden [556](#) downward cast [557](#)
Thou fix them [558](#) on the earth as fast. [559](#)
And join with thee calm peace, and quiet,
Spare [560](#) fast, [561](#) that oft with gods doth diet,
And hears the Muses in a ring
Aye [562](#) round about Jove's altar sing.
And add to these retired [563](#) leisure,
That in trim [564](#) gardens takes his pleasure.
But first, and chiefest, with thee bring
Him [565](#) that yon soars on golden wing,
Guiding the fiery-wheelèd throne, [566](#)
The cherub Contemplation, [567](#)
And the mute silence hist [568](#) along,
'Less [569](#) Philomel [570](#) will deign a song
In her sweetest, saddest plight, [571](#)
Smoothing the rugged brow of night,
While Cynthia [572](#) checks [573](#) her dragon yoke, [574](#)
Gently o'er th' accustomed oak—
Sweet bird that shunn'st the noise of folly,
Most musical, most melancholy!

Thee, chantress,⁵⁷⁵ oft the woods among,
I woo ⁵⁷⁶ to hear thy even song,
And missing thee, I walk unseen
On the dry, smooth-shaven⁵⁷⁷ green,
To behold the wand'ring moon
Riding near her highest noon
Like one that had been led astray
Through the Heav'ns' wide pathless way,
And oft, as if her head she bowed,
Stooping through a fleecy cloud.
Oft on a plat ⁵⁷⁸ of rising ground
I hear the far-off curfew sound
Over some wide-watered shore,
Swinging slow with sullen⁵⁷⁹ roar.
Or if the air will not permit,
Some still ⁵⁸⁰ removèd⁵⁸¹ place will fit,
Where glowing embers through the room
Teach light to counterfeit a gloom,⁵⁸²
Far from all resort of mirth,
Save the cricket on the hearth,
Or the bellman's ⁵⁸³ drowsy charm⁵⁸⁴
To bless the doors from nightly harm.
Or let my lamp, at midnight hour,
Be seen in some high lonely tow'r
Where I may oft out-watch the Bear,⁵⁸⁵
With thrice great Hermes,⁵⁸⁶ or unsphere
The spirit of Plato⁵⁸⁷ to unfold ⁵⁸⁸
What worlds, or what vast regions, hold
The immortal mind that hath forsook
Her mansion⁵⁸⁹ in this fleshly nook,⁵⁹⁰
And of those daemons⁵⁹¹ that are found
In fire, air, flood, or under ground,
Whose power hath a true consent⁵⁹²
With planet, or with element.
Sometime let gorgeous⁵⁹³ tragedy
In scepterèd ⁵⁹⁴ pall ⁵⁹⁵ come sweeping by,

Presenting Thebes', [596](#) or Pelops' line, [597](#)
Or the tale of Troy divine.
Or what (though rare) of later age
Ennobled hath the buskined [598](#) stage.
But, O sad virgin, that thy power
Might raise Musaeus [599](#) from his bower,
Or bid the soul of Orpheus sing
Such notes as, warbled to the string,
Drew iron tears down Pluto's cheek
And made Hell grant what love did seek.
Or call up him [600](#) that left half told
The story of Cambuscan bold,
Of Camball, and of Algarsife, [601](#)
And who had Canace to wife,
That owned the virtuous ring and glass,
And who had Canace to wife, That owned the virtuous ring and glass,
And of the wondrous horse of brass
On which the Tartar king did ride.
And if ought else, great bards beside
In sage and solemn tunes have sung
Of tourneys, [602](#) and of trophies hung,
Of forests, and enchantments drear,
Where more is meant than meets the ear. [603](#)
Thus night oft see me in thy pale career, [604](#)
Till civil-suited [605](#) morn appear,
Not tricked [606](#) and frownced, [607](#) as she was wont
With the Attic boy [608](#) to hunt,
But kerchiefed in a comely cloud
While rocking winds are piping loud,
Or ushered with a shower still,
When the gust hath blown his fill,
Ending on the rustling leaves,
With minute drops from off the eaves.
And when the sun begins to fling
His flaring beams, me, goddess, bring
To archèd walks of twilight groves

And shadows brown that Sylvan⁶⁰⁹ loves
Of pine, or monumental oak,
Where the rude ⁶¹⁰ ax, with heavèd ⁶¹¹ stroke,
Was never heard the nymphs to daunt
Or fright them from their hallowed haunt.⁶¹²
There in close covert,⁶¹³ by some brook,
Where no profaner⁶¹⁴ eye may look,
Hide me from day's garish⁶¹⁵ eye,
While the bee, with honeyed thigh,
That at her flow'ry work doth sing,
And the waters murmuring
With such consort ⁶¹⁶ as they keep,
Entice the dewy-feathered sleep.
And let some strange mysterious dream
Wave at his wings, in airy stream
Of lively portraiture displayed,
Softly on my eye-lids laid.
And as I wake, sweet music breathe
Above, about, or underneath,
Sent by some spirit to mortals good,
Or th' unseen genius ⁶¹⁷ of the wood.
But let my due⁶¹⁸ feet never fail
To walk the studious cloisters' pale ⁶¹⁹
And love the high embowèd⁶²⁰ roof,
With antic pillars massy ⁶²¹ -proof,
And storied ⁶²² windows richly dight,⁶²³
Casting a dim religious light.
There let the pealing ⁶²⁴ organ blow
To the full voiced choir below,
In service high, and anthems clear,
As may with sweetness, through mine ear,
Dissolve me into ecstasies
And bring all Heav'n before mine eyes.
And may at last my weary age
Find out the peaceful hermitage,
The hairy gown and mossy cell

Where I may sit and rightly spell [625](#)
Of every star that Heav'n doth shew, [626](#)
And every herb that sips the dew,
Till old experience do attain
To something like prophetic strain.
 These pleasures, Melancholy, give,
And I with thee will choose to live.

ARCADES

1633–34?

Part of an entertainment presented to the Countess Dowager of Darby, at Harefield, by some noble persons of her family, who appear on the scene in pastoral habit, moving toward the seat of state, with this song:

1. Song

*Look, nymphs, and shepherds, look!
What sudden blaze of majesty
Is that which we from hence descry,[627](#)
Too divine to be mistook.*

*This, this is she
To whom our vows and wishes bend:
Here our solemn search hath end.*

*Fame, that her high worth to raise
Seemed erst so lavish and profuse,
We may justly now accuse
Of detraction from her praise.*

*Less than half we find expressed:
Envy bid conceal the rest.*

*Mark what radiant state she spreads
In circle round her shining throne,
Shooting her beams like silver threads!
This, this is she alone,*

*Sitting like a goddess bright
In the center of her light.*

*Might she the wise Latona ⁶²⁸ be,
Or the towered Cybele, ⁶²⁹
Mother of a hundred gods?
Juno dares not give her odds. ⁶³⁰
Who had thought this clime had held
A deity so unparall'ed?*

*As they come forward, the Genius of the Wood appears
and, turning toward them, says:*

*Gen. Stay, gentle ⁶³¹ swains, ⁶³² for though in this disguise
I see bright honor sparkle through your eyes.
Of famous Arcady ⁶³³ ye are, and sprung
Of that renownèd flood ⁶³⁴ so often sung,
Divine Alphéus, who by secret sluice
Stole under seas, to meet his Arethuse. ⁶³⁵
And ye the breathing roses of the wood,
Fair silver-buskin'd ⁶³⁶ nymphs as great and good,
I know this quest of yours, and free ⁶³⁷ intent,
Was all in honor and devotion meant
To the great mistress of yon princely shrine,
Whom with low reverence I adore as mine,
And with all helpful service will comply
To further this night's glad solemnity,
And lead ye where you may more near behold
What shallow-searching fame hath left untold,
Which I full oft, amidst these shades alone,
Have sat to wonder at and gaze upon.*

*For know, by lot ⁶³⁸ from Jove I am the pow'r
Of this fair wood and live in oaken bow'r
To nurse the saplings tall, and curl the grove
With ringlets quaint, ⁶³⁹ and wanton ⁶⁴⁰ windings wove.
And all my plants I save from nightly ill*

Of noisome [641](#) winds or blasting [642](#) vapors chill,
And from the boughs brush off the evil dew
And heal the harms, of [643](#) thwarting [644](#) thunder blew,
Or what the cross, dire-looking planet [645](#) smites,
Or hurtful worm with cankered [646](#) venom bites.
When evening gray doth rise, I fetch [647](#) my round
Over the mount, and all this hallowed ground,
And early, ere the odorous breath of morn
Awakes the slumb'ring leaves, or tasseled horn [648](#)
Shakes the high thicket, haste I all about,
Number [649](#) my ranks, [650](#) and visit every sprout
With puissant [651](#) words, and murmurs made to bless.
But else, in deep of night, when drowsiness
Hath locked up mortal sense, then listen I
To the celestial sirens' harmony,
That sit upon the nine enfoldèd spheres
And sing to those that hold the vital shears [652](#)
And turn the adamantine [653](#) spindle round, [654](#)
On which the fate of gods and men is wound.
Such sweet compulsion doth in music lie
To lull the daughters of Necessity
And keep unsteady [655](#) Nature to her law,
And the low [656](#) world in measured [657](#) motion draw
After the heav'nly tune, which none can hear
Of human mould, with gross [658](#) unpurgèd [659](#) ear.
And yet such music worthiest were to blaze
The peerless height of her immortal praise,
Whose luster leads us, and for her most fit,
If my inferior hand or voice could hit
Inimitable sounds. Yet as we go
Whate'er the skill of lesser gods can show
I will assay, [660](#) her worth to celebrate.
And so attend [661](#) ye toward her glittering state,
Where ye may all (that are of noble stem) [662](#)
Approach, and kiss her sacred vesture's [663](#) hem.

2. Song

O'er the smooth enamelled [664](#) green
Where no print of step hath been,
 Follow me as I sing
 And touch the warbled string.
Under the shady roof
Of branching elm, star-proof, [665](#)
 Follow me:
I will bring you where she sits,
Clad in splendor as befits
 Her deity.
 Such a rural queen
All Arcadia hath not seen.

3. Song

Nymphs and shepherds, dance no more
By sandy Ladon's [666](#) lillied banks.
On old Lycaeus, [667](#) or Cyllene [668](#) hoar, [669](#)
 Trip no more in twilight ranks.
Though Erymanth [670](#) your loss deplore
 A better soil shall give you thanks.
From the stony Maenalus [671](#)
Bring your flocks and live with us.
 Here ye shall have greater grace
 To serve the lady of this place.
 Though Syrinx [672](#) your Pan's mistress were,
 Yet Syrinx well might wait on her.
 Such a rural queen
All Arcadia hath not seen.

COMUS: A MASQUE⁶⁷³

1634; revised 1637

THE PERSONS

the attendant spirit, afterwards in the habit of Thyrsis

Comus, with his crew

the lady

brother 1 [older]

brother 2 [younger]

Sabrina, the nymph

The first scene discovers a wild wood. The attendant spirit descends (or enters):

Before the starry threshold of Jove's court
My mansion is, where those immortal shapes
Of bright aerial spirits live ensphered
In regions mild, of calm and serene air,
Above the smoke and stir of this dim spot
Which men call earth and, with low-thoughtèd care,
Confined and pestered in this pifold ⁶⁷⁴ here,
Strive to keep up a frail and fev'rish being,
Unmindful of the crown that virtue gives,
After this mortal change, to her true servants,
Amongst the enthronèd gods, on sainted seats.
Yet some there be that by due steps aspire
To lay their just hands on that golden key
That opes the palace of eternity:
To such my errand is, and but for such

I would not soil these pure ambrosial weeds
With the rank vapors of this sin-worn mould.

But to my task. Neptune—besides the sway
Of every salt flood, and each ebbing stream—
Took in, by lot twixt high and nether Jove,⁶⁷⁵
Imperial rule of all the sea-girt isles
That, like to rich and various gems, inlay
The unadornèd bosom of the deep,
Which he, to grace his tributary gods,
By course⁶⁷⁶ commits to several government
And gives them leave to wear their sapphire crowns
And wield their little tridents. But this isle,
The greatest and the best of all the main,⁶⁷⁷
He quarters to his blue-haired deities,
And all this tract that fronts the falling sun
A noble peer, of mickle⁶⁷⁸ trust and power,
Has in his charge, with tempered⁶⁷⁹ awe⁶⁸⁰ to guide
An old and haughty nation, proud in arms,
Where his fair offspring, nursed in princely lore,
Are coming to attend their father's state
And new-entrusted scepter. But their way
Lies through the perplex'd⁶⁸¹ paths of this drear Wood,
The nodding horror of whose shady brows
Threats the forlorn and wand'ring passenger.
And here their tender age might suffer peril,
But that by quick command from sov'reign Jove
I was dispatched for their defence and guard.
And listen why, for I will tell you now
What never yet was heard in tale or song
From old or modern bard, in hall or bow'r.

Bacchus, that first from out the purple grape
Crushed the sweet poison of mis-used wine,
After the Tuscan mariners transformed,
Coasting the Tyrrhene shore, as the winds listed
On Circe's island fell (who knows not Circe,
The daughter of the sun? whose charmèd cup
Whoever tasted lost his upright shape

And downward fell, into a grovelling swine).
This nymph that gazed upon his⁶⁸² clust'ring locks
With ivy berries wreathed, and his blithe youth,
Had by him, ere he parted thence, a son
Much like his father, but his mother more,
Whom therefore she brought up and Comus named,
Who ripe and frolic⁶⁸³ of ⁶⁸⁴ his full-grown age,
Roving the Celtic and Iberian fields,
At last betakes him to this ominous ⁶⁸⁵ Wood
And, in thick shelter of black shade embow'red,
Excells his mother at her mighty art,
Off 'ring to every weary traveller
His orient⁶⁸⁶ liquor, in a crystal glass,
To quench the drought of Phoebus, which as they taste
(For most do taste, through fond, ⁶⁸⁷ intemperate thirst),
Soon as the potion works, their human count'nance—
Th' express resemblance of the gods—is changed
Into some brutish form of wolf or bear
Or ounce, ⁶⁸⁸ or tiger, hog, or bearded goat,
All other parts remaining as they were.
And they, so perfect is their misery,
Not once perceive their foul disfigurement,
But boast themselves more comely⁶⁸⁹ than before
And all their friends and native home forget,
To roll with pleasure in a sensual sty.
Therefore, when any favored of high Jove
Chances to pass through this advent'rous glade,
Swift as the sparkle of a glancing star
I shoot from Heav'n, to give him safe convoy—
As now I do. But first I must put off
These my sky robes, spun out of Iris⁶⁹⁰ woof,
And take the weeds⁶⁹¹ and likeness of a swain⁶⁹²
That to the service of this house belongs,
Who with his soft pipe⁶⁹³ and smooth-dittied song
Well knows to still the wild winds when they roar,
And hush the waving woods, nor of less faith,

And in this office of his mountain watch
Likeliest and nearest to the present aid
Of this occasion.

But I hear the tread
Of hateful steps. I must be viewless, now.

*Comus enters, with a charming⁶⁹⁴ rod in one hand, his glass
in the other. With him a rout⁶⁹⁵ of monsters headed⁶⁹⁶ like
sundry sorts of wild beasts, but otherwise like men and
women, their apparel glistening. They come in, making a
riotous and unruly noise, with torches in their hands.*

COMUS. The star that bids⁶⁹⁷ the shepherd fold,⁶⁹⁸
Now the top of Heav'n doth hold,
And the gilded car of day
His glowing axle doth allay⁶⁹⁹
In the steep Atlantic stream,
And the slope⁷⁰⁰ sun his upward beam
Shoots against the dusky pole,
Pacing toward the other goal
Of his chamber in the east.
Meanwhile, welcome joy and feast,
Midnight shout and revelry,
Tipsy dance and jollity!
Braid your locks with rosy twine,⁷⁰¹
Dropping⁷⁰² odors, dropping wine.
Rigor now is gone to bed,
And advice, with scrupulous head.
Strict age, and sour severity
With their grave saws⁷⁰³ in slumber lie.
We that are of purer fire
Imitate the starry choir
Who in their nightly watchful spheres
Lead in swift round the months and years.
The sounds⁷⁰⁴ and seas, with all their finny drove,⁷⁰⁵
Now to the moon in wavering morris⁷⁰⁶ move,

And on the tawny sands and shelves
Trip the pert⁷⁰⁷ fairies and the dapper ⁷⁰⁸ elves.
By dimpled⁷⁰⁹ brook and fountain brim
The wood nymphs, decked with daisies trim,
Their merry wakes⁷¹⁰ and pastimes keep.
What has night to do with sleep?
Night has better sweets to prove:
Venus now wakes, and wakens love.

 Come, let us our rites begin!
'Tis only daylight that makes sin—
Which these dun shades will ne'er report.
Hail, goddess of nocturnal sport,
Dark-veil'd Cotytto,⁷¹¹ t'whom the secret flame
Of midnight torches burns! Mysterious dame
That ne'er art called but⁷¹² when the dragon womb
Of Stygian darkness spits her thickest gloom
And makes one blot of all the air!
Stay thy cloudy ebon⁷¹³ chair,
Wherein thou rid'st with Hecat,⁷¹⁴ and befriend
Us, thy vowèd priests, till utmost end
Of all thy dues be done, and none left out,
Ere the blabbing⁷¹⁵ eastern scout,⁷¹⁶
The nice ⁷¹⁷ morn on th' Indian steep
From her cabined loop-hole peep,
And to the tell-tale sun descry⁷¹⁸
Our conceal'd solemnity.
Come, knit hands and beat the ground
In a light fantastic round!

*The measure.*⁷¹⁹

Break off, break off! I feel the different pace
Of some chaste footing near about this ground.
Run to your shrouds,⁷²⁰ within these brakes⁷²¹ and trees:
Our number may affright. Some virgin, sure
(For so I can distinguish, by mine art),

Benighted⁷²² in these woods. Now to my charms,
And to my wily trains.⁷²³ I shall ere long
Be well-stocked with as fair a herd as grazed
About my mother, Circe. Thus I hurl
My dazzling spells into the spongy⁷²⁴ air,
Of power to cheat the eye with blear ⁷²⁵ illusion
And give it false presentments,⁷²⁶ lest the place
And my quaint ⁷²⁷ habits breed astonishment
And put the damsel to suspicious flight,
Which must not be, for that's against my course.
I under fair pretence of friendly ends
And well-placed words of glozing ⁷²⁸ courtesy,
Baited with reasons not implausible,
Wind me into the easy-hearted man,
And hug him into snares. When once her eye
Hath met the virtue of this magic dust,
I shall appear some harmless villager
Whom thrift ⁷²⁹ keeps up about ⁷³⁰ his country gear.
But here she comes. I fairly⁷³¹ step aside
And hearken, if I may, her business here.

The lady enters.

LADY. This way the noise was, if mine ear be true:
My best guide, now. Methought it was the sound
Of riot and ill-managed merriment,
Such as the jocund⁷³² flute or gamesome ⁷³³ pipe
Stirs up amongst the loose, unlettered hinds,⁷³⁴
When for their teeming flocks and granges full
In wanton⁷³⁵ dance they praise the bounteous Pan
And thank the gods amiss.⁷³⁶ I should be loath
To meet the rudeness ⁷³⁷ and swill'd insolence
Of such late wassailers.⁷³⁸ Yet where else
Shall I inform my unacquainted feet
In the blind maze of this tangled Wood?
My brothers, when they saw me wearied out

With this long way, resolving here to lodge
Under the spreading favor of these pines,
Stepped, as they said, to the next thicket side,
To bring me berries, or such cooling fruit
As the kind, hospitable woods provide.
They left me then, when the gray-hooded ev'n
Like a sad votarist [739](#) in palmer's [740](#) weeds [741](#)
Rose from the hindmost wheels of Phoebus' wain. [742](#)
But where they are, and why they came not back,
Is now the labor of my thoughts. 'Tis likeliest
They had engaged their wand'ring steps too far,
And envious darkness, ere they could return,
Had stol'n them from me—else, O thievish night!
Why shouldst thou, but for some felonious end,
In thy dark lantern thus close up the stars
That Nature hung in Heav'n, and filled their lamps
With everlasting oil, to give due light
To the misled and lonely traveller?

This is the place, as well as I may guess,
Whence ev'n now the tumult of loud mirth
Was rife [743](#) and perfect [744](#) in my list'ning ear.
Yet nought but single [745](#) darkness do I find.
What might this be? A thousand fantasies
Begin to throng into my memory,
Of calling shapes and beck'ning shadows dire,
And airy tongues that syllable men's names
On sands and shores, and desert wildernesses.

These thoughts may startle well, but not astound
The virtuous mind, that ever walks attended
By a strong siding [746](#) champion, conscience—
O welcome, pure-eyed faith, white-handed hope,
Thou flittering Angel girt with golden wings!
And thou, unblemished form of chastity,
see ye visibly, and now believe
That He, the supreme good, t' whom all things ill
Are but as slavish officers of vengeance,
Would send a glist'ring [747](#) guardian, if need were,

To keep my life and honor unassailed.
Was I deceived, or did a sable cloud
Turn forth her silver lining on the night?
I did not err: there does a sable cloud
Turn forth her silver lining on the night,
And casts a gleam over this tufted grove.
I cannot halloo to my brothers, but
Such noise as I can make, to be heard farthest,
I'll venture, for my new-enlivened spirits
Prompt me, and they perhaps are not far off.

SONG

*Sweet Echo, sweetest nymph that liv'st unseen
Within thy airy cell
By slow Maeander's [748](#) margent green,
And in the violet-embroidered vale
Where the love-lorn nightingale
Nightly to thee her sad song mourneth well,
Canst thou not tell me of a gentle pair
That liketh thy Narcissus [749](#) are?
O if thou have
Hid them in some flow'ry cave,
Tell me but where,
Sweet queen of parley, [750](#) daughter of the sphere,
So may'st thou be translated to the skies,
And give resounding grace to all Heav'n's harmonies.*

COMUS. Can any mortal mixture of earth's mould
Breathe such divine, enchanting ravishment?
Sure, something holy lodges in that breast
And with these raptures moves the vocal [751](#) air
To testify his hidden residence!
How sweetly did they float upon the wings
Of silence, through the empty-vaulted night,
At every fall [752](#) smoothing the raven down [753](#)

Of darkness, till she smiled. I have oft heard
My mother, Circe, with the Sirens three,
Amidst the flow'ry-kirtled Naiades, [754](#)
Culling their potent [755](#) herbs and baleful drugs,
Who as they sung would take the prisoned soul
And lap it in Elysium. Scylla [756](#) wept
And chid her barking waves into attention,
And fell Charybdis [757](#) murmured soft applause!
Yet they in pleasing slumber lulled the sense,
And in sweet madness robbed it of itself.
But such a sacred and home-felt [758](#) delight,
Such sober certainty of waking bliss,
I never heard till now. I'll speak to her
And she shall be my queen.

Hail, foreign wonder!
Whom certain these rough shades did never breed—
Unless the goddess that in rural shrine
Dwell'st here with Pan [759](#) or Silvan, [760](#) by blest song
Forbidding every bleak unkindly fog
To touch the prosperous growth of this tall Wood!
LADY. Nay, gentle shepherd, ill is lost that praise
That is addressed to unattending ears.
Not any boast of skill, but extreme shift [761](#)
How to regain my severed company
Compelled me to awake the courteous Echo
To give me answer from her mossy couch.
COMUS. What chance, good lady, hath bereft you thus?
LADY. Dim darkness, and this leafy labyrinth.
COMUS. Could that divide you from near-ushering [762](#)
guides?
LADY. They left me, weary, on a grassy turf.
COMUS. By falsehood, or discourtesy, or why?
LADY. To seek i' th' valley some cool friendly spring.
COMUS. And left your fair side all unguarded, lady?
LADY. They were but twain, and purposed quick return.
COMUS. Perhaps forestalling night prevented them?

LADY. How easy my misfortune is to hit! ⁷⁶³

COMUS. Imports ⁷⁶⁴ their loss, beside the present need?

LADY. No less than if I should my brothers lose.

COMUS. Were they of manly prime, or youthful bloom?

LADY. As smooth as Hebe's, ⁷⁶⁵ their unrazored lips.

COMUS. Two such I saw, what time the labored ox

In his loose traces ⁷⁶⁶ from the furrow came,

And the swinked ⁷⁶⁷ hedger ⁷⁶⁸ at his supper sat.

I saw 'em under a green mantling ⁷⁶⁹ vine

That crawls along the side of yon small hill,

Plucking ripe clusters from the tender shoots.

Their port ⁷⁷⁰ was more than human, as they stood:

I took it for a fairy vision

Of some gay ⁷⁷¹ creatures of the element

That in the colors of the rainbow live

And play i' th' pleated clouds. I was awe-struck,

And as I passed I worshipped! If those you seek,

It were a journey like the path to Heav'n

To help you find them.

LADY. Gentle villager,

What readiest way would bring me to that place?

COMUS. Due west it rises, from this shrubby point.

LADY. To find out that, good shepherd, I suppose,

In such a scant allowance of star-light,

Would overtask the best land-pilot's art,

Without the sure guess of well-practiced feet.

COMUS. I know each lane, and every alley green,

Dingle ⁷⁷² or bushy dell ⁷⁷³ of this wide wood,

And every bosky ⁷⁷⁴ bourn, ⁷⁷⁵ from side to side

My daily walks and ancient neighborhood,

And if your stray attendance ⁷⁷⁶ be yet lodged ⁷⁷⁷

Or shroud ⁷⁷⁸ within these limits, I shall know

Ere morrow wake or the low-roosted lark

From her thatched pallet ⁷⁷⁹ rouse. If otherwise,

I can conduct you, lady, to a low ⁷⁸⁰

But loyal ⁷⁸¹ cottage, where you may be safe

Till further quest.

LADY. Shepherd, I take thy word
And trust thy honest offered courtesy,
Which oft is sooner found in lowly sheds
With smoky rafters than in tap'stry halls
And courts of princes, where it first was named
And yet is most pretended. In a place
Less warranted⁷⁸² than this, or less secure,
I cannot be, that I should fear to change it.
Eye me, blest providence, and square⁷⁸³ my trial
To my proportioned strength!

Shepherd, lead on.—

The two brothers.

BROTHER 1. Unmuffle, ye faint stars, and thou fair moon
That wont'st ⁷⁸⁴ to love the traveller's benison,⁷⁸⁵
Stoop thy pale visage through an amber cloud
And disinherit chaos, that reigns here
In double night of darkness and of shades!
Or if your influence be quite dammed up
With black, usurping mists, some gentle taper ⁷⁸⁶
Through a rush⁷⁸⁷ candle from the wicker hole⁷⁸⁸
Of some clay habitation visit us
With thy long levelled rule of streaming light,
And thou shalt be our star of Arcady⁷⁸⁹
Or Tyrian⁷⁹⁰ Cynosure.⁷⁹¹

BROTHER 2. Or if our eyes
Be barred that happiness, might we but hear
The folded⁷⁹² flocks penned in their wattled⁷⁹³ cotes,⁷⁹⁴
Or sound of pastoral reed⁷⁹⁵ with oaten⁷⁹⁶ stops,⁷⁹⁷
Or whistle from the lodge, or village cock
Count the night watches to his feathery dames,
It would be some solace yet, some little cheering
In this close⁷⁹⁸ dungeon of innumerable boughs.
But O, that hapless virgin, our lost sister!
Where may she wander now? Whither betake her
From the chill dew, amongst rude burrs and thistles?

Perhaps some cold bank⁷⁹⁹ is her bolster,⁸⁰⁰ now,
Or 'gainst the rugged bark of some broad elm
Leans her unpillowed head, fraught⁸⁰¹ with sad fears.
What if in wild amazement and affright,
Or while we speak, within the direful grasp
Of savage hunger, or of savage heat?

BROTHER 1. Peace, brother: be not over-exquisite⁸⁰²
To cast⁸⁰³ the fashion⁸⁰⁴ of uncertain evils,
For grant they be so, while they rest unknown
What need a man forestall his date of grief
And run to meet what he would most avoid?
Or if they be but false alarms of fear,
How bitter is such self-delusion?

I do not think my sister so to seek,⁸⁰⁵
Or so unprincipled in virtue's book
And the sweet peace that goodness bosoms⁸⁰⁶ ever,
As that the single want of light and noise
(Not being in danger, as I trust she is not)
Could stir the constant⁸⁰⁷ mood of her calm thoughts
And put them into misbecoming⁸⁰⁸ plight.⁸⁰⁹
Virtue could see to do what virtue would,
By her own radiant light, though sun and moon
Were in the flat sea sunk. And wisdom's self
Oft seeks to sweet, retired solitude,
Where with her best nurse, contemplation,⁸¹⁰
She plumes⁸¹¹ her feathers and lets grow her wings
That in the various bustle of resort⁸¹²
Were all too ruffled,⁸¹³ and sometimes impaired.
He that has light within his own clear breast
May sit i' th' center⁸¹⁴ and enjoy bright day,
But he that hides a dark soul, and foul thoughts,
Benighted⁸¹⁵ walks under the midday sun—
Himself is his own dungeon.

BROTHER 2. 'Tis most true
That musing meditation most affects⁸¹⁶
The pensive secrecy of desert cell,⁸¹⁷

Far from the cheerful haunt⁸¹⁸ of men and herds,
And sits as safe as in a Senate house—
For who would rob a hermit of his weeds,⁸¹⁹ 390
His few books, or his beads,⁸²⁰ or maple dish,
Or do his gray hairs any violence?
But beauty, like the fair Hesperian tree
Laden with blooming gold, had need the guard
Of dragon watch with unenchanted eye,
To save her blossoms and defend her fruit
From the rash hand of bold incontinence.⁸²¹
You may as well spread out the unsunned heaps
Of miser's treasure by an outlaw's den
And tell me it is safe, as bid me hope
Danger will wink on opportunity
And let a single helpless maiden pass
Uninjured, in this wild surrounding waste.
Of night or loneliness, it recks me not:
I fear the dread events that dog them both,
Lest some ill greeting touch attempt⁸²² the person⁸²³
Of our unowned⁸²⁴ sister.

BROTHER 1. I do not, brother,
Infer,⁸²⁵ as if I thought my sister's state
Secure without all doubt or controversy.
Yet where an equal poise⁸²⁶ of hope and fear
Does arbitrate ⁸²⁷ th' event, my nature is
That I incline to hope rather than fear
And banish, gladly, squint ⁸²⁸ suspicion.
My sister is not so defenceless left
As you imagine. She has a hidden strength
Which you remember not.

BROTHER 2. What hidden strength,
Unless the strength of Heav'n, if you mean that?
BROTHER 1. I mean that too, but yet a hidden strength
Which, if Heav'n gave it, may be termed her own.
'Tis chastity, my brother, chastity.
She that has that is clad in complete steel,

And like a quivered nymph with arrows keen
May trace [829](#) huge forests and unharbored [830](#) heaths, [831](#)
Infamous hills and sandy perilous wilds,
Where through the sacred rays of chastity
No savage fierce, bandit or mountaineer,
Will dare to soil her virgin purity.
Yea, there where very desolation dwells,
By grots [832](#) and caverns shagged [833](#) with horrid [834](#) shades,
She may pass on with unblenched [835](#) majesty—
Be it not done in pride or in presumption.
Some say no evil thing that walks by night
In fog, or fire, by lake or moory [836](#) fen, [837](#)
Blue meager hag or stubborn unlaid [838](#) ghost
That breaks his chains at curfew time,
No goblin or swart [839](#) fairy of the mine, [840](#)
Has hurtful power o'er true virginity.

Do you believe me yet, or shall I call
Antiquity from the old schools of Greece
To testify the arms [841](#) of chastity?
Hence had the huntress Dian her dread bow,
Fair silver-shafted queen, forever chaste,
Wherewith she tamed the brindled [842](#) lioness
And spotted mountain pard, [843](#) but set at naught
The frivolous bolt [844](#) of Cupid. Gods and men
Feared her stern frown, and she was queen o' th' woods.
What was that snaky-headed Gorgon shield
That wise Minerva wore, unconquered virgin,
Wherewith she freezed her foes to congealed stone,
But rigid looks of chaste austerity,
And noble grace that dashed [845](#) brute violence
With sudden adoration and blank [846](#) awe!
So dear to Heav'n is saintly chastity
That when a soul is found sincerely so
A thousand liveried [847](#) Angels lackey [848](#) her,
Driving far off each thing of sin and guilt,
And in clear dream and solemn vision

Tell her of things that no gross ear can hear,
 Till oft converse with Heav'nly habitants
 Begin to cast a beam on th' outward shape,
 The unpolluted temple of the mind,
 And turns it by degrees to the soul's essence,
 Till all be made immortal. But when lust
 By unchaste looks, loose gestures, and foul talk,
 But most by lewd and lavish ⁸⁴⁹ act of sin
 Lets in ⁸⁵⁰ defilement to the inward parts,
 The soul grows clotted by contagion, ⁸⁵¹
 Embodies ⁸⁵² and embrates ⁸⁵³ till she quite lose
 The divine property of her first being.
 Such are those thick and gloomy shadows damp,
 Oft seen in charnel ⁸⁵⁴ vaults and sepulchers
 Hovering, and sitting by a new-made grave,
 As ⁸⁵⁵ loath to leave the body that it loved
 And linked itself, by carnal sensual'ty,
 To a degenerate and degraded state.
 BROTHER 2. How charming is divine ⁸⁵⁶ philosophy!
 Not harsh and crabbed, as dull fools suppose,
 But musical as is Apollo's lute,
 And a perpetual feast of nectared sweets,
 Where no crude surfeit reigns.
 BROTHER 1. List, list! I hear
 Some faroff halloo break the silent air.
 BROTHER 2. Methought so too. What should it be?
 BROTHER 1. For certain,
 Either someone, like us night-foundered here,
 Or else some neighbor woodman—or, at worst,
 Some roving robber calling to his fellows.
 BROTHER 2. Heav'n keep my sister! Again: again, and
 near!
 Best draw ⁸⁵⁷ and stand upon our guard.
 BROTHER 1. I'll halloo.
 If he be friendly, he comes well. If not,
 Defence is a good cause, and Heav'n be for us.

The attendant spirit [enters], habited like a shepherd.

That halloo I should know. What are you? Speak!

Come not too near: you fall on iron stakes,⁸⁵⁸ else!

SPIRIT. What voice is that, my young lord? Speak again.

BROTHER 2. O brother, 'tis my father's shepherd—sure!

BROTHER 1. Thyrsis? Whose artful strains⁸⁵⁹ have oft
delayed

The huddling ⁸⁶⁰brook, to hear his madrigal,

And sweetened every muskrose of the dale.

How cam'st thou here, good swain? Hath any ram

Slipped from his fold, or young kid lost his dam,⁸⁶¹

Or straggling⁸⁶² weather the pent flock forsook?⁸⁶³

How could'st thou find this dark, sequestered nook?

SPIRIT. O my loved master's heir, and his next ⁸⁶⁴joy,

I came not here on such a trivial toy

As a strayed ewe, or to pursue the stealth

Of pilfering wolf. Not all the fleecy wealth

That doth enrich these downs⁸⁶⁵ is worth a thought

To this my errand, and the care ⁸⁶⁶it brought!

But O, my virgin lady: where is she?

How chance she is not in your company?

BROTHER 1. To tell thee sadly, shepherd, without blame

Or our neglect we lost her as we came.

SPIRIT. Aye me, unhappy! Then my fears are true.

BROTHER I. What fears, good Thyrsis? Prithee, briefly show.

SPIRIT. I'll tell you. 'Tis not vain or fabulous ⁸⁶⁷

(Though so esteemed by shallow ignorance),

What the sage poets, taught by th' Heav'nly Muse,

Storied ⁸⁶⁸of old in high immortal verse

Of dire chimeras ⁸⁶⁹and enchanted isles,

And rifted⁸⁷⁰ rocks whose entrance leads to Hell,

For such there be. But unbelief is blind.

Within the navel of this hideous Wood,

Immured in cypress shades, a sorcerer dwells,
Of Bacchus and of Circe born, great Comus,
Deep skilled in all his mother's witcheries,
And here to every thirsty wanderer
By sly enticement gives his baneful⁸⁷¹ cup,
With many murmurs⁸⁷² mixed, whose pleasing poison
The visage quite transforms of him who drinks,
And the inglorious likeness of a beast
Fixes instead, unmoulding ⁸⁷³ reason's mintage⁸⁷⁴
Charactered⁸⁷⁵ in the face. This have I learned,
Tending my flocks hard by, i' th' hilly crofts⁸⁷⁶
That brow this bottom glade, whence night by night
He and his monstrous rout⁸⁷⁷ are heard to howl
Like stabled⁸⁷⁸ wolves or tigers at their prey,
Doing abhorrèd rites to Hecate⁸⁷⁹
In their obscurèd haunts of inmost⁸⁸⁰ bow'rs.
Yet have they many baits and guileful spells
T' inveigle and invite th' unwary sense
Of them that pass, unweeting,⁸⁸¹ by the way.
This evening, late—by then the chewing flocks
Had ta'n their supper on the savory herb—
I sat me down to watch, upon a bank
With ivy canopied and interwove
With flaunting⁸⁸² honeysuckle, and began,
Wrapped in a pleasing fit of melancholy,
To meditate my rural minstrelsy
Till Fancy had her fill, but ere a close⁸⁸³
The wonted⁸⁸⁴ roar was up amidst the woods
And filled the air with barbarous dissonance,
At which I ceased and listened them a while,
Till an unusual stop of sudden silence
Gave respite to the drowsy, frightened steeds
That draw the litter of close-curtained sleep.
At last a soft and solemn breathing sound
Rose like a steam of rich distilled perfumes
And stole upon the air, that even silence

Was took, ere she was ware, and wished she might
Deny her nature and be never more
Still to be so displaced. I was all ear,
And took in strains that might create a soul
Under the ribs of Death. But O, ere long
Too well I did perceive it was the voice
Of my most honored lady, your dear sister.
Amazed I stood, harrowed with grief and fear,
And O, poor hapless nightingale, thought I,
How sweet thou sing'st, how near the deadly snare!
Then down the lawns I ran, with headlong haste,
Through paths and turnings often trod by day,
Till guided by mine ear I found the place
Where that damned wizard, hid in sly disguise
(For so by certain signs I knew), had met
Already, ere my best speed could prevent,⁸⁸⁵
The aidless innocent lady, his wished prey,
Who gently asked if he had seen such two,
Supposing him some neighbor villager.
Longer I durst not stay, but soon I guessed
Ye were the two she meant. With that I sprung
Into swift flight, till I had found you here.
But further know I not.

BROTHER 2. O night and shades,
How are ye joined with Hell in triple knot
Against the unarmed weakness of one virgin,
Alone and helpless! Is this the confidence
You gave me, brother?

BROTHER 1. Yes, and keep it still,
Lean on it safely: not a period⁸⁸⁶
Shall be unsaid for me! Against the threats
Of malice or of sorcery, or that power
Which erring men call chance, this I hold firm:
Virtue may be assailed, but never hurt,
Surprised by unjust force—but not enthralled.⁸⁸⁷
Yea, even that which mischief ⁸⁸⁸ meant most harm
Shall in the happy trial prove most glory,

But evil on itself shall back recoil
And mix no more with goodness, when at last
Gathered like scum, and settled to itself,
It shall be in eternal restless change
Self-fed and self-consumed. If this fail,
The pillared firmament is rottenness
And earth's base built on stubble. But come, let's on!
Against th' opposing will and arm of Heav'n
May never this just sword be lifted up
But for that damned magician, let him be girt
With all the grisly legions⁸⁸⁹ that troop
Under the sooty flag of Acheron,⁸⁹⁰
Harpies⁸⁹¹ and hydras,⁸⁹² or all the monstrous bugs⁸⁹³
'Twixt Africa and Ind! I'll find him out
And force him to restore his purchase⁸⁹⁴ back,
Or drag him by the curls and cleave his scalp
Down to the hips!
SPIRIT. Alas, good vent'rous youth,
I love thy courage yet, and bold emprise,⁸⁹⁵ 610
But here thy sword can do thee little stead.⁸⁹⁶
Far other arms and other weapons must
Be those that quell the might of hellish charms.
He with his bare wand can unthread thy joints
And crumble all thy sinews!
BROTHER 1. Why prithee, shepherd,
How durst thou then thyself approach so near
As to make this relation?⁸⁹⁷
SPIRIT. Care and utmost shifts!⁸⁹⁸
How to secure the lady from surprisal
Brought to my mind a certain shepherd lad
Of small regard⁸⁹⁹ to see to, yet well skilled
In every virtuous⁹⁰⁰ plant and healing herb
That spreads her verdant leaf to th' morning ray.
He loved me well, and oft would beg me sing,
Which when I did, he on the tender grass
Would sit and hearken e'en to ecstasy,

And in requital ope his leathern scrip⁹⁰¹
And show me simples⁹⁰² of a thousand names,
Telling their strange and vigorous faculties.
Amongst the rest a small unsightly root,
But of divine effect, he culled⁹⁰³ me out.
The leaf was darkish and had prickles on it,
But in another country, as he said,
Bore a bright golden flow'r—but not in this soil—
Unknown, and like esteemed—and the dull swain
Treads on it daily with his clouted⁹⁰⁴ shoon.
And yet more med'cinal is it than that Moly⁹⁰⁵
Which Hermes⁹⁰⁶ once to wise Ulysses gave.
He⁹⁰⁷ called it Haemony, and gave it me,
And bade me keep it as of sov'reign⁹⁰⁸ use
'Gainst all enchantments, mildew blast,⁹⁰⁹ or damp,
Or ghastly Furies apparition.⁹¹⁰

I pursed it up, but little reck'ning made,
Till now that this extremity compelled.
But now I find it true, for by this means
I knew the foul enchanter, though disguised—
Entered the very lime-twigs⁹¹¹ of his spells
And yet came off.⁹¹² If you have this about you
(As I will give you when we go) you may
Boldly assault the necromancer's hall—
Where if he be, with dauntless hardihood
And brandished blade rush on him, break his glass
And shed the luscious⁹¹³ liquor on the ground.
But seize his wand. Though he and his cursed crew
Fierce sign of battle make, and menace high,
Or like the sons of Vulcan vomit smoke,
Yet will they soon retire,⁹¹⁴ if he but shrink.⁹¹⁵
BROTHER I. Thyrsis, lead on apace.⁹¹⁶ I'll follow thee.
And some good Angel bear a shield before us!

*The scene changes to a stately palace, set out with all
manner of deliciousness: soft music, tables spread with all
dainties. Comus appears, with his rabble, and the lady set*

in an enchanted chair, to whom he offers his glass, which she puts by and goes about to rise.

COMUS. Nay, lady. Sit. If I but wave this wand
Your nerves are all chained up in alabaster
And you a statue—or as Daphne was,
Root-bound, that fled Apollo.

LADY. Fool, do not boast.

Thou canst not touch the freedom of my mind
With all thy charms, although this corporal rind
Thou has emmanacled, while Heav'n sees good.

COMUS. Why are you vexed, lady? Why do you frown?
Here dwell no frowns, nor anger. From these gates
Sorrow flies far. See here be all the pleasures
That Fancy can beget on youthful thoughts,
When the fresh blood grows lively and returns
Brisk as the April buds in primrose season.

And first behold this cordial⁹¹⁷ julip,⁹¹⁸ here,
That flames and dances in his crystal bounds,⁹¹⁹
With spirits of balm and fragrant syrups mixed.
Not that nepenthes⁹²⁰ which the wife of Thon⁹²¹

In Egypt gave to Jove-born Helena
Is of such power to stir up joy as this—
To life so friendly, or so cool to thirst.
Why should you be so cruel to yourself,
And to those dainty limbs which Nature lent
For gentle usage and soft delicacy?

But you invert the cov'nants⁹²² of her trust,
And harshly deal like an ill borrower
With that which you received on other terms,
Scorning the unexempt⁹²³ condition⁹²⁴
By which all mortal frailty must subsist,
Refreshment after toil, ease after pain,
That⁹²⁵ have been tired all day without repast,
And timely rest have wanted. But, fair virgin,
This will restore all soon.⁹²⁶

LADY. 'Twill not, false traitor!

'Twill not restore the truth and honesty
That thou hast banished from thy tongue with lies.
Was this the "cottage," and the "safe abode"
Thou toldst me of? What grim aspects [927](#) are these,
These ugly-headed monsters? Mercy guard me!
Hence with thy brewed enchantments, foul deceiver!
Hast thou betrayed my credulous innocence
With visored [928](#) falsehood and base forgeries
And wouldst thou seek again to trap me, here,
With liquorish baits, fit to ensnare a brute?
Were it a draught for Juno, when she banquets,
I would not taste thy treasonous offer! None
But such as are good men can give good things,
And that which is not good is not delicious
To a well-governed and wise appetite.
COMUS. O foolishness of men! that lend their ears
To those budge [929](#) doctors of the stoic fur,
And fetch their precepts from the cynic tub, [930](#)
Praising the lean and sallow abstinence.
Wherefore did Nature pour her bounties forth
With such a full and unwithdrawing hand,
Covering the earth with odors, fruits, and flocks,
Thronging the seas with spawn [931](#) innumerable,
But all to please and sate the curious taste?
And set to work millions of spinning worms
That in their green shops weave the smooth-haired silk
To deck her sons. And that no corner might
Be vacant of her plenty in her own loins
She hatched [932](#) th' all-worshipped ore and precious gems
To store [933](#) her children with. If all the world
Should in a pet [934](#) of temperance feed on pulse, [935](#)
Drink the clear stream, and nothing wear but frieze, [936](#)
Th' all-giver would be unthanked, would be unpraised,
Not half His riches known, and yet despised,
And we would serve Him as a grudging master,
As a penurious niggard [937](#) of His wealth,

And live like Nature's bastards, not her sons,
Who⁹³⁸ would be quite surcharged ⁹³⁹ with her own weight
And strangled with her waste fertility,
Th' earth cumbered, and the winged air darked with plumes.⁹⁴⁰
The herds would over-multitude their lords,
The sea o'er-fraught ⁹⁴¹ would swell, and th' unsought diamonds
Would so emblaze the forehead of the deep,
And so be-stud with stars, that they below
Would grow inured to light, and come at last
To gaze upon the sun with shameless brows.
List, lady. Be not coy, and be not cozened ⁹⁴²
With that same vaunted ⁹⁴³ name, virginity.
Beauty is Nature's coin, must not be hoarded,
But must be current,⁹⁴⁴ and the good thereof
Consists in mutual and partaken bliss,
Unsavory in th' enjoyment of itself.
If you let slip time, like a neglected rose
It withers on the stalk, with languished head.
Beauty is Nature's brag,⁹⁴⁵ and must be shown
In courts, at feasts, on high solemnities
Where most may wonder at the workmanship.
It is for homely⁹⁴⁶ features to keep home:
They had their name thence. Coarse complexions ⁹⁴⁷
And cheeks of sorry⁹⁴⁸ grain ⁹⁴⁹ will serve to ply⁹⁵⁰
The sampler ⁹⁵¹ or to tease ⁹⁵² the housewife's wool.
What need a vermeil-tinctured lip for that?
Love-darting eyes, or tresses like the morn?
There was another meaning in those gifts!
Think what, and be advised.⁹⁵³ You are but young yet.
LADY. I had not thought to have unlocked my lips
In this unhallowed air, but ⁹⁵⁴ that this juggler ⁹⁵⁵
Would think to charm my judgment as⁹⁵⁶ mine eyes,
Obtruding⁹⁵⁷ false rules pranked⁹⁵⁸ in reason's garb!
I hate when vice can bolt ⁹⁵⁹ her arguments
And virtue has no tongue to check her ⁹⁶⁰ pride.
Impostor! Do not charge⁹⁶¹ most innocent Nature,

As if she would⁹⁶² her children should be riotous
With her abundance! She, good cateress,⁹⁶³
Means her provision only to the good
That live according to her sober laws
And holy dictate of spare temperance.
If every just man that now pines with want
Had but a moderate and beseeming⁹⁶⁴ share
Of that which lewdly-pampered luxury
Now heaps upon some few with vast excess,
Nature's full blessings would be well dispensed
In unsuperfluous,⁹⁶⁵ ev'n proportion,⁹⁶⁶
And she no whit encumbered with her store.
And then the giver would be better thanked,
His praise due paid—for winish gluttony
N'er looks to Heav'n, amidst his gorgeous⁹⁶⁷ feast,
But with besotted base ingratitude
Crams, and blasphemes his feeder.

Shall I go on?

Or have I said enough? To him that dares
Arm his profuse tongue with contemptuous words
Against the sun-clad power of chastity
Fain would I something say—yet to what end?
Thou hast nor ear nor soul to apprehend
The sublime notion and high mystery ⁹⁶⁸
That must be uttered, to unfold the sage
And serious doctrine of virginity.
And thou art worthy that thou shouldst not know
More happiness than this thy present lot.
Enjoy your dear wit and gay rhetoric
That hath so well been taught her dazzling fence!⁹⁶⁹
Thou art not fit to hear thyself convinced.
Yet should I try, the uncontrollèd worth
Of this pure cause would kindle my rapt spirits
To such a flame of sacred vehemence
That dumb things would be moved to sympathize,
And the brute earth would lend her nerves,⁹⁷⁰ and shake

Till all thy magic structures reared so high
Were shattered into heaps o'er thy false head!
COMUS. She fables not. I feel that I do fear
Her words, set off by some superior power.
And, though not mortal, yet a cold shudd'ring dew
Dips me all o'er, as when the wrath of Jove
Speaks thunder and the chains of Erebus⁹⁷¹
To some of Saturn's crew. I must dissemble
And try⁹⁷² her yet more strongly.

Come, no more.

This is mere moral babble and direct
Against the canon laws of our foundation.⁹⁷³
I must not suffer this, yet 'tis but the lees⁹⁷⁴
And settlings of a melancholy blood.
But this will cure all straight!⁹⁷⁵ One sip of this
Will bathe the drooping spirits in delight
Beyond the bliss of dreams. Be wise, and taste.
*The brothers rush in, with swords drawn, wrest his glass
out of his hand, and break it against the ground. His rout
makes sign of resistance, but all are driven in. The
attendant spirit comes in.*

SPIRIT. What? Have you let the false enchanter scape?
O ye mistook, ye should have snatched his wand
And bound him fast. Without his rod reversed,
And backward mutters of dissevering⁹⁷⁶ power,
We cannot free the lady that sits here,
In stony fetters fixed and motionless.
Yet stay,⁹⁷⁷ be not disturbed. Now I bethink me:
Some other means I have which may be used,
Which once of Melibaeus⁹⁷⁸ old I learned—
The soothest⁹⁷⁹ shepherd that e'er piped⁹⁸⁰ on plains.

There is a gentle nymph, not far from hence,
That with moist curb⁹⁸¹ sways⁹⁸² the smooth Severn⁹⁸³ stream.
Sabrina is her name, a virgin pure.
Whilom⁹⁸⁴ she was the daughter of Locrine,⁹⁸⁵
That had the scepter from his father Brute.⁹⁸⁶

She, guiltless damsel, flying the mad pursuit
Of her enraged stepdam, Gwendolen,
Commended her fair innocence to the flood⁹⁸⁷
That stayed her flight with his cross-flowing course.
The water nymphs that in the bottom⁹⁸⁸ played
Held up their pearlèd wrists, and took her in,
Bearing her straight to agèd Nereus⁹⁸⁹ hall,
Who, piteous of her woes, reared her lank⁹⁹⁰ head
And gave her to his daughters to embathe
In nectared lavers,⁹⁹¹ strewn with asphodil,
And through the porch⁹⁹² and inlet of each sense
Dropped in ambrosial oils, till she revived
And underwent a quick immortal change,
Made goddess of the river. Still she retains
Her maiden gentleness, and oft at eve
Visits the herds along the twilight meadows,
Helping all urchin⁹⁹³ blasts⁹⁹⁴ and ill luck signs
That the shrewd meddling elf delights to make,
Which she with precious vialèd liquors heals.
For which the shepherds at their festivals
Carol⁹⁹⁵ her goodness, loud in rustic lays,⁹⁹⁶
And throw sweet garland wreaths into her stream,
Of pansies, pinks, and gaudy daffodils.
And, as the old swain said, she can unlock
The clasping⁹⁹⁷ charm and thaw the numbing spell,
If she be right invoked in warbled song,
For maidenhood she loves, and will be swift
To aid a virgin such as was herself,
In hard besetting⁹⁹⁸ need. This will I try
And add the power of some adjuring⁹⁹⁹ verse.

SONG

Sabrina, fair,

*Listen where thou are sitting
Under the glassy, cool, translucent wave,
In twisted braids of lillies knitting
The loose train of the amber-dropping hair.
Listen for dear honor's sake,
Goddess of the silver lake,
Listen and save.*

Listen and appear to us
In name of great Oceanus¹⁰⁰⁰ —
By th' earth-shaking Neptune's mace,
And Tethys' grave, majestic pace—
By hoary Nereus' wrinkled look,
And the Carpathian wizard's hook—
By scaly Triton's winding¹⁰⁰¹ shell,
And old sooth-saying Glaucus' spell—
By Leucothea's¹⁰⁰² lovely hands,
And her son that rules the strands¹⁰⁰³ —
By Thetis' tinsel-slippered feet,
And the songs of Sirens' sweet—
By dead Parthenope's¹⁰⁰⁴ dear tomb,
And fair Ligéa's golden comb,
Wherewith she sits on diamond rocks,
Sleeking her soft, alluring locks—
By all the nymphs that nightly dance
Upon thy streams, with wily¹⁰⁰⁵ glance!
Rise, rise, and heave¹⁰⁰⁶ thy rosy head
From thy coral-paven bed,
And bridle¹⁰⁰⁷ in thy headlong wave
Till thou our summons answered have.
Listen and save.

*Sabrina rises, attended by water-nymphs, and sings:
By the rushy-fringed bank,
Where grows the willow and the osier dank,
My sliding chariot stays,
Thick set with agate and the azure sheen*

*Of turquoise blue, and emerald green
That in the channel strays,
Whilst from off the waters fleet [1008](#)
Thus I set my printless feet
O'er the cowslips' velvet head,
That bends not as I tread.*

Gentle swain, at thy request
I am here.
SPIRIT. Goddess dear,
We implore thy powerful hand
To undo the charmèd band [1009](#)
Of true virgin, here distressed [1010](#)
Through the force and through the wile
Of unblest enchanter vile.
SABRINA. Shepherd, it is my office [1011](#) best
To help ensnarèd chastity.
Brightest lady, look on me!
Thus I sprinkle on thy breast
Drops that from my fountain pure
I have kept, of precious cure. [1012](#)
Thrice upon thy finger's tip,
Thrice upon thy rubied lip!
Next, this marble-venomed seat
Smeared with gums [1013](#) of glutinous [1014](#) heat
I touch with chaste palms, moist and cold.
Now the spell hath lost his hold—
And I must haste, ere morning hour,
To wait [1015](#) in Amphitrite's [1016](#) bow'r.
Sabrina descends, and the lady rises out of her seat.
SPIRIT. Virgin, daughter of Locrine,
Sprung of old Anchises' [1017](#) line,
May thy brimmèd waves, for this,
Their full tribute never miss
From a thousand petty [1018](#) rills [1019](#)
That tumble down the snowy hills.

Summer drought or singèd air
Never scorch thy tresses fair,
Nor wet October's torrent flood
Thy molten crystal fill¹⁰²⁰ with mud.
May thy billows roll ashore
The beryl¹⁰²¹ and the golden ore.
May thy lofty head be crowned
With many a tow'r and terrace round,
And here and there thy banks upon
With groves of myrrh and cinnamon.

 Come lady, while Heav'n lends us grace
Let us fly this cursèd place,
Lest the sorcerer us entice
With some other new device.
Not a taste or needless sound
Till we come to holier ground.
I shall be your faithful guide
Through this gloomy covert ¹⁰²² wide,
And not many furlongs thence
Is your father's residence,
Where this night are met in state
Many a friend to gratulate
His wishèd presence, and beside
All the swains that there abide,
With jigs and rural dance resort.¹⁰²³
We shall catch them at their sport,
And our sudden coming there
Will double all their mirth and cheer.
Come, let us haste! The stars grow high—
But night sits monarch yet in the mid-sky.

The scene changes, presenting Ludlow Town and the [Lord] President's castle. Then come in country dancers. After them, the attendant spirit, with the two brothers and the lady.

SONG

*SPIRIT. Back, shepherds, back! Enough, your play,
Till next sunshine holiday.
Here be, without duck [1024](#) or nod,
Other trippings to be trod
Of lighter toes, and such court guise [1025](#)
As Mercury did first devise [1026](#)
With the mincing [1027](#) Dryades, [1028](#)
On the lawns and on the leas. [1029](#)
This second song presents them to their father and mother:*

[SONG 2]

*Noble lord, and lady bright,
I have brought ye new delight.
Here behold so goodly grown
Three fair branches of your own.
Heav'n hath timely tried their youth,
Their faith, their patience, and their truth,
And sent them here, through hard assays, [1030](#)
With a crown of deathless praise,
To triumph in victorious dance
O'er sensual folly and intemperance.*

The dances ended, the spirit epiloguizes:

*SPIRIT. To the ocean now I fly,
And those happy climes that lie
Where day never shuts his eye,
Up in the broad fields of the sky.
There I suck the liquid air*

All amidst the gardens fair
Of Hesperus and his daughters three,
That sing about the golden tree.
Along the crispèd [1031](#) shades and bow'rs
Revels the spruce [1032](#) and jocund spring.
The Graces, and the rosy-bosomed Hours,
Thither all their bounties bring,
That [1033](#) there eternal summer dwells,
And west winds, with musky wing,
About the cedarn alleys [1034](#) fling
Nard, [1035](#) and cassia's balmy smells.
Iris [1036](#) there with humid bow
Waters the odorous banks that blow [1037](#)
Flowers of more mingled hue
Than her purflèd [1038](#) scarf can shew,
And drenches with Elysian dew
(List, mortals, if your ears be true)
Beds of hyacinth and roses,
Where young Adonis [1039](#) oft reposes,
Waxing [1040](#) well of his deep wound
In slumber soft, and on the ground
Sadly sits the Assyrian queen. [1041](#)
But far above, in spangled sheen,
Celestial Cupid, her fair son advanced, [1042](#)
Holds his dear Psyche, [1043](#) sweet [1044](#) entranced
After her wand'ring labors long,
Till free consent the gods among
Make her his eternal bride
And from her fair, unspotted side
Two blissful twins are to be born,
Youth and Joy. So Jove hath sworn.

But now my task is smoothly [1045](#) done.
I can fly or I can run
Quickly to the green earth's end,
Where the bowed welkin [1046](#) slow doth bend,
And from thence can soar as soon

To the corners [1047](#) of the moon.

Mortals that would follow me,

Love virtue: she alone is free.

She can teach ye how to climb

Higher than the sphery chime—[1048](#)

Or, if virtue feeble [1049](#) were,

Heav'n itself would stoop to her.

ON TIME¹⁰⁵⁰

1633–37?

*Fly, envious time, till thou run out thy race!
Call on the lazy leaden-stepping ¹⁰⁵¹ hours,
Whose speed is but the heavy plummet's ¹⁰⁵² pace,
And glut thyself with what thy womb¹⁰⁵³ devours—
Which is no more than what is false and vain
And merely mortal dross.¹⁰⁵⁴
So little is our loss,
So little is thy gain.
For when as each thing bad thou hast entombed,
And last of all thy greedy self consumed,
Then long eternity shall greet our bliss
With an individual kiss.¹⁰⁵⁵
And joy shall overtake us as a flood
When everything that is sincerely good
And perfectly divine
With truth, and peace, and love shall ever shine
About the supreme throne
Of Him t' whose happy-making sight alone,
When once our Heav'nly-guided soul shall climb,
Then all this earthy grossness quit,¹⁰⁵⁶
Attired with stars we shall forever sit,
Triumphing over death, and chance, and thee, O time!*

UPON THE CIRCUMCISION

1633–37

Ye flaming powers [1057](#) and wingèd warriors bright
That erst with music and triumphant song
First heard by happy watchful shepherd's ear,
So sweetly sung your joy the clouds along,
Through the soft silence of the list'ning night,
Now mourn, and if sad share with us to bear
Your fiery essence can distill no tear,
Burn in your sighs and borrow
Seas wept from our deep sorrow.
He who with all Heav'n's heraldry [1058](#) whilere [1059](#)
Entered the world, now bleeds to give us ease.
Alas, how soon our sin
Sore [1060](#) doth begin
His infancy to cease! [1061](#)
O more exceeding love or law more just?
Just law, indeed—but more exceeding love!
For we, by rightful doom [1062](#) remediless,
Were lost in death till He that dwelt above,
High-throned in secret bliss, for us frail dust
Emptied His glory, ev'n to nakedness,
And that great cov'nant [1063](#) which we still transgress
Entirely satisfied,
And the full wrath beside
Of vengeful justice bore for our excess,
And seals obedience, first, with wounding smart
This day, but O, ere long
Huge pangs, and strong,

Will pierce more near His heart.

AT A SOLEMN MUSIC

1637

*Blest pair of Sirens, pledges of Heav'n's joy,
Sphere-born, harmonious sisters, voice and verse,
Wed your divine sounds, and mixed power employ,
Dead things with inbreathed sense able to pierce
And to our high-raised fantasy present
That undisturbèd song of pure content [1064](#)
Aye [1065](#) sung before the sapphire-colored throne
To Him that sits thereon,
With saintly shout and solemn jubilee,
Where the bright Seraphim in burning row
Their loud up-lifted Angel trumpets blow
And the Cherubic host, in thousand choirs,
Touch their golden harps of immortal wires,
With those just Spirits that wear victorious palms
Hymns devout and holy psalms
Singing everlastingly,
That we on earth with undiscording [1066](#) voice
May rightly answer that melodious noise,
As once we did, till disproportioned sin
Jarred against Nature's chime and with harsh din
Broke the fair music that all creatures made
To their great Lord, whose love their motion swayed
In perfect diapason, [1067](#) whilst they stood
In first [1068](#) obedience and their state of good.
O may we soon again renew that song
And keep in tune with Heav'n, till God ere-long
To His celestial consort [1069](#) us unite*

To live with Him, and sing in endless morn of light.

LYCIDAS¹⁰⁷⁰

1637

In this monody¹⁰⁷¹ the author bewails a learned friend,¹⁰⁷² unfortunately drowned in his passage from Chester [in W. England] on the Irish seas, 1637. And by occasion¹⁰⁷³ foretells the ruin of our corrupted clergy, then in their height.

*Yet once more, O ye laurels,¹⁰⁷⁴ and once more,
Ye myrtles¹⁰⁷⁵ brown, with ivy¹⁰⁷⁶ never sear,¹⁰⁷⁷
I come to pluck your berries harsh and crude¹⁰⁷⁸
And with forced¹⁰⁷⁹ fingers rude¹⁰⁸⁰
Shatter your leaves before the mellowing¹⁰⁸¹ year.
Bitter constraint,¹⁰⁸² and sad occasion dear,
Compels me to disturb your season due,
For Lycidas is dead, dead ere his prime,
Young Lycidas, and hath not left his peer.*

*Who would not sing for Lycidas? He well knew
Himself to sing, and build the lofty rhyme.
He must not float upon his wat'ry bier
Unwept, and welter¹⁰⁸³ to the parching¹⁰⁸⁴ wind,
Without the meed¹⁰⁸⁵ of some melodious tear.*

*Begin then, sisters of the sacred well,¹⁰⁸⁶
That from beneath the seat of Jove doth spring,
Begin, and somewhat¹⁰⁸⁷ loudly sweep the string.
Hence with denial vain, and coy¹⁰⁸⁸ excuse!
So may¹⁰⁸⁹ some gentle¹⁰⁹⁰ muse
With lucky¹⁰⁹¹ words favor¹⁰⁹² my destined¹⁰⁹³ urn¹⁰⁹⁴
And, as he passes, turn*

And bid fair peace be to my sable shroud.¹⁰⁹⁵
For we were nursed upon the self-same hill,
Fed the same flock, by fountain, shade, and rill.¹⁰⁹⁶
Together both, ere the high lawns¹⁰⁹⁷ appeared
Under the opening eye-lids of the morn,
We drove¹⁰⁹⁸ afield, and both together heard
What time¹⁰⁹⁹ the gray-fly ¹¹⁰⁰ winds¹¹⁰¹ her sultry¹¹⁰² horn,
Batt'ning¹¹⁰³ our flocks with the fresh dews of night,
Oft till the star¹¹⁰⁴ that rose at ev'ning bright
Toward Heav'n's descent had sloped his westering wheel.¹¹⁰⁵
Meanwhile, the rural ditties were not mute,
Tempered ¹¹⁰⁶ to th' oaten¹¹⁰⁷ flute.
Rough satyrs¹¹⁰⁸ danced, and fauns with clov'n heel
From the glad sound would not be absent long.
And old Damoetas¹¹⁰⁹ loved to hear our song.
But O the heavy change, now thou art gone,
Now thou art gone and never must return!
Thee, shepherd, thee the woods and desert caves,
With wild thyme and the gadding ¹¹¹⁰ vine o'er-grown,
And all their echoes mourn.
The willows, and the hazel copses green,
Shall now no more be seen
Fanning their joyous leaves to thy soft lays.¹¹¹¹
As killing as the canker ¹¹¹² to the rose,
Or taint-worm¹¹¹³ to the weanling ¹¹¹⁴ herds that graze,
Or frost to flow'rs, that their gay wardrobe wear,
When first the white thorn blows—¹¹¹⁵
Such, Lycidas, thy loss to shepherd's ear.
Where were ye, nymphs, when the remorseless deep
Closed o'er the head of your loved Lycidas?
For neither were ye playing on the steep,¹¹¹⁶
Where your old bards,¹¹¹⁷ the famous Druids lie,
Nor on the shaggy top of Mona¹¹¹⁸ high,
Nor yet where Deva ¹¹¹⁹ spreads her wizard ¹¹²⁰ stream:
Aye me, I fondly dream!

Had ye been there, for what could that have done?
What could the muse [1121](#) herself, that [1122](#) Orpheus bore, [1123](#)
The muse herself, for her enchanting [1124](#) son
Whom universal [1125](#) nature did lament,
When by the rout [1126](#) that made the hideous roar
His goary visage [1127](#) down the stream was sent,
Down the swift Hebrus to the Lesbian shore.

Alas! What boots [1128](#) it, with incessant care
To tend the homely [1129](#) slighted shepherd's trade,
And strictly meditate the thankless muse?
Were it not better done, as others use,
To sport [1130](#) with Amaryllis [1131](#) in the shade,
Or with the tangles of Neaera's [1132](#) hair?
Fame is the spur that the clear [1133](#) spirit doth raise [1134](#)
(That last infirmity of noble mind!)
To scorn delights, and live laborious days.
But the fair guerdon, [1135](#) when we hope to find, [1136](#)
And think to burst out into sudden blaze,
Comes the blind Fury [1137](#) with th' abhorrèd shears
And slits the thin-spun life. But not the praise,
Phoebus [1138](#) replied, and touched my trembling ears.
Fame is no plant that grows on mortal soil,
Nor in the glistening [1139](#) foil [1140](#)
Set off to th' world, nor in broad rumor [1141](#) lies,
But lives and spreads aloft by those pure eyes
And perfect witness of all-judging Jove,
As he pronounces lastly [1142](#) on each deed.
Of so much fame in Heav'n expect thy meed. [1143](#)

O fountain Arethuse, [1144](#) and thou honored flood, [1145](#)
Smooth-sliding Mincius, [1146](#) crowned with vocal reeds,
That strain I heard was of a higher mood.
But now my oat [1147](#) proceeds
And listens to the herald of the sea [1148](#)
That came in Neptune's plea.
He asked the waves, and asked the felon [1149](#) winds,

What hard mishap hath doomed this gentle swain?
And questioned every gust of rugged [1150](#) wings [1151](#)
That blows from off each beakèd [1152](#) promontory.
They knew not of his story,
And sage Hippotades [1153](#) their answer brings;
That not a blast was from his dungeon strayed,
The air was calm, and on the level brine
Sleek Panope [1154](#) with all her sisters played.
It was that fatal and perfidious bark,
Built in [1155](#) th' eclipse [1156](#) and rigged with curses dark, [1157](#)
That sunk so low that sacred head of thine.

Next Camus, [1158](#) reverend sire, went footing slow,
His mantle hairy, and his bonnet [1159](#) sedge, [1160](#)
Inwrought [1161](#) with figures dim, and on the edge
Like to that sanguine flower [1162](#) inscribed with woe.
“Ah! Who hath reft [1163](#) (quoth he) my dearest pledge?” [1164](#)
Last came, and last did go,
The pilot of the Galilean lake. [1165](#)
Two massy keys he bore, of metals twain,
(The golden opes, the iron shuts amain). [1166](#)
He shook his mitered locks, and stern bespake:
“How well could I have spared for thee, young swain,
Anow [1167](#) of such as for their belly’s sake
Creep and intrude, and climb into the fold?
Of other care they little reck’ning make
Than how to scramble at the shearers’ feast
And shove away the worthy bidden [1168](#) guest.
Blind mouths! that scarce themselves know how to hold
A sheep-hook, or have learned ought else the least
That to the faithfull herdsman’s art belongs!
What recks it them? What need they? They are [1169](#) sped, [1170](#)
And when they list, [1171](#) their lean and flashy [1172](#) songs
Grate on their scrannel [1173](#) pipes of wretched straw.
The hungry sheep look up, and are not fed,
But swoll’n with wind and the rank [1174](#) mist [1175](#) they draw, [1176](#)

Rot inwardly, and foul contagion¹¹⁷⁷ spread,
Besides what the grim¹¹⁷⁸ wolf with privy ¹¹⁷⁹ paw
Daily devours apace,¹¹⁸⁰ and nothing said!
But that two-handed engine¹¹⁸¹ at the door
Stands ready to smite once, and smite no more.”

Return, Alpheus,¹¹⁸² the dread¹¹⁸³ voice is past
That shrunk thy streams. Return, Sicilian muse,¹¹⁸⁴
And call the vales¹¹⁸⁵ and bid them hither cast
Their bells¹¹⁸⁶ and flowrets¹¹⁸⁷ of a thousand hues.
Ye valleys low, where the mild whispers use¹¹⁸⁸
Of shades and wanton¹¹⁸⁹ winds, and gushing brooks,
On whose fresh¹¹⁹⁰ lap¹¹⁹¹ the swart star ¹¹⁹² sparely ¹¹⁹³ looks,
Throw hither all your quaint¹¹⁹⁴ enamelled eyes¹¹⁹⁵
That on the green turf suck the honeyed show’rs
And purple all the ground with vernal ¹¹⁹⁶ flow’rs.
Bring the rath¹¹⁹⁷ primrose that forsaken dies,
The tufted crow-toe, and pale gessamine,
The white pink, and the pansy freaked¹¹⁹⁸ with jet,
The glowing violet,
The muskrose, and the well attired woodbine,
With cowslips wan that hang the pensive head
And every flower that sad ¹¹⁹⁹ embroidery wears:
Bid amaranthus all his beauties shed,
And daffodillies fill their cups with tears,
To strew the laureate ¹²⁰⁰ hearse¹²⁰¹ where Lycid’ lies.
For so to interpose¹²⁰² a little ease
Let our frail thoughts dally with false surmise.
Aye me! Whilst thee the shores and sounding seas
Wash far away, where’er thy bones are hurled,
Whether beyond the stormy Hebrides¹²⁰³
Where thou perhaps under the whelming¹²⁰⁴ tide
Visit’st the bottom of the monstrous¹²⁰⁵ world,
Or whether thou to our moist ¹²⁰⁶ vows denied ¹²⁰⁷
Sleep’st, by the fable of Bellerus¹²⁰⁸ old,
Where the great vision of the guarded mount¹²⁰⁹

Looks toward Namancos¹²¹⁰ and Bayona's ¹²¹¹ hold—
Look homeward, Angel, now, and melt with ruth,¹²¹²
And O, ye dolphins, waft ¹²¹³ the hapless youth.

Weep no more, woeful shepherds, weep no more,
For Lycidas your sorrow is not dead,
Sunk though he be beneath the wat'ry floor!
So sinks the day-star ¹²¹⁴ in the ocean bed
And yet anon¹²¹⁵ repairs ¹²¹⁶ his drooping head
And tricks¹²¹⁷ his beams, and with new spangled ore ¹²¹⁸
Flames in the forehead of the morning sky.
So Lycidas sunk low, but mounted high,
Through the dear might of Him that walked the waves!
Where other groves and other streams along
With nectar pure his oozy ¹²¹⁹ locks he laves¹²²⁰
And hears the unexpressive ¹²²¹ nuptial song
In the blest kingdoms meek, of joy and love.
There entertain him all the saints above,
In solemn ¹²²² troops, ¹²²³ and sweet societies ¹²²⁴
That sing, and singing in their glory move, ¹²²⁵
And wipe the tears forever from his eyes.
Now, Lycidas, the shepherds weep no more!
Henceforth thou art the genius ¹²²⁶ of the shore
In thy large ¹²²⁷ recompense, ¹²²⁸ and shalt be good
To all that wander in that perilous flood.

Thus sang the uncouth ¹²²⁹ swain to th' oaks and rills, ¹²³⁰
While the still morn went out with sandals gray.
He touched the tender stops of various quills, ¹²³¹
With eager thought warbling his Doric ¹²³² lay.
And now the sun had stretched out ¹²³³ all the hills,
And now was dropped into the western bay.
At last he rose and twitched ¹²³⁴ his mantle blue:
Tomorrow to fresh woods, and pastures new.

THE FIFTH ODE OF HORACE, BOOK ONE

1646–48?

Quis multa gracilis te puer in rosa, rendered almost word for word, without rhyme, according to the Latin measure, [1235](#) as near as the [English] language will permit.

What slender youth, bedewed with liquid odors,
Courts [1236](#) thee on roses in some pleasant cave,
 Pyrrha? For whom bind'st thou
 In wreaths thy golden hair,
Plain [1237](#) in thy neatness? [1238](#) O how oft shall he
On faith and changèd gods complain, and seas
 Rough with black winds and storms
 Unwonted [1239](#) shall admire, [1240](#)
Who now enjoys thee credulous [1241](#) all gold?
Who always vacant, [1242](#) always amiable,
 Hopes thee, of flattering gales
 Unmindful? Hapless [1243](#) they
To whom thou, untried, [1244](#) seem'st fair. Me in my vowed [1245](#)
Picture [1246](#) the sacred wall declares t' have hung [1247](#)
 My dank and drooping weeds [1248](#)
 To the stern god of sea.

ON THE NEW FORCERS OF CONSCIENCE, UNDER THE LONG PARLIAMENT

1647?

*Because you have thrown off your prelate [1249](#) lord
And with stiff [1250](#) vows renounced his liturgy, [1251](#)
To seize the widowed whore, plurality [1252](#)
From them whose sin ye envied, not abhorred,
Dare ye for this adjure [1253](#) the civil sword
To force our consciences that Christ set free,
And ride us with a classic [1254](#) hierarchy
Taught ye by mere A.S. [1255](#) and Rutherford? [1256](#)
Men whose life, learning, faith, and pure intent
Would have been held in high esteem with Paul
Must now be named and printed heretics
By shallow Edwards [1257](#) and Scotch what d'ye call. [1258](#)
But we do hope to find out all your tricks,
Your plots and packings, worse than those of Trent, [1259](#)
That so the Parliament
May with their wholesome and preventive shears
Clip your phylactries [1260](#) (though bauk [1261](#) your ears),
And succor our just fears
When they shall read this clearly in your charge:
New presbyter is but old priest writ large.*

PSALMS 1–8^{[1262](#)}

August 1653

1

*Blessed is the man who hath not walked astray
In counsel of the wicked, and i' th' way
Of sinners hath not stood, and in the seat
Of scorers hath not sat. But in the great
Jehovah's Law is ever his delight,
And in His Law he studies day and night.
He shall be as a tree which, planted, grows
By wat'ry streams, and in his season knows
To yield his fruit, and his leaf shall not fall,
And what he takes in hand shall prosper all.
Not so the wicked, but as chaff ^{[1263](#)} which fanned ^{[1264](#)}
The wind drives, so the wicked shall not stand ^{[1265](#)}
In judgment, or abide ^{[1266](#)} their trial then,
Nor sinners in the assembly of just men.
For the Lord knows th' upright way of the just,
And the way of bad men to ruin ^{[1267](#)} must.*

2

*Why do the gentiles ^{[1268](#)} tumult, ^{[1269](#)} and the nations
Muse ^{[1270](#)} a vain thing? The kings of the earth upstand ^{[1271](#)}
With power, and princes in their congregations ^{[1272](#)}
Lay deep their plots together, through each land,
Against the Lord and His Messiah dear.*

Let us break off, say they, by strength of hand,
Their bonds, and cast from us, no more to wear,
Their twisted cords. He who in Heav'n doth dwell
Shall laugh. The Lord shall scoff [1273](#) them, then, severe, [1274](#)
Speak to them in His wrath, and in His fell [1275](#)
And fierce [1276](#) ire [1277](#) trouble [1278](#) them. But I saith He
Anointed hath my King (though ye rebel)
On Sion, my holy hill. A firm decree
I will declare. The Lord to me hath said
Thou art my Son, I have begotten thee
This day. Ask of me, and the grant is made.
As thy possession I on thee bestow
Th' heathen, and as thy conquest (to be swayed [1279](#))
Earth's utmost bounds. Them shalt thou bring full low,
With iron scepters bruised, [1280](#) and them disperse
Like to a potter's vessel, shivered so.
And now be wise at length, [1281](#) ye kings averse, [1282](#)
Be taught, ye judges of the earth—with fear
Jehovah serve, and let your joy converse [1283](#)
With trembling. Kiss the Son, lest he appear
In anger and ye perish in the way, [1284](#)
If once his wrath take fire, like fuel sere. [1285](#)
Happy all those who have him in their stay. [1286](#)

3

When he^{[1287](#)} fled from Absalom.^{[1288](#)}
*Lord, how many are my foes,
How many those
That in arms against me rise.
Many are they
That of my life distrustfully thus say:
No help for him in God there lies.
But thou, Lord, art my shield, my glory,
Thee through my story*^{[1289](#)}

Th' exalter of my head I count.
Aloud I cried
Unto Jehovah. He full soon [1290](#) replied
And heard me from His holy mount.
I lay and slept, I waked again,
For my sustain
Was the Lord. Of many millions
The populous rout [1291](#)
I fear not, though encamping round about
They pitch [1292](#) against me their pavilions. [1293](#)
Rise, Lord. Save me, my God, for Thou
Hast smote [1294](#) ere now
On the cheek-bone all my foes,
Of men abhorred
Hast broke the teeth. This help was from the Lord,
Thy blessing on Thy people flows.

4

Answer me when I call,
God of my righteousness.^{[1295](#)}
In straits^{[1296](#)} and in distress
Thou didst me disenthral ^{[1297](#)}
And set at large.^{[1298](#)} Now spare,
Now pity me, and hear my earnest prayer.
Great ones, how long will ye
My glory have in scorn?
How long be this forborn^{[1299](#)}
Still to love vanity,
To love, to seek, to prize
Things false and nothing else but lies?
Yet know the Lord hath chose,
Chose to Himself apart
The good and meek of heart
(For whom to choose He knows).
Jehovah from on high

Will hear my voice, what time¹³⁰⁰ to Him I cry.
Be awed,¹³⁰¹ and do not sin.
Speak to your hearts alone,
Upon your beds, each one,
And be at peace within.
Offer the offerings just¹³⁰²
Of righteousness, and in Jehovah trust.
Many there be that say
“Who yet will show us good?”
Talking like this world’s brood! ¹³⁰³
But Lord, thus let me pray:
On us lift up the light,
Lift up the favor of Thy count’nance bright.
Into my heart more joy
And gladness Thou has put
Than when a year of glut¹³⁰⁴
Their stores¹³⁰⁵ doth over-cloy¹³⁰⁶
And from their plenteous grounds¹³⁰⁷
With vast increase their corn¹³⁰⁸ and wine abounds.
In peace at once will I
Both lay me down and sleep,
For Thou alone dost keep
Me safe, where ere I lie.
As in a rocky cell
Thou, Lord, alone in safety mak’st me dwell.

5

Jehovah, to my words give ear,
My meditation¹³⁰⁹ weigh,¹³¹⁰
The voice of my complaining hear,
My King and God, for unto Thee I pray.
Jehovah, Thou my early voice
Shalt in the morning hear.
I’ th’ morning I to Thee, with choice,¹³¹¹
Will rank ¹³¹² my prayers and watch till Thou appear.

For Thou art not a God that takes
In wickedness delight.
Evil with Thee no biding [1313](#) makes.
Fools or madmen stand [1314](#) not within Thy sight.
All workers of iniquity [1315](#)
Thou hat'st, and them unblessed
Thou wilt destroy that speak a lie.
The bloodi' and guileful [1316](#) man God doth detest.
But I will in Thy mercies dear,
Thy numerous mercies go
Into Thy house, I in Thy fear [1317](#)
Will towards Thy holy temple worship low. [1318](#)
Lord, lead me in Thy righteousness,
Lead me because of those
That do observe [1319](#) if I transgress. [1320](#)
Set Thy right ways before [1321](#) where my step goes.
For in his [1322](#) falt'ring mouth unstable [1323](#)
No word is firm or sooth: [1324](#)
Their inside troubles miserable,
An open grave their throat; their tongue they smooth.
God, find them guilty, let them fall
By their own counsels quelled, [1325](#)
Push them in their rebellions all
Still on, for against Thee they have rebelled.
Then all who trust in Thee shall bring
Their joy, while Thou from blame
Defend'st them. They shall ever sing
And shall triumph in Thee, who love Thy name.
For Thou, Jehovah, wilt be found
To bless the just man still, [1326](#)
As with a shield. Thou will surround
Him with Thy lasting favor and good will.

6

Lord, in Thine anger do not reprehend [1327](#) me,

Nor in Thy hot displeasure me correct.
 Pity me, Lord, for I am much deject,
 Am very weak and faint. Heal and amend me,
 For all my bones that even with anguish ache
 Are troubled, yea, my soul is troubled sore.
 And Thou, O Lord, how long? Turn, Lord, restore [1328](#)
 My soul, O save me for Thy goodness sake,
 For in death is no remembrance of Thee.
 Who in the grave can celebrate Thy praise?
 Wearied I am with sighing out my days,
 Nightly my couch [1329](#) I make a kind of sea,
 My bed I water with my tears, mine eye
 Through grief consumes, [1330](#) is waxen [1331](#) old and dark
 I' th' midst of all mine enemies, that mark. [1332](#)
 Depart all ye that work iniquity! [1333](#)
 Depart from me, for the voice of my weeping
 The Lord hath heard, the Lord hath heard my prayer,
 My supplication [1334](#) with acceptance fair
 The Lord will own, [1335](#) and have me in His keeping.
 Mine enemies shall be all blank [1336](#) and dashed [1337](#)
 With much confusion, then grown red with shame
 They shall return in haste the way they came,
 And in a moment shall be quite abashed. [1338](#)

7

Upon the words of Chush, the Benjamite, [1339](#) against him. [1340](#)

Lord, my God, to Thee I fly,
 Save me and secure me under
 Thy protection, while I cry,
 Lest as a lion (and no wonder)
 He haste to tear my soul asunder—
 Tearing, and no rescue nigh.

Lord, my God, if I have thought

Or done this, if wickedness
Be in my hands, if I have wrought [1341](#)
Ill to him that meant me peace,
Or to him have rendered [1342](#) less
And not freed my foe for naught, [1343](#)

Let th' enemy pursue my soul
And overtake it, let me tread [1344](#)
My life down to the earth and roll
In the dust my glory dead—
In the dust, and there outspread
Lodge [1345](#) it with dishonor foul.

Rise, Jehovah, in Thine ire, [1346](#)
Rouse Thyself amidst the rage
Of my foes, that urge [1347](#) like fire,
And wake [1348](#) for me, their furi' [1349](#) assuage. [1350](#)
Judgment here [1351](#) thou didst engage [1352](#)
And command, which I desire.
So th' assemblies of each nation
Will surround Thee, seeking right.
Thence to Thy glorious habitation
Return on high, and in their sight.
Jehovah judgeth most upright
All people, from this world's foundation. [1353](#)

Judge me, Lord, be judge in this
According to my righteousness
And the innocence which is
Upon me. Cause at length to cease
Of evil men the wickedness,
And their power, that do amiss. [1354](#)

But the just establish [1355](#) fast, [1356](#)
Since Thou art the just God that tries [1357](#)
Hearts and reins. [1358](#) On God is cast

*My defence, and in Him lies,
In Him who both just and wise
Saves th' upright of heart at last.*[1359](#)

God is a just judge, and severe,[1360](#)
*And God is every day offended.
If th' unjust will not forbear* [1361](#)
His sword He whets,[1362](#) *His bow hath bended
Already, and for him intended
The tools of death, that waits*[1363](#) *Him near.*

*(His arrows purposely made He
For them that persecute.)*[1364](#) *Behold,
He*[1365](#) *travels big* [1366](#) *with vanity,
Trouble he hath conceived of old
As in a womb, and from that mould
Hath at length brought forth a lie.*

He digged a pit, and delved [1367](#) *it deep,
And fell into the pit he made.
His mischief that due*[1368](#) *course*[1369](#) *doth keep,
Turns on his head, and his ill trade* [1370](#)
*Of violence will undelayed
Fall on his crown*[1371](#) *with ruin steep.*[1372](#)

*Then will I Jehovah's praise
According to His justice raise,*[1373](#)
*And sing the name and deity
Of Jehovah, the most high.*

8

*O Jehovah, our Lord, how wondrous great
And glorious is Thy name through all the earth!
So as above the Heav'ns Thy praise to set
Out of the tender mouths of latest birth.*

Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings Thou
Hast founded [1374](#) strength, because of all Thy foes,
To stint [1375](#) th' enemy and slack [1376](#) th' avenger's brow
That bends his rage Thy providence t' oppose.

When I behold Thy Heav'ns, Thy fingers' art,
The moon and stars which Thou so bright hast set
In the pure firmament, then saith my heart:
O what is man, that Thou remembrest yet

And think'st upon him, or of man begot [1377](#)
That him Thou visit'st and of [1378](#) him art found.
Scarce to be less than gods Thou mad'st his lot,
With honor and with state [1379](#) Thou hast him crowned.

O'er the works of Thy hand Thou mad'st him lord.
Thou hast put all under his lordly feet
All flocks, and herds, by Thy commanding word,
All beasts that in the field or forest meet, [1380](#)

Fowl of the Heav'ns, and fish that through the wet
Sea-paths in shoals do slide. And know no dearth. [1381](#)
O Jehovah, our Lord, how wondrous great
And glorious is Thy name through all the earth.

PARADISE LOST

1642?–1655?

THE VERSE

The measure¹³⁸² is English heroic verse¹³⁸³ without rhyme, as that of Homer in Greek and of Virgil in Latin, rhyme being no necessary adjunct or true ornament of poem or good verse (in longer works especially) but the invention of a barbarous Age, to set off wretched matter¹³⁸⁴ and lame meter—graced indeed, since, by the use of some famous modern poets, carried away by custom, but much to their own vexation, hindrance, and constraint to express many things otherwise¹³⁸⁵ and for the most part worse than they would have expressed them. Not without cause, therefore, some both Italian and Spanish poets of prime note have rejected rhyme both in longer and shorter works, as have also long since our best English tragedies, as a thing of itself to all judicious ears trivial and of no musical delight, which [delight] consists only in apt numbers,¹³⁸⁶ fit¹³⁸⁷ quantity of syllables, and the sense variously drawn out from one verse into another, not in the jingling sound of like endings, a fault avoided by the ancients both in poetry and all good oratory. This neglect, then, of rhyme so little is to be taken for a defect—though it may seem so, perhaps, to vulgar¹³⁸⁸ readers—that it rather is to be esteemed¹³⁸⁹ an example set, the first in English, of ancient liberty recovered to heroic poem from the troublesome and modern bondage of rhyming.

BOOK I

THE ARGUMENT

This first Book proposes first in brief the whole subject, man's disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise wherein he was placed; then touches the prime cause of his fall, the Serpent, or rather Satan in the Serpent, who, revolting from God, and drawing to his side many legions of Angels, was by the command of God driven out of Heaven with all his crew into the great deep. Which action past over, the poem hastes into the midst of things, presenting Satan with his Angels now fallen into Hell, described here not in the center (for Heaven and Earth may be supposed as yet not made, certainly not yet accursed) but in a place of utter darkness, fitliest¹³⁹⁰ called Chaos. Here Satan with his Angels lying on the burning lake, thunder-struck and astonished, after a certain space¹³⁹¹ recovers, as from confusion, calls up him who next in order and dignity lay by him.

They confer of¹³⁹² their miserable fall. Satan awakens all his legions, who lay till then in the same manner confounded. They rise, their numbers, array of battle, their chief leaders named, according to the idols known afterwards in Canaan¹³⁹³ and the countries adjoining. To these Satan directs his speech, comforts them with hope yet of regaining Heaven, but tells them lastly of a new world and new kind of creature to be created, according to an ancient prophecy or report in Heaven—for that Angels *were*, long before this visible Creation, was the opinion of many ancient Fathers. To find out the truth of this prophecy, and what to determine thereon, he refers to a full council.

What his associates thence attempt. Pandemonium, the palace of Satan, rises, suddenly built out of the deep. The infernal peers there sit in council.

- 1 *Of man's first disobedience, and the fruit*
- 2 *Of that forbidden tree whose mortal ¹³⁹⁴ taste*

3 Brought Death into the world, and all our woe
4 With loss of Eden, till one greater Man¹³⁹⁵
5 Restore us and regain the blissful seat
6 Sing, Heavenly Muse, that on the secret top
7 Of Oreb,¹³⁹⁶ or of Sinai, didst inspire
8 That shepherd ¹³⁹⁷ who first taught the chosen seed ¹³⁹⁸
9 In the beginning how the heavens and earth
10 Rose out of Chaos. Or if Sion hill¹³⁹⁹
11 Delight thee more, and Siloa's¹⁴⁰⁰ brook that flowed
12 Fast by ¹⁴⁰¹ the oracle of God, ¹⁴⁰² I thence
13 Invoke thy aid to my adventurous¹⁴⁰³ song
14 That with no middle flight intends to soar
15 Above th'Aonian mount,¹⁴⁰⁴ while it pursues
16 Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme
17 And chiefly thou, O Spirit,¹⁴⁰⁵ that dost prefer
18 Before ¹⁴⁰⁶ all temples th' upright heart and pure
19 Instruct me, for Thou know'st, Thou from the first
20 Wast present and, with mighty wings outspread
2 Dove-like sat'st brooding ¹⁴⁰⁷ on the vast abyss
22 And mad'st it pregnant. What in me is dark ¹⁴⁰⁸
23 Illumine, what is low raise and support
24 That, to the height of this great argument
25 I may assert Eternal Providence
26 And justify the ways of God to men
27 Say first—for Heav'n hides nothing from thy view
28 Nor the deep tract of Hell—say first what cause
29 Moved our grand ¹⁴⁰⁹ parents, in that happy state
30 Favored of Heav'n so highly, to fall off ¹⁴¹⁰
31 From their Creator and transgress His will
32 For¹⁴¹¹ one restraint, lords of the world besides
33 Who first seduced them to that foul revolt

34 *Th' infernal Serpent, he it was whose guile*
35 *Stirred up with envy and revenge, deceived*
36 *The mother of mankind, what time his pride*
37 *Had cast him out from Heav'n, with all his host*
38 *Of rebel Angels, by whose aid, aspiring*
39 *To set himself in glory above his peers*
40 *He trusted to have equalled the Most High*
41 *If he opposed and with ambitious aim*
42 *Against the throne and monarchy of God*
43 *Raised impious war in Heav'n and battle proud*
44 *With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power*
45 *Hurled headlong flaming from th' ethereal [1412](#) sky*
46 *With hideous^{[1413](#)} ruin and combustion,^{[1414](#)} down*
47 *To bottomless perdition,^{[1415](#)} there to dwell*
48 *In adamantine ^{[1416](#)} chains and penal ^{[1417](#)} fire*
49 *Who durst defy th' Omnipotent to arms*
50 *Nine times the space that measures day and night*
51 *To mortal men, he, with his horrid ^{[1418](#)} crew, ^{[1419](#)}*
52 *Lay vanquished, rolling in the fiery gulf, ^{[1420](#)}*
53 *Confounded,^{[1421](#)} though immortal. But his doom^{[1422](#)}*
54 *Reserved ^{[1423](#)} him to more wrath, for now the thought*
55 *Both of lost happiness and lasting pain*
56 *Torments him. Round he throws his baleful^{[1424](#)} eyes*
57 *That witnessed ^{[1425](#)} huge affliction and dismay*
58 *Mixed with obdurate ^{[1426](#)} pride and steadfast hate*
59 *At once, as far as Angels ken,^{[1427](#)} he views*
60 *The dismal ^{[1428](#)} situation waste ^{[1429](#)} and wild.^{[1430](#)}*
61 *A dungeon horrible, on all sides round*
62 *As one great furnace flamed, yet from those flames*
63 *No light but rather darkness visible*
64 *Served only to discover ^{[1431](#)} sights of woe*

65 *Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace*
66 *And rest can never dwell, hope never comes*
67 *That comes to all, but torture without end*
68 *Still urges, [1432](#) and a fiery deluge, fed*
69 *With ever-burning sulphur unconsumed. [1433](#)*
70 *Such place Eternal Justice had prepared*
71 *For those rebellious, here their prison ordained*
72 *In utter darkness, and their portion [1434](#) set*
73 *As far removed from God and light of Heav'n*
74 *As from the center thrice to th' utmost pole*
75 *Oh how unlike the place from whence they fell*
76 *There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelmed*
77 *With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire*
78 *He soon discerns and, weltering [1435](#) by his side*
79 *One next himself in power, and next in crime*
80 *Long after known in Palestine, and named*
81 *Beelzebub. [1436](#) To whom th' arch-enemy*
82 *And thence in Heav'n called Satan, with bold words*
83 *Breaking the horrid silence, thus began*
84 *“If thou beest he—but O how fallen! how changed*
85 *From him who, in the happy [1437](#) realms of light*
86 *Clothed with transcendent brightness, didst outshine*
87 *Myriads, [1438](#) though bright!—if he whom mutual league, [1439](#)*
88 *United thoughts and counsels, equal hope*
89 *And hazard in the glorious enterprise*
90 *Joined with me once, now misery hath joined*
91 *In equal ruin—into what pit thou seest*
92 *From what height fall'n, so much the stronger proved*
93 *He with His thunder. And till then who knew*
94 *The force of those dire arms? Yet not for those*
95 *Nor what the potent victor in His rage*

96 Can else inflict, do I repent, or change
97 (Though changed in outward luster) that fixed mind
98 And high disdain from sense of injured merit
99 That with the Mightiest raised me to contend
100 And to the fierce contentions¹⁴⁴⁰ brought along
101 Innumerable ¹⁴⁴¹ force of Spirits armed
102 That durst dislike His reign and, me preferring
103 His utmost power with adverse¹⁴⁴² power opposed
104 In dubious¹⁴⁴³ battle on the plains of Heav'n,
105 And shook His throne. What though the field be lost
106 All is not lost—the unconquerable will
107 And study ¹⁴⁴⁴ of revenge, immortal hate
108 And courage never to submit or yield
109 And what is else not to be overcome
110 That glory never shall His wrath or might
111 Extort from me. To bow and sue¹⁴⁴⁵ for grace ¹⁴⁴⁶
112 With suppliant ¹⁴⁴⁷ knee, and deify His power
113 Who, from¹⁴⁴⁸ the terror¹⁴⁴⁹ of this arm, so late¹⁴⁵⁰
114 Doubted ¹⁴⁵¹ His empire: that were low indeed
115 That were an ignominy and shame beneath
116 This downfall, since, by fate, the strength of gods
117 And this empyreal ¹⁴⁵² substance, cannot fail
118 Since, through experience of this great event
119 In arms not worse, in foresight ¹⁴⁵³ much advanced, ¹⁴⁵⁴
120 We may with more successful hope resolve
121 To wage by force or guile eternal war
122 Irreconcilable to our grand foe
123 Who now triumphs, and in th' excess of joy
124 Sole reigning holds the tyranny of Heav'n.”
125 So spoke th' apostate Angel, though in pain
126 Vaunting ¹⁴⁵⁵ aloud, but racked with deep despair

127 *And him thus answered, soon, his bold compeer:*¹⁴⁵⁶
128 *“O Prince, O chief of many thronèd Powers*¹⁴⁵⁷
129 *That led th’ embattled Seraphim*¹⁴⁵⁸ *to war*
130 *Under thy conduct* ¹⁴⁵⁹ *and, in dreadful deeds*
131 *Fearless, endangered Heav’n’s perpetual* ¹⁴⁶⁰ *King*
132 *And put to proof* ¹⁴⁶¹ *His high supremacy*
133 *Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate*
134 *Too well I see and rue* ¹⁴⁶² *the dire event*
135 *That, with sad overthrow and foul defeat*
136 *Hath lost us Heav’n, and all this mighty host*
137 *In horrible destruction laid thus low*
138 *As far as gods and Heav’nly Essences* ¹⁴⁶³
139 *Can perish—for the mind and spirit remains*
140 *Invincible,* ¹⁴⁶⁴ *and vigor soon returns*
141 *Though all our glory extinct, and happy state*
142 *Here swallowed up in endless misery*
143 *But what if He our conqueror (whom I now*
144 *Of force*¹⁴⁶⁵ *believe almighty, since no less*
145 *Than such could have o’erpowered such force as ours*
146 *Have left us this our spirit and strength entire,* ¹⁴⁶⁶
147 *Strongly to suffer* ¹⁴⁶⁷ *and support* ¹⁴⁶⁸ *our pains*
148 *That we may so suffice*¹⁴⁶⁹ *His vengeful ire*
149 *Or do Him mightier service as His thralls*¹⁴⁷⁰
150 *By right of war, whate’er His business be,*
151 *Here in the heart of Hell to work in fire*
152 *Or do His errands in the gloomy deep*
153 *What can it then avail, though yet we feel*
154 *Strength undiminished, or eternal being*
155 *To undergo eternal punishment*
156 *Whereto with speedy words th’ arch-fiend replied*
157 *“Fall’n Cherub, to be weak is miserable*

158 *Doing or suffering. But of this be sure*
159 *To do aught [1471](#) good never will be our task*
160 *But ever to do ill our sole delight*
161 *As being the contrary to His high will*
162 *Whom we resist. If then His providence*
163 *Out of our evil seek to bring forth good*
164 *Our labor must be to pervert that end*
165 *And out of good still [1472](#) to find means of evil*
166 *Which oft-times may succeed so as, perhaps*
167 *Shall grieve Him, if I fail not, and disturb [1473](#)*
168 *His inmost counsels [1474](#) from their destined [1475](#) aim*
169 *“But see! the angry victor hath recalled*
170 *His ministers of vengeance and pursuit*
171 *Back to the gates of Heav’n. The sulphurous hail*
172 *Shot after us in storm [1476](#) o’erblown, hath laid [1477](#)*
173 *The fiery surge [1478](#) that from the precipice*
174 *Of Heav’n received us falling, and the thunder*
175 *Winged with red lightning and impetuous rage*
176 *Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now*
177 *To bellow through the vast and boundless deep*
178 *Let us not slip [1479](#) th’ occasion, whether scorn*
179 *Or satiate [1480](#) fury yield it from our foe*
180 *“Seest thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild*
181 *The seat of desolation, void of light*
182 *Save what the glimmering of these livid [1481](#) flames*
183 *Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend [1482](#)*
184 *From off the tossing of these fiery waves*
185 *There rest, if any rest can harbor [1483](#) there*
186 *And, re-assembling our afflicted [1484](#) Powers*
187 *Consult how we may henceforth most offend [1485](#)*
188 *Our enemy, our own loss how repair*

189 *How overcome this dire calamity*
190 *What reinforcement we may gain from hope*
191 *If not, what resolution from despair*
192 *Thus Satan, talking to his nearest mate, [1486](#)*
193 *With head uplift above the wave, and eyes*
194 *That sparkling blazed, his other parts besides*
195 *Prone on the flood, [1487](#) extended long and large*
196 *Lay floating many a rood, [1488](#) in bulk as huge*
197 *As whom the fables name of monstrous size*
198 *Titanian [1489](#) or earth-born, [1490](#) that warred on Jove*
199 *Briareos or Typhon, whom the den*
200 *By ancient Tarsus [1491](#) held, [1492](#) or that sea-beast*
201 *Leviathan, [1493](#) which God of all His works*
202 *Created hugest that swim th' ocean-stream*
203 *Him, haply [1494](#) slumbering on the Norway foam, [1495](#)*
204 *The pilot of some small night-foundered [1496](#) skiff*
205 *Deeming [1497](#) some island, oft, as seamen tell*
206 *With fixed anchor in his scaly rind, [1498](#)*
207 *Moors by his side under the lee, [1499](#) while night*
208 *Invests [1500](#) the sea, and wishèd morn delays*
209 *So stretched out huge in length the arch-fiend lay*
210 *Chained on the burning lake, nor ever thence*
211 *Had risen or heaved [1501](#) his head, but that the will*
212 *And high permission of all-ruling Heav'n*
213 *Left him at large to his own dark designs*
214 *That with reiterated crimes he might*
215 *Heap on himself damnation, while he sought*
216 *Evil to others, and enraged might see*
217 *How all his malice served but to bring forth*
218 *Infinite goodness, grace, and mercy, shown*
219 *On man by him seduced, but on himself*

220 Treble confusion,¹⁵⁰² wrath, and vengeance poured
221 Forthwith¹⁵⁰³ upright he rears from off the pool
222 His mighty stature. On each hand the flames
223 Driv'n backward slope their pointing spires and, rolled
224 In billows, leave in th' midst a horrid vale
225 Then with expanded ¹⁵⁰⁴wings he steers his flight
226 Aloft, incumbent¹⁵⁰⁵ on the dusky air
227 That felt unusual weight, till on dry land
228 He lights¹⁵⁰⁶ —if it were land that ever burned
229 With solid, as the lake with liquid fire
230 And such¹⁵⁰⁷ appeared in hue¹⁵⁰⁸ as when the force
231 Of subterranean wind transports a hill
232 Torn from Pelorus,¹⁵⁰⁹ or the shattered side
233 Of thundering Etna, whose combustible
234 And fuellèd entrails thence conceiving fire
235 Sublimed ¹⁵¹⁰with mineral fury, aid the winds
236 And leave a singèd bottom¹⁵¹¹ all involved ¹⁵¹²
237 With stench and smoke. Such resting found the sole
238 Of unblest feet. Him followed his next mate
239 Both glorying to have scaped the Stygian¹⁵¹³ flood ¹⁵¹⁴
240 As¹⁵¹⁵ gods, and by their own recovered strength
241 Not by the sufferance¹⁵¹⁶ of supernal¹⁵¹⁷ power
242 “Is this the region, this the soil, the clime
243 Said then the lost Archangel, “this the seat¹⁵¹⁸
244 That we must change for Heav'n?—this mournful gloom
245 For that celestial light? Be it so, since He
246 Who now is sov'reign can dispose¹⁵¹⁹ and bid¹⁵²⁰
247 What shall be right. Farthest from Him is best
248 Whom reason hath equalled, force hath made supreme
249 Above His equals. Farewell, happy fields
250 Where joy forever dwells! Hail, horrors! hail

251 *Infernal world! and thou, profoundest¹⁵²¹ Hell*
252 *Receive thy new possessor—one who brings*
253 *A mind not to be changed by place or time*
254 *The mind is its own place, and in itself*
255 *Can make a Heav'n of Hell, a Hell of Heav'n.*
256 *What matter where, if I be still the same*
257 *And what I should be, all but ¹⁵²² less than He*
258 *Whom thunder hath made greater? Here at least*
259 *We shall be free. Th'Almighty hath not built*
260 *Here for His envy, will not drive us hence*
261 *Here we may reign secure and, in my choice*
262 *To reign is worth ambition, though in Hell*
263 *Better to reign in Hell than serve in Heav'n!*
264 *“But wherefore let we then our faithful friends*
265 *Th' associates and co-partners of our loss*
266 *Lie thus astonished ¹⁵²³ on th' oblivious¹⁵²⁴ pool*
267 *And call them not to share with us their part*
268 *In this unhappy mansion, ¹⁵²⁵ or once more*
269 *With rallied arms to try what may be yet*
270 *Regained in Heav'n, or what more lost in Hell*
271 *So Satan spoke; and him Beelzebub*
272 *Thus answered: “Leader of those armies bright*
273 *Which, but th' Omnipotent, none could have foiled!¹⁵²⁶*
274 *If once they hear that voice, their liveliest pledge¹⁵²⁷*
275 *Of hope in fears and dangers—heard so oft*
276 *In worst extremes, and on the perilous edge*
277 *Of battle, when it raged, in all assaults*
278 *Their surest signal—they will soon resume*
279 *New courage and revive, though now they lie*
280 *Grovelling and prostrate on yon lake of fire*
281 *As we erewhile, astounded ¹⁵²⁸ and amazed.¹⁵²⁹*

282 No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious¹⁵³⁰ height
283 He scarce had ceased when the superior fiend
284 Was moving toward the shore, his ponderous shield
285 Ethereal¹⁵³¹ temper, ¹⁵³²massy, large, and round
286 Behind him cast. The broad circumference
287 Hung on his shoulders like the moon, whose orb
288 Through optic glass the Tuscan¹⁵³³ artist¹⁵³⁴ views
289 At evening, from the top of Fesolé
290 Or in Valdarno, to descry¹⁵³⁵ new lands
291 Rivers, or mountains in her spotty¹⁵³⁶ globe
292 His spear—to equal which the tallest pine
293 Hewn on Norwegian hills to be the mast
294 Of some great ammiral, ¹⁵³⁷were but a wand—¹⁵³⁸
295 He walked with, to support uneasy¹⁵³⁹ steps
296 Over the burning marl, ¹⁵⁴⁰not like those steps
297 On Heaven's azure. And the torrid clime
298 Smote¹⁵⁴¹ on him sore besides, vaulted ¹⁵⁴²with fire
299 Nathless¹⁵⁴³ he so endured, till on the beach
300 Of that inflamèd ¹⁵⁴⁴sea he stood, and called
301 His legions, Angel forms, who lay entranced ¹⁵⁴⁵
302 Thick as autumnal leaves that strew the brooks
303 In Vallombrosa, ¹⁵⁴⁶where th' Etrurian¹⁵⁴⁷ shades
304 High over-arched, embow'r¹⁵⁴⁸ —or scattered sedge¹⁵⁴⁹
305 Afloat, when with fierce winds Orion armed ¹⁵⁵⁰
306 Hath vexed ¹⁵⁵¹the Red-Sea coast, whose waves o'erthrew
307 Busiris¹⁵⁵² and his Memphian¹⁵⁵³ chivalry, ¹⁵⁵⁴
308 While with perfidious¹⁵⁵⁵ hatred they pursued
309 The sojourners¹⁵⁵⁶ of Goshen, ¹⁵⁵⁷who beheld
310 From the safe shore their floating carcasses
311 And broken chariot-wheels. So thick bestrewn

312 *Abject [1558](#) and lost, lay these, covering the flood*
313 *Under amazement [1559](#) of their hideous [1560](#) change*
314 *He called so loud that all the hollow deep*
315 *Of Hell resounded: “Princes, Potentates, [1561](#)*
316 *Warriors, the Flow’r of Heav’n—once yours, now lost*
317 *If such astonishment [1562](#) as this can seize*
318 *Eternal Spirits! Or have ye chosen this place*
319 *After the toil of battle to repose*
320 *Your wearied virtue, [1563](#) for the ease you find*
321 *To slumber here, as in the vales of Heav’n?*
322 *Or in this abject posture have ye sworn*
323 *To adore the conqueror, who now beholds*
324 *Cherub and Seraph rolling in the flood*
325 *With scattered arms and ensigns, [1564](#) till anon [1565](#)*
326 *His swift pursuers from Heav’n-gates discern*
327 *Th’ advantage, and descending, tread us down*
328 *Thus drooping, or with linkèd thunderbolts*
329 *Transfix [1566](#) us to the bottom of this gulf? [1567](#)*
330 *Awake, arise, or be for ever fall’n!”*
331 *They heard, and were abashed, and up they sprung*
332 *Upon the wing, [1568](#) as when men wont [1569](#) to watch*
333 *On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread*
334 *Rouse and bestir themselves ere well awake*
335 *Nor did they not perceive the evil plight*
336 *In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel*
337 *Yet to their general’s voice they soon obeyed*
338 *Innumerable. As when the potent rod*
339 *Of Amram’s son, [1570](#) in Egypt’s evil day*
340 *Waved round the coast, up-called a pitchy [1571](#) cloud*
341 *Of locusts, warping [1572](#) on the eastern wind*
342 *That o’er the realm of impious Pharaoh hung*

343 *Like night, and darkened all the land of Nile*
344 *So numberless were those bad Angels seen*
345 *Hovering on wing under the cope¹⁵⁷³ of Hell*
346 *'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding fires*
347 *Till, as a signal giv'n, th' uplifted spear*
348 *Of their great sultan waving to direct*
349 *Their course, in even balance down they light¹⁵⁷⁴*
350 *On the firm¹⁵⁷⁵ brimstone, ¹⁵⁷⁶ and fill all the plain*
351 *A multitude like which the populous North¹⁵⁷⁷*
352 *Poured never from her frozen loins to pass*
353 *Rhine or the Danau,¹⁵⁷⁸ when her barbarous sons*
354 *Came like a deluge on the South and spread*
355 *Beneath¹⁵⁷⁹ Gibraltar to the Libyan sands*
356 *Forthwith,¹⁵⁸⁰ from every squadron and each band*
357 *The heads and leaders thither haste, where stood*
358 *Their great commander—godlike shapes, and forms*
359 *Excelling ¹⁵⁸¹ human; princely Dignities*
360 *And Powers that erst ¹⁵⁸² in Heav'n sat on thrones*
361 *Though of their names in Heav'nly records now*
362 *Be no memorial, blotted out and razed*
363 *By their rebellion, from the Books of Life. ¹⁵⁸³*
364 *Nor had they yet among the sons of Eve*
365 *Got them new names, till wand'ring o'er the earth*
366 *(Through God's high sufferance)¹⁵⁸⁴ for the trial ¹⁵⁸⁵ of man*
367 *By falsities and lies the greatest part*
368 *Of mankind they corrupted to forsake*
369 *God their Creator, and th' invisible*
370 *Glory of Him that made them to transform*
371 *Oft to the image of a brute, adorned*
372 *With gay ¹⁵⁸⁶ religions full of pomp and gold*
373 *And devils to adore for deities*

374 *Then were they known to men by various names*
375 *And various idols through the heathen world*
376 *Say, Muse, their names then known, who first, who last*
377 *Roused from their slumber on that fiery couch,*¹⁵⁸⁷
378 *At their great emperor's call, as next in worth*
379 *Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,*¹⁵⁸⁸
380 *While the promiscuous*¹⁵⁸⁹ *crowd stood yet aloof?*¹⁵⁹⁰
381 *The chief*¹⁵⁹¹ *were those who, from the pit of Hell*
382 *Roaming to seek their prey on Earth, durst fix*¹⁵⁹²
383 *Their seats, long after, next the seat of God*
384 *Their altars by His altar, gods adored*
385 *Among the nations round, and durst abide*¹⁵⁹³
386 *Jehovah thundering out of Sion, throned*
387 *Between the Cherubim, yea, often placed*
388 *Within His sanctuary itself their shrines*
389 *Abominations!—and with cursèd things*
390 *His holy rites and solemn feasts profaned,*¹⁵⁹⁴
391 *And with their darkness durst affront*¹⁵⁹⁵ *His light*
392 *First, Moloch, horrid king, besmeared with blood*
393 *Of human sacrifice, and parents' tears*
394 *Though, for the noise of drums and timbrels*¹⁵⁹⁶ *loud*
395 *Their children's cries unheard that passed through fire*
396 *To his grim*¹⁵⁹⁷ *idol. Him the Ammonite*¹⁵⁹⁸
397 *Worshipped in Rabba*¹⁵⁹⁹ *and her wat'ry plain*
398 *In Argob*¹⁶⁰⁰ *and in Basan,*¹⁶⁰¹ *to the stream*
399 *Of utmost Arnon.*¹⁶⁰² *Nor content with such*

400 Audacious [1603](#) neighborhood, the wisest heart
401 Of Solomon he led by fraud to build
402 His [1604](#) temple right against the temple of God
403 On that opprobrious [1605](#) hill, and made his grove
404 The pleasant valley of Hinnom, [1606](#) Tophet [1607](#) thence
405 And black Gehenna [1608](#) called, the type [1609](#) of Hell
406 Next Chemos, [1610](#) th' obscene [1611](#) dread [1612](#) of Moab's [1613](#) sons
407 From Aroar [1614](#) to Nebo [1615](#) and the wild
408 Of southmost Abarim, [1616](#) in Hesebon [1617](#)
409 And Horonaim, [1618](#) Seon's [1619](#) realm, beyond
410 The flow'ry dale of Sibma [1620](#) clad with vines
411 And Eléalé [1621](#) to th' asphaltic pool. [1622](#)
412 Peor [1623](#) his other name, when he enticed
413 Israel in Sittim, [1624](#) on their march from Nile, [1625](#)
414 To do him wanton [1626](#) rites, which cost them woe
415 Yet thence his lustful orgies he enlarged
416 Ev'n to that hill of scandal, [1627](#) by the grove
417 Of Moloch homicide, lust hard by [1628](#) hate
418 Till good Josiah [1629](#) drove them thence to Hell
419 With these came they who, from the bord'ring flood
420 Of old Euphrates [1630](#) to the brook [1631](#) that parts
421 Egypt from Syrian ground, had general names
422 Of Baalim [1632](#) and Ashtaroth [1633](#) —those male
423 These feminine. For Spirits, when they please
424 Can either sex assume, or both, so soft
425 And uncompounded [1634](#) is their essence pure
426 Not tied or manacled with joint or limb
427 Nor founded [1635](#) on the brittle strength of bones
428 Like cumbrous [1636](#) flesh, but in what shape they choose
429 Dilated [1637](#) or condensed, bright or obscure
430 Can execute their airy purposes
431 And works of love or enmity [1638](#) fulfil

432 For those the race of Israel oft forsook
433 Their Living Strength, and unfrequented [1639](#) left
434 His righteous altar, bowing lowly down
435 To bestial gods, for which their heads as low
436 Bowed down in battle, sunk before the spear
437 Of despicable [1640](#) foes.

With these in troop

438 Came Astoreth, [1641](#) w
439 Astarté, queen of heaven, with crescent horns
440 To whose bright image nightly by the moon
441 Sidonian [1642](#) virgins paid their vows and songs
442 In Sion [1643](#) also not unsung, where stood
443 Her temple on th' offensive [1644](#) mountain, built
444 By that uxorious [1645](#) king [1646](#) whose heart, though large
445 Beguiled by fair idolatresses, fell
446 To idols foul.

Thammuz [1647](#) came next behind

447 Whose annual wound in Lebanon allured
448 The Syrian damsels to lament his fate
449 In amorous ditties all a summer's day
450 While smooth Adonis [1648](#) from his native rock
451 Ran purple to the sea, supposed with blood
452 Of Thammuz yearly wounded. The love-tale
453 Infected Sion's daughters with like heat
454 Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch [1649](#)
455 Ezekiel [1650](#) saw, when by the vision led
456 His eye surveyed the dark idolatries
457 Of alienated Judah. [1651](#)

Next came one

458 Who mourned in earnest, when the captive ark [1652](#)
459 Maimed his brute image, head and hands lopped off
460 In his own temple, [1653](#) on the grunsel-edge, [1654](#)
461 Where he fell flat and shamed his worshippers

462 Dagon his name, sea-monster, upward man
463 And downward fish, yet [1655](#) had his temple high
464 Reared in Azotus, [1656](#) dreaded through the coast
465 Of Palestine, in Gath [1657](#) and Ascalon, [1658](#)
466 And Accaron [1659](#) and Gaza's [1660](#) frontier bounds
467 Him followed Rimmon, [1661](#) whose delightful seat
468 Was fair Damascus, on the fertile banks
469 Of Abbana [1662](#) , [1663](#) lucid [1664](#) streams. [1665](#)
470 He also against the house of God was bold
471 A leper [1666](#) once he lost, and gained a king
472 Ahaz, [1667](#) his [1668](#) sottish [1669](#) conqueror, whom he drew [1670](#)
473 God's altar to disparage and displace
474 For one of Syrian mode, whereon to burn
475 His odious offerings, and adore the gods
476 Whom he [1671](#) had vanquished.

After these appeared

477 A crew who, under names of old renown
478 Osiris, Isis, Orus, and their train—[1672](#)
479 With monstrous shapes and sorceries abused [1673](#)
480 Fanatic Egypt and her priests to seek
481 Their wand'ring gods disguised in brutish forms
482 Rather than human. Nor did Israel scape
483 Th' infection, when their borrowed gold composed [1674](#)
484 The calf [1675](#) in Oreb, [1676](#) and the rebel king [1677](#)
485 Doubled that sin in Bethel [1678](#) and in Dan, [1679](#)
486 Lik'ning his Maker to the grazèd ox—[1680](#)
487 Jehovah, who in one night, when he [1681](#) passed
488 From Egypt marching, equalled [1682](#) with one stroke [1683](#)
489 Both her first-born and all her bleating gods
490 Belial [1684](#) came last, than whom a Spirit more lewd
491 Fell not from Heaven, or more gross [1685](#) to love
492 Vice for itself. To him no temple stood
493 Or altar smoked, yet who more oft than he

494 *In temples and at altars, when the priest*
495 *Turns atheist, as did Eli's sons, who filled*
496 *With lust and violence the house of God?*¹⁶⁸⁶
497 *In courts and palaces he also reigns*
498 *And in luxurious*¹⁶⁸⁷ *cities, where the noise*
499 *Of riot* ¹⁶⁸⁸ *ascends above their loftiest tow'rs,*
500 *And injury* ¹⁶⁸⁹ *and outrage.* ¹⁶⁹⁰ *And when night*
501 *Darkens the streets, then wander forth the sons*
502 *Of Belial,* ¹⁶⁹¹ *flown*¹⁶⁹² *with insolence and wine*
503 *Witness the streets of Sodom,*¹⁶⁹³ *and that night*
504 *In Gibeah,*¹⁶⁹⁴ *when the hospitable door*
505 *Exposed* ¹⁶⁹⁵ *a matron,*¹⁶⁹⁶ *to avoid worse rape.*¹⁶⁹⁷
506 *These were the prime* ¹⁶⁹⁸ *in order and in might.*
507 *The rest were long to tell, though far*¹⁶⁹⁹ *renowned,*¹⁷⁰⁰
508 *Th' Ionian gods—of Javan's issue*¹⁷⁰¹ *held*
509 *Gods, yet confessed* ¹⁷⁰² *later than Heav'n and Earth,*
510 *Their boasted parents; Titan,*¹⁷⁰³ *Heav'n's first-born,*
511 *With his enormous brood, and birthright seized*
512 *By younger Saturn. He*¹⁷⁰⁴ *from mightier Jove,*
513 *His own and Rhea's*¹⁷⁰⁵ *son, like measure*¹⁷⁰⁶ *found:*
514 *So Jove usurping reigned. These first in Crete*
515 *And Ida*¹⁷⁰⁷ *known, thence on the snowy top*
516 *Of cold Olympus*¹⁷⁰⁸ *ruled the middle air,*¹⁷⁰⁹
517 *Their highest heav'n, or* ¹⁷¹⁰ *on the Delphian cliff,*¹⁷¹¹
518 *Or in Dodona,*¹⁷¹² *and through all the bounds*¹⁷¹³
519 *Of Doric land,*¹⁷¹⁴ *or who with Saturn old*
520 *Fled over Adria*¹⁷¹⁵ *to th' Hesperian*¹⁷¹⁶ *fields*
521 *And o'er the Celtic roamed the utmost isles.*¹⁷¹⁷
522 *All these and more came flocking, but with looks*
523 *Downcast and damp,*¹⁷¹⁸ *yet such wherein appeared*
524 *Obscure* ¹⁷¹⁹ *some glimpse of joy to have found their chief* ¹⁷²⁰
525 *Not in despair, to have found themselves not lost*

526 In loss itself, which on his countenance cast
527 Like¹⁷²¹ doubtful¹⁷²² hue. ¹⁷²³ But he, his wonted ¹⁷²⁴ pride
528 Soon recollecting, with high words that bore
529 Semblance¹⁷²⁵ of worth, not substance, gently raised
530 Their fainting courage and dispelled their fears
531 Then straight ¹⁷²⁶ commands that, at the warlike sound
532 Of trumpets loud, and clarions, ¹⁷²⁷ be upreared ¹⁷²⁸
533 His mighty standard. ¹⁷²⁹ That proud honor claimed
534 Azazel ¹⁷³⁰ as his right, a Cherub tall
535 Who forthwith from the glittering staff ¹⁷³¹ unfurled
536 Th' imperial ensign, which, full high advanced, ¹⁷³²
537 Shone like a meteor streaming to the wind
538 With gems and golden luster rich emblazed
539 Seraphic arms and trophies, all the while
540 Sonorous metal blowing martial sounds
541 At which the universal host up-sent
542 A shout that tore Hell's concave, ¹⁷³³ and beyond
543 Frighted the reign¹⁷³⁴ of Chaos and old Night
544 All in a moment through the gloom were seen
545 Ten thousand banners rise into the air
546 With orient¹⁷³⁵ colors waving. With them rose
547 A forest huge of spears, and thronging helms¹⁷³⁶
548 Appeared, and serried¹⁷³⁷ shields in thick array
549 Of depth immeasurable. Anon¹⁷³⁸ they move
550 In perfect phalanx¹⁷³⁹ to the Dorian mood ¹⁷⁴⁰
551 Of flutes and soft recorders¹⁷⁴¹ —such as raised
552 To height of noblest temper¹⁷⁴² heroes old
553 Arming to battle, and instead of rage
554 Deliberate valour breathed, firm, and unmoved
555 With dread of death to flight or foul retreat
556 Nor wanting ¹⁷⁴³ power to mitigate ¹⁷⁴⁴ and suage¹⁷⁴⁵
557 With solemn touches troubled thoughts, and chase
558 Anguish and doubt and fear and sorrow and pain

559 From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they
560 Breathing united force with fixèd thought
561 Moved on in silence to soft pipes that charmed
562 Their painful steps o'er the burnt soil.

And now

563 Advanced in view they stand—a horrid [1746](#) front [1747](#)
564 Of dreadful length [1748](#) and dazzling arms, [1749](#) in guise [1750](#)
565 Of warriors old, with ordered [1751](#) spear and shield
566 Awaiting what command their mighty chief
567 Had to impose. [1752](#) He through the armèd files [1753](#)
568 Darts his experienced eye, and soon traverse [1754](#)
569 The whole battalion views—their order due, [1755](#)
570 Their visages and stature as of gods
571 Their number last he sums. [1756](#) And now his heart
572 Distends [1757](#) with pride and hard'ning in his strength
573 Glories, for never since created man
574 Met such embodied [1758](#) force as, named [1759](#) with these
575 Could merit [1760](#) more than [1761](#) that small infantry
576 Warred on by cranes [1762](#) —though all the giant brood
577 Of Phlegra [1763](#) with th' heroic race were joined
578 That fought at Thebes [1764](#) and Ilium, [1765](#) on each side
579 Mixed with auxiliar [1766](#) gods, and what resounds [1767](#)
580 In fable or romance of Uther's son, [1768](#)
581 Begirt with [1769](#) British and Armoric [1770](#) knights
582 And all who since, baptized or infidel
583 Josted [1771](#) in Aspramont, [1772](#) or Montalban, [1773](#)
584 Damasco, [1774](#) or Marocco, [1775](#) or Trebisonde, [1776](#)
585 Or whom Biserta [1777](#) sent from Afric shore
586 When Charlemain with all his peerage fell
587 By Fontarabbia. [1778](#) Thus far these, beyond
588 Compare of [1779](#) mortal prowess, yet observed
589 Their dread [1780](#) commander. He, above the rest

590 *In shape and gesture proudly eminent*
591 *Stood like a tow'r. His form had yet not lost*
592 *All her original brightness, nor appeared*
593 *Less than Archangel ruined, and th' excess*
594 *Of glory obscured, as when the sun new-ris'n*
595 *Looks through the horizontal misty air*
596 *Shorn of his beams, or from behind the moon*
597 *In dim eclipse, disastrous¹⁷⁸¹ twilight sheds¹⁷⁸²*
598 *On half the nations, and with fear of change*
599 *Perplexes¹⁷⁸³ monarchs. Darkened so, yet shone*
600 *Above them all th' Archangel, but his face*
601 *Deep scars of thunder had intrenched,¹⁷⁸⁴ and care*
602 *Sat on his faded cheek, but under brows*
603 *Of dauntless courage, and considerate¹⁷⁸⁵ pride*
604 *Waiting revenge. Cruel his eye, but cast¹⁷⁸⁶*
605 *Signs of remorse and passion, to behold*
606 *The fellows¹⁷⁸⁷ of his crime, the followers rather*
607 *(Far other once beheld in bliss), condemned*
608 *For ever now to have their lot ¹⁷⁸⁸ in pain*
609 *Millions of Spirits for his fault amerced¹⁷⁸⁹*
610 *Of heav'n, and from eternal splendors flung*
611 *For his revolt, yet faithful how they stood*
612 *Their glory withered—as when Heaven's fire*
613 *Hath scathed ¹⁷⁹⁰ the forest oaks or mountain pines*
614 *With singèd top their stately ¹⁷⁹¹ growth, though bare*
615 *Stands on the blasted¹⁷⁹² heath. He now prepared*
616 *To speak, whereat their doubled ranks they bend*
617 *From wing to wing, and half enclose him round*
618 *With all his peers. Attention held them mute*
619 *Thrice he assayed,¹⁷⁹³ and thrice, in spite of ¹⁷⁹⁴ scorn*
620 *Tears, such as Angels weep, burst forth. At last*
621 *Words interwove with sighs found out their way*
622 *“O myriads of immortal Spirits! O Powers*

623 Matchless, but [1795](#) with th'Almighty! And that strife
624 Was not inglorious, though th' event [1796](#) was dire, [1797](#)
625 As this place testifies, and this dire change
626 Hateful to utter. But what power of mind
627 Foreseeing or presaging, [1798](#) from the depth
628 Of knowledge past or present, could have feared
629 How such united force of gods, how such
630 As stood like these, could ever know repulse? [1799](#)
631 For who can yet believe, though after loss
632 That all these puissant [1800](#) legions, [1801](#) whose exile
633 Hath emptied Heav'n, shall fail to re-ascend
634 Self-raised, and repossess their native seat
635 For me, be witness all the host of Heav'n,
636 If counsels [1802](#) different, or danger shunned
637 By me, have lost our hopes. But He who reigns
638 Monarch in Heav'n till then as one secure
639 Sat on His throne, upheld by old repute
640 Consent or custom, and His regal state
641 Put forth at full, [1803](#) but still His strength concealed
642 Which tempted our attempt, and wrought [1804](#) our fall
643 Henceforth His might [1805](#) we know, and know our own
644 So as not either to provoke, or dread
645 New war provoked. Our better part [1806](#) remains
646 To work in close [1807](#) design, [1808](#) by fraud or guile
647 What force effected [1809](#) not, that He no less
648 At length from us may find: [1810](#) who overcomes
649 By force hath overcome but half his foe
650 Space may produce new worlds—whereof so rife [1811](#)
651 There went a fame [1812](#) in Heav'n that He ere long
652 Intended to create, and therein plant
653 A generation whom His choice [1813](#) regard [1814](#)
654 Should favor equal to the sons of Heav'n.
655 Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps

656 Our first eruption¹⁸¹⁵ —thither, or elsewhere
657 For this infernal pit shall never hold
658 Celestial Spirits in bondage, nor th' abyss
659 Long under darkness cover. ¹⁸¹⁶

“But these thoughts

660 Full counsel must mature. Peace is despaired
661 For who can think submission? War, then, war
662 Open or understood, must be resolved
663 He spoke and, to confirm his words, outflew
664 Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs¹⁸¹⁷
665 Of mighty Cherubim: the sudden blaze
666 Far round illumined Hell. Highly ¹⁸¹⁸ they raged
667 Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped ¹⁸¹⁹ arms
668 Clashed on their sounding¹⁸²⁰ shields the din of war
669 Hurling defiance toward the vault of Heav'n.
670 There stood a hill not far, whose grisly ¹⁸²¹ top
671 Belched fire and rolling smoke; the rest entire¹⁸²²
672 Shone with a glossy scurf ¹⁸²³ —undoubted sign
673 That in his womb was hid metallic ore
674 The work of sulphur. ¹⁸²⁴ Thither, winged with speed
675 A numerous brigade hastened: as when bands
676 Of pioneers, ¹⁸²⁵ with spade and pickaxe armed
677 Forerun¹⁸²⁶ the royal camp, to trench¹⁸²⁷ a field
678 Or cast¹⁸²⁸ a rampart. ¹⁸²⁹ Mammon led them on—
679 Mammon, the least erected ¹⁸³⁰ Spirit that fell
680 From Heav'n, for even in Heav'n his looks and thoughts
681 Were always downward bent, admiring more
682 The riches of Heav'n's pavement, trodden gold
683 Than aught divine or holy else¹⁸³¹ enjoyed
684 In vision beatific. ¹⁸³² By him first
685 Men also, and by his suggestion taught
686 Ransacked the center, ¹⁸³³ and with impious hands
687 Rifled¹⁸³⁴ the bowels of their mother earth

688 For treasures better hid. Soon had his crew
689 Opened into the hill a spacious wound
690 And digged out ribs¹⁸³⁵ of gold. Let none admire¹⁸³⁶
691 That riches grow in Hell: that soil may best
692 Deserve the precious bane. ¹⁸³⁷ And here let those
693 Who boast in¹⁸³⁸ mortal things, and wond'ring tell
694 Of Babel, and the works of Memphian¹⁸³⁹ kings
695 Learn how their greatest monuments of fame
696 And strength, and art, are easily outdone
697 By Spirits reprobate, ¹⁸⁴⁰ and in an hour
698 What in an age they, ¹⁸⁴¹ with incessant toil
699 And hands innumerable, scarce perform
700 Nigh¹⁸⁴² on the plain, in many cells¹⁸⁴³ prepared
701 That underneath had veins of liquid fire
702 Sluiced¹⁸⁴⁴ from the lake, a second multitude
703 With wondrous art ¹⁸⁴⁵ founded¹⁸⁴⁶ the massy¹⁸⁴⁷ ore
704 Severing¹⁸⁴⁸ each kind, and scummed¹⁸⁴⁹ the bullion dross.¹⁸⁵⁰
705 A third as soon¹⁸⁵¹ had formed within the ground
706 A various¹⁸⁵² mould, and from the boiling cells
707 By strange¹⁸⁵³ conveyance filled each hollow nook
708 As in an organ, from one blast of wind
709 To many a row of pipes the sound-board breathes
710 Anon¹⁸⁵⁴ out of the earth a fabric¹⁸⁵⁵ huge
711 Rose like an exhalation with the sound
712 Of dulcet ¹⁸⁵⁶ symphonies¹⁸⁵⁷ and voices sweet
713 Built like a temple, where pilasters¹⁸⁵⁸ round
714 Were set, and Doric¹⁸⁵⁹ pillars overlaid
715 With golden architrave, ¹⁸⁶⁰ nor did there want¹⁸⁶¹
716 Cornice¹⁸⁶² or frieze, ¹⁸⁶³ with bossy sculptures¹⁸⁶⁴ grav'n.
717 The roof was fretted ¹⁸⁶⁵ gold. Not Babylon
718 Nor great Alcairo¹⁸⁶⁶ such magnificence
719 Equaled in all their glories, to enshrine

720 Belus or Serapis [1867](#) their gods, or seat [1868](#)
721 Their kings, when Egypt with Assyria strove
722 In wealth and luxury. Th' ascending pile [1869](#)
723 Stood fixed [1870](#) her stately height, and straight the doors
724 Opening their brazen [1871](#) folds, discover, [1872](#) wide
725 Within, her ample spaces o'er the smooth
726 And level pavement. From the archèd roof
727 Pendant [1873](#) by subtle [1874](#) magic, many a row
728 Of starry lamps and blazing cressets, [1875](#) fed
729 With naphtha and asphaltus, yielded light
730 As from a sky. The hasty [1876](#) multitude
731 Admiring entered, and the work some praise
732 And some the architect. His hand was known
733 In Heav'n by many a tow' red structure high
734 Where sceptered Angels held their residence
735 And sat as Princes, whom the supreme King
736 Exalted to such power, and gave to rule
737 Each in his hierarchy, the Orders bright
738 Nor was his name unheard or unadored
739 In ancient Greece. And in Ausonian [1877](#) land
740 Men called him Mulciber, [1878](#) and how he fell
741 From Heav'n they fabled, [1879](#) thrown by angry Jove
742 Sheer [1880](#) o'er the crystal battlements. [1881](#) From morn
743 To noon he fell, from noon to dewy eve
744 A summer's day, and with the setting sun
745 Dropt from the zenith [1882](#) like a falling star
746 On Lemnos, th' Aegean isle. Thus they relate, [1883](#)
747 Erring, for he with this rebellious rout [1884](#)
748 Fell long before, nor aught availed him now
749 To have built in Heav'n high tow'rs, nor did he scape
750 By all his engines, [1885](#) but was headlong sent
751 With his industrious [1886](#) crew, to build in Hell
752 Meanwhile the wingèd heralds, by command

753 *Of sov'reign power, with awful [1887](#) ceremony*
754 *And trumpet's sound throughout the host [1888](#) proclaim*
755 *A solemn council forthwith to be held*
756 *At Pandemonium, the high capital*
757 *Of Satan and his peers. [1889](#) Their summons called*
758 *From every band and squarèd [1890](#) regiment*
759 *By place [1891](#) or choice the worthiest. They anon [1892](#)*
760 *With hundreds and with thousands trooping came*
761 *Attended. [1893](#) All access [1894](#) was thronged, the gates*
762 *And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall*
763 *(Though like a covered field, where champions bold*
764 *Wont [1895](#) ride in armed, and at the Soldan's [1896](#) chair*
765 *Defied the best of Paynim [1897](#) chivalry*
766 *To mortal combat, or career [1898](#) with lance*
767 *Thick swarmed, both on the ground and in the air*
768 *Brushed with the hiss of rustling wings. As bees*
769 *In spring-time, when the sun with Taurus rides*
770 *Pour forth their populous youth about the hive*
771 *In clusters, they among fresh dews and flowers*
772 *Fly to and fro, or on the smoothèd plank*
773 *The suburb [1899](#) of their straw-built citadel*
774 *New rubbed with balm, expatiate [1900](#) and confer*
775 *Their state-affairs. So thick the airy crowd*
776 *Swarmed and were straitened, [1901](#) till, the signal given*
777 *Behold a wonder! They but now who seemed*
778 *In bigness to surpass earth's giant sons*
779 *Now less than smallest dwarfs in narrow room*
780 *Throng numberless—like that pygmean race*
781 *Beyond the Indian mount, [1902](#) or faery elves*
782 *Whose midnight revels [1903](#) by a forest-side*
783 *Or fountain some belated [1904](#) peasant sees*
784 *Or dreams he sees, while overhead the moon*
785 *Sits arbitress, [1905](#) and nearer to the earth*

786 Wheels¹⁹⁰⁶ her pale course. ¹⁹⁰⁷ They, on their mirth and dance
787 Intent, with jocund¹⁹⁰⁸ music charm his¹⁹⁰⁹ ear
788 At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds
789 Thus incorporeal Spirits to smallest forms
790 Reduced their shapes immense, and were at large, ¹⁹¹⁰
791 Though without number still, amidst the hall
792 Of that infernal court.¹⁹¹¹ But far within
793 And in their own dimensions like themselves
794 The great Seraphic Lords and Cherubim
795 In close recess and secret conclave¹⁹¹² sat
796 A thousand demi-gods on golden seats
797 Frequent ¹⁹¹³ and full. After short silence, then
798 And summons read, the great consult began

The End of the First Book

BOOK II

THE ARGUMENT

The consultation begun, Satan debates whether another battle be¹⁹¹⁴ to be hazarded for the recovery of Heaven. Some advise it, others dissuade. A third proposal is preferred,¹⁹¹⁵ mentioned before by Satan, to search the truth of that prophesy or tradition in Heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature equal or not much inferior to themselves, about this time to be created.

Their doubt who shall be sent on this difficult search. Satan, their chief, undertakes alone the voyage, is honored and applauded. The council thus ended, the rest betake them several ways and to several employments, as their inclinations lead them, to entertain¹⁹¹⁶ the time till Satan return. He passes on his journey to Hell Gates, finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them, by whom at length they are opened, and discover to him the great gulf¹⁹¹⁷ between Hell and Heaven.

With what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the Power of that place, to the sight of this new world which he sought.

- 1 *High on a throne of royal state, which far*
- 2 *Outshone the wealth of Ormus¹⁹¹⁸ and of Ind,¹⁹¹⁹*
- 3 *Or where the gorgeous¹⁹²⁰ East with richest hand*
- 4 *Show'rs on her kings barbaric pearl and gold*
- 5 *Satan exalted sat, by merit raised*
- 6 *To that bad eminence and, from despair*
- 7 *Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires*
- 8 *Beyond thus high, insatiate¹⁹²¹ to pursue*
- 9 *Vain war with Heav'n and, by success¹⁹²² untaught*

10 *His proud imaginations thus displayed*
11 *“Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heav’n!—*
12 *For since no deep within her gulf [1923](#) can hold*
13 *Immortal vigor, [1924](#) though oppressed and fall’n,*
14 *I give not Heav’n for lost. From this descent*
15 *Celestial Virtues [1925](#) rising will appear*
16 *More glorious and more dread than from no fall*
17 *And trust themselves to fear no second fate*
18 *Me, though, just right [1926](#) and the fixed laws of Heav’n*
19 *Did first create your leader, next free choice*
20 *With what besides in council or in fight*
21 *Hath been achieved of merit, yet this loss*
22 *Thus far at least recovered, [1927](#) hath much more*
23 *Established in a safe, unenvied throne*
24 *Yielded with full consent. The happier [1928](#) state*
25 *In Heav’n, which follows [1929](#) dignity, [1930](#) might draw*
26 *Envy from each inferior. But who here*
27 *Will envy whom the highest place exposes*
28 *Foremost to stand against the Thunderer’s aim*
29 *Your bulwark, [1931](#) and condemns to greatest share*
30 *Of endless pain? Where there is then no good*
31 *For which to strive, no strife can grow up there*
32 *From faction, [1932](#) for none sure will claim in Hell*
33 *Precedence, none whose portion is so small*
34 *Of present pain that with ambitious mind*
35 *Will covet more! With this advantage, then*
36 *To union, and firm faith, and firm accord*
37 *More than can be in Heav’n, we now return*
38 *To claim our just inheritance of old*
39 *Surer to prosper than prosperity*
40 *Could have assured us. And by what best way*

41 *Whether of open war or covert guile*
42 *We now debate. Who can advise may speak*
43 *He ceased. And next [1933](#) him Moloch, sceptered king,*
44 *Stood up—the strongest and the fiercest Spirit*
45 *That fought in Heav’n, now fiercer by despair*
46 *His trust [1934](#) was with th’ Eternal to be deemed*
47 *Equal in strength, and rather than be less*
48 *Cared not to be at all. With that care lost*
49 *Went all his fear—of God, or Hell, or worse*
50 *He recked [1935](#) not—and these words thereafter spoke:*
51 *My sentence [1936](#) is for open war. Of wiles*
52 *More unexpert, I boast not. Then let those*
53 *Contrive who need, or when they need; not now*
54 *For while they sit contriving, shall the rest*
55 *Millions that stand in arms, and longing wait*
56 *The signal to ascend—sit ling’ring here*
57 *Heav’n’s fugitives? and for their dwelling-place*
58 *Accept this dark opprobrious [1937](#) den of shame*
59 *The prison of His tyranny who reigns*
60 *By our delay? No! Let us rather choose*
61 *Armed with Hell-flames and fury, all at once*
62 *O’er Heav’n’s high tow’rs to force resistless way*
63 *Turning our tortures into horrid arms*
64 *Against the Torturer! When to meet the noise*
65 *Of His almighty engine, [1938](#) He shall hear*
66 *Infernal thunder and, for lightning, see*
67 *Black fire and horror shot with equal rage*
68 *Among His Angels, and His throne itself*
69 *Mixed with Tartarean [1939](#) sulphur and strange [1940](#) fire*
70 *His own invented torments. But perhaps*
71 *The way seems difficult, and steep to scale*

72 *With upright wing against a higher foe*
73 *Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench¹⁹⁴¹*
74 *Of that forgetful ¹⁹⁴² lake benumb not still*
75 *That in our proper¹⁹⁴³ motion we ascend*
76 *Up to our native seat; descent and fall*
77 *To us is adverse. ¹⁹⁴⁴ Who but felt of late*
78 *When the fierce foe hung on our broken rear ¹⁹⁴⁵*
79 *Insulting, ¹⁹⁴⁶ and pursued us through the deep*
80 *With what compulsion and laborious flight*
81 *We sunk thus low? Th' ascent is easy, then*
82 *Th' event¹⁹⁴⁷ is feared! Should we again provoke*
83 *Our stronger, some worse way His wrath may find*
84 *To our destruction, if there be in Hell*
85 *Fear to be worse destroyed! What can be worse*
86 *Than to dwell here, driv'n out from bliss condemned*
87 *In this abhorred¹⁹⁴⁸ deep to utter¹⁹⁴⁹ woe*
88 *Where pain of unextinguishable fire*
89 *Must exercise¹⁹⁵⁰ us without hope of end*
90 *The vassals¹⁹⁵¹ of His anger, when the scourge*
91 *Inexorably, and the torturing hour*
92 *Calls us to penance? More destroyed than thus*
93 *We should be quite abolished, and expire*
94 *What fear we then? What doubt we to incense¹⁹⁵²*
95 *His utmost ire? which, to the height enraged*
96 *Will either quite consume us, and reduce*
97 *To nothing this essential¹⁹⁵³ —happier far*
98 *Than miserable to have eternal being*
99 *Or if our substance be indeed divine*
100 *And cannot cease to be, we are at worst*
101 *On this side nothing. And by proof we feel*
102 *Our power sufficient to disturb His Heav'n,*

103 *And with perpetual inroads to alarm*
104 *Though inaccessible, His fatal throne*
105 *Which if not victory, is yet revenge*
106 *He ended frowning, and his look denounced*¹⁹⁵⁴
107 *Desperate revenge, and battle dangerous*
108 *To less than gods. On th' other side up rose*
109 *Belial, in act more graceful and humane*
110 *A fairer person lost not Heav'n. He seemed*
111 *For dignity composed, and high exploit*
112 *But all was false and hollow, though his tongue*
113 *Dropped manna*¹⁹⁵⁵ *and could make the worse appear*
114 *The better reason, to perplex*¹⁹⁵⁶ *and dash*¹⁹⁵⁷
115 *Matuarest counsels, for his thoughts were low*
116 *To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds*
117 *Timorous and slothful. Yet he pleased the ear*
118 *And with persuasive accent thus began*
119 *"I should be much for open war, O peers,*¹⁹⁵⁸
120 *As not behind in hate, if what was urged*
121 *Main reason to persuade immediate war*
122 *Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast*
123 *Ominous conjecture*¹⁹⁵⁹ *on the whole success,*¹⁹⁶⁰
124 *When he who most excels in fact*¹⁹⁶¹ *of arms*
125 *In what he counsels and in what excels*
126 *Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair*
127 *And utter dissolution*¹⁹⁶² *as the scope*¹⁹⁶³
128 *Of all his aim,*¹⁹⁶⁴ *after some dire revenge*
129 *First, what revenge? The tow'rs of Heav'n are filled*
130 *With armèd watch that render all access*
131 *Impregnable. Oft on the bordering deep*
132 *Encamp their legions, or with obscure*¹⁹⁶⁵ *wing*
133 *Scout far and wide into the realm of Night*

134 Scorning surprise. Or could [1966](#) we break our way
135 By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise
136 With blackest insurrection to confound [1967](#)
137 Heav'n's purest light, yet our great enemy
138 All incorruptible, would on His throne
139 Sit unpolluted, and th' ethereal [1968](#) mould, [1969](#)
140 Incapable of stain, would soon expel
141 Her mischief, [1970](#) and purge off the baser [1971](#) fire
142 Victorious. Thus repulsed, our final hope
143 Is flat [1972](#) despair: we must exasperate
144 Th' Almighty victor to spend [1973](#) all His rage
145 And that must end us, that must be our cure
146 To be no more. Sad cure! for who would lose, [1974](#)
147 Though full of pain, this intellectual being, [1975](#)
148 Those thoughts that wander through eternity
149 To perish rather, swallowed up and lost
150 In the wide womb of uncreated Night
151 Devoid of sense and motion? And who knows
152 Let this be good, whether our angry foe
153 Can give it, or will ever? How He can
154 Is doubtful; that He never will is sure
155 Will He, so wise, let loose at once His ire
156 Belike [1976](#) through impotence or unaware
157 To give His enemies their wish, and end
158 Them in His anger, whom His anger saves
159 To punish endless? 'Wherefore cease we, then
160 Say they who counsel war: 'we are decreed, [1977](#)
161 Reserved, [1978](#) and destined to eternal woe
162 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more
163 What can we suffer worse?' Is this, then, worst
164 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms

165 *What when we fled amain, [1979](#) pursued and struck*
166 *With Heav'n's afflicting thunder, and besought*
167 *The deep to shelter us? This Hell then seemed*
168 *A refuge from those wounds. Or when we lay*
169 *Chained on the burning lake? That sure was worse.*
170 *What if the breath that kindled those grim fires*
171 *Awaked, should blow them into sevenfold rage*
172 *And plunge us in the flames? Or from above*
173 *Should intermitted [1980](#) vengeance arm again*
174 *His red right hand to plague us? What if all*
175 *Her stores were opened, and this firmament*
176 *Of Hell should spout her cataracts of fire*
177 *Impendent [1981](#) horrors, threat'ning hideous fall*
178 *One day upon our heads, while we, perhaps*
179 *Designing or exhorting glorious war*
180 *Caught in a fiery tempest, shall be hurled*
181 *Each on his rock transfixed, the sport and prey*
182 *Of racking [1982](#) whirlwinds, or for ever sunk*
183 *Under yon boiling ocean, wrapped in chains*
184 *There to converse with everlasting groans*
185 *Unrespited, [1983](#) unpitied, unreprieved*
186 *Ages of hopeless end? This would be worse*
187 *War, therefore, open or concealed, alike*
188 *My voice dissuades. For what can force or guile*
189 *With Him, or who deceive His mind, whose eye*
190 *Views all things at one view? He from Heav'n's height*
191 *All these our motions vain sees and derides*
192 *Not more Almighty to resist our might*
193 *Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles*
194 *Shall we, then, live thus vile—the race of Heav'n*
195 *Thus trampled, thus expelled, to suffer here*

196 Chains and these torments? Better these than worse,
197 By my advice, since fate inevitable
198 Subdues us, and omnipotent decree
199 The victor's will. To suffer, as to do,
200 Our strength is equal, nor the law unjust
201 That so ordains. This was at first resolved
202 If we were wise, against so great a foe
203 Contending, [1984](#) and so [1985](#) doubtful what might fall. [1986](#)
204 I laugh when those who at the spear are bold
205 And vent'rous, if that fail them, shrink, and fear
206 What yet they know must follow—to endure
207 Exile, or ignominy, [1987](#) or bonds, or pain
208 The sentence of their conqueror. This is now
209 Our doom, [1988](#) which if we can sustain and bear
210 Our Supreme foe in time may much remit [1989](#)
211 His anger, and perhaps, thus far removed, [1990](#)
212 Not mind [1991](#) us, not offending, satisfied
213 With what is punished, whence these raging fires
214 Will slacken, if His breath stir not their flames
215 Our purer essence then will overcome
216 Their noxious [1992](#) vapor or, inured, [1993](#) not feel
217 Or, changed at length, and to the place conformed [1994](#)
218 In temper and in nature, will receive
219 Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain
220 This horror will grow mild, this darkness light
221 Besides what hope the never-ending flight
222 Of future days may bring, what chance, what change
223 Worth waiting—since our present lot appears
224 For happy though but ill, for ill not worst
225 If we procure not to ourselves more woe
226 Thus Belial, with words clothed in reason's garb

227 *Counselled ignoble ease and peaceful sloth*
228 *Not peace. And after him thus Mammon spoke*
229 *“Either to disenthroned the King of Heav’n*
230 *We war, if war be best, or to regain*
231 *Our own right lost. Him to unthroned we then*
232 *May hope, when everlasting Fate shall yield*
233 *To fickle Chance, and Chaos judge the strife*
234 *The former, vain to hope, argues as vain*
235 *The latter—for what place can be for us*
236 *Within Heav’n’s bound, unless Heav’n’s Lord supreme*
237 *We overpower? Suppose He should relent*
238 *And publish¹⁹⁹⁵ grace to all, on promise made*
239 *Of new subjection?¹⁹⁹⁶ With what eyes could we*
240 *Stand in His presence humble, and receive*
241 *Strict laws imposed, to celebrate His throne*
242 *With warbled hymns, and to His Godhead sing*
243 *Forced hallelujahs, while He lordly sits*
244 *Our envied sov’ reign, and His altar breathes*
245 *Ambrosial odors and ambrosial flowers*
246 *Our servile offerings? This must be our task*
247 *In Heav’n, this our delight. How wearisome*
248 *Eternity so spent in worship paid*
249 *To whom we hate! Let us not then pursue*
250 *By force impossible, by leave obtained*
251 *Unacceptable, though in Heav’n, our state*
252 *Of splendid vassalage, but rather seek*
253 *Our own good from ourselves, and from our own*
254 *Live to¹⁹⁹⁷ ourselves, though in this vast recess*
255 *Free and to none accountable, preferring*
256 *Hard liberty before the easy yoke*
257 *Of servile pomp. Our greatness will appear*

258 *Then most conspicuous when great things of [1998](#) small,*
259 *Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse, [1999](#)*
260 *We can create, and in what place soe'er*
261 *Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain*
262 *Through labor and endurance. This deep world*
263 *Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst*
264 *Thick clouds and dark doth Heav'n's all-ruling Sire*
265 *Choose to reside, His glory unobscured*
266 *And with the majesty of darkness round*
267 *Covers His throne, from whence deep thunders roar,*
268 *Must'ring [2000](#) their rage, and Heav'n resembles Hell!*
269 *As He our darkness, cannot we His light*
270 *Imitate when we please? This desert soil*
271 *Wants [2001](#) not her hidden luster, gems and gold,*
272 *Nor want [2002](#) we skill or art from whence to raise*
273 *Magnificence. And what can Heav'n show more?*
274 *Our torments also may, in length of time,*
275 *Become our elements, [2003](#) these piercing fires*
276 *As soft as now severe, our temper changed*
277 *Into their temper, which must needs remove*
278 *The sensible [2004](#) of pain. All things invite*
279 *To peaceful counsels, and the settled state*
280 *Of order, how in safety best we may*
281 *Compose [2005](#) our present evils, with regard*
282 *Of what we are and where, dismissing quite*
283 *All thoughts of war. Ye have what I advise.*
284 *He scarce had finished, when such murmur filled*
285 *Th' assembly as when hollow rocks retain*
286 *The sound of blust'ring winds, which all night long*
287 *Had roused the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull*
288 *Seafaring men o'erwatched, [2006](#) whose barque [2007](#) by chance,*

289 Or pinnacle, [2008](#) anchors in a craggy bay
290 After the tempest. Such applause was heard
291 As Mammon ended, and his sentence [2009](#) pleased,
292 Advising peace, for such another field [2010](#)
293 They dreaded worse than Hell, so much the fear
294 Of thunder and the sword of Michael
295 Wrought [2011](#) still within them, and no less desire
296 To found [2012](#) this nether [2013](#) empire, which might rise,
297 By policy [2014](#) and long process [2015](#) of time,
298 In emulation [2016](#) opposite [2017](#) to Heav'n.
299 Which when Beelzebub perceived—than whom,
300 Satan except, none higher sat—with grave
301 Aspect he rose, and in his rising seemed
302 A pillar of state. Deep on his front [2018](#) engrav'n
303 Deliberation sat, and public care,
304 And princely counsel in his face yet shone,
305 Majestic, though in ruin. Sage he stood
306 With Atlantean [2019](#) shoulders, fit to bear
307 The weight of mightiest monarchies. His look
308 Drew audience [2020](#) and attention still as night
309 Or summer's noontide air, while thus he spoke:
310 "Thrones and Imperial Powers, offspring of Heav'n,
311 Ethereal Virtues! Or these titles now
312 Must we renounce and, changing style, be called
313 Princes of Hell? For so the popular vote
314 Inclines—here to continue, and build up here
315 A growing empire. Doubtless! While we dream,
316 And know not that the King of Heav'n hath doomed [2021](#)
317 This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat
318 Beyond His potent arm, to live exempt
319 From Heav'n's high jurisdiction, in new league

320 *Banded against His throne, but to remain*
321 *In strictest bondage, though thus far removed,*
322 *Under th' inevitable²⁰²² curb,²⁰²³ reserved²⁰²⁴*
323 *His captive multitude. For He, to be sure,*
324 *In height or depth, still first and last will reign*
325 *Sole king, and of His Kingdom lose no part*
326 *By our revolt, but over Hell extend*
327 *His empire, and with iron scepter rule*
328 *Us here, as with His golden²⁰²⁵ those in Heav'n.*
329 *What sit we then projecting peace and war?*
330 *War hath determined ²⁰²⁶us and foiled²⁰²⁷ with loss*
331 *Irreparable; terms of peace yet none*
332 *Vouchsafed ²⁰²⁸or sought. For what peace will be giv'n*
333 *To us enslaved, but custody severe,*
334 *And stripes²⁰²⁹ and arbitrary punishment*
335 *Inflicted? And what peace can we return,²⁰³⁰*
336 *But, to our power, hostility and hate,*
337 *Untamed reluctance, ²⁰³¹and revenge, though slow,*
338 *Yet ever plotting how the conqueror least*
339 *May reap²⁰³² His conquest, and may least rejoice*
340 *In doing what we most in suffering feel?*
341 *Nor will occasion²⁰³³ want,²⁰³⁴ nor shall we need*
342 *With dangerous expedition²⁰³⁵ to invade*
343 *Heav'n, whose high walls fear no assault or siege,*
344 *Or ambush from the deep. What if we find*
345 *Some easier enterprise?²⁰³⁶ There is a place*
346 *(If ancient and prophetic fame²⁰³⁷ in Heav'n*
347 *Err not)—another world, the happy seat*
348 *Of some new race, called man, about this time*
349 *To be created like to us, though less*
350 *In power and excellence, but favored more*

351 *Of Him who rules above. So was His will*
352 *Pronounced among the gods, and by an oath*
353 *That shook Heav'n's whole circumference²⁰³⁸ confirmed.*
354 *Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn*
355 *What creatures there inhabit, of what mould ²⁰³⁹*
356 *Or substance, how endued,²⁰⁴⁰ and what their power*
357 *And where their weakness: how attempted best,*
358 *By force or subtlety. Though Heav'n be shut,*
359 *And Heav'n's high arbitrator²⁰⁴¹ sit secure*
360 *In His own strength, this place²⁰⁴² may lie exposed,*
361 *The utmost border of His Kingdom, left*
362 *To their defence who hold it. Here, perhaps,*
363 *Some advantageous act may be achieved*
364 *By sudden onset²⁰⁴³ —either with Hell-fire*
365 *To waste²⁰⁴⁴ His whole creation, or possess*
366 *All as our own, and drive, ²⁰⁴⁵ as we were driven,*
367 *The puny²⁰⁴⁶ habitants, or if not drive,*
368 *Seduce them to our party, that their God*
369 *May prove their foe, and with repenting hand*
370 *Abolish His own works. This would surpass*
371 *Common revenge, and interrupt His joy*
372 *In our confusion, and our joy upraise*
373 *In His disturbance, when His darling sons,*
374 *Hurled headlong to partake with us, shall curse*
375 *Their frail original,²⁰⁴⁷ and faded bliss—*
376 *Faded so soon! Advise if this be worth*
377 *Attempting, or to sit in darkness here*
378 *Hatching vain empires.” Thus Beelzebub*
379 *Pleaded his devilish counsel—first devised*
380 *By Satan, and in part proposed, for whence*
381 *But from the author of all ill could spring*

382 *So deep a malice, to confound²⁰⁴⁸ the race*
383 *Of mankind in one root,²⁰⁴⁹ and earth with Hell*
384 *To mingle and involve, done all to spite*
385 *The great Creator? But their spite still serves*
386 *His glory to augment. The bold design*
387 *Pleased highly those infernal States,²⁰⁵⁰ and joy*
388 *Sparkled in all their eyes. With full assent*
389 *They vote, whereat his speech he thus renews:*
390 *“Well have ye judged, well ended long debate,*
391 *Synod²⁰⁵¹ of gods, and, like to what ye are,*
392 *Great things resolved, which from the lowest deep*
393 *Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate,*
394 *Nearer our ancient seat—perhaps in view*
395 *Of those bright confines, whence, with neighboring arms,*
396 *And opportune²⁰⁵² excursion, we may chance*
397 *Re-enter Heav’n, or else in some mild zone*
398 *Dwell not unvisited of Heav’n’s fair light*
399 *Secure, ²⁰⁵³ and at the bright’ning orient²⁰⁵⁴ beam*
400 *Purge off this gloom. The soft delicious air,*
401 *To heal the scar of these corrosive fires,*
402 *Shall breathe her balm. But first, whom shall we send*
403 *In search of this new world? whom shall we find*
404 *Sufficient? who shall tempt ²⁰⁵⁵ with wand’ring feet*
405 *The dark, unbottomed, infinite abyss,*
406 *And through the palpable²⁰⁵⁶ obscure²⁰⁵⁷ find out*
407 *His uncouth²⁰⁵⁸ way, or spread his airy flight,*
408 *Upborne with indefatigable wings*
409 *Over the vast abrupt,²⁰⁵⁹ ere he arrive*
410 *The happy isle?²⁰⁶⁰ What strength, what art, can then*
411 *Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe,*
412 *Through the strict senteries²⁰⁶¹ and stations thick*

413 *Of Angels watching round? Here he had need*
414 *All circumspection, and we now no less*
415 *Choice in our suffrage, [2062](#) for on whom we send*
416 *The weight of all, and our last hope, relies.*
417 *This said, he sat, and expectation held*
418 *His look suspense, [2063](#) awaiting who appeared*
419 *To second, or oppose, or undertake*
420 *The perilous attempt. But all sat mute,*
421 *Pondering the danger with deep thoughts, and each*
422 *In other's count'nance read his own dismay,*
423 *Astonished. [2064](#) None among the choice [2065](#) and prime [2066](#)*
424 *Of those Heav'n-warring champions could be found*
425 *So hardy [2067](#) as to proffer or accept,*
426 *Alone, the dreadful voyage, till at last*
427 *Satan, whom now transcendent glory raised*
428 *Above his fellows, with monarchal pride*
429 *Conscious of highest worth, unmoved [2068](#) thus spoke:*
430 *"O progeny [2069](#) of Heaven! Empyrean [2070](#) Thrones!*
431 *With reason hath deep silence and demur [2071](#)*
432 *Seized us, though undismayed. Long is the way*
433 *And hard, that out of Hell leads up to light.*
434 *Our prison strong, this huge convex [2072](#) of fire,*
435 *Outrageous [2073](#) to devour, immures [2074](#) us round*
436 *Ninefold, and gates of burning adamant, [2075](#)*
437 *Barred [2076](#) over us, prohibit all egress. [2077](#)*
438 *These passed, if any pass, the void [2078](#) profound [2079](#)*
439 *Of unessential [2080](#) Night receives him next,*
440 *Wide-gaping, and with utter loss of being*
441 *Threatens him, plunged in that abortive [2081](#) gulf. [2082](#)*
442 *If thence he scape, into whatever world*
443 *Or unknown region, what remains him less*

444 *Than unknown dangers, and as hard escape?*
445 *But I should ill become this throne, O peers,*
446 *And this imperial sov'reignty, adorned*
447 *With splendor, armed with power, if aught proposed*
448 *And judged of public moment²⁰⁸³ in the shape*
449 *Of difficulty or danger, could deter*
450 *Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume*
451 *These royalties,²⁰⁸⁴ and not refuse to reign,*
452 *Refusing to accept as great a share*
453 *Of hazard as of honor, due alike*
454 *To him who reigns, and so much to him due*
455 *Of hazard more as he above the rest*
456 *High honored sits? Go therefore, mighty Powers,*
457 *Terror of Heav'n, though fall'n. Intend²⁰⁸⁵ at home,*
458 *While here shall be our home, what best may ease*
459 *The present misery, and render Hell*
460 *More tolerable, ²⁰⁸⁶ if there be cure²⁰⁸⁷ or charm²⁰⁸⁸*
461 *To respite, ²⁰⁸⁹ or deceive, or slack²⁰⁹⁰ the pain*
462 *Of this ill²⁰⁹¹ mansion. ²⁰⁹² Intermit²⁰⁹³ no watch*
463 *Against a wakeful foe, while I abroad*
464 *Through all the coasts²⁰⁹⁴ of dark destruction seek*
465 *Deliverance for us all. This enterprise*
466 *None shall partake²⁰⁹⁵ with me." Thus saying, rose*
467 *The monarch, and prevented all reply,*
468 *Prudent, lest from²⁰⁹⁶ his resolution raised, ²⁰⁹⁷*
469 *Others among the chief might offer now,*
470 *Certain to be refused, what erst they feared,*
471 *And so refused, might in opinion²⁰⁹⁸ stand*
472 *His rivals, winning cheap the high repute*
473 *Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they*
474 *Dreaded not more th' adventure than his voice*

475 *Forbidding, and at once with him they rose.*
476 *Their rising all at once was as the sound*
477 *Of thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend*
478 *With awful²⁰⁹⁹ reverence prone, and as a god*
479 *Extol him equal to the Highest in Heav'n.*
480 *Nor failed they to express how much they praised*
481 *That for the general safety he despised*
482 *His own, for neither do the Spirits damned*
483 *Lose all their virtue, lest bad men should boast*
484 *Their specious²¹⁰⁰ deeds on earth, which glory excites,²¹⁰¹*
485 *Or close²¹⁰² ambition varnished o'er with zeal.*
486 *Thus they their doubtful consultations dark²¹⁰³*
487 *Ended, rejoicing in their matchless chief—*
488 *As when from mountain-tops the dusky clouds*
489 *Ascending, while the north wind sleeps, o'erspread*
490 *Heav'n's cheerful face, the louring²¹⁰⁴ element²¹⁰⁵*
491 *Scowls o'er the darkened landscape, snow or shower.*
492 *If chance the radiant sun, with farewell sweet,*
493 *Extend ²¹⁰⁶ his evening beam, the fields revive,*
494 *The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds*
495 *Attest²¹⁰⁷ their joy, that hill and valley rings.*
496 *O shame to men! Devil with devil damned*
497 *Firm²¹⁰⁸ concord ²¹⁰⁹ holds. Men only²¹¹⁰ disagree*
498 *Of creatures rational, though under²¹¹¹ hope*
499 *Of Heav'nly grace. And God proclaiming peace,*
500 *Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife*
501 *Among themselves, and levy²¹¹² cruel wars,*
502 *Wasting the earth, each other to destroy,*
503 *As if (which might induce us to accord²¹¹³)*
504 *Man had not hellish foes enow²¹¹⁴ besides,*
505 *That day and night for his destruction wait!*

506 The Stygian²¹¹⁵ council thus dissolved, and forth
507 In order came the grand infernal peers.
508 Midst came their mighty Paramount,²¹¹⁶ and seemed
509 Alone th' antagonist of Heav'n, nor less
510 Than Hell's dread emperor, with pomp supreme,
511 And godlike imitated state. Him round
512 A globe²¹¹⁷ of fiery Seraphim enclosed
513 With bright emblazonry, ²¹¹⁸ and horrent ²¹¹⁹ arms.
514 Then of their session ended they bid cry, ²¹²⁰
515 With trumpet's regal ²¹²¹ sound, the great result.
516 Toward the four winds four speedy Cherubim
517 Put to their mouths the sounding ²¹²² alchemy, ²¹²³
518 By herald's voice explained. The hollow abyss
519 Heard far and wide, and all the host of Hell
520 With deaf 'ning shout returned ²¹²⁴ them loud acclaim.
521 Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat raised
522 By false presumptuous hope, the rangèd ²¹²⁵ Powers
523 Disband and, wand'ring, each his several way
524 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice
525 Leads him, perplexed, ²¹²⁶ where he may likeliest find
526 Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain

527 *The irksome hours till his great chief return.*
528 *Part on the plain, or in the air sublime, [2127](#)*
529 *Upon the wing or in swift race contend, [2128](#)*
530 *As at th' Olympian [2129](#) games or Pythian [2130](#) fields.*
531 *Part curb [2131](#) their fiery steeds, or shun [2132](#) the goal [2133](#)*
532 *With rapid wheels, or fronted [2134](#) brigades form—*
533 *As when, to warn proud cities, war appears,*
534 *Waged in the troubled sky, and armies rush*
535 *To battle in the clouds. Before each van [2135](#)*
536 *Prick [2136](#) forth the airy knights, and couch [2137](#) their spears,*
537 *Till thickest [2138](#) legions close. [2139](#) With feats of arms*
538 *From either end of Heav'n the welkin [2140](#) burns.*
539 *Others, with vast Typhoean [2141](#) rage, more fell, [2142](#)*
540 *Rend [2143](#) up both rocks and hills, and ride the air*
541 *In whirlwind. Hell scarce holds the wild uproar,*
542 *As when Alcides, [2144](#) from Oechalia [2145](#) crowned*
543 *With conquest, felt th' envenomed robe, [2146](#) and tore*
544 *Through pain up by the roots Thessalian [2147](#) pines,*
545 *And Lichas [2148](#) from the top of Oeta [2149](#) threw*
546 *Into th' Euboic sea. [2150](#) Others, more mild,*
547 *Retreated [2151](#) in a silent valley, sing*
548 *With notes angelical to many a harp*
549 *Their own heroic deeds and hapless [2152](#) fall*
550 *By doom [2153](#) of battle, and complain that Fate*
551 *Free virtue should enthrall [2154](#) to force or chance. [2155](#)*
552 *Their song was partial, [2156](#) but the harmony*
553 *(What could it less when Spirits immortal sing?*
554 *Suspended [2157](#) Hell, and took [2158](#) with ravishment*
555 *The thronging audience. In discourse [2159](#) more sweet*
556 *(For eloquence the soul, [2160](#) song charms the sense)*
557 *Others apart sat on a hill retired, [2161](#)*
558 *In thoughts more elevate, and reasoned high*

559 *Of providence, foreknowledge, will, and fate*
560 *Fixed fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute,*
561 *And found no end, in wand'ring mazes lost.*
562 *Of good and evil much they argued then,*
563 *Of happiness and final misery,*
564 *Passion and apathy, and glory and shame:*
565 *Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy*
566 *Yet with a pleasing sorcery could charm*
567 *Pain for a while, or anguish, and excite*
568 *Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdurèd [2162](#) breast*
569 *With stubborn patience, as with triple steel.*
570 *Another part, in squadrons and gross [2163](#) bands,*
571 *On bold [2164](#) adventure to discover [2165](#) wide [2166](#)*
572 *That dismal world, if any clime perhaps*
573 *Might yield them easier habitation, bend*
574 *Four ways their flying [2167](#) march, along the banks*
575 *Of four infernal rivers, that disgorge*
576 *Into the burning lake their baleful [2168](#) streams—*
577 *Abhorred Styx, the flood [2169](#) of deadly hate;*
578 *Sad Acheron of sorrow, black and deep;*
579 *Cocytus, [2170](#) named of [2171](#) lamentation loud*
580 *Heard on the rueful [2172](#) stream; fierce Phlegeton, [2173](#)*
581 *Whose waves of torrent [2174](#) fire inflame [2175](#) with rage. [2176](#)*
582 *Far off from these, a slow and silent stream,*
583 *Lethe, [2177](#) the river of oblivion, rolls*
584 *Her wat'ry labyrinth, [2178](#) whereof who drinks*
585 *Forthwith [2179](#) his former state and being forgets—*
586 *Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.*
587 *Beyond this flood [2180](#) a frozen continent*
588 *Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms*
589 *Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land*
590 *Thaws not, but gathers heap, [2181](#) and ruin seems*
591 *Of ancient pile, [2182](#) all else deep snow and ice,*

592 A gulf ²¹⁸³ profound ²¹⁸⁴ as that Serbonian bog²¹⁸⁵
593 Betwixt Damyata²¹⁸⁶ and Mount Casius²¹⁸⁷ old,
594 Where armies whole have sunk. The parching²¹⁸⁸ air
595 Burns froze, ²¹⁸⁹ and cold performs²¹⁹⁰ th' effect of fire.
596 Thither, by harpy-footed Furies haled, ²¹⁹¹
597 At certain revolutions²¹⁹² all the damned
598 Are brought and feel by turns the bitter change
599 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,
600 From²¹⁹³ beds of raging fire to starve²¹⁹⁴ in ice
601 Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine²¹⁹⁵
602 Immovable, infixed, and frozen round,
603 Periods²¹⁹⁶ of time, thence hurried back to fire.
604 They ferry over this Lethean sound
605 Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment,
606 And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach
607 The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose
608 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,
609 All in one moment, and so near the brink.
610 But Fate withstands²¹⁹⁷ and, to oppose th' attempt,
611 Medusa, ²¹⁹⁸ with Gorgonian terror, guards
612 The ford, and of itself the water flies²¹⁹⁹
613 All taste of living wight, ²²⁰⁰ as once it fled
614 The lip of Tantalus. ²²⁰¹ Thus roving on
615 In confused ²²⁰² march forlorn, th' adventurous bands,
616 With shuddering horror pale and eyes aghast,
617 Viewed first their lamentable²²⁰³ lot, and found
618 No rest. Through many a dark and dreary vale
619 They passed, and many a region dolorous,
620 O'er many a frozen, many a fiery alp,
621 Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of death—
622 A universe of death, which God by curse
623 Created evil, for evil only good, ²²⁰⁴
624 Where all life dies, death lives, and Nature breeds,

625 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious²²⁰⁵ things,
626 Abominable, inutterable, and worse
627 Than fables yet have feigned ²²⁰⁶ or fear conceived,
628 Gorgons,²²⁰⁷ and Hydras,²²⁰⁸ and Chimeras²²⁰⁹ dire.
629 Meanwhile the adversary of God and man,
630 Satan, with thoughts inflamed of highest design,²²¹⁰
631 Puts on²²¹¹ swift wings, and toward the gates of Hell
632 Explores²²¹² his solitary flight. Sometimes
633 He scours²²¹³ the right-hand coast, sometimes the left,
634 Now shaves²²¹⁴ with le
635 Up to the fiery concave²²¹⁵ towering high.
636 As when far off at sea a fleet descried ²²¹⁶
637 Hangs in the clouds, by²²¹⁷ equinoctial ²²¹⁸ winds
638 Close sailing²²¹⁹ from Bengala,²²²⁰ or the isles
639 Of Ternate and Tidore, ²²²¹ whence merchants bring
640 Their spicy drugs—they on the trading²²²² flood,²²²³
641 Through the wide Ethiopian²²²⁴ to the Cape²²²⁵
642 Ply ²²²⁶ stemming²²²⁷ nightly toward the pole:²²²⁸ so seemed
643 Far off the flying fiend. At last appear
644 Hell-bounds,²²²⁹ high reaching to the horrid roof,
645 And thrice threefold the gates. Three folds²²³⁰ were brass,
646 Three iron, three of adamant rock,
647 Impenetrable, impaled ²²³¹ with circling fire,
648 Yet unconsumed. Before the gates there sat
649 On either side a formidable²²³² shape.
650 The one seemed woman to the waist, and fair,
651 But ended foul in many a scaly fold,
652 Voluminous and vast—a serpent armed
653 With mortal sting. About her middle round
654 A cry ²²³³ of Hell-hounds never-ceasing barked
655 With wide Cerberean mouths full loud, and rung
656 A hideous peal,²²³⁴ yet when they list,²²³⁵ would creep,

657 *If aught disturbed their noise, into her womb,*
658 *And kennel [2236](#) there, yet there still barked and howled*
659 *Within unseen. Far less abhorred than these*
660 *Vexed [2237](#) Scylla, [2238](#) bathing in the sea that parts*
661 *Calabria [2239](#) from the hoarse [2240](#) Trinacrian [2241](#) shore.*
662 *Nor uglier follow [2242](#) the night-hag, [2243](#) when called*
663 *In secret, riding through the air she comes,*
664 *Lured with the smell of infant blood, to dance*
665 *With Lapland [2244](#) witches, while the laboring moon [2245](#)*
666 *Eclipses at [2246](#) their charms. The other shape*
667 *If shape it might be called, that shape had none*
668 *Distinguishable in member, [2247](#) joint, or limb,*
669 *Or substance might be called that shadow seemed, [2248](#)*
670 *For each seemed either—black it stood as Night,*
671 *Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,*
672 *And shook a dreadful dart. [2249](#) What seemed his head*
673 *The likeness of a kingly crown had on.*
674 *Satan was now at hand, and from his seat*
675 *The monster moving onward came as fast [2250](#)*
676 *With horrid strides. Hell trembled as he strode.*
677 *Th’ undaunted fiend what this might be admired—[2251](#)*
678 *Admired, not feared (God and His Son except,*
679 *Created thing naught valued [2252](#) he nor shunned), [2253](#)*
680 *And with disdainful look thus first began:*
681 *“Whence and what art thou, execrable [2254](#) shape,*
682 *That dar’st, though grim [2255](#) and terrible, advance*
683 *Thy miscreated [2256](#) front [2257](#) athwart [2258](#) my way*
684 *To yonder gates? Through them I mean to pass,*
685 *That be assured, without leave asked of thee.*
686 *Retire, or taste thy folly, and learn by proof,*
687 *Hell-born, not to contend with Spirits of Heav’n.*
688 *To whom the goblin, [2259](#) full of wrath, replied:*
689 *“Art thou that traitor Angel? Art thou he*

690 *Who first broke peace in Heav'n, and faith, till then*
691 *Unbroken, and in proud rebellious arms*
692 *Drew after him the third part of Heav'n's sons,*
693 *Conjured²²⁶⁰ against the Highest—for which both thou*
694 *And they, outcast from God, are here condemned*
695 *To waste²²⁶¹ eternal days in woe and pain?*
696 *And reckon'st²²⁶² thou thyself with Spirits of Heav'n,*
697 *Hell-doomed, and breath'st defiance here and scorn,*
698 *Where I reign king and, to enrage thee more,*
699 *Thy king and lord? Back to thy punishment,*
700 *False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings,*
701 *Lest with a whip of scorpions I pursue*
702 *Thy ling'ring, or with one stroke of this dart*
703 *Strange²²⁶³ horror seize thee, and pangs unfelt before.*
704 *So spoke the grisly terror, and in shape,*
705 *So speaking and so threat'ning, grew tenfold*
706 *More dreadful and deform. On th' other side,*
707 *Incensed with indignation, Satan stood*
708 *Unterrified, and like a comet burned,*
709 *That fires the length of Ophiuchus²²⁶⁴ huge*
710 *In th' arctic sky, and from his horrid hair*
711 *Shakes pestilence and war. Each at the head*
712 *Levelled his deadly aim. Their fatal ²²⁶⁵ hands*
713 *No second stroke intend. And such a frown*
714 *Each cast at th' other as when two black clouds,*
715 *With Heav'n's artillery fraught, ²²⁶⁶ come rattling on*
716 *Over the Caspian, ²²⁶⁷ then stand front to front,*
717 *Hov'ring a space, ²²⁶⁸ till winds the signal blow*
718 *To join²²⁶⁹ their dark encounter in mid-air.*
719 *So frowned the mighty combatants, that Hell*
720 *Grew darker at their frown. So matched they stood,*
721 *For never but once more was either like*
722 *To meet so great a foe. ²²⁷⁰ And now great deeds*

723 *Had been achieved, whereof all Hell had rung,*
724 *Had not the snaky sorceress, that sat*
725 *Fast by [2271](#) Hell-gate and kept the fatal key,*
726 *Ris'n, and with hideous outcry rushed between.*
727 *“O father, what intends thy hand,” she cried,*
728 *“Against thy only son? What fury, O son,*
729 *Possesses thee to bend [2272](#) that mortal [2273](#) dart*
730 *Against thy father's head? And know'st for whom?*
731 *For Him who sits above, and laughs the while*
732 *At thee, ordained His drudge to execute*
733 *Whate'er His wrath, which He calls justice, bids—*
734 *His wrath, which one day will destroy ye both!*
735 *She spoke, and at her words the hellish pest [2274](#)*
736 *Forbore. [2275](#) Then these [2276](#) to her Satan returned:*
737 *“So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange*
738 *Thou interposest, [2277](#) that my sudden [2278](#) hand,*
739 *Prevented, spares [2279](#) to tell thee yet by deeds*
740 *What it intends, till first I know of thee*
741 *What thing thou art, thus double-formed, and why,*
742 *In this infernal vale first met, thou call'st*
743 *Me father, and that phantasm call'st my son?*
744 *I know thee not, nor ever saw till now*
745 *Sight more detestable than him and thee.*
746 *T' whom thus the portress [2280](#) of Hell-gate replied:*
747 *“Hast thou forgot me, then? and do I seem*
748 *Now in thine eye so foul?—once deemed so fair*
749 *In Heav'n when at th' assembly, and in sight*
750 *Of all the Seraphim with thee combined*
751 *In bold conspiracy against Heav'n's King,*
752 *All on a sudden miserable pain*
753 *Surprised thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzy swum*
754 *In darkness, while thy head flames [2281](#) thick and fast*
755 *Threw forth, till on the left side op'ning wide,*
756 *Likest to thee in shape and count'nance bright,*

757 *Then shining heavenly fair, a goddess armed,*
758 *Out of thy head I sprung. Amazement seized*
759 *All th' host of Heav'n. Back they recoiled, afraid*
760 *At first, and called me Sin, and for a sign*
761 *Portentous²²⁸² held me. But, familiar grown,*
762 *I pleased, and with attractive graces won*
763 *The most averse—thee chiefly, who full oft*
764 *Thyself in me thy perfect image viewing,*
765 *Becam'st enamored, and such joy thou took'st*
766 *With me in secret that my womb conceived*
767 *A growing burden. Meanwhile war arose,*
768 *And fields were fought in Heav'n, wherein remained*
769 *(For what could else?) to our Almighty foe*
770 *Clear victory, to our part loss and rout²²⁸³*
771 *Through all the Empyrean.²²⁸⁴ Down they fell,*
772 *Driv'n headlong from the pitch²²⁸⁵ of Heaven, do*
773 *Into this deep, and in the general fall*
774 *I also, at which time this powerful key*
775 *Into my hands was giv'n, with charge to keep*
776 *These gates forever shut, which none can pass*
777 *Without my op'ning. Pensive²²⁸⁶ here I sat*
778 *Alone, but long I sat not, till my womb,*
779 *Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown,*
780 *Prodigious²²⁸⁷ motion felt and rueful ²²⁸⁸ throes.²²⁸⁹*
781 *At last this odious²²⁹⁰ offspring whom thou seest,*
782 *Thine own begotten, breaking violent way, ²²⁹¹*
783 *Tore through my entrails that,²²⁹² with fear and pain*
784 *Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew*
785 *Transformed. But he my inbred enemy*
786 *Forth issued, brandishing²²⁹³ his fatal dart,*
787 *Made to destroy. I fled, and cried out 'Death!*
788 *Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sighed*
789 *From all her caves, and back resounded 'Death!*

790 I fled, but he pursued (though more, it seems,
791 Inflamed with lust than rage), and swifter far,
792 Me overtook, his mother, all dismayed,²²⁹⁴
793 And in embraces forcible and foul
794 Engend'ring²²⁹⁵ with me, of that rape begot
795 These yelling monsters, that with ceaseless cry
796 Surround me, as thou saw'st—hourly conceived
797 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite
798 To me, for when they list ²²⁹⁶ into the womb
799 That bred them they return, and howl, and gnaw
800 My bowels, their repast.²²⁹⁷ Then bursting forth
801 Afresh, with conscious terrors vex me round,
802 That rest or intermission none I find.
803 Before mine eyes in opposition²²⁹⁸ sits
804 Grim Death, my son and foe, who set them on,
805 And me, his parent, would full soon devour
806 For want of other prey, but that he knows
807 His end with mine involved, and knows that I
808 Should prove a bitter morsel, and his bane, ²²⁹⁹
809 Whenever that shall be. So Fate pronounced.
810 But thou, O father, I forewarn thee, shun
811 His deadly arrow. Neither ²³⁰⁰ vainly hope
812 To be invulnerable in those bright arms,²³⁰¹
813 Though tempered²³⁰² Heav'nly, for that mortal dint,²³⁰³
814 Save He who reigns above, none can resist.
815 She finished, and the subtle fiend, his lore²³⁰⁴
816 Soon learned, now milder, and thus answered smooth:
817 "Dear daughter—since thou claim'st me for thy sire,
818 And my fair son here show'st me, the dear pledge²³⁰⁵
819 Of dalliance²³⁰⁶ had with thee in Heav'n, and joys
820 Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire change
821 Befall'n us unforeseen, unthought-of—know
822 I come no enemy, but to set free

823 From out this dark and dismal house of pain
824 Both him and thee, and all the Heav'nly host
825 Of Spirits that, in our just pretences²³⁰⁷ armed,
826 Fell with us from on high. From them I go
827 This uncouth²³⁰⁸ errand sole, ²³⁰⁹ and one for all
828 Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread
829 Th' unfounded ²³¹⁰ deep, and through the void immense
830 To search, with wand'ring quest, a place foretold
831 Should be—and by concurring signs, ere now
832 Created vast and round—a place of bliss
833 In the purlieus²³¹¹ of Heav'n, and therein placed
834 A race of upstart creatures, to supply
835 Perhaps our vacant room, ²³¹² though more removed, ²³¹³
836 Lest Heav'n, surcharged²³¹⁴ with potent²³¹⁵ multitude,
837 Might hap to move²³¹⁶ new broils. ²³¹⁷ Be this, or aught
838 Than this more secret, now designed, ²³¹⁸ I haste
839 To know, and this once known shall soon return
840 And bring ye to the place where thou and Death
841 Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen
842 Wing silently the buxom²³¹⁹ air, embalmed
843 With odors. There ye shall be fed and filled
844 Immeasurably; all things shall be your prey.
845 He ceased, for both seemed highly pleased, and Death
846 Grinned horrible a ghastly smile, to hear
847 His famine²³²⁰ should be filled, and blessed his maw²³²¹
848 Destined to that good hour. No less rejoiced
849 His mother bad, and thus bespoke²³²² her sire:
850 “The key of this infernal pit, by due²³²³
851 And by command of Heav'n's all-powerful King,
852 I keep, by Him forbidden to unlock
853 These adamantine gates. Against all force
854 Death ready stands to interpose²³²⁴ his dart, ²³²⁵
855 Fearless to be o'ermatched by living might.

856 But what owe I to His commands above,
857 Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down
858 Into this gloom of Tartarus²³²⁶ profound,²³²⁷
859 To sit in hateful office here confined,
860 Inhabitant of Heav'n and Heav'nly born—
861 Here in perpetual agony and pain,
862 With terrors and with clamors compassed round ²³²⁸
863 Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed?
864 Thou art my father, thou my author, thou
865 My being gav'st me. Whom should I obey
866 But thee? whom follow? Thou wilt bring me soon
867 To that new world of light and bliss, among
868 The gods who live at ease, where I shall reign
869 At thy right hand voluptuous,²³²⁹ as beseems²³³⁰
870 Thy daughter and thy darling, without end.
871 Thus saying, from her side the fatal key,
872 Sad instrument of all our woe, she took,
873 And towards the gate rolling her bestial train,²³³¹
874 Forthwith the huge portcullis²³³² high up-drew,
875 Which, but herself, not all the Stygian²³³³ Powers
876 Could once have moved, then in the key-hole turns
877 Th' intricate wards,²³³⁴ and every bolt and bar
878 Of massy iron or solid rock with ease
879 Unfastens. On a sudden, open fly
880 (With impetuous²³³⁵ recoil and jarring sound)
881 Th' infernal doors, and on their hinges grate
882 Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook
883 Of Erebus.²³³⁶ She opened—but to shut
884 Excelled ²³³⁷ her power. The gates wide open stood,
885 That with extended wings a bannered host,
886 Under spread ensigns marching, might pass through
887 With horse and chariots ranked in loose array.
888 So wide they stood, and like a furnace-mouth

889 *Cast forth redounding [2338](#) smoke and ruddy flame.*
890 *Before their eyes in sudden view appear*
891 *The secrets of the hoary deep—a dark*
892 *Illimitable ocean, without bound,*
893 *Without dimension, where length, breadth, and height,*
894 *And time, and place, are lost, where eldest Night*
895 *And Chaos, ancestors of Nature, hold*
896 *Eternal anarchy, amidst the noise*
897 *Of endless wars, and by confusion [2339](#) stand.*
898 *For hot, cold, moist, and dry, four champions fierce,*
899 *Strive here for mast’ry, and to battle bring*
900 *Their embryon [2340](#) atoms. They around the flag*
901 *Of each his faction, in their several clans,*
902 *Light-armed or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift, or slow,*
903 *Swarm populous, unnumbered as the sands*
904 *Of Barca [2341](#) or Cyrene’s [2342](#) torrid soil,*
905 *Levied [2343](#) to side with warring winds, and poise [2344](#)*
906 *Their lighter wings. To whom these most adhere, [2345](#)*
907 *He rules a moment. Chaos umpire sits,*
908 *And by decision more embroils [2346](#) the fray*
909 *By which he reigns. Next him, high arbiter,*
910 *Chance governs all. Into this wild abyss,*
911 *The womb of Nature, and perhaps her grave,*
912 *Of neither sea, nor shore, nor air, nor fire,*
913 *But all these in their pregnant causes mixed*
914 *Confus’dly, and which thus must ever fight,*
915 *Unless th’Almighty Maker them ordain [2347](#)*
916 *His dark materials to create more worlds—*
917 *Into this wild abyss the wary [2348](#) fiend*
918 *Stood on the brink of Hell and looked a while,*
919 *Pondering his voyage, for no narrow frith [2349](#)*
920 *He had to cross. Nor was his ear less pealed [2350](#)*
921 *With noises loud and ruinous [2351](#) (to compare*

922 Great things with small) than when Bellona²³⁵² storms
923 With all her battering engines,²³⁵³ bent²³⁵⁴ to raze²³⁵⁵
924 Some capital city; or less than if this frame
925 Of Heav'n were falling, and these elements
926 In mutiny had from her axle torn
927 The steadfast earth. At last his sail-broad vans ²³⁵⁶
928 He spread for flight and, in the surging smoke
929 Uplifted, spurns²³⁵⁷ the ground, thence many a league,
930 As in a cloudy chair, ascending rides
931 Audacious,²³⁵⁸ but that seat soon failing, meets
932 A vast vacuity. All unawares,
933 Flutt'ring his pennons ²³⁵⁹ vain, ²³⁶⁰ plumb-down he drops
934 Ten thousand fathom deep, and to this hour
935 Down had been falling, had not, by ill chance,
936 The strong rebuff ²³⁶¹ of some tumultuous cloud,
937 Instinct²³⁶² with fire and niter, ²³⁶³ hurried him
938 As many miles aloft. That fury²³⁶⁴ stayed—²³⁶⁵
939 Quenched in a boggy Syrtis,²³⁶⁶ neither sea,
940 Nor good dry land—nigh²³⁶⁷ foundered, ²³⁶⁸ on he fares,
941 Treading the crude²³⁶⁹ consistence, ²³⁷⁰ half on foot,
942 Half flying. Behoves him now²³⁷¹ both oar and sail.
943 As when a gryphon²³⁷² through the wilderness
944 With wingèd course, o'er hill or moory dale,
945 Pursues the Arimasbian,²³⁷³ who by stealth
946 Had from his²³⁷⁴ wakeful²³⁷⁵ custody purloined²³⁷⁶
947 The guarded gold, so eagerly the fiend
948 O'er bog or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,
949 With head, hands, wings, or feet, pursues his way,
950 And swims, or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies.
951 At length a universal hubbub wild
952 Of stunning sounds, and voices all confused,
953 Borne through the hollow dark, assaults his ear
954 With loudest vehemence. ²³⁷⁷ Thither he plies ²³⁷⁸

955 *Undaunted, to meet there whatever Power*
956 *Or Spirit of the nethermost abyss*
957 *Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask*
958 *Which way the nearest coast of darkness lies,*
959 *Bord'ring on light. When straight behold the throne*
960 *Of Chaos, and his dark pavilion spread*
961 *Wide on the wasteful deep! With him enthroned*
962 *Sat sable-vested Night, eldest of things,*
963 *The consort [2379](#) of his reign; and by them stood*
964 *Orcus and Adès, [2380](#) and the dreaded name*
965 *Of Demogorgon, [2381](#) Rumor next, and Chance,*
966 *And Tumult, and Confusion, all embroiled, [2382](#)*
967 *And Discord with a thousand various [2383](#) mouths.*
968 *T' whom Satan, turning boldly, thus: "Ye Powers*
969 *And Spirits of this nethermost abyss,*
970 *Chaos and ancient Night, I come no spy*
971 *With purpose to explore or to disturb*
972 *The secrets of your realm, but by constraint*
973 *Wand'ring this darksome desert, as my way*
974 *Lies through your spacious empire up to light,*
975 *Alone and without guide, half lost, I seek*
976 *What readiest path leads where your gloomy bounds*
977 *Confine [2384](#) with Heav'n, or if some other place*
978 *From your dominion won, [2385](#) th' Ethereal King*
979 *Possesses lately, thither to arrive*
980 *I travel this profound, [2386](#) direct [2387](#) my course:*
981 *Directed, no mean [2388](#) recompense it brings*
982 *To your behoof, [2389](#) if I that region lost, [2390](#)*
983 *All usurpation [2391](#) thence expelled, reduce*
984 *To her original darkness, and your sway*
985 *(Which is my present journey), and once more*
986 *Erect the standard [2392](#) there of ancient Night.*
987 *Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge!*

988 Thus Satan; and him thus the Anarch²³⁹³ old,
989 With falt'ring speech and visage incomposed,²³⁹⁴
990 Answered: "I know thee, stranger, who thou art—
991 That mighty leading Angel, who of late
992 Made head ²³⁹⁵ against Heav'n's King, though overthrown.
993 I saw and heard, for such a numerous host
994 Fled not in silence through the frightened deep,
995 With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,²³⁹⁶
996 Confusion worse confounded.²³⁹⁷ And Heav'n-gates
997 Poured out by millions her victorious bands,
998 Pursuing. I upon my frontiers here
999 Keep residence; if all I can²³⁹⁸ will serve
1000 That little which is left so²³⁹⁹ to def
1001 Encroached on still through our intestine²⁴⁰⁰ broils,²⁴⁰¹
1002 Weakening the scepter of old Night. First Hell,
1003 Your dungeon, stretching far and wide beneath;
1004 Now lately Heav'n and earth, another world
1005 Hung o'er my realm, linked in a golden chain
1006 To that side Heav'n from whence your legions fell!
1007 If that way be your walk, you have not far;
1008 So much the nearer danger. Go, and speed;²⁴⁰²
1009 Havoc, and spoil, and ruin, are my gain.
1010 He ceased, and Satan stayed not to reply,
1011 But glad that now his sea should find a shore,
1012 With fresh alacrity and force renewed
1013 Springs upward like a pyramid of fire,
1014 Into the wild expanse, and through the shock²⁴⁰³
1015 Of fighting elements, on all sides round
1016 Environed,²⁴⁰⁴ wins his way, harder beset ²⁴⁰⁵
1017 And more endangered than when Argo²⁴⁰⁶ passed
1018 Through Bosphorus betwixt the jostling rocks,
1019 Or when Ulysses on the larboard ²⁴⁰⁷ shunned
1020 Charybdis, and by th' other whirlpool steered.

1021 So he²⁴⁰⁸ with difficulty and labor hard
1022 Moved on, with difficulty and labor he. ²⁴⁰⁹
1023 But he once passed, ²⁴¹⁰ soon after, when man fell,
1024 Strange alteration! Sin and Death amain²⁴¹¹
1025 Following his track (such was the will of Heav'n)
1026 Paved after him a broad and beaten way
1027 Over the dark abyss, whose boiling gulf
1028 Tamely endured a bridge of wondrous length,
1029 From Hell continued, reaching th' utmost orb²⁴¹²
1030 Of this frail world, by which the Spirits perverse²⁴¹³
1031 With easy intercourse pass to and fro
1032 To tempt or punish mortals, except whom
1033 God and good Angels guard by special grace.
1034 But now at last the sacred influence²⁴¹⁴
1035 Of light appears, and from the walls of Heav'n
1036 Shoots far into the bosom of dim Night
1037 A glimmering dawn. Here Nature first begins
1038 Her farthest verge, ²⁴¹⁵ and Chaos to retire²⁴¹⁶
1039 As from her outmost works, a broken foe,
1040 With tumult less and with less hostile din,
1041 That Satan with less toil, and now with ease,
1042 Wafts²⁴¹⁷ on the calmer wave by dubious²⁴¹⁸ light,
1043 And like a weather-beaten vessel holds
1044 Gladly the port, though shrouds²⁴¹⁹ and tackle²⁴²⁰ torn,
1045 Or in the emptier waste, resembling air,
1046 Weighs²⁴²¹ his spread wings, at leisure to behold
1047 Far off th' empyreal Heav'n, extended wide
1048 In circuit, undetermined ²⁴²² square or round,
1049 With opal towers and battlements adorned
1050 Of living sapphire, once his native seat,
1051 And fast by, ²⁴²³ hanging in a golden chain,
1052 This pendant world, in bigness as a star
1053 Of smallest magnitude close by the moon.

1054 *Thither, full fraught [2424](#) with mischievous revenge,*
1055 *Accursed, and in a cursèd hour, he hies. [2425](#)*

The End of the Second Book

BOOK III

THE ARGUMENT

God sitting on His throne sees Satan flying towards this world, then newly created; shews him to the Son who sat at His right hand; foretells the success of Satan in perverting mankind; clears His own justice and wisdom from all imputation, having created man free and able enough to have withstood his tempter; yet declares His purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduced.

The Son of God renders praises to His Father for the manifestation of His gracious purpose towards man, but God again declares that grace cannot be extended towards man without the satisfaction of divine justice. Man hath offended the majesty of God by aspiring to Godhead, and therefore with all his progeny devoted to Death must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his punishment.

The Son of God freely offers himself a ransom for man. The Father accepts him, ordains his incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all names in Heaven and earth; commands all the Angels to adore him. They obey, and hymning to their harps in full choir, celebrate the Father and the Son.

Meanwhile Satan alights upon the bare convex of this world's outermost orb, where wandring he first finds a place since called the Limbo of Vanity; what persons and things fly up thither. Thence [Satan] comes to the Gate of Heaven, described ascending by stairs, and the waters above the firmament that flow about it. His passage thence to the orb of the sun; he finds there Uriel the Regent of that orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner Angel and, pretending a zealous desire to behold the new creation, and man whom God had placed here, inquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed; alights first on Mount Niphates.

2 Or of the Eternal Coeternal beam
3 May I express thee unblamed? since God is light,
4 And never but in unapproachèd light
5 Dwelt from eternity, dwelt then in thee
6 Bright effluence²⁴²⁶ of bright essence increate. ²⁴²⁷
7 Or hear'st ²⁴²⁸ thou rather pure ethereal stream,
8 Whose fountain who shall tell? Before the sun,
9 Before the Heav'ns thou wert, and at the voice
10 Of God, as with a mantle, didst invest²⁴²⁹
11 The rising world of waters dark and deep,
12 Won from the void and formless infinite.
13 Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,
14 Escaped the Stygian²⁴³⁰ pool, though long detained
15 In that obscure sojourn, ²⁴³¹ while in my flight
16 Through utter and through middle darkness borne,
17 With other notes than to the Orphean²⁴³² lyre²⁴³³
18 I sung of Chaos and eternal Night,
19 Taught by the Heav'nly Muse to venture down
20 The dark descent, and up to re-ascend,
21 Though hard and rare. ²⁴³⁴ Thee I re-visit safe,
22 And feel thy sov'reign vital lamp, ²⁴³⁵ but thou
23 Re-visit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain
24 To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn,
25 So thick a drop serene²⁴³⁶ hath quenched²⁴³⁷ their orbs,
26 Or dim suffusion²⁴³⁸ veiled. ²⁴³⁹ Yet not the more
27 Cease I to wander where the Muses haunt,
28 Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,
29 Smit²⁴⁴⁰ with the love of sacred song. But chief
30 Thee, Sion, ²⁴⁴¹ and the flow'ry brooks beneath
31 That wash thy hallowed feet, and warbling flow,
32 Nightly I visit, nor sometimes forget

33 *Those other two, equaled with²⁴⁴² me in fate*
34 *(So were I equaled with them in renown)*
35 *Blind Thamyris,²⁴⁴³ and blind Maeonides,²⁴⁴⁴*
36 *And Tiresias,²⁴⁴⁵ and Phineus,²⁴⁴⁶ prophets old.*
37 *Then feed ²⁴⁴⁷ on thoughts, that voluntary move*
38 *Harmonious numbers,²⁴⁴⁸ as the wakeful bird ²⁴⁴⁹*
39 *Sings darkling, ²⁴⁵⁰ and in shadiest covert ²⁴⁵¹ hid*
40 *Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year*
41 *Seasons return, but not to me returns*
42 *Day, or the sweet approach of ev'n or morn,*
43 *Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose,*
44 *Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine,*
45 *But cloud instead, and ever-during ²⁴⁵² dark*
46 *Surrounds me, from the cheerful ways of men*
47 *Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair*
48 *Presented with a universal blank*
49 *Of Nature's works to me expunged²⁴⁵³ and razed,²⁴⁵⁴*
50 *And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out.*
51 *So much the rather thou, celestial light,*
52 *Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers*
53 *Irradiate. ²⁴⁵⁵ There plant ²⁴⁵⁶ eyes, all mist from thence*
54 *Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell*
55 *Of things invisible to mortal sight.*
56 *Now had the Almighty Father from above,*
57 *From the pure empyrean where He sits*
58 *High throned above all height, bent down His eye,*
59 *His own works and their works at once to view.*
60 *About Him all the Sanctities of Heav'n*
61 *Stood thick as stars, and from His sight received*
62 *Beatitude²⁴⁵⁷ past utterance. ²⁴⁵⁸ On His right*
63 *The radiant image of His glory sat,*

64 His only Son. On earth He first beheld
65 Our two first parents, yet [2459](#) the only two
66 Of mankind in the happy garden placed,
67 Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,
68 Uninterrupted joy, unrivaled love,
69 In blissful solitude. He then surveyed
70 Hell and the gulf between, and Satan there
71 Coasting the wall of Heav'n on this side Night
72 In the dun[2460](#) air sublime, [2461](#) and ready now
73 To stoop with wearied wings and willing feet
74 On the bare outside of this world, that seemed
75 Firm land embosomed, [2462](#) without firmament, [2463](#)
76 Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.
77 Him God beholding, from His prospect [2464](#) high,
78 Wherein past, present, future, He beholds,
79 Thus to His only Son foreseeing spoke:
8 "Only-begotten Son, seest thou what rage
81 Transports [2465](#) our adversary? whom no bounds
82 Prescribed, no bars of Hell, nor all the chains
83 Heaped on him there, nor yet the main abyss
84 Wide interrupt, [2466](#) can hold, so bent he seems
85 On desperate revenge, that shall redound
86 Upon his own rebellious head. And now,
87 Through all restraint broke [2467](#) loose, he wings his way
88 Not far off Heav'n, in the precincts [2468](#) of light,
89 Directly towards the new created world,
90 And man there placed, with purpose to assay [2469](#)
91 If him by force he can destroy or, worse,
92 By some false guile pervert. And shall pervert,
93 For man will hearken to his glozing [2470](#) lies,
94 And easily transgress [2471](#) the sole command,

95 *Sole pledge²⁴⁷² of his obedience: So will fall*
96 *He and his faithless progeny. Whose fault?*
97 *Whose but his own? Ingrate, he had of me*
98 *All he could have. I made him just and right,*
99 *Sufficient to have stood,²⁴⁷³ though free to fall.*
100 *Such I created all the ethereal Powers*
101 *And Spirits, both them who stood and them who failed.*
102 *Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.*
103 *Not free, what proof could they have given sincere*
104 *Of true allegiance, constant faith, or love,*
105 *Where only what they needs must do appeared,*
106 *Not what they would? What praise could they receive?*
107 *What pleasure I, from such obedience paid,*
108 *When will and reason (reason also is choice)*
109 *Useless and vain, of freedom both despoiled,²⁴⁷⁴*
110 *Made passive both, had served necessity,*
111 *Not me? They therefore, as to right belonged,*
112 *So were created, nor can justly accuse*
113 *Their Maker, or their making, or their fate,*
114 *As if predestination over-ruled*
115 *Their will, disposed ²⁴⁷⁵ by absolute decree*
116 *Or high foreknowledge. They themselves decreed*
117 *Their own revolt, not I: if I foreknew,*
118 *Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,*
119 *Which had no less proved certain unforeknown.*
120 *So without least impulse or shadow of Fate,*
121 *Or aught by me immutably ²⁴⁷⁶ foreseen,*
122 *They trespass, authors²⁴⁷⁷ to themselves in all*
123 *Both what they judge and what they choose. For so*
124 *I formed them free, and free they must remain,*
125 *Till they enthrall²⁴⁷⁸ themselves. I else must change*

126 *Their nature, and revoke the high decree*
127 *Unchangeable, eternal, which ordained*
128 *Their freedom. They themselves ordained their fall.*
129 *The first sort [2479](#) by their own suggestion fell,*
130 *Self-tempted, self-depraved. Man falls deceived*
131 *By the other first. Man therefore shall find grace,*
132 *The other none. In mercy and justice both,*
133 *Through Heav'n and earth, so shall my glory excel,*
134 *But mercy, first and last, shall brightest shine.*
135 *Thus while God spoke, [2480](#) ambrosial fragrance filled*
136 *All Heav'n, and in the blessèd Spirits elect*
137 *Sense of new joy ineffable diffused.*
138 *Beyond compare, the Son of God was seen*
139 *Most glorious. In him all His Father shone,*
140 *Substantially [2481](#) expressed, and in his face*
141 *Divine compassion visibly appeared,*
142 *Love without end, and without measure grace,*
143 *Which uttering thus he to his Father spoke:*
144 *“O Father, gracious was that word which closed*
145 *Thy sov'reign [2482](#) sentence, [2483](#) that man should find grace.*
146 *For which both Heav'n and earth shall high extol*
147 *Thy praises, with th' innumerable sound*
148 *Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith Thy throne*
149 *Encompassed [2484](#) shall resound [2485](#) Thee ever blessed.*
150 *For should man finally be lost? Should man,*
151 *Thy creature late so loved, Thy youngest son,*
152 *Fall circumvented [2486](#) thus by fraud, though joined*
153 *With his own folly? That be from Thee far,*
154 *That far be from Thee, Father, who art judge*
155 *Of all things made, and judgest only right.*
156 *Or shall the adversary [2487](#) thus obtain*

157 *His end, and frustrate Thine? Shall he fulfill*
158 *His malice, and Thy goodness bring to nought?*
159 *Or proud return, though to his heavier doom,*²⁴⁸⁸
160 *Yet with revenge accomplished, and to Hell*
161 *Draw after him the whole race of mankind,*
162 *By him corrupted? Or wilt Thou Thyself*
163 *Abolish Thy creation, and unmake*
164 *For him, what for Thy glory Thou hast made?*
165 *So should Thy goodness and Thy greatness both*
166 *Be questioned and blasphemed without defence.*
167 *To whom the great Creator thus replied:*
168 *“O Son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,*
169 *Son of my bosom, Son who art alone*
170 *My word, my wisdom, and effectual*²⁴⁸⁹ *might,*
171 *All hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all*
172 *As my eternal purpose hath decreed.*
173 *Man shall not quite be lost, but saved who will,*
174 *Yet not of will in him, but grace in me*
175 *Freely vouchsafed.*²⁴⁹⁰ *Once more I will renew*
176 *His lapsèd*²⁴⁹¹ *powers, though forfeit*²⁴⁹² *and enthralled*
177 *By Sin to foul exorbitant desires.*
178 *Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand*
179 *On even ground against his mortal foe,*
180 *By me upheld, that he may know how frail*
181 *His fall’n condition is, and to me owe*
182 *All his deliverance, and to none but me.*
183 *Some I have chosen of peculiar*²⁴⁹³ *grace,*
184 *Elect*²⁴⁹⁴ *above the rest; so is my will.*
185 *The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warned*
186 *Their sinful state, and to appease betimes*²⁴⁹⁵
187 *The incensed*²⁴⁹⁶ *Deity, while offered*²⁴⁹⁷ *grace*

188 *Invites, for I will clear their senses dark,*
189 *What may suffice, and soften stony hearts*
190 *To pray, repent, and bring obedience due.* [2498](#)
191 *To prayer, repentance, and obedience due,*
192 *Though but endeavored with sincere intent,*
193 *Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.*
194 *And I will place within them as a guide*
195 *My umpire* [2499](#) *Conscience, whom if they will hear,*
196 *Light* [2500](#) *after light, well used, they shall attain,*
197 *And to the end, persisting, safe arrive.*
198 *This my long sufferance,* [2501](#) *and my day of grace,*
199 *They who neglect and scorn shall never taste,*
200 *But hard be hardened, blind be blinded more,*
201 *That they may stumble on, and deeper fall.*
202 *And none but such from mercy I exclude.*
203 *“But yet all is not done. Man disobeying,*
204 *Disloyal, breaks his fealty* [2502](#) *and sins*
205 *Against the high supremacy of Heav’n,*
206 *Affecting* [2503](#) *God-head and, so losing all,*
207 *To expiate his treason hath nought left,*
208 *But to destruction sacred* [2504](#) *and devote,*
209 *He, with his whole posterity, must die.*
210 *Die he or justice must; unless for him*
211 *Some other able, and as willing, pay*
212 *The rigid* [2505](#) *satisfaction,* [2506](#) *death for death.*
213 *Say, Heav’nly Powers, where shall we find such love?*
214 *Which of you will be mortal, to redeem*
215 *Man’s mortal crime and, just, the unjust to save?*
216 *Dwells in all Heav’n charity* [2507](#) *so dear?*
217 *He asked, but all the Heav’nly choir* [2508](#) *stood mute,*
218 *And silence was in Heav’n: on man’s behalf*

219 Patron²⁵⁰⁹ or intercessor ²⁵¹⁰ none appeared,
220 Much less that durst upon his own head draw
221 The deadly forfeiture and ransom set.
222 And now without redemption all mankind
223 Must have been lost, adjudged to Death and Hell
224 By doom²⁵¹¹ severe, had not the Son of God,
225 In whom the fullness dwells of love divine,
226 His dearest mediation thus renewed:
227 “Father, Thy word is past, man shall find grace;
228 And shall grace not find means? that finds her way,
229 The speediest of Thy wingèd messengers,
230 To visit all Thy creatures, and to all
231 Comes unprevented,²⁵¹² unimplored, unsought?
232 Happy for man, so coming. He her aid
233 Can never seek, once dead in sins, and lost:
234 Atonement for himself, or offering meet,²⁵¹³
235 Indebted and undone, hath none to bring.
236 Behold me, then: me for him, life for life
237 I offer. On me let Thine anger fall;
238 Account²⁵¹⁴ me man. I for his sake will leave
239 Thy bosom, and this glory next to Thee
240 Freely put off, and for him lastly²⁵¹⁵ die
241 Well pleased. On me let Death wreak²⁵¹⁶ all his rage.
242 Under his gloomy power I shall not long
243 Lie vanquished. Thou hast giv’n me to possess
244 Life in myself forever. By Thee I live,
245 Though now to Death I yield, and am his due²⁵¹⁷
246 (All that of me can die), yet that debt paid,
247 Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave
248 His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul
249 Forever with corruption there to dwell,

250 But I shall rise victorious, and subdue
251 My vanquisher, spoiled of his vaunted [2518](#) spoil.
252 Death his Death's wound shall then receive, and stoop [2519](#)
253 Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarmed.
254 I through the ample [2520](#) air in triumph high
255 Shall lead Hell captive maugre [2521](#) Hell, and show [2522](#)
256 The powers of darkness bound. Thou, at the sight
257 Pleased, out of Heaven shalt look down and smile,
258 While, by Thee raised, I ruin [2523](#) all my foes,
259 Death last, and with his carcass glut [2524](#) the grave.
260 Then with the multitude of my redeemed
261 Shall enter Heav'n, long absent, and return,
262 Father, to see Thy face, wherein no cloud
263 Of anger shall remain, but peace assured
264 And reconciliation. Wrath shall be no more,
265 Thenceforth, but in Thy presence joy entire." [2525](#)
266 His words here ended, but his meek aspect,
267 Silent, yet spoke, and breathed immortal love
268 To mortal men, above which only shone
269 Filial obedience. As a sacrifice
270 Glad to be offered, he attends the will
271 Of his great Father. Admiration [2526](#) seized
272 All Heav'n, what this might mean, and whither tend, [2527](#)
273 Wond'ring. But soon [2528](#) th'Almighty thus replied:
274 "O thou, in Heav'n and earth the only peace
275 Found out for mankind under wrath, O thou
276 My sole complacence! [2529](#) Well thou know'st how dear
277 To me are all my works, nor man the least,
278 Though last created, that for him I spare
279 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,
280 By losing thee a while, the whole race lost.

281 *Thou, therefore, whom thou only canst redeem,*^{[2530](#)}
282 *Their nature also to thy nature join,*
283 *And be thyself man among men on earth,*
284 *Made flesh, when time shall be, of virgin seed,*
285 *By wondrous birth. Be thou in Adam's room*^{[2531](#)}
286 *The head of all mankind, though Adam's son.*
287 *As in him perish all men, so in thee,*
288 *As from a second root, shall be restored*
289 *As many as are restored, without thee none.*
290 *His crime makes guilty all his sons: thy merit,*
291 *Imputed,*^{[2532](#)} *shall absolve them*^{[2533](#)} *who renounce*
292 *Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,*
293 *And live in thee transplanted, and from thee*
294 *Receive new life. So man, as is most just,*
295 *Shall satisfy for man, be judged and die,*
296 *And dying rise, and rising with him raise*
297 *His brethren, ransomed with his own dear life.*
298 *So Heav'nly love shall outdo hellish hate,*
299 *Giving to death, and dying to redeem,*
300 *So dearly*^{[2534](#)} *to redeem what hellish hate*
301 *So easily destroyed, and still destroys*
302 *In those who, when they may, accept not grace.*
303 *Nor shalt thou, by descending to assume*
304 *Man's nature, lessen or degrade thine own.*
305 *Because thou hast, though throned in highest bliss*
306 *Equal to God, and equally enjoying*
307 *Godlike fruition,*^{[2535](#)} *quitted*^{[2536](#)} *all, to save*
308 *A world from utter loss, and hast been found*
309 *By merit more than birthright Son of God,*
310 *Found worthiest to be so by being good,*
311 *Far more than great or high—because in thee*

312 Love hath abounded more than glory abounds.
313 Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt
314 With thee thy manhood also to this throne.
315 Here shalt thou sit incarnate, [2537](#) here shalt reign
316 Both God and man, Son both of God and man,
317 Anointed universal King. All power
318 I give thee: reign forever, and assume
319 Thy merits. [2538](#) Under thee, as head supreme,
320 Thrones, Princedoms, Powers, Dominions, I reduce. [2539](#)
321 All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide [2540](#)
322 In Heav'n, or earth, or under earth in Hell.
323 When thou, attended gloriously from Heav'n
324 Shalt in the sky appear, and from thee send
325 The summoning Arch-Angels to proclaim
326 Thy dread tribunal, forthwith from all winds
327 The living, and forthwith the cited [2541](#) dead
328 Of all past ages, to the general doom [2542](#)
329 Shall hasten. Such a peal [2543](#) shall rouse their sleep.
330 Then all thy Saints assembled, thou shalt judge
331 Bad men and Angels. They, arraigned, [2544](#) shall sink
332 Beneath thy sentence. Hell, her numbers full,
333 Thenceforth shall be forever shut. Meanwhile
334 The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring
335 New Heav'n and earth, wherein the just shall dwell
336 And after all their tribulations long
337 See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,
338 With joy and peace triumphing, and fair truth.
339 Then thou thy regal scepter shalt lay by,
340 For regal scepter then no more shall need:
341 God shall be all in all. But all ye gods,
342 Adore him, who to compass [2545](#) all this dies,

343 *Adore the Son, and honor him as me.*
344 *No sooner had the Almighty ceased, but all*
345 *The multitude of Angels, with a shout*
346 *Loud as from numbers without number, sweet*
347 *As from blest voices, uttering joy, Heav'n rung*
348 *With jubilee, [2546](#) and loud hosannas²⁵⁴⁷ filled*
349 *The eternal regions. Lowly reverent*
350 *Towards either throne they bow, and to the ground*
351 *With solemn adoration down they cast*
352 *Their crowns inwove with amarant²⁵⁴⁸ and gold,*
353 *Immortal amarant, a flower which once*
354 *In Paradise, fast by the Tree of Life,*
355 *Began to bloom, but soon for man's offence*
356 *To Heav'n removed, where first it grew, there grows,*
357 *And flow'rs aloft, shading the Fount of Life,*
358 *And where the river of bliss through midst of Heav'n*
359 *Rolls o'er Elysian flow'rs her amber stream.*
360 *With these that never fade the Spirits elect [2549](#)*
361 *Bind their resplendent locks inwreathed with beams,*
362 *Now in loose garlands thick thrown off, the bright*
363 *Pavement, [2550](#) that like a sea of jasper shone,*
364 *Impurpled with celestial roses smiled.*
365 *Then, crowned again, their golden harps they took,*
366 *Harps ever tuned, that glittering by their side*
367 *Like quivers hung, and with preamble sweet*
368 *Of charming symphony [2551](#) they introduce*
369 *Their sacred song, and waken raptures high.*

370 No voice exempt, no voice but well could join
371 Melodious part, such concord²⁵⁵² is in Heav'n.
372 Thee, Father, first they sung Omnipotent,
373 Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,
374 Eternal King, Thee Author of all being,
375 Fountain of light, Thyself invisible
376 Amidst the glorious brightness where Thou sit'st
377 Throned inaccessible, but ²⁵⁵³ when Thou shad'st
378 The full blaze of thy beams and, through a cloud
379 Drawn round about Thee like a radiant shrine,
380 Dark with excessive bright Thy skirts²⁵⁵⁴ appear,
381 Yet²⁵⁵⁵ dazzle Heav'n, that brightest Seraphim
382 Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes.
383 Thee²⁵⁵⁶ next they sang of all creation first,
384 Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,
385 In whose conspicuous²⁵⁵⁷ count'nance, without cloud
386 Made visible, the Almighty Father shines,
387 Whom else no creature can behold. On thee
388 Impressed²⁵⁵⁸ the effulgence²⁵⁵⁹ of His glory abides,
389 Transfused on thee His ample²⁵⁶⁰ Spirit rests.
390 He Heav'n of Heav'ns and all the Powers therein
391 By thee created; and by thee threw down
392 Th' aspiring Dominations.²⁵⁶¹ Thou that day
393 Thy Father's dreadful thunder didst not spare,
394 Nor stop thy flaming chariot-wheels, that shook
395 Heav'n's everlasting frame, while o'er the necks
396 Thou drov'st of warring Angels disarrayed.
397 Back from pursuit, thy Powers²⁵⁶² with loud acclaim
398 Thee only extolled, Son of thy Father's might,
399 To execute fierce vengeance on His foes,
400 Not so on man. Him through their²⁵⁶³ malice fallen,
401 Father of mercy and grace, Thou didst not doom²⁵⁶⁴
402 So strictly, but much more to pity inclined.

403 No sooner did Thy dear and only Son
404 Perceive Thee purposed not to doom frail man
405 So strictly, but much more to pity inclined,
406 He to appease Thy wrath, and end the strife
407 Of mercy and justice in Thy face discerned,
408 Regardless of the bliss wherein he sat
409 Second to Thee, offered himself to die
410 For man's offence. O unexampled love,
411 Love nowhere to be found less than Divine!
412 Hail, Son of God, Savior of men! Thy name
413 Shall be the copious matter of my song
414 Henceforth, and never shall my heart thy praise
415 Forget, nor from thy Father's praise disjoin.²⁵⁶⁵
416 Thus they in Heav'n, above the starry sphere,
417 Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent.
418 Meanwhile, upon the firm opacious²⁵⁶⁶ globe
419 Of this round world, whose first convex²⁵⁶⁷ divides
420 The luminous inferior orbs, enclosed ²⁵⁶⁸
421 From Chaos and th' inroad ²⁵⁶⁹ of Darkness old,
422 Satan alighted walks. A globe far off
423 It seemed, now seems a boundless continent
424 Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night
425 Starless exposed, and ever-threat'ning storms
426 Of Chaos blust'ring round, inclement ²⁵⁷⁰ sky,
427 Save on that side which from the wall of Heav'n,
428 Though distant far, some small reflection gains
429 Of glimmering air less vexed with tempest loud.
430 Here walked the fiend at large²⁵⁷¹ in spacious field.
431 As when a vulture on Imaus²⁵⁷² bred,
432 Whose snowy ridge the roving Tartar bounds,²⁵⁷³
433 Dislodging²⁵⁷⁴ from a region scarce of prey
434 To gorge the flesh of lambs or yeanling²⁵⁷⁵ kids,
435 On hills where flocks are fed, flies toward the springs²⁵⁷⁶

436 *Of Ganges or Hydaspes, Indian streams,*
437 *But in²⁵⁷⁷ his way lights²⁵⁷⁸ on the barren plains*
438 *Of Sericana,²⁵⁷⁹ where Chinese drive*
439 *With sails and wind their cany²⁵⁸⁰ waggons light.²⁵⁸¹*
440 *So on this windy sea of land, the fiend*
441 *Walked up and down alone, bent on his prey—*
442 *Alone, for other creature in this place,*
443 *Living or lifeless, to be found was none,*
444 *None yet, but store²⁵⁸² hereafter from the earth*
445 *Up hither like aerial vapors flew*
446 *Of all things transitory and vain, when Sin*
447 *With vanity had filled the works of men:*
448 *Both all things vain, and all who in vain things*
449 *Built their fond hopes of glory or lasting fame,*
450 *Or²⁵⁸³ happiness in this or th' other life,*
451 *All who have their reward on earth, the fruits*
452 *Of painful superstition and blind zeal,*
453 *Nought seeking but the praise of men, here find*
454 *Fit retribution, empty as their deeds.*
455 *All th' unaccomplished ²⁵⁸⁴works of Nature's hand,*
456 *Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly²⁵⁸⁵ mixed,*
457 *Dissolved on earth, fleet²⁵⁸⁶ hither, and in vain,*
458 *Till final dissolution, wander here,*
459 *Not in the neighboring moon, as some have dreamed.*
460 *Those argent²⁵⁸⁷ fields' more likely habitants,*
461 *Translated²⁵⁸⁸ Saints,²⁵⁸⁹ or middle Spirits hold*
462 *Betwixt th' angelical and human kind.*
463 *Hither of ill-joined sons and daughters born*
464 *First from the ancient world those giants came,*
465 *With many a vain exploit, though then renowned.*
466 *The builders next of Babel on the plain*
467 *Of Sennaär, ²⁵⁹⁰and still with vain design,*
468 *New Babels, had ²⁵⁹¹they wherewithal, ²⁵⁹²would build.*

469 Others came single:²⁵⁹³ he, ²⁵⁹⁴ who to be deemed²⁵⁹⁵
470 A god, leaped fondly²⁵⁹⁶ into Aetna's flames,
471 Empedocles; and he, ²⁵⁹⁷ who to enjoy
472 Plato's Elysium,²⁵⁹⁸ leaped into the sea,
473 Cleombrotus; and many more too long, ²⁵⁹⁹
474 Embryos and idiots, eremites,²⁶⁰⁰ and friars
475 White, ²⁶⁰¹ black, ²⁶⁰² and gray, ²⁶⁰³ with all their trumpery. ²⁶⁰⁴
476 Here pilgrims roam, that strayed so far to seek
477 In Golgotha²⁶⁰⁵ him dead who lives in Heav'n,
478 And they who to be sure of Paradise,
479 Dying, put on the weeds²⁶⁰⁶ of Dominick,²⁶⁰⁷
480 Or in Franciscan²⁶⁰⁸ think to pass disguised.
481 They pass the planets seven, and pass the fixed,
482 And that crystalline sphere whose balance weighs
483 The trepidation talked,²⁶⁰⁹ and that first moved.²⁶¹⁰
484 And now Saint Peter at Heav'n's wicket²⁶¹¹ seems
485 To wait ²⁶¹² them with his keys, and now at foot
486 Of Heav'n's ascent they lift their feet, when lo!
487 A violent²⁶¹³ cross wind from either coast
488 Blows them transverse, ²⁶¹⁴ ten thousand leagues²⁶¹⁵ awry²⁶¹⁶
489 Into the devious²⁶¹⁷ air. Then might ye see
490 Cowls, hoods, and habits, with their wearers, tossed
491 And fluttered into rags, then relics, beads,
492 Indulgences, dispenses,²⁶¹⁸ pardons, bulls,
493 The sport of winds. All these, upwhirled aloft,
494 Fly o'er the backside²⁶¹⁹ of the world far off
495 Into a limbo large and broad, since called
496 The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown
497 Long after, now unpeopled, and untrod.
498 All this dark globe the fiend found as he passed,
499 And long he wandered, till at last a gleam
500 Of dawning light²⁶²⁰ turned thitherward in haste
501 His travelled steps. Far distant he descries,²⁶²¹

502 Ascending by degrees²⁶²² magnificent
503 Up to the wall of Heav'n, a structure high
504 At top whereof, but far more rich, appeared
505 The work as of a kingly palace-gate,
506 With frontispiece²⁶²³ of diamond and gold
507 Embellished. Thick with sparkling orient²⁶²⁴ gems
508 The portal ²⁶²⁵ shone, inimitable on earth
509 By model or by shading²⁶²⁶ pencil drawn.
510 These stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw
511 Angels ascending and descending, bands
512 Of guardians bright, when he from Esau fled
513 To Padan-Aram,²⁶²⁷ in the field of Luz,²⁶²⁸
514 Dreaming by night under the open sky
515 And waking cried, "This is the gate of Heav'n!
516 Each stair mysteriously ²⁶²⁹ was meant, nor stood
517 There always, but drawn up²⁶³⁰ to Heav'n sometimes,
518 Viewless.²⁶³¹ And underneath a bright sea flowed
519 Of jasper, or of liquid pearl, whereon
520 Who after came from earth, sailing arrived,
521 Wafted by Angels, or flew o'er the lake
522 Rapt²⁶³² in a chariot drawn by fiery steeds.
523 The stairs were then let down, whether to dare
524 The fiend by easy ascent, or aggravate²⁶³³
525 His sad exclusion from the doors of bliss,
526 Direct against which opened from beneath,
527 Just o'er the blissful seat of Paradise,
528 A passage down to th' earth, a passage wide,
529 Wider by far than that of after-times
530 Over Mount Sion and, though that were large,
531 Over the Promised Land, to God so dear,
532 By which, to visit oft those happy tribes,
533 On high behests²⁶³⁴ His Angels to and fro
534 Passed frequent, and His eye with choice regard²⁶³⁵

535 From Paneas,²⁶³⁶ the fount ²⁶³⁷ of Jordan's flood,²⁶³⁸
536 To Beersaba,²⁶³⁹ where the Holy Land
537 Borders on Egypt and th'Arabian shore.
538 So wide the op'ning seemed, where bounds were set
539 To darkness, such as bound the ocean wave.
540 Satan from hence, now on the lower stair
541 That scaled by steps of gold to Heav'n-gate,
542 Looks down with wonder at the sudden view
543 Of all this world at once. As when a scout,²⁶⁴⁰
544 Through dark and desert ways with peril gone
545 All night, at last by break of cheerful dawn
546 Obtains the brow of some high-climbing hill,
547 Which to his eye discovers²⁶⁴¹ unaware
548 The goodly ²⁶⁴² prospect ²⁶⁴³ of some foreign land
549 First seen, or some renowned metropolis
550 With glistening spires and pinnacles adorned,
551 Which now the rising sun gilds with his beams,
552 Such wonder seized, though after Heaven seen,
553 The Spirit malign, but much more envy seized,
554 At sight of all this world beheld so fair.
555 Round he surveys (and well might, where he stood
556 So high above the circling canopy
557 Of Night's extended shade), from eastern point
558 Of Libra²⁶⁴⁴ to the fleecy star ²⁶⁴⁵ that bears
559 Andromeda ²⁶⁴⁶ far off Atlantic seas
560 Beyond th' horizon. Then from pole to pole
561 He views in breadth, and without longer pause
562 Down right into the world's first region throws
563 His flight precipitant,²⁶⁴⁷ and winds²⁶⁴⁸ with ease
564 Through the pure marble²⁶⁴⁹ air his oblique way
565 Amongst innumerable stars, that shone
566 Stars distant, but nigh hand seemed other worlds—
567 Or ²⁶⁵⁰ other worlds they seemed, or happy isles,

568 *Like those Hesperian gardens²⁶⁵¹ famed of old,*
569 *Fortunate fields, and groves, and flowery vales,*
570 *Thrice happy isles. But who dwelt happy there*
571 *He stayed²⁶⁵² not to inquire. Above them all*
572 *The golden sun, in splendor likest Heav'n,*
573 *Allured his eye. Thither his course he bends*
574 *Through the calm firmament, but up or down,*
575 *By center, or eccentric,²⁶⁵³ hard to tell,²⁶⁵⁴*
576 *Or longitude, where the great luminary²⁶⁵⁵*
577 *Aloof²⁶⁵⁶ the vulgar ²⁶⁵⁷constellations thick,²⁶⁵⁸*
578 *That from his²⁶⁵⁹ lordly eye keep distance due, ²⁶⁶⁰*
579 *Dispenses light from far. They as they move*
580 *Their starry dance in numbers that compute*
581 *Days, months, and years, towards his all-cheering lamp*
582 *Turn swift their various²⁶⁶¹ motions, or are turned*
583 *By his magnetic beam, that gently warms*
584 *The universe, and to each inward part*
585 *With gentle penetration, though unseen,*
586 *Shoots invisible virtue²⁶⁶² ev'n to the deep,*
587 *So wondrously was set his station bright.*
588 *There lands the fiend, a spot like which perhaps*
589 *Astronomer in the sun's lucent²⁶⁶³ orb*
590 *Through his glazed²⁶⁶⁴ optic tube²⁶⁶⁵ yet never saw.*
591 *The place he found beyond expression²⁶⁶⁶ bright,*
592 *Compared with aught on earth, metal or stone,*
593 *Not all parts like, but all alike informed²⁶⁶⁷*
594 *With radiant light, as glowing iron with fire.*
595 *If metal, part seemed gold, part silver clear;*
596 *If stone, carbuncle most or chrysolite,*
597 *Ruby or topaz, to the twelve that shone*
598 *In Aaron's breast-plate, ²⁶⁶⁸and a stone besides*
599 *Imagined rather oft than elsewhere seen,²⁶⁶⁹*
600 *That stone, or like to that which here below*

601 *Philosophers in vain so long have sought—*
602 *In vain, though by their powerful art they bind*
603 *Volatile Hermes,²⁶⁷⁰ and call up unbound*
604 *In various shapes old Proteus²⁶⁷¹ from the sea,*
605 *Drained through a limbic ²⁶⁷² to his native form.*
606 *What wonder then if fields and regions here*
607 *Breathe forth elixir ²⁶⁷³ pure, and rivers run*
608 *Potable²⁶⁷⁴ gold? when with one virtuous ²⁶⁷⁵ touch*
609 *The arch-chemic²⁶⁷⁶ sun, so far from us remote, ²⁶⁷⁷*
610 *Produces, with terrestrial humor²⁶⁷⁸ mixed,*
611 *Here in the dark so many precious things*
612 *Of color glorious, and effect so rare?*
613 *Here matter new to gaze the Devil met,*
614 *Undazzled. Far and wide his eye commands,*
615 *For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade,*
616 *But all sun-shine, as when his beams at noon*
617 *Culminate²⁶⁷⁹ from th'equator, as they now*
618 *Shot upward still direct, whence no way round*
619 *Shadow from body opaque can fall, and the air,*
620 *Nowhere so clear, sharpened his²⁶⁸⁰ visual ray ²⁶⁸¹*
621 *To objects distant far, whereby he soon*
622 *Saw within ken²⁶⁸² a glorious Angel stand,*
623 *The same whom John saw also in the sun.²⁶⁸³*
624 *His back was turned, but not his brightness hid.*
625 *Of beaming sunny rays a golden tiar²⁶⁸⁴*
626 *Circled his head, nor less his locks behind*
627 *Illustrious ²⁶⁸⁵ on his shoulders fledge ²⁶⁸⁶ with wings*
628 *Lay waving round. On some great charge²⁶⁸⁷ employed*
629 *He seemed, or fixed in cogitation²⁶⁸⁸ deep.*
630 *Glad was the Spirit impure, as now in hope*
631 *To find who might direct his wandering flight*
632 *To Paradise, the happy seat of man,*
633 *His journey's end and our beginning woe.*

634 But first he casts²⁶⁸⁹ to change his proper shape,
635 Which else might work him danger or delay.
636 And now a stripling²⁶⁹⁰ Cherub he appears,
637 Not of the prime, ²⁶⁹¹ yet such as in his face
638 Youth smiled celestial, and to every limb
639 Suitable grace diffused, ²⁶⁹² so well he feigned.
640 Under a coronet ²⁶⁹³ his flowing hair
641 In curls on either cheek played; wings he wore
642 Of many a colored plume, ²⁶⁹⁴ sprinkled with gold;
643 His habit fit for speed succinct, ²⁶⁹⁵ and held
644 Before his decent ²⁶⁹⁶ steps a silver wand.
645 He drew not nigh unheard. The Angel bright,
646 Ere he²⁶⁹⁷ drew nigh, his radiant visage turned,
647 Admonished by his ear, and straight was known
648 The Arch-Angel Uriel, one of the seven
649 Who in God's presence, nearest to His throne,
650 Stand ready at command, and are His eyes
651 That run through all the Heav'ns, or down to th' earth
652 Bear His swift errands over moist and dry,
653 O'er sea and land. Him Satan thus accosts: ²⁶⁹⁸
654 "Uriel, for thou of those sev'n Spirits that stand
655 In sight of God's high throne, gloriously bright,
656 The first art wont²⁶⁹⁹ His great authentic²⁷⁰⁰ will
657 Interpreter ²⁷⁰¹ through highest Heav'n to bring,
658 Where all His sons thy embassy²⁷⁰² attend,
659 And here art likeliest by supreme decree
660 Like honor to obtain, and as His eye
661 To visit oft this new creation round.
662 Unspeakable desire to see, ²⁷⁰³ and know
663 All these His wondrous works, but chiefly man,
664 His chief delight and favor, him for whom
665 All these His works so wondrous He ordained,
666 Hath brought me from the choirs²⁷⁰⁴ of Cherubim

667 Alone thus wand'ring. Brightest Seraph, tell
668 In which of all these shining orbs hath man
669 His fixèd seat, or fixèd seat hath none,
670 But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell,
671 That I may find him, and with secret gaze
672 Or open admiration²⁷⁰⁵ him behold,
673 On whom the great Creator hath bestowed
674 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces poured,
675 That both in him and all things, as is meet,²⁷⁰⁶
676 The universal Maker we may praise,
677 Who justly hath driven out His rebel foes
678 To deepest Hell and, to repair that loss,
679 Created this new happy race of men
680 To serve Him better. Wise are all His ways.
681 So spoke the false dissembler unperceived,
682 For neither man nor Angel can discern
683 Hypocrisy, the only evil that walks
684 Invisible, except to God alone,
685 By His permissive will, through Heav'n and earth,
686 And oft, though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps
687 At wisdom's gate, and to simplicity²⁷⁰⁷
688 Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill
689 Where no ill seems. Which now for once beguiled
690 Uriel, though regent ²⁷⁰⁸ of the sun, and held²⁷⁰⁹
691 The sharpest-sighted Spirit of all in Heav'n,
692 Who to the fraudulent impostor foul,
693 In his²⁷¹⁰ uprightness,²⁷¹¹ answer thus returned:
694 "Fair Angel, thy desire, which tends to know
695 The works of God, thereby to glorify
696 The great work-master, leads to no excess
697 That reaches²⁷¹² blame, but rather merits praise
698 The more it seems excess, that led thee hither
699 From thy empyreal ²⁷¹³ mansion²⁷¹⁴ thus alone,
700 To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps,

701 *Contented with report, hear only in Heav'n.*
702 *For wonderful indeed are all His works,*
703 *Pleasant [2715](#) to know, and worthiest to be all*
704 *Had in remembrance always with delight.*
705 *But what created mind can comprehend*
706 *Their number, or the wisdom infinite*
707 *That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep?*
708 *I saw when at His word the formless mass,*
709 *This world's material mould, came to a heap. [2716](#)*
710 *Confusion heard His voice, and wild uproar*
711 *Stood [2717](#) ruled, [2718](#) stood vast infinitude confined,*
712 *Till at His second bidding darkness fled,*
713 *Light shone, and order from disorder sprung.*
714 *Swift to their several quarters hasted then*
715 *The cumbrous [2719](#) elements, earth, flood, air, fire,*
716 *And this ethereal [2720](#) quintessence [2721](#) of Heav'n*
717 *Flew upward, spirited [2722](#) with various forms,*
718 *That rolled orbicular, [2723](#) and turned to stars*
719 *Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move.*
720 *Each had his place appointed, each his course.*
721 *The rest, in circuit, walls [2724](#) this universe.*
722 *Look downward on that globe, whose hither side*
723 *With light from hence, though but reflected, shines.*
724 *That place is earth, the seat of man, that light*
725 *His day, which else, as th' other hemisphere,*
726 *Night would invade, but there the neighboring moon*
727 *(So call that opposite fair star) her aid*
728 *Timely interposes, [2725](#) and her monthly round*
729 *Still ending, still renewing, through mid Heav'n,*
730 *With borrowed light her countenance triform [2726](#)*
731 *Hence fills and empties to enlighten [2727](#) th' earth,*
732 *And in her pale dominion [2728](#) checks [2729](#) the night.*
733 *That spot, to which I point, is Paradise,*

734 *Adam's abode; those lofty shades, his bow'r.*
735 *Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires.*
736 *Thus said, he turned, and Satan, bowing low,*
737 *As to superior Spirits is wont [2730](#) in Heav'n,*
738 *Where honor due[2731](#) and reverence none neglects,*
739 *Took leave, and toward the coast of earth beneath,*
740 *Down from th' ecliptic, [2732](#) sped with hoped success,*
741 *Throws[2733](#) his steep flight in many an airy wheel, [2734](#)*
742 *Nor stayed, [2735](#) till on Niphates' [2736](#) top he lights.*

The End of the Third Book

BOOK IV

THE ARGUMENT

Satan now in prospect²⁷³⁷ of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprize which he undertook alone against God and man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despair, but at length confirms himself in evil. Journey[ing] on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and situation is described, [he] overleaps the bounds²⁷³⁸ [and] sits in the shape of a cormorant on the Tree of Life, as highest in the Garden, [in order] to look about him. The Garden described; Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at their excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work their fall; [he] overhears their discourse, thence gathers that the Tree of Knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found his temptation, by seducing them to transgress. Then [he] leaves them a while, to know further of their state by some other means.

Meanwhile Uriel descending on a Sun-beam warns Gabriel, who had in charge the Gate of Paradise, that some evil spirit had escaped the deep, and passed at Noon, by his sphere, in the shape of a good Angel, down to Paradise, [as] discovered²⁷³⁹ after[wards] by his²⁷⁴⁰ furious gestures in the Mount. Gabriel promises to find him out ere morning.

Night coming on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest; their bower describ'd; their evening worship. Gabriel drawing forth his bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints²⁷⁴¹ two strong Angels to Adam's bower, lest the evil spirit should be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve sleeping. There they find him at the ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bring him, though unwilling, to Gabriel, by whom questioned, he scornfully answers, prepares resistance, but hindered by a sign from Heaven, flies out of Paradise.

1 O, for that warning voice, which he, who saw
2 The Apocalypse, heard cry in Heaven aloud,
3 Then when the dragon, put to second rout,
4 Came furious down to be revenged on men,
5 “Woe to the inhabitants on earth!” [2742](#) that [2743](#) now,
6 While time was, [2744](#) our first parents had been warned
7 The coming of their secret foe, and ’scaped,
8 Haply [2745](#) so ’scaped, his mortal snare. For now
9 Satan, now first inflamed with rage, came down,
10 The tempter ere [2746](#) the accuser of mankind,
11 To wreak [2747](#) on innocent frail man his [2748](#) loss
12 Of that first battle, and his flight to Hell.
13 Yet, not rejoicing in his speed, though bold,
14 Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,
15 Begins his dire attempt, which night the birth
16 Now rolling, [2749](#) boils in his tumultuous breast,
17 And like a devilish engine [2750](#) back recoils
18 Upon himself. Horror and doubt distract
19 His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir
20 The Hell within him, for within him Hell
21 He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell
22 One step, no more than from himself, can fly
23 By change of place. Now conscience wakes despair
24 That slumbered, wakes the bitter memory
25 Of what he what must be
26 Worse: of [2751](#) worse deeds, worse sufferings must ensue. [2752](#)
27 Sometimes towards Eden, which now in his view
28 Lay pleasant, his grieved look he fixes sad,
29 Sometimes towards Heav’n and the full-blazing sun,
30 Which now sat high in his [2753](#) meridian [2754](#) tower.
31 Then much [2755](#) revolving, [2756](#) thus in sighs began:

32 *“O thou, [2757](#) that with surpassing glory crowned,*
33 *Look’st from thy sole dominion like the god*
34 *Of this new world, at whose sight all the stars*
35 *Hide their diminished heads, to thee I call,*
36 *But with no friendly voice, and add thy name,*
37 *O Sun! to tell thee how I hate thy beams,*
38 *That bring to my remembrance from what state*
39 *I fell, how glorious once above thy sphere, [2758](#)*
40 *Till pride and worse ambition threw me down,*
41 *Warring in Heav’n against Heav’n’s matchless King.*
42 *Ah, wherefore! He deserved no such return*
43 *From me, whom He created what I was*
44 *In that bright eminence, [2759](#) and with His good*
45 *Upbraided [2760](#) none. Nor was His service hard.*
46 *What could be less than to afford [2761](#) Him praise,*
47 *The easiest recompence, [2762](#) and pay Him thanks—*
48 *How due! [2763](#) Yet all His good proved ill in me,*
49 *And wrought [2764](#) but malice. Lifted up so high*
50 *I ’sdained [2765](#) subjection, [2766](#) and thought one step higher*
51 *Would set me highest, and in a moment quit [2767](#)*
52 *The debt immense of endless gratitude,*
53 *So burdensome still [2768](#) paying, still to owe,*
54 *Forgetful what from Him I still received,*
55 *And understood not that a grateful mind*
56 *By owing owes not, but still pays, at once*
57 *Indebted and discharged. What burden then?*
58 *O, had His powerful destiny ordained*
59 *Me some inferior Angel, I had stood [2769](#)*
60 *Then happy: no unbounded [2770](#) hope had raised*
61 *Ambition! Yet why not? Some other Power [2771](#)*
62 *As great might have aspired, and me, though mean, [2772](#)*

63 Drawn²⁷⁷³ to his part.²⁷⁷⁴ But other Powers as great
64 Fell not, but stand unshaken from within
65 Or from without, to all temptations armed.²⁷⁷⁵
66 Hadst thou the same free will and power to stand?²⁷⁷⁶
67 Thou hadst: whom hast thou then or what t' accuse,
68 But Heav'n's free²⁷⁷⁷ love dealt equally to all?
69 Be then His love accursed, since love or hate,
70 To me alike, it deals²⁷⁷⁸ eternal woe.
71 Nay, cursed be thou,²⁷⁷⁹ since against His thy will
72 Chose freely what it now so justly²⁷⁸⁰ rues!²⁷⁸¹
73 "Me miserable! ²⁷⁸² Which way shall I fly²⁷⁸³
74 Infinite wrath, and infinite despair?
75 Which²⁷⁸⁴ way I fly is Hell. Myself am Hell,
76 And in the lowest deep a lower deep
77 Still threat'ning to devour me opens wide,
78 To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heav'n.
79 O then, at last relent! ²⁷⁸⁵ Is there no place
80 Left for repentance, none for pardon left?
81 None left but by submission, and that word
82 Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame
83 Among the Spirits beneath, whom I seduced
84 With other promises and other vaunts²⁷⁸⁶
85 Than to submit, boasting I could subdue
86 The Omnipotent. Ay me! they little know
87 How dearly²⁷⁸⁷ I abide ²⁷⁸⁸ that boast so vain,
88 Under what torments inwardly I groan,
89 While they adore me on the throne of Hell!
90 With diadem and scepter high advanced²⁷⁸⁹
91 The lower still I fall, only supreme
92 In misery. Such joy ambition finds!²⁷⁹⁰
93 But say I could repent, and could obtain,

94 *By act of grace, my former state, how soon*
95 *Would height recall high thoughts, how soon unsay*
96 *What feigned [2791](#) submission swore? Ease would recant^{[2792](#)}*
97 *Vows made in pain, as violent^{[2793](#)} and void.*
98 *For never can true reconcilment grow*
99 *Where wounds of deadly hate have pierced so deep,*
100 *Which would but lead me to a worse relapse*
101 *And heavier fall. So should I purchase dear^{[2794](#)}*
102 *Short intermission, bought with double smart.^{[2795](#)}*
103 *This knows my punisher, therefore as far*
104 *From granting He, as I from begging, peace.*
105 *All hope excluded thus, behold, instead*
106 *Of us ^{[2796](#)} out-cast, exiled, his new delight,*
107 *Mankind created, and for him ^{[2797](#)} this world.*
108 *So farewell hope and, with hope, farewell fear,*
109 *Farewell remorse! All good to me is lost.*
110 *Evil, be thou my good: by thee at least*
111 *Divided empire with Heav'n's King I hold—*
112 *By thee, and more than half ^{[2798](#)} perhaps will reign,*
113 *As man ere long, and this new world, shall know.*
114 *Thus while he spoke, each passion dimmed his face*
115 *Thrice changed with pale, ^{[2799](#)} ire, ^{[2800](#)} envy, and despair,*
116 *Which marred^{[2801](#)} his borrowed visage, and betrayed*
117 *Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld.*
118 *For Heav'nly minds from such distempers^{[2802](#)} foul*
119 *Are ever clear. ^{[2803](#)} Whereof he soon aware,*
120 *Each perturbation^{[2804](#)} smoothed with outward calm,*
121 *Artificer^{[2805](#)} of fraud, and^{[2806](#)} was the first*
122 *That practised falsehood under saintly show,*
123 *Deep malice to conceal, couched^{[2807](#)} with revenge.*

124 Yet not enough had practised [2808](#) to deceive
125 Uriel, once warned, whose eye pursued him down
126 The way he went, and on the Assyrian mount
127 Saw him disfigured, more than could befall [2809](#)
128 Spirit of happy sort. His gestures fierce
129 He marked, and mad demeanor, [2810](#) then alone,
130 As he supposed, all unobserved, unseen.
131 So on he fares, [2811](#) and to the border comes
132 Of Eden, where delicious Paradise,
133 Now nearer, crowns with her enclosure green,
134 As with a rural mound, the champaign [2812](#) head [2813](#)
135 Of a steep wilderness, whose hairy sides
136 With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wild,
137 Access denied. [2814](#) And overhead up grew
138 Insurmountable [2815](#) height of loftiest shade,
139 Cedar, and pine, and fir, and branching palm,
140 A sylvan [2816](#) scene, and as the ranks [2817](#) ascend,
141 Shade above shade, a woody theater [2818](#)
142 Of stateliest [2819](#) view. Yet higher than their tops
143 The verdurous wall of Paradise upsprung,
144 Which to our general [2820](#) sire gave prospect large [2821](#)
145 Into his [2822](#) nether [2823](#) empire neighboring round.
146 And higher than that wall a circling row
147 Of goodliest [2824](#) trees, loaden with fairest fruit,
148 Blossoms and fruits at once [2825](#) of golden hue
149 Appeared, with gay enamelled [2826](#) colors mixed,
150 On which the sun more glad impressed [2827](#) his beams
151 Than in fair evening cloud, or humid bow, [2828](#)
152 When God hath show'ed the earth. So lovely seemed
153 That landscape. And of pure now purer [2829](#) air

154 Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires
155 Vernal²⁸³⁰ delight and joy, able to drive²⁸³¹
156 All sadness but despair. Now gentle gales,²⁸³²
157 Fanning their odoriferous²⁸³³ wings, dispense²⁸³⁴
158 Native²⁸³⁵ perfumes, and whisper whence they stole
159 Those balmy spoils.²⁸³⁶ As when to them who sail
160 Beyond the Cape of Hope, ²⁸³⁷ and now are past
161 Mozambique, ²⁸³⁸ off at sea north-east winds blow
162 Sabea²⁸³⁹ odors from the spicy shore
163 Of Araby the blest,²⁸⁴⁰ with such delay
164 Well pleased they slack²⁸⁴¹ their course, ²⁸⁴² and many a
league²⁸⁴³
165 Cheered with the grateful ²⁸⁴⁴ smell old ocean smiles.
166 So entertained ²⁸⁴⁵ those odorous sweets the fiend,
167 Who came their bane, ²⁸⁴⁶ though with them better pleased
168 Than Asmodeus²⁸⁴⁷ with the fishy fume²⁸⁴⁸
169 That drove him, though enamored, from the spouse
170 Of Tobit's son, and with a vengeance sent ²⁸⁴⁹
171 From Media post²⁸⁵⁰ to Egypt, there fast bound.²⁸⁵¹
172 Now to the ascent of that steep savage²⁸⁵² hill
173 Satan had journeyed on, pensive and slow,
174 But further way found none, so thick entwined,
175 As one continued brake, ²⁸⁵³ the undergrowth
176 Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplexed ²⁸⁵⁴
177 All path of man or beast that passed that way.
178 One gate there only was, and that looked east
179 On th' other side. Which when the arch-felon saw,
180 Due entrance he disdained and, in contempt,
181 At one slight²⁸⁵⁵ bound high over-leaped all bound
182 Of hill or highest wall, and sheer²⁸⁵⁶ within

183 *Lights on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,*
184 *Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,*
185 *Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve*
186 *In hurdled [2857](#) cotes²⁸⁵⁸ amid the field secure,*
187 *Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold—*
188 *Or as a thief, bent to unhoard [2859](#) the cash*
189 *Of some rich burgher, whose substantial doors,*
190 *Cross-barred and bolted fast, fear no assault,*
191 *In at the window climbs, or o'er the tiles,²⁸⁶⁰*
192 *So clomb²⁸⁶¹ this first grand thief into God's fold.*
193 *So since into His church lewd hirelings climb.*
194 *Thence up he flew, and on the Tree of Life,*
195 *The middle tree and highest there that grew,*
196 *Sat like a cormorant, yet not true life*
197 *Thereby regained, but sat devising death*
198 *To them who lived, nor on the virtue thought*
199 *Of that life-giving plant, but only used*
200 *For prospect,²⁸⁶² what well-used had been²⁸⁶³ the pledge²⁸⁶⁴*
201 *Of immortality. So little knows*
202 *Any, but God alone, to value right*
203 *The good before him, but perverts best things*
204 *To worst abuse, or to their meanest [2865](#) use.*
205 *Beneath him with new wonder now he views,*
206 *To all delight of human sense exposed*
207 *In narrow room,²⁸⁶⁶ Nature's whole wealth, yea more,*
208 *A Heav'n on earth. For blissful Paradise*
209 *Of God the garden was, by Him in th' east*
210 *Of Eden planted. Eden stretched her line²⁸⁶⁷*
211 *From Auran²⁸⁶⁸ eastward to the royal tow'rs*
212 *Of great Seleucia,²⁸⁶⁹ built by Grecian kings,*
213 *Or where the sons of Eden long before*

214 *Dwelt in Telassar. [2870](#) In this pleasant soil*
215 *His far more pleasant garden God ordained.*
216 *Out of the fertile ground He caused to grow*
217 *All trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste,*
218 *And all amid them stood the Tree of Life,*
219 *High eminent, blooming ambrosial fruit*
220 *Of vegetable[2871](#) gold. And next to life*
221 *Our death, the Tree of Knowledge, grew fast by,*
222 *Knowledge of good bought dear by knowing ill.*
223 *Southward through Eden went a river large,*
224 *Nor changed his course, but through the shaggy[2872](#) hill*
225 *Passed underneath engulfed, [2873](#) for God had thrown[2874](#)*
226 *That mountain as His garden-mold [2875](#) high raised*
227 *Upon the rapid current, which through veins*
228 *Of porous earth with kindly [2876](#) thirst up-drawn,*
229 *Rose a fresh fountain, and with many a rill[2877](#)*
230 *Watered the garden, thence united fell*
231 *Down the steep glade, and met the nether[2878](#) flood,[2879](#)*
232 *Which from his darksome passage now appears,*
233 *And now, divided into four main streams,*
234 *Runs diverse, [2880](#) wand'ring many a famous realm*
235 *And country, whereof here needs no account,*
236 *But rather to tell how, if art [2881](#) could tell,*
237 *How from that sapphire fount the crispèd[2882](#) brooks,*
238 *Rolling on orient[2883](#) pearl and sands of gold,*
239 *With mazy[2884](#) error [2885](#) under pendant shades*
240 *Ran nectar, visiting each plant, and fed*
241 *Flow'rs worthy of Paradise, which not nice[2886](#) art*
242 *In beds and curious[2887](#) knots, but Nature boon[2888](#)*
243 *Poured forth profuse on hill and dale and plain,*
244 *Both where the morning sun first warmly smote*

245 *The open field, and where the unpierced shade*
246 *Imbrowned [2889](#) the noontide bow'rs. Thus was this place*
247 *A happy rural seat of various view,*
248 *Groves whose rich trees wept odorous gums and balm,*
249 *Others whose fruit, burnished with golden rind,*
250 *Hung amiable, [2890](#) Hesperian[2891](#) fables true,*
251 *If true, here onl, and of delicious taste.*
252 *Betwixt them lawns, or level downs, [2892](#) and flocks*
253 *Grazing the tender herb, [2893](#) were interposed,*
254 *Or palmy[2894](#) hillock, or the flowery lap[2895](#)*
255 *Of some irriguous[2896](#) valley spread her store,*
256 *Flow'rs of all hue, and without thorn the rose.*
257 *Another side, umbrageous[2897](#) grots and caves*
258 *Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling[2898](#) vine*
259 *Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps*
260 *Luxuriant. Meanwhile murmuring waters fall*
261 *Down the slope hills, dispersed, or in a lake,*
262 *That to the fringed bank with myrtle crowned*
263 *Her crystal mirror holds, unite their streams.*
264 *The birds their choir[2899](#) apply, [2900](#) airs, vernal airs,*
265 *Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune[2901](#)*
266 *The trembling leaves, while universal Pan,*
267 *Knit[2902](#) with the Graces[2903](#) and the Hours[2904](#) in dance,*
268 *Led on th' eternal Spring. Not that fair field*
269 *Of Enna, [2905](#) where Proserpine, gath'ring flow'rs,*
270 *Herself a fairer flow'r by gloomy Dis[2906](#)*
271 *Was gathered, which cost Ceres[2907](#) all that pain*
272 *To seek her through the world. Nor that sweet grove*
273 *Of Daphne[2908](#) by Orontes, [2909](#) and the inspired [2910](#)*
274 *Castalian spring, [2911](#) might with this Paradise*

275 Of Eden strive, ²⁹¹² nor that Nyseian²⁹¹³ isle
276 Girt²⁹¹⁴ with the river Triton, where old Cham, ²⁹¹⁵
277 Whom gentiles Ammon call, and Libyan Jove,
278 Hid Amalthea²⁹¹⁶ and her florid²⁹¹⁷ son
279 Young Bacchus from his stepdame Rhea's eye,
280 Nor where Abassin²⁹¹⁸ kings their issue²⁹¹⁹ guard,
281 Mount Amara, ²⁹²⁰ though this by some supposed
282 True Paradise under the Ethiop line²⁹²¹
283 By Nilus²⁹²² head, ²⁹²³ enclosed with shining rock,
284 A whole day's journey high, but wide remote
285 From this Assyrian garden, where the fiend
286 Saw, undelighted, all delight, all kind
287 Of living creatures, new to sight, and strange.
288 Two of far nobler shape, erect and tall,
289 Godlike erect, with native honor clad
290 In naked majesty, seemed lords of all.
291 And worthy seemed, for in their looks divine
292 The image of their glorious Maker shone,
293 Truth, wisdom, sanctitude severe and pure
294 (Severe, but in true filial freedom placed)
295 Whence true authority in men. Though both
296 Not equal, as their sex not equal seemed:
297 For contemplation he, and valor, formed;
298 For softness she and sweet attractive grace;
299 He for God only, she for God in him.
300 His fair large front²⁹²⁴ and eye sublime²⁹²⁵ declared²⁹²⁶
301 Absolute rule, and hyacinthine²⁹²⁷ locks
302 Round from his parted forelock ²⁹²⁸ manly hung
303 Clust'ring, but not beneath his shoulders broad.
304 She as a veil down to the slender waist
305 Her unadornèd golden tresses wore

306 Dishevelled, [2929](#) but in wanton [2930](#) ringlets waved
307 As the vine curls her tendrils, which implied
308 Subjection, but required [2931](#) with gentle sway, [2932](#)
309 And by her yielded, by him best received,
310 Yielded with coy [2933](#) submission, modest pride,
311 And sweet, reluctant, amorous delay.
312 Nor those mysterious parts [2934](#) were then concealed.
313 Then was not guilty shame, dishonest [2935](#) shame
314 Of Nature's works. Honor dishonorable,
315 Sin-bred, how have ye troubled all mankind
316 With shows [2936](#) instead, mere shows of seeming pure,
317 And banished from man's life his happiest life,
318 Simplicity and spotless innocence!
319 So passed they naked on, nor shunned the sight
320 Of God or Angel, for they thought no ill:
321 So hand in hand they passed, the loveliest pair
322 That ever since in love's embraces met,
323 Adam the goodliest man of men, since born
324 His sons, the fairest of her daughters Eve.
325 Under a tuft [2937](#) of shade that on a green [2938](#)
326 Stood whispering soft, by a fresh fountain side
327 They sat them down and, after no more toil
328 Of their sweet gardening labor than sufficed
329 To recommend [2939](#) cool Zephyr, [2940](#) and made ease
330 More easy, wholesome thirst and appetite
331 More grateful, to their supper-fruits they fell,
332 Nectarine [2941](#) fruits which the compliant [2942](#) boughs
333 Yielded them, side-long as they sat recline
334 On the soft downy bank, damasked [2943](#) with flow'rs.
335 The savory pulp they chew, and in the rind,
336 Still as they thirsted, scoop the brimming stream,

337 Nor gentle purpose, [2944](#) nor endearing smiles
338 Wanted, [2945](#) nor youthful dalliance, as beseems
339 Fair couple, linked in happy nuptial league,
340 Alone as they. About them frisking played
341 All beasts of the earth, since wild, and of all chase [2946](#)
342 In wood or wilderness, forest or den.
343 Sporting, [2947](#) the lion ramped, [2948](#) and in his paw
344 Dandled [2949](#) the kid; bears, tigers, ounces, [2950](#) pards, [2951](#)
345 Gambolled [2952](#) before them; the unwieldy elephant,
346 To make them mirth, used all his might, and wreathed [2953](#)
347 His lithe [2954](#) proboscis; [2955](#) close, [2956](#) the serpent sly
348 Insinuating [2957](#) wove with Gordian [2958](#) twine [2959](#)
349 His braided [2960](#) train, [2961](#) and of his fatal [2962](#) guile
350 Gave proof unheeded; others on the grass
351 Couch'd, [2963](#) and now filled with pasture [2964](#) gazing sat,
352 Or bedward ruminating, [2965](#) for the sun,
353 Declined, [2966](#) was hasting now with prone [2967](#) career [2968](#)
354 To th' ocean isles, [2969](#) and in the ascending scale [2970](#)
355 Of Heav'n the stars that usher evening rose.
356 When Satan still in gaze, as first he stood,
357 Scarce thus at length fail'd speech recovered, sad:
358 "O Hell! What do mine eyes with grief behold!
359 Into our room [2971](#) of bliss thus high advanced
360 Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps,
361 Not Spirits, yet to Heav'nly Spirits bright
362 Little inferior, whom my thoughts pursue
363 With wonder, and could love, so lively shines
364 In them divine resemblance, and such grace
365 The hand that formed them on their shape hath poured. [2972](#)
366 Ah! gentle [2973](#) pair, ye little think how nigh [2974](#)

367 Your change approaches, when all these delights
368 Will vanish, and deliver ye to woe,
369 More woe, the more your taste is now of joy,
370 Happy, but for so happy ill secured [2975](#)
371 Long to continue, and this high seat your Heav'n
372 Ill fenced for Heav'n to keep out such a foe
373 As now is entered. Yet no purposed [2976](#) foe
374 To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn, [2977](#)
375 Though I [2978](#) unpitied. League [2979](#) with you I seek,
376 And mutual amity, so straight, [2980](#) so close,
377 That I with you must dwell, or you with me
378 Henceforth. My dwelling haply [2981](#) may not please
379 (Like this fair Paradise) your sense, yet such
380 Accept your Maker's work. He gave it me,
381 Which I as freely give: Hell shall unfold,
382 To entertain [2982](#) you two, her widest-gates,
383 And send forth all her kings. There will be room,
384 Not like these narrow limits, to receive
385 Your numerous offspring. If no better place,
386 Thank Him who puts me, loath, to this revenge
387 On you (who wrong me not), for Him who wronged. [2983](#)
388 And should I at your harmless innocence
389 Melt, [2984](#) as I do, yet public [2985](#) reason just,
390 Honor and empire with revenge enlarged,
391 By conquering this new world, compels me now
392 To do what else, though damned, I should abhor.
393 So spoke the fiend, and with necessity
394 (The tyrant's plea) excused his devilish deeds.
395 Then from his lofty stand on that high tree
396 Down he alights among the sportful [2986](#) herd
397 Of those four-footed kinds, himself now one,

398 *Now other, as their shape served best his end*
399 *Nearer to view his prey, and unespied*
400 *To mark what of their state²⁹⁸⁷ he more might learn,*
401 *By word or action marked.²⁹⁸⁸ About them round*
402 *A lion ²⁹⁸⁹ now he stalks with fiery glare,*
403 *Then as a tiger, who by chance hath spied*
404 *In some purlieu²⁹⁹⁰ two gentle fawns at play,*
405 *Straight couches²⁹⁹¹ close, then rising, changes oft*
406 *His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground,*
407 *Whence rushing, he might surest seize them both,*
408 *Gripped in each paw: When Adam, first of men,*
409 *To first of women Eve, thus moving ²⁹⁹² speech,*
410 *Turned him²⁹⁹³ all ear ²⁹⁹⁴ to hear new utterance flow:*
411 *“Sole partner, and sole part,²⁹⁹⁵ of all these joys,*
412 *Dearer thyself than all! Needs must the Power*
413 *That made us, and for us this ample world,*
414 *Be infinitely good, and of His good*
415 *As liberal and free as infinite,*
416 *That raised us from the dust, and placed us here*
417 *In all this happiness, who at His hand*
418 *Have nothing merited,²⁹⁹⁶ nor can perform*
419 *Aught whereof He hath need, He who requires*
420 *From us no other service than to keep*
421 *This one, this easy charge:²⁹⁹⁷ of all the trees*
422 *In Paradise that bear delicious fruit*
423 *So various, not to taste that only Tree*
424 *Of Knowledge, planted by ²⁹⁹⁸ the Tree of Life.*
425 *So near grows death to life, whate’er death is,*
426 *Some dreadful thing no doubt, for well thou know’st*
427 *God hath pronounced it death to taste that tree,*
428 *The only sign of our obedience left*

429 *Among so many signs of power and rule*
430 *Conferred upon us, and dominion²⁹⁹⁹ giv'n*
431 *Over all other creatures that possess*
432 *Earth, air, and sea. Then let us not think hard*
433 *One easy prohibition, who enjoy*
434 *Free leave so large to all things else, and choice*
435 *Unlimited of manifold delights,*
436 *But let us ever praise Him, and extol*
437 *His bounty, following our delightful task,*
438 *To prune these growing plants, and tend these flow'rs,*
439 *Which were it toilsome, yet with thee were sweet.*
440 *To whom thus Eve replied: "O thou for whom*
441 *And from whom I was formed, flesh of thy flesh,*
442 *And without whom am to no end,³⁰⁰⁰ my guide*
443 *And head! What thou hast said is just and right.*
444 *For we to Him indeed all praises owe,*
445 *And daily thanks—I chiefly, who enjoy*
446 *So far the happier lot, enjoying thee*
447 *Pre-eminent by so much odds,³⁰⁰¹ while thou*
448 *Like³⁰⁰² consort ³⁰⁰³ to thyself canst nowhere find.*
449 *That day I oft remember, when from sleep*
450 *I first awaked, and found myself reposed*
451 *Under a shade ³⁰⁰⁴ on flow'rs, much wond'ring where*
452 *And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.*
453 *Not distant far from thence a murmuring sound*
454 *Of waters issued from a cave, and spread*
455 *Into a liquid plain, then stood unmoved,³⁰⁰⁵*
456 *Pure as th' expanse of Heav'n. I thither ³⁰⁰⁶ went*
457 *With unexperienced ³⁰⁰⁷ thought, and laid me down*
458 *On the green bank, to look into the clear*
459 *Smooth lake, that to me seemed another sky.*

460 *As I bent down to look, just opposite*
461 *A shape within the wat'ry gleam appeared,*
462 *Bending to look on me. I started back—*
463 *It started back—but pleased I soon returned,*
464 *Pleased it returned as soon, with answering looks*
465 *Of sympathy and love. There I had fixed*
466 *Mine eyes till now, and pined [3008](#) with vain desire,*
467 *Had not a voice thus warned me: 'What thou see'st,*
468 *What there thou see'st, fair creature, is thyself.*
469 *With thee it came and goes. But follow me*
470 *And I will bring thee where no shadow stays [3009](#)*
471 *Thy coming, and thy soft embraces, he*
472 *Whose image thou art, him thou shalt enjoy*
473 *Inseparably thine, to him shalt bear*
474 *Multitudes like thyself, and thence be called*
475 *Mother of human race. 'What could I do,*
476 *But follow straight, [3010](#) invisibly thus led?*
477 *Till I espied thee, fair indeed and tall,*
478 *Under a platane, [3011](#) yet methought less fair,*
479 *Less winning soft, less amiably mild,*
480 *Than that smooth wat'ry image. Back I turned.*
481 *Thou following cried'st aloud, 'Return, fair Eve.*
482 *Whom fly'st [3012](#) thou? Whom thou fly'st, of him thou art,*
483 *His flesh, his bone. To give thee being I lent*
484 *Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart,*
485 *Substantial [3013](#) life, to [3014](#) have thee by my side*
486 *Henceforth an individual [3015](#) solace [3016](#) dear.*
487 *Part of my soul, I seek thee! and thee claim [3017](#)*
488 *My other half. 'With that thy gentle hand*
489 *Seized mine, I yielded, and from that time see*
490 *How beauty is excelled by manly grace,*

491 *And wisdom, which alone is truly fair.*
492 *So spoke our general [3018](#) mother, and with eyes*
493 *Of conjugal attraction unreproved,*
494 *And meek surrender, half-embracing leaned*
495 *On our first father. Half her swelling breast*
496 *Naked met his, under the flowing gold*
497 *Of her loose tresses hid. He in delight*
498 *Both of her beauty and submissive charms,*
499 *Smiled with superior love, as Jupiter*
500 *On Juno smiles, when he impregns [3019](#) the clouds*
501 *That shed May flowers, and pressed her matron lip*
502 *With kisses pure. Aside the Devil turned*
503 *For envy, yet with jealous leer malign*
504 *Eyed them askance, and to himself thus plained:[3020](#)*
505 *“Sight hateful, sight tormenting! Thus these two,*
506 *Imparadised in one another’s arms,*
507

*The happier Eden, shall
enjoy their fill*

508 *Of bliss on bliss, while I to Hell am thrust,*
509 *Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,*
510 *Among our other torments not the least,*
511 *Still unfulfilled with pain of longing*
 piners.[3021](#)
512 *Yet let me not forget what I have gained*
513 *From their own mouths. All is not theirs, it*
 seems.
514 *One fatal tree there stands, of knowledge*
 called,
515 *Forbidden them to taste. Knowledge*
 forbidden?
516 *Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their*
 Lord
517 *Envy them that? Can it be sin to know?*
518 *Can it be death? And do they only stand*[3022](#)
519 *By ignorance? Is that their happy state,*
520 *The proof of their obedience and their faith?*
521 *O fair foundation laid whereon to build*
522 *Their ruin! Hence I will excite*[3023](#) *their*
 minds
523 *With more desire to know, and to reject*
524 *Envious commands, invented with design*
525 *To keep them low, whom knowledge might*
 exalt
526 *Equal with gods. Aspiring to be such,*
527 *They taste and die. What likelier can ensue?*
528 *But first with narrow*[3024](#) *search I must walk*
 round
529 *This garden, and no corner leave unspied.*
530 *A chance (but chance)*[3025](#) *may lead where I*
 may meet
531 *Some wand'ring Spirit of Heav'n by fountain*

side,
532 Or in thick shade retired, from him to draw
533 What further would be learned. Live while ye
may,
534 Yet happy pair—enjoy, till I return,
535 Short pleasures, for long woes are to
succeed!”[3026](#)
536 So saying, his proud step he scornful
turned,
537 But with sly circumspection,[3027](#) and began
538 Through wood, through waste, [3028](#) o’er hill,
o’er dale, his roam.[3029](#)
539 Meanwhile in utmost longitude, [3030](#) where
Heav’n
540 With earth and ocean meets, the setting sun
541 Slowly descended, and with right aspect [3031](#)
542 Against the eastern gate of Paradise
543 Leveled his evening rays. It was a rock
544 Of alabaster, piled up to the clouds,
545 Conspicuous[3032](#) far, winding with one
ascent
546 Accessible from earth, one entrance high.
547 The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung
548 Still as it rose, impossible to climb.
549 Betwixt these rocky pillars, Gabriel sat,
550 Chief of the Angelic guards, awaiting night.
551 About him exercised [3033](#) heroic games
552 Th’ unarmed youth of Heav’n, but nigh[3034](#)
at hand
553 Celestial armory—shields, helms, and
spears,
554 Hung high with diamond flaming, and with
gold.
555 Thither came Uriel, gliding through the

ev'n³⁰³⁵
556 On a sun-beam, swift as a shooting star
557 In autumn thwarts³⁰³⁶ s fired ³⁰³⁷
558 Impress³⁰³⁸ the air) and shows the mariner
559 From what point of his compass to beware
560 Impetuous³⁰³⁹ winds. He thus began in
haste:
561 "Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot ³⁰⁴⁰
hath given
562 Charge³⁰⁴¹ and strict watch, that to this
happy place
563 No evil thing approach or enter in.
564 This day at height of noon came to my
sphere
565 A Spirit, zealous, as he seemed, to know
566 More of the Almighty's works, and chiefly
man,
567 God's latest image. I described ³⁰⁴² his way
568 Bent all on speed, and marked ³⁰⁴³ his airy
gait, ³⁰⁴⁴
569 But in the mount that lies from Eden north,
570 Where he first lighted, soon discerned his
looks
571 Alien³⁰⁴⁵ from Heav'n, with passions foul
obscured. ³⁰⁴⁶
572 Mine eye pursued him still, but under shade
573 Lost sight of him. One of the banished crew,
574 I fear, hath ventured from the deep, to raise
³⁰⁴⁷
575 New troubles. Him thy care must be to find.
576 To whom the wingèd warrior thus returned:
577 "Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,
578 Amid the sun's bright circle where thou sit'st,
579 See far and wide. In at this gate none pass

580 The vigilance³⁰⁴⁸ here placed, but such as
 come
581 Well known from Heav'n. And since
 meridian hour³⁰⁴⁹
582 No creature thence. If Spirit of other sort,
583 So minded,³⁰⁵⁰ have o'er-leaped these
 earthly bounds
584 On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude
585 Spiritual substance with corporeal bar.
586 But if within the circuit of these walks,
587 In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom
588 Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall
 know.
589 So promised he, and Uriel to his
 charge³⁰⁵¹
590 Returned on that bright beam, whose point
 now raised
591 Bore him slope downward to the sun now
 fall'n
592 Beneath the Azores, whither the prime orb,
593 Incredible how swift, had thither rolled
594 Diurnal,³⁰⁵² or ³⁰⁵³ this less voluble³⁰⁵⁴
 earth,
595 By shorter flight to the east, had left him
 there,
596 Arraying with reflected purple and gold
597 The clouds that on his western throne attend.
598 Now came still ³⁰⁵⁵ ev'ning on, and
 twilight gray
599 Had in her sober livery³⁰⁵⁶ all things
 clad.³⁰⁵⁷
600 Silence accompanied, for beast and bird,
601 They to their grassy couch, these to their
 nests

602 *Were slunk, all but the wakeful nightingale:*
603 *She all night long her amorous descant [3058](#)*
 sung.
604 *Silence was pleased. Now glowed the*
 firmament
605 *With living sapphires. Hesperus, [3059](#) that led*
606 *The starry host, rode brightest, till the moon,*
607 *Rising in clouded majesty, at length*
608 *(Apparent [3060](#) queen) unveiled her peerless*
 light,
609 *And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw.*
610 *When Adam thus to Eve: "Fair consort, th'*
 hour
611 *Of night, and all things now retired to rest,*
612 *Mind [3061](#) us of like [3062](#) repose, since God*
 hath set
613 *Labor and rest, as day and night, to men*
614 *Successive, [3063](#) and the timely dew of sleep,*
615 *Now falling with soft slumbrous weight,*
 inclines [3064](#)
616 *Our eye-lids. Other creatures all day long*
617 *Rove idle, unemployed, and less need rest;*
618 *Man hath his daily work of body or mind*
619 *Appointed, which declares [3065](#) his dignity,*
620 *And the regard [3066](#) of Heav'n on all his*
 ways,
621 *While other animals unactive range, [3067](#)*
622 *And of their doings God takes no account.*
623 *To-morrow, ere fresh morning streak the east*
624 *With first approach of light, we must be*
 ris'n,
625 *And at our pleasant labor, to reform [3068](#)*
626 *Yon flow'ry arbors, yonder alleys [3069](#) green,*
627 *Our walk at noon, with branches overgrown,*

628 *That mock our scant manuring, [3070](#) and*
 require
629 *More hands than ours to lop their*
 wanton[3071](#) growth.
630 *Those blossoms also, and those dropping*
 gums,
631 *That lie bestrewn, unsightly and unsmooth,*
632 *Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease.*
633 *Meanwhile, as Nature wills, night bids us*
 rest.
634 *To whom thus Eve, with perfect beauty*
 adorned:
635 *“My author and disposer, what thou bid’st*
636 *Unargued I obey. So God ordains:*
637 *God is thy law, thou mine. To know no more*
638 *Is woman’s happiest knowledge, and her*
 praise.
639 *With thee conversing I forget all time;*
640 *All seasons, and their change, all please*
 alike.
641 *Sweet is the breath of morn, her rising sweet,*
642 *With charm [3072](#) of earliest birds. Pleasant*
 the sun,
643 *When first on this delightful land he spreads*
644 *His orient [3073](#) beams, on herb, tree, fruit,*
 and flow’r,
645 *Glistering with dew. Fragrant the fertile*
 earth
646 *After soft showers, and sweet the coming on*
647 *Of grateful[3074](#) evening mild, then silent*
 night,
648 *With this her solemn bird, and this fair*
 moon,
649 *And these the gems of Heav’n, her starry*
 train.

650 But neither breath of morn, when she
ascends
651 With charm³⁰⁷⁵ of earliest birds, nor rising
sun
652 On this delightful land, nor herb, fruit,
flow'r,
653 Glistering with dew, nor fragrance after
showers,
654 Nor grateful ev'ning mild, nor silent night,
655 With this her solemn bird, nor walk by moon,
656 Or glittering star-light, without thee is sweet.
657 "But wherefore all night long shine these?
For whom
658 This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all
eyes?
659 To whom our general ³⁰⁷⁶ ancestor replied:
660 "Daughter of God and man, accomplished
³⁰⁷⁷ Eve,
661 These have their course to finish round the
earth,
662 By morrow ev'ning, and from land to land
663 In order, though to nations yet unborn.
664 Minist'ring³⁰⁷⁸ light prepared,³⁰⁷⁹ they set
and rise,
665 Lest total darkness should by night regain
666 Her old possession, and extinguish life
667 In Nature and all things, which these soft
fires
668 Not only enlighten,³⁰⁸⁰ but with kindly³⁰⁸¹
heat
669 Of various³⁰⁸² influence³⁰⁸³ foment³⁰⁸⁴ and
warm,
670 Temper or nourish, or in part shed down
671 Their stellar virtue³⁰⁸⁵ on all kinds³⁰⁸⁶ that
grow

672 On earth, made hereby apter [3087](#) to receive
673 Perfection from the sun's more potent [3088](#)
ray.
674 These then, though unbeheld in deep of
night,
675 Shine not in vain, nor think, [3089](#) though men
were
676 That Heav'n would want [3090](#) spectators, God
want praise.
677 Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth
678 Unseen, both when we wake, and when we
sleep:
679 All these with ceaseless praise His works
behold
680 Both day and night. How often from the
steep [3091](#)
681 Of echoing hill or thicket have we heard
682 Celestial voices to the midnight air,
683 Sole, or responsive each to others' note,
684 Singing their great Creator? Oft in bands
685 While they keep watch, or nightly rounding
walk, [3092](#)
686 With Heav'nly touch of instrumental sounds
687 In full harmonic number [3093](#) joined, their
songs
688 Divide [3094](#) the night, and lift our thoughts to
Heav'n.
689 Thus talking, hand in hand alone they
passed
690 On to their blissful bower. It was a place
691 Chosen by the sov'reign Planter, [3095](#) when
He framed
692 All things to man's delightful use. The roof
693 Of thickest covert [3096](#) was inwoven shade,

694 *Laurel and myrtle, and what higher grew*
695 *Of firm and fragrant leaf, on either side*
696 *Acanthus, and each odorous bushy shrub,*
697 *Fenced up the verdant wall. Each beauteous*
 flow'r,
698 *Iris all hues, roses, and jessamin,*
699 *Reared high their flourished [3097](#) heads*
 between, and wrought [3098](#)
700 *Mosaic. Underfoot the violet,*
701 *Crocus, and hyacinth, with rich inlay*
702 *Broidered[3099](#) the ground, more colored than*
 with stone
703 *Of costliest emblem.[3100](#) Other creature here,*
704 *Bird, beast, insect, or worm, durst enter*
 none,
705 *Such was their awe of man. In shadier bower*
706 *More sacred and sequestered, though but*
 feigned,[3101](#)
707 *Pan or Sylvanus never slept, nor nymph*
708 *Nor Faunus[3102](#) haunted. Here, in close[3103](#)*
 recess,[3104](#)
709 *With flowers, garlands, and sweet-smelling*
 herbs,
710 *Espousèd [3105](#) Eve decked first her nuptial*
 bed,
711 *And Heav'nly choirs the hymenaeon[3106](#)*
 sung,
712 *What day [3107](#) the genial [3108](#) Angel to our*
 sire
713 *Brought her in naked beauty more adorned,*
714 *More lovely, than Pandora,[3109](#) whom the*
 gods
715 *Endowed with all their gifts, and O! too like*
716 *In sad event, when to the unwiser son[3110](#)*

717 Of Japhet [3111](#) brought by Hermes, [3112](#) she
 ensnared
718 Mankind with her fair looks, to be [3113](#)
 avenged
719 On him [3114](#) who had stole Jove's
 authentic [3115](#) fire.
720 Thus at their shady lodge [3116](#) arrived, both
 stood,
721 Both turned, and under open sky adored [3117](#)
722 The God that made both sky, air, earth, and
 Heav'n,
723 Which they beheld, the moon's resplendent
 globe
724 And starry pole: "Thou also mad'st the
 night,
725 Maker Omnipotent, and Thou the day,
726 Which we, in our appointed work employed,
727 Have finished, happy in our mutual help
728 And mutual love, the crown of all our bliss
729 Ordained by Thee. And this delicious [3118](#)
 place
730 For us too large, where thy abundance
 wants [3119](#)
731 Partakers, and uncropped [3120](#) falls to the
 ground.
732 But thou hast promised from us two a race
733 To fill the earth, who shall with us extol
734 Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,
735 And when we seek, as now, Thy gift of sleep.
736 This said unanimous, and other rites
737 Observing none, but adoration pure
738 (Which God likes best), into their inmost
 bow'r
739 Handed [3121](#) they went and, eased [3122](#) the

putting off
740 These troublesome disguises which we wear,
741 Straight side by side were laid, nor turned, I
ween,^{[3123](#)}
742 Adam from his fair spouse, nor Eve the rites
743 Mysterious of connubial love refused,
744 Whatever hypocrites austere talk
745 Of purity, and place, and innocence,
746 Defaming as impure what God declares
747 Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to
all.
748 Our Maker bids increase: who bids abstain
749 But our destroyer, foe to God and man?
750 Hail, wedded love, mysterious law, true
source
751 Of human offspring, sole propriety^{[3124](#)}
752 In Paradise of all things common^{[3125](#)} else!
753 By thee adulterous lust was driv'n from men
754 Among the bestial herds to range. ^{[3126](#)} By
thee
755 Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure,
756 Relations^{[3127](#)} dear, and all the charities^{[3128](#)}
757 Of father, son, and brother, first were known.
758 Far be it, that I should write^{[3129](#)} thee sin or
blame,
759 Or think thee unbefitting holiest place,
760 Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets,
761 Whose bed is undefiled and chaste
pronounced,
762 Present, or past, as saints and patriarchs
used.
763 Here love his golden shafts^{[3130](#)} employs, here
lights
764 His constant ^{[3131](#)} lamp, and waves his purple

wings,
765 *Reigns here and revels, not in the bought
smile*
766 *Of harlots, loveless, joyless, unendeared,*
767 *Casual fruition,*[3132](#) *nor in court-amours,*
768 *Mixed dance, or wanton*[3133](#) *masque, or
midnight ball,*
769 *Or serenade, which the starved lover sings*
770 *To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain.*
771 *These, lulled by nightingales, embracing
slept,*
772 *And on their naked limbs the flow'ry roof*
773 *Show'red roses, which the morn
repaired.*[3134](#) *Sleep on,*
774 *Blest pair! and O! yet happiest, if ye seek*
775 *No happier state, and know to know no
more!*
776 *Now had night measured with her shadowy
cone*[3135](#)
777 *Halfway up hill this vast sublunar vault,*[3136](#)
778 *And from their ivory port*[3137](#) *the Cherubim,*
779 *Forth issuing at the accustomed hour, stood
armed*
780 *To their night watches in warlike parade,*
781 *When Gabriel to his next in power thus
spoke:*
782 *“Uzziel,*[3138](#) *half these draw off, and coast
the south*
783 *With strictest watch. These other wheel*[3139](#)
the north;
784 *Our circuit meets full west.” As*[3140](#) *flame
they part,*
785 *Half wheeling to the shield, half to the spear.*
[3141](#)

786 *From these, two strong and subtle Spirits he*
 called
787 *That near him stood, and gave them thus in*
 charge:
788 *“Ithuriel [3142](#) and Zephon, [3143](#) with wingèd*
 speed
789 *Search through this garden, leave*
 unsearched no nook,
790 *But chiefly where those two fair creatures*
 lodge,
791 *Now laid perhaps asleep, secure of [3144](#)*
 harm.
792 *This ev’ning from [3145](#) the sun’s decline*
 arrived
793 *Who tells [3146](#) of some infernal Spirit seen*
794 *Hitherward bent [3147](#) (who could have*
 thought?), escaped
795 *The bars of Hell, on errand bad no doubt.*
796 *Such, where ye find, seize fast, and hither*
 bring.
797 *So saying, on he led his radiant files, [3148](#)*
798 *Dazzling the moon. These to the bower direct*
799 *In search of whom they sought, him [3149](#) there*
 they found
800 *Squat [3150](#) like a toad, close at [3151](#) the ear of*
 Eve,
801 *Assaying [3152](#) by his devilish art to reach*
802 *The organs of her fancy, and with them forge*
803 *Illusions, as he list, [3153](#) phantasms and*
 dreams,
804 *Or if, [3154](#) inspiring [3155](#) venom, he might*
 taint [3156](#)
805 *The animal spirits that from pure blood arise*
806 *Like gentle breaths from rivers pure, thence*

raise
807 At least distempered,³¹⁵⁷ discontented
thoughts,
808 Vain hopes, vain aims, inordinate desires,
809 Blown up with high conceits engend'ring
pride.
810 Him thus intent, Ithuriel with his spear
811 Touched lightly, for no falsehood can endure
812 Touch of celestial temper,³¹⁵⁸ but returns
813 Of force³¹⁵⁹ to its own likeness. Up he
starts,³¹⁶⁰
814 Discovered and surprised.³¹⁶¹ As when a
spark
815 Lights on a heap of nitrous powder,³¹⁶² laid
³¹⁶³
816 Fit for the tun³¹⁶⁴ some magazine³¹⁶⁵ to
store
817 Against a rumored war, the smutty³¹⁶⁶
grain,³¹⁶⁷
818 With sudden blaze diffused,³¹⁶⁸ inflames the
air,
819 So started up in his own shape the fiend.
820 Back stepped those two fair Angels, half
amazed ³¹⁶⁹
821 So sudden to behold the grisly ³¹⁷⁰ king,
822 Yet thus, unmoved with fear, accost³¹⁷¹ him
soon:³¹⁷²
823 "Which of those rebel Spirits adjudged ³¹⁷³
to Hell
824 Com'st thou, escaped thy prison? And,
transformed,
825 Why sat'st thou like an enemy in wait,
826 Here watching at the head of these that
sleep?

827 *“Know ye not then,” said Satan, filled with*
scorn,
828 *“Know ye not me? Ye knew me once no*
mate[3174](#)
829 *For you, there*[3175](#) *sitting where ye durst not*
soar.
830 *Not to know me argues*[3176](#) *yourselves*
unknown,
831 *The lowest of your throng. Or if ye know,*
832 *Why ask ye, and superfluous begin*
833 *Your message, like to end as much in vain?*
834 *To whom thus Zephon, answering scorn with*
scorn:
835 *“Think not, revolted* [3177](#) *Spirit, thy shape*
the same,
836 *Or undiminished brightness, to be known*
837 *As when thou stood’st in Heav’n upright and*
pure.
838 *That glory then, when thou no more wast*
good,
839 *Departed from thee, and thou resembl’st now*
840 *Thy sin and place of doom,*[3178](#) *obscure and*
foul.
841 *But come, for thou, be sure, shalt give*
account
842 *To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep*
843 *This place inviolable, and these from harm.*
844 *So spoke the Cherub, and his grave rebuke,*
845 *Severe in youthful beauty, added grace*
846 *Invincible. Abashed the Devil stood,*
847 *And felt how awful* [3179](#) *goodness is, and saw*
848 *Virtue in her shape how lovely, saw and*
pined [3180](#)
849 *His loss, but chiefly to find here observed*

850 His luster visibly impaired, yet seemed
851 Undaunted. "If I must contend,"³¹⁸¹ said he,
852 "Best with the best, the sender, not the sent,
853 Or all at once. More glory will be won,
854 Or less be lost." "Thy fear," said Zephon
 bold,
855 "Will save us trial what the least can do
856 Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.
857 The fiend replied not, overcome with rage,
858 But like a proud steed reined, went haughty
 on,
859 Champing³¹⁸² his iron curb. ³¹⁸³ To strive or
 fly³¹⁸⁴
860 He held it vain; awe³¹⁸⁵ from above had
 quelled³¹⁸⁶
861 His heart, not else dismayed. Now drew they
 nigh
862 The western point, where those half-
 rounding guards
863 Just met, and closing stood in squadron
 joined,
864 Awaiting next command. To whom their
 chief,
865 Gabriel, from the front³¹⁸⁷ thus called aloud:
866 "O friends! I hear the tread of nimble³¹⁸⁸
 feet
867 Hasting this way, and now by glimpse
 discern
868 Ithuriel and Zephon through the shade,
869 And with them comes a third of regal ³¹⁸⁹
 port,³¹⁹⁰
870 But faded splendor wan,³¹⁹¹ who by his gait
871 And fierce demeanor seems the Prince of
 Hell,

872 Not likely to part [3192](#) hence without contest.
873 Stand firm, for in his look defiance
lours.”[3193](#)
874 He scarce had ended, when those two
approached
875 And brief related whom they brought, where
found,
876 How busied, in what form and posture
couched.[3194](#)
877 To whom with stern regard[3195](#) thus
Gabriel spoke:
878 “Why hast thou, Satan, broke the bounds
prescribed
879 To thy transgressions, and disturbed the
charge[3196](#)
880 Of others, who approve [3197](#) not to transgress
881 By thy example, but have power and right
882 To question thy bold entrance on this place,
883 Employed, it seems, to violate sleep, and
those
884 Whose dwelling God hath planted here in
bliss!
885 To whom thus Satan, with contemptuous
brow:
886 “Gabriel, thou had’st in Heav’n th’
esteem[3198](#) of wise,
887 And such I held thee. But this question asked
888 Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his
pain?
889 Who would not, finding way, break loose
from Hell,
890 Though thither doomed?[3199](#) Thou would’st
thyself, no doubt,
891 And boldly venture to whatever place
892 Farthest from pain, where thou might’st hope

to change³²⁰⁰
893 Torment with ease, and soonest
recompense³²⁰¹
894 Dole³²⁰² with delight, which in this place I
sought.
895 To thee no reason, who know'st only good,
896 But evil hast not tried. And wilt object
897 His will who bound us? Let him surer³²⁰³
bar
898 His iron gates, if he intends our stay
899 In that dark durance. ³²⁰⁴ Thus much what
was asked.
900 The rest is true, they found me where they
say,
901 But that implies not violence or harm.
902 Thus he in scorn. The warlike Angel,
moved, ³²⁰⁵
903 Disdainfully half smiling, thus replied:
904 "O loss of one in Heav'n to judge of
wise, ³²⁰⁶
905 Since Satan fell, whom folly overthrew,
906 And now returns him from his prison
'scaped,
907 Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise
908 Or not, who ask what boldness brought him
hither
909 Unlicensed ³²⁰⁷ from his bounds³²⁰⁸ in Hell
prescribed.
910 So wise he judges it to fly³²⁰⁹ from pain,
911 However, ³²¹⁰ and to 'scape his punishment!
912 So judge thou still, presumptuous! till the
wrath,
913 Which thou incurr'st by flying, meet ³²¹¹ thy
flight

914 Sevenfold, and scourge [3212](#) that wisdom
back to Hell,
915 Which taught thee yet no better, than no pain
916 Can equal anger infinite provoked.
917 But wherefore thou alone? Wherefore with
thee
918 Came not all Hell broke loose? Is pain to
them
919 Less pain, less to be fled, or thou than they
920 Less hardy [3213](#) to endure? Courageous
chief,
921 The first in flight from pain! Had'st thou
alleged [3214](#)
922 To thy deserted host this cause of flight,
923 Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.
924 To which the fiend thus answered, frowning
stern:
925 “Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain,
926 Insulting Angel! Well thou know'st I stood
927 Thy fiercest, when in battle to thy aid
928 The blasting vollied thunder made all speed
[3215](#)
929 And seconded [3216](#) thy else [3217](#) not dreaded
spear.
930 But still thy words at random, [3218](#) as before,
931 Argue thy inexperience what [3219](#)
behooves [3220](#)
932 From hard assays [3221](#) and ill successes [3222](#)
past
933 A faithful leader, not to hazard all
934 Through ways [3223](#) of danger by himself
untried.
935 I, therefore, I alone first undertook
936 To wing [3224](#) the desolate abyss, and spy

937 *This new created world, whereof in Hell*
938 *Fame³²²⁵ is not silent, here in hope to find*
939 *Better abode, and my afflicted Powers*
940 *To settle here on earth, or in mid air,*
941 *Though³²²⁶ for possession put ³²²⁷ to try*
 once more
942 *What thou and thy gay legions dare against,*
943 *Whose easier business were to serve their*
 Lord
944 *High up in Heav'n, with songs to hymn His*
 throne,
945 *And practised distances to cringe, not fight.*
946 *To whom the warrior Angel soon³²²⁸ replied:*
947 *“To say and straight unsay, pretending first*
948 *Wise to fly ³²²⁹ pain, professing³²³⁰ next the*
 spy,
949 *Argues³²³¹ no leader but a liar traced, ³²³²*
950 *Satan—and couldst thou faithful add? O*
 name,
951 *O sacred name of faithfulness profaned!*
952 *Faithful to whom? To thy rebellious crew?*
953 *Army of fiends, fit body to fit head!*
954 *Was this your discipline and faith engaged,*
955 *Your military obedience, to dissolve*
956 *Allegiance to th' acknowledged Power*
 supreme?
957 *And thou, sly hypocrite, who now would'st*
 seem
958 *Patron of liberty, who more than thou*
959 *Once fawned, and cringed, and servilely ³²³³*
 adored
960 *Heav'n's awful ³²³⁴ Monarch? Wherefore,*
 ³²³⁵ but in hope
961 *To dispossess Him, and thyself to reign?*

962 But mark what I agreed³²³⁶ thee now.
Avaunt!³²³⁷

963 Fly thither whence thou fled'st! If from this
hour

964 Within these hallowed limits³²³⁸ thou appear,
965 Back to the infernal pit I drag thee chained,
966 And seal ³²³⁹ thee so as henceforth not to
scorn

967 The facile³²⁴⁰ gates of Hell too slightly
barred.

968 So threatened he, but Satan to no threats
969 Gave heed, but waxing³²⁴¹ more in rage³²⁴²
replied:

970 "Then when I am thy captive, talk of
chains,

971 Proud liminary³²⁴³ Cherub! But ere then
972 Far heavier load ³²⁴⁴ thyself expect to feel
973 From my prevailing³²⁴⁵ arm, though
Heaven's King

974 Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy
compeers,³²⁴⁶

975 Used to the yoke, draw'st His triumphant
wheels

976 In progress through the road of Heav'n star-
pav

977 While thus he spoke, the angelic squadron
bright

978 Turned fiery red, sharp'ning in moonèd
horns³²⁴⁷

979 Their phalanx,³²⁴⁸ and began to hem him
round

980 With ported ³²⁴⁹ spears, as thick as when a
field

981 Of Ceres,³²⁵⁰ ripe for harvest, waving³²⁵¹

bends
982 Her bearded grove of ears which way the
wind
983 Sways³²⁵² them. The careful ploughman
doubting stands,
984 Lest on the threshing floor his hopeful
sheaves³²⁵³
985 Prove chaff. On th' other side, Satan,
alarmed,³²⁵⁴
986 Collecting all his might, dilated ³²⁵⁵ stood,
987 Like Teneriffe ³²⁵⁶ or Atlas,³²⁵⁷
unremoved.³²⁵⁸
988 His stature reached the sky, and on his crest
989 Sat horror plumed,³²⁵⁹ nor wanted³²⁶⁰ in his
grasp
990 What seemed both spear and shield. Now
dreadful deeds
991 Might have ensued, nor only Paradise
992 In³²⁶¹ this commotion, but the starry cope
³²⁶²
993 Of Heav'n, perhaps, or all the elements
994 At least had gone to wrack,³²⁶³ disturbed
and torn
995 With violence of this conflict, had not
soon³²⁶⁴
996 Th' Eternal, to prevent such horrid fray,
997 Hung forth in Heav'n His golden scales,³²⁶⁵
yet ³²⁶⁶ seen
998 Betwixt Astrea³²⁶⁷ and the Scorpion sign,
999 Wherein all things created first He weighed,
1000 The pendulous round earth with balanced air
1001 In counterpoise, now ponders ³²⁶⁸ all events,
1002 Battles and realms. In these ³²⁶⁹ he put two
weights,

1003 The sequel³²⁷⁰ each of parting ³²⁷¹ and of
fight.
1004 The latter quick up flew, and kicked the
beam,³²⁷²
1005 Which Gabriel spying, thus bespoke³²⁷³ the
fiend:
1006 “Satan, I know thy strength, and thou
know’st mine
1007 Neither our own, but giv’n. What folly then
1008 To boast what arms can do? since thine no
more
1009 Than Heav’n permits, nor mine, though
doubled now
1010 To trample thee as mire. ³²⁷⁴ For proof look
up,
1011 And read thy lot ³²⁷⁵ in yon celestial sign,
1012 Where thou art weighed, and shown how
light, how weak,
1013 If thou resist.” The fiend looked up, and
knew³²⁷⁶
1014 His mounted scale aloft: nor more, but fled
1015 Murmuring, ³²⁷⁷ and with him fled the
shades of

The End of the Fourth Book

BOOK V

THE ARGUMENT

Morning approached, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her. They come forth to their day labors; their morning hymn at the door of their bower.

God to render man inexcusable³²⁷⁸ sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand; who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise, his appearance described, his coming discerned by Adam afar off, sitting at the door of his bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise got together by Eve; their discourse at table.

Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state and of his enemy; relates at Adam's request who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in Heaven, and the occasion thereof; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the North, and there incited them to rebel with him, persuading all but only Abdiel, a Seraph, who in argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

- 1 *Now morn, her rosy steps in the eastern clime*³²⁷⁹
- 2 *Advancing, sowed the earth with orient*³²⁸⁰ *pearl,*
- 3 *When Adam waked, so custom'd,*³²⁸¹ *for his sleep*
- 4 *Was airy-light, from pure digestion bred,*³²⁸²
- 5 *And temperate*³²⁸³ *vapors*³²⁸⁴ *bland,*³²⁸⁵ *which th' only sound*
- 6 *Of leaves and fuming*³²⁸⁶ *rills, Aurora's*³²⁸⁷ *fan,*
- 7 *Lightly dispersed,*³²⁸⁸ *and the shrill matin*³²⁸⁹ *song*
- 8 *Of birds on every bough, so much the more*
- 9 *His wonder was to find unwakened Eve*

10 *With tresses discomposed, and glowing cheek,*
11 *As through unquiet rest. He, on his side*
12 *Leaning half raised, with looks of cordial [3290](#) love*
13 *Hung over her enamored, and beheld*
14 *Beauty which, whether waking or asleep,*
15 *Shot forth peculiar [3291](#) graces. Then with voice*
16 *Mild, as when Zephyrus [3292](#) on Flora [3293](#) breathes,*
17 *Her hand soft touching, whispered thus: “Awake,*
18 *My fairest, my espoused, my latest found,*
19 *Heav’n’s last best gift, my ever new delight!*
20 *Awake. The morning shines, and the fresh field*
21 *Calls us. We lose the prime, [3294](#) to mark [3295](#) how spring [3296](#)*
22 *Our tender plants, how blows the citron grove,*
23 *What drops the myrrh, [3297](#) and what the balmy reed, [3298](#)*
24 *How Nature paints her colors, how the bee*
25 *Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet.*
26 *Such whispering waked her, but with startled eye*
27 *On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spoke:*
28 *“O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,*
29 *My glory, my perfection! Glad I see*
30 *Thy face, and morn returned, for I this night*
31 *(Such night till this I never passed) have dreamed*
32 *(If dreamed) not, as I oft am wont, [3299](#) of thee,*
33 *Works of day past, or morrow’s next design, [3300](#)*
34 *But of offence and trouble, which my mind*
35 *Knew never till this irksome [3301](#) night. Methought*
36 *Close at mine ear one called me forth to walk,*
37 *With gentle voice; I thought it thine. It said,*
38 *‘Why sleep’st thou, Eve? Now is the pleasant time,*
39 *The cool, the silent, save [3302](#) where silence yields*
40 *To the night-warbling bird, that now awake*

41 Tunes sweetest his love-labored song. Now reigns
42 Full-orbed the moon, and with more pleasing light
43 Shadowy sets off the face of things. In vain,
44 If none regard.³³⁰³ Heav'n wakes with all his eyes,
45 Whom to behold but thee, Nature's desire?
46 In whose sight all things joy, ³³⁰⁴ with ravishment ³³⁰⁵
47 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.
48 I rose as at thy call, but found thee not;
49 To find thee I directed then my walk,
50 And on, methought, alone I passed through ways
51 That brought me on a sudden to the tree
52 Of interdicted³³⁰⁶ knowledge. Fair it seemed,
53 Much fairer to my fancy than by day,
54 And as I wond'ring looked, beside it stood
55 One shaped and winged like one of those from Heav'n
56 By us oft seen. His dewy locks distilled³³⁰⁷
57 Ambrosia. On that tree he also gazed,
58 And 'O fair plant,' said he, 'with fruit surcharged,³³⁰⁸
59 Deigns none to ease thy load, and taste thy sweet,
60 Nor god, nor man? Is knowledge so despised?
61 Or envy, or what reserve³³⁰⁹ forbids to taste?
62 Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold
63 Longer thy offered good: why else set ³³¹⁰ here?
64 This said, he paused not, but with venturous³³¹¹ arm
65 He plucked, he tasted; me damp³³¹² horror chilled
66 At such bold words vouched ³³¹³ with a deed so bold,
67 But he thus, overjoyed: 'O fruit divine,
68 Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus cropped,³³¹⁴
69 Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit
70 For gods, yet able to make gods of men.
71 And why not gods of men? Since good, the more

72 *Communicated, more abundant grows,*
73 *The author³³¹⁵ not impaired, but honored more?*
74 *Here, happy creature, fair angelic Eve!*
75 *Partake thou also. Happy though thou art,*
76 *Happier thou may'st be, worthier canst not be.*
77 *Taste this, and be henceforth among the gods*
78 *Thyself a goddess, not to earth confined,*
79 *But sometimes in the air, as we, sometimes*
80 *Ascend to Heav'n, by merit thine, and see*
81 *What life the gods live there, and such live thou!*
82 *“So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,*
83 *Ev'n to my mouth of that same fruit held part³³¹⁶*
84 *Which he had plucked. The pleasant savory smell*
85 *So quickened appetite that I, methought,*
86 *Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds*
87 *With him I flew, and underneath beheld*
88 *The earth outstretched immense, a prospect wide*
89 *And various, wond'ring at my flight and change*
90 *To this high exaltation. Suddenly*
91 *My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,*
92 *And fell asleep. But O, how glad I waked*
93 *To find this but a dream!” Thus Eve her night*
94 *Related, and thus Adam answered, sad:³³¹⁷*
95 *“Best image of myself, and dearer half,*
96 *The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep*
97 *Affects me equally, nor can I like*
98 *This uncouth³³¹⁸ dream, of evil sprung, I fear.*
99 *Yet evil whence? In thee can harbor none,*
100 *Created pure. But know that in the soul*
101 *Are many lesser faculties, that serve*
102 *Reason as chief; among these Fancy³³¹⁹ next ³³²⁰*

103 *Her office [3321](#) holds. Of all external things*
104 *Which the five watchful[3322](#) senses represent, [3323](#)*
105 *She forms imaginations, airy shapes,*
106 *Which reason, joining or disjoining, frames*
107 *All what we affirm or what deny, and call [3324](#)*
108 *Our knowledge or opinion, then retires*
109 *Into her private cell, when Nature rests.*
110 *Oft, in her absence, mimic Fancy wakes*
111 *To imitate her but, misjoining shapes,*
112 *Wild work produces oft, and most in dreams,*
113 *Ill matching words and deeds long past or late. [3325](#)*
114 *Some such resemblances, methinks, I find*
115 *Of our last evening's talk, in this thy dream,*
116 *But with addition strange. Yet be not sad. [3326](#)*
117 *Evil into the mind of god or man*
118 *May come and go, so unapproved, and leave*
119 *No spot or blame behind. Which gives me hope*
120 *That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream,*
121 *Waking thou never will consent to do.*
122 *Be not disheartened, then, nor cloud those looks*
123 *That wont to be more cheerful and serene*
124 *Than when fair morning first smiles on the world.*
125 *And let us to our fresh employments rise*
126 *Among the groves, the fountains, and the flowers*
127 *That open now their choicest bosomed[3327](#) smells,*
128 *Reserved from night, and kept for thee in store.*
129 *So cheered he his fair spouse, and she was cheered.*
130 *But silently a gentle tear let fall*
131 *From either eye, and wiped them with her hair.*
132 *Two other precious drops that ready stood,*
133 *Each in their crystal sluice, [3328](#) he ere they fell*

134 Kissed, as the gracious signs of sweet remorse
135 And pious awe, that feared to have offended.
136 So all was cleared, and to the field they haste.
137 But first, from under shady arborous roof
138 Soon as they forth were come to open sight
139 Of day-spring, and the sun, who scarce up-risen,
140 With wheels yet hov'ring o'er the ocean-brim,
141 Shot parallel to the earth his dewy ray,
142 Discovering [3329](#) in wide landscape all the east
143 Of Paradise and Eden's happy plains,
144 Lowly they bowed adoring, and began
145 Their orisons, [3330](#) each morning duly paid
146 In various [3331](#) style, for neither various style
147 Nor holy rapture wanted [3332](#) they to praise
148 Their Maker, in fit [3333](#) strains [3334](#) pronounced, or sung
149 Unmeditated, such prompt [3335](#) eloquence
150 Flowed from their lips, in prose or numerous [3336](#) verse,
151 More tuneable [3337](#) than needed lute or harp
152 To add more sweetness. And they thus began:
153 "These are Thy glorious works, Parent of good,
154 Almighty! Thine this universal frame, [3338](#)
155 Thus wondrous fair. Thyself how wondrous then!
156 Unspeakable, who sit'st above these. Heav'ns
157 To us invisible, or dimly seen
158 In these Thy lowest works. Yet these declare
159 Thy goodness beyond thought, and power divine.
160 Speak ye who best can tell, ye sons of light,
161 Angels, for ye behold Him, and with songs
162 And choral symphonies, [3339](#) day without night,
163 Circle His throne rejoicing, ye in Heav'n!
164 On earth join all ye creatures to extol

165 *Him first, Him last, Him midst, and without end!*
166 *Fairest of stars, [3340](#) last in the train of night*
167 *(If better thou belong not to the dawn)*
168 *Sure pledge [3341](#) of day that crown'st the smiling morn*
169 *With thy bright circlet, [3342](#) praise Him in thy sphere,*
170 *While day arises, that sweet hour of prime. [3343](#)*
171 *Thou sun, of this great world both eye and soul,*
172 *Acknowledge Him thy greater, sound His praise*
173 *In thse, both when thou climb'st*
174 *And when high noon hast gained, [3344](#) and when thou fall'st.*
175 *Moon, that now meet'st the orient [3345](#) sun, now fly'st [3346](#)*
176 *With the fixed stars, fixed in their orb that flies, [3347](#)*
177 *And ye five other wand'ring [3348](#) fires [3349](#) that move*
178 *In mystic dance not without song, resound*
179 *His praise, who out of darkness called up light.*
180 *Air, and ye Elements, the eldest birth*
181 *Of Nature's womb, that in quaternion [3350](#) run*
182 *Perpetual circle, multiform, and mix*
183 *And nourish all things: let your ceaseless change*
184 *Vary, [3351](#) to our great Maker still new praise.*
185 *Ye mists and exhalations that now rise*
186 *From hill or steaming lake, dusky or gray,*
187 *Till the sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,*
188 *In honor to the world's great Author rise,*
189 *Whether to deck with clouds the uncolored [3352](#) sky,*
190 *Or wet the thirsty earth with falling showers,*
191 *Rising or falling still advance His praise.*
192 *His praise, ye winds, that from four quarters blow,*
193 *Breathe soft or loud. And wave your tops, ye pines,*
194 *With every plant, in sign of worship wave!*
195 *Fountains, [3353](#) and ye that warble as ye flow,*

196 *Melodious murmurs, warbling tune³³⁵⁴ His praise.*
197 *Join voices, all ye living souls! Ye birds,*
198 *That singing up to Heaven-gate ascend,*
199 *Bear on your wings, and in your notes, His praise.*
200 *Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk*
201 *The earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep,*
202 *Witness³³⁵⁵ if I be silent, morn or ev'n,*
203 *To hill, or valley, fountain, or fresh shade,*
204 *Made vocal³³⁵⁶ by my song, and taught His praise.*
205 *Hail, universal Lord, be bounteous still³³⁵⁷*
206 *To give us only good. And if the night*
207 *Have gathered aught of evil, or concealed,*
208 *Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark!*
209 *So prayed they innocent, and to their thoughts*
210 *Firm peace recovered soon, and wanted³³⁵⁸ calm.*
211 *On to their morning's rural ³³⁵⁹ work they haste,*
212 *Among sweet dews and flow'rs, where any row*
213 *Of fruit-trees over-woody reached too far*
214 *Their pampered boughs,³³⁶⁰ and needed hands to check*
215 *Fruitless ³³⁶¹ embraces.³³⁶² Or they led the vine*
216 *To wed her elm; she, spoused, about him twines*
217 *Her marriageable arms, and with him brings*
218 *Her dow'r, th' adopted ³³⁶³ clusters,³³⁶⁴ to adorn*
219 *His barren³³⁶⁵ leaves. Them thus employed beheld*
220 *With pity Heav'n's high King, ³³⁶⁶ and to him called*
221 *Raphael, the sociable Spirit that deigned*
222 *To travel with Tobias, and secured*
223 *His marriage with the seven-times-wedded maid.³³⁶⁷*
224 *"Raphael," said He, "thou hear'st what stir on earth*
225 *Satan, from Hell 'scaped through the darksome gulf,*
226 *Hath raised in Paradise, and how disturbed*

227 *This night the human pair, how he designs*³³⁶⁸
228 *In them at once to ruin all mankind.*
229 *Go, therefore: half this day as friend with friend*
230 *Converse with Adam, in what bow'r or shade*
231 *Thou find'st him from the heat of noon retired,*
232 *To respite*³³⁶⁹ *his day-labor with repast*³³⁷⁰
233 *Or with repose, and such discourse bring on*
234 *As may advise him of his happy state,*
235 *Happiness in his power left free to will,*
236 *Left to his own free will, his will though free,*
237 *Yet mutable.* ³³⁷¹ *Whence warn him to beware*
238 *He swerve not, too secure.* ³³⁷² *Tell him withal* ³³⁷³
239 *His danger, and from whom—what enemy,*
240 *Late fall'n himself from Heav'n, is plotting now*
241 *The fall of others from like state of bliss.*
242 *By violence? No, for that shall be withstood,*³³⁷⁴
243 *But by deceit and lies. This let him know*
244 *Lest, wilfully transgressing, he pretend* ³³⁷⁵
245 *Surprisal, unadmonished,*³³⁷⁶ *unforewarned.*
246 *So spoke the Eternal Father, and fulfilled*³³⁷⁷
247 *All justice. Nor delayed the wingèd Saint*
248 *After his charge*³³⁷⁸ *received, but from among*
249 *Thousand celestial Ardors,*³³⁷⁹ *where he stood*
250 *Veiled* ³³⁸⁰ *with his gorgeous*³³⁸¹ *wings, up springing light,*
251 *Flew through the midst of Heav'n. Th' angelic choirs,*
252 *On each hand parting, to his speed gave way*
253 *Through all th' empyreal road, till at the gate*
254 *Of Heav'n arrived, the gate self-opened wide*
255 *On golden hinges turning, as by work*
256 *Divine the sov'reign Architect had framed.*³³⁸²
257 *From hence no cloud, or to obstruct his sight,*

258 *Star interposed,*³³⁸³ *however small, he sees,*
259 *Not unconform*³³⁸⁴ *to other shining globes,*
260 *Earth, and the garden of God, with cedars crowned*
261 *Above all hills. As when by night the glass*
262 *Of Galileo, less assured,*³³⁸⁵ *observes*
263 *Imagined lands and regions in the moon,*
264 *Or pilot from amidst the Cyclades*³³⁸⁶
265 *Delos*³³⁸⁷ *or Samos*³³⁸⁸ *first appearing, kens*³³⁸⁹
266 *A cloudy spot. Down thither prone*³³⁹⁰ *in flight*
267 *He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky*
268 *Sails between worlds and worlds, with steady wing*
269 *Now on the polar winds, then with quick fan*³³⁹¹
270 *Winnows*³³⁹² *the buxom*³³⁹³ *air, till within soar*³³⁹⁴
271 *Of tow'ring eagles, to all the fowls he seems*
272 *A phoenix,*³³⁹⁵ *gazed*³³⁹⁶ *by all as that sole*³³⁹⁷ *bird,*
273 *When, to enshrine his*³³⁹⁸ *relics in the sun's*
274 *Bright temple, to Egyptian Thebes he flies.*
275 *At once on th' eastern cliff of Paradise*
276 *He*³³⁹⁹ *lights, and to his proper shape returns,*
277 *A Seraph winged. Six wings he wore, to shade*
278 *His lineaments*³⁴⁰⁰ *divine. The pair that clad*
279 *Each shoulder broad, came mantling*³⁴⁰¹ *o'er his breast*
280 *With regal ornament; the middle pair*
281 *Girt like a starry zone*³⁴⁰² *his waist, and round*
282 *Skirted*³⁴⁰³ *his loins and thighs with downy*³⁴⁰⁴ *gold*
283 *And colors dipped*³⁴⁰⁵ *in Heav'n; the third his feet*
284 *Shadowed from either heel with feathered mail,*
285 *Sky-tinctured*³⁴⁰⁶ *grain.*³⁴⁰⁷ *Like Maia's son*³⁴⁰⁸ *he stood*
286 *And shook his plumes,*³⁴⁰⁹ *that*³⁴¹⁰ *Heav'nly fragrance filled*
287 *The circuit wide.*³⁴¹¹ *Straight knew him all the bands*

288 *Of Angels under³⁴¹² watch, and to his state,*
289 *And to his message high, in honor rise,*
290 *For on some message high they guessed him bound.*
291 *Their glittering tents he passed, and now is come*
292 *Into the blissful ³⁴¹³ field, through groves of myrrh,*
293 *And flowering odors, cassia, nard,³⁴¹⁴ and balm—*
294 *A wilderness of sweets. For Nature here*
295 *Wantoned ³⁴¹⁵ as in her prime, and played at will*
296 *Her virgin fancies, pouring forth more sweet,*
297 *Wild above³⁴¹⁶ rule or art, enormous bliss.*
298 *Him through the spicy³⁴¹⁷ forest onward come*
299 *Adam discerned, as in the door he sat*
300 *Of his cool bow'r, while now the mounted sun*
301 *Shot down direct his fervid ³⁴¹⁸ rays to warm*
302 *Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than Adam needs.*
303 *And Eve within, due³⁴¹⁹ at her hour prepared*
304 *For dinner savory fruits, of taste to please*
305 *True appetite, and not disrelish³⁴²⁰ thirst*
306 *Of nectarous draughts between, from milky stream,*
307 *Berry or grape. To whom thus Adam called:*
308 *“Haste hither, Eve, and worth thy sight behold*
309 *Eastward among those trees, what glorious shape*
310 *Comes this way moving, seems another morn*
311 *Ris'n on mid-noon! Some great behest³⁴²¹ from Heav'n*
312 *To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe³⁴²²*
313 *This day to be our guest. But go with speed,*
314 *And what thy stores contain bring forth, and pour*
315 *Abundance, fit to honor and receive*
316 *Our Heav'nly stranger. Well we may afford*
317 *Our givers their own gifts, and large bestow³⁴²³*
318 *From large³⁴²⁴ bestowed, where Nature multiplies*

319 Her fertile growth, and by disburthening³⁴²⁵ grows
320 More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare.”³⁴²⁶
321 To whom thus Eve:
“Adam, earth’s hallowed ³⁴²⁷
mold,³⁴²⁸
322 Of God inspired, small store³⁴²⁹ will serve, ³⁴³⁰ where store,
323 All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk,
324 Save what by frugal³⁴³¹ storing³⁴³² firmness gains
325 To nourish, and superfluous³⁴³³ moist³⁴³⁴ consumes.
326 But I will haste, and from each bough and brake, ³⁴³⁵
327 Each plant and juiciest gourd, will pluck such choice
328 To entertain our Angel-guest, as he
329 Beholding shall confess, that here on earth
330 God hath dispensed His bounties as in Heav’n.
331 So saying, with dispatchful ³⁴³⁶ looks in haste
332 She turns, on hospitable³⁴³⁷ thoughts intent
333 What choice to choose for delicacy best,
334 What order, so contrived as not to mix
335 Tastes not well joined, inelegant, but bring
336 Taste after taste upheld ³⁴³⁸ with kindest ³⁴³⁹ change.
337 Bestirs³⁴⁴⁰ her then, and from each tender stalk
338 Whatever earth, all-bearing mother, yields
339 In India east or west, or middle shore³⁴⁴¹
340 In Pontus³⁴⁴² or the Punic³⁴⁴³ coast, or where
341 Alcinous³⁴⁴⁴ reigned, fruit of all kinds, in coat
342 Rough, or smooth rind, or bearded husk, or shell,
343 She gathers tribute³⁴⁴⁵ large, and on the board ³⁴⁴⁶
344 Heaps with unsparing hand. For drink the grape
345 She crushes, inoffensive must,³⁴⁴⁷ and mead
346 From many a berry, and from sweet kernels pressed
347

She tempers³⁴⁴⁸ dulcet³⁴⁴⁹ creams.³⁴⁵⁰ Nor these to hold
348 Wants³⁴⁵¹ her fit³⁴⁵² vessels pure. Then strews the ground
349 With rose and odors from the shrub unfumed.³⁴⁵³
350 Meanwhile our primitive³⁴⁵⁴ great sire, to meet
351 His godlike guest, walks forth, without more train
352 Accompanied than with his own complete
353 Perfections. In himself was all his state,
354 More solemn³⁴⁵⁵ than the tedious pomp that waits
355 On princes, when their rich retinue long
356 Of horses led, and grooms besmeared with gold,
357 Dazzles the crowd, and sets them all agape.
358 Nearer his presence Adam, though not awed,
359 Yet with submiss³⁴⁵⁶ approach and reverence meek,
360 As to a superior nature bowing low,
361 Thus said:

“Native of Heav’n, for other pla
362 None can than Heav’n such glorious shape contain,
363 Since by descending from the thrones above
364 Those happy places thou hast deigned a while
365 To want,³⁴⁵⁷ and honor these, vouchsafe³⁴⁵⁸ with us
366 Two only, who yet by sov’ reign gift possess
367 This spacious ground, in yonder shady bow’r
368 To rest, and what the garden choicest bears
369 To sit and taste, till this meridian³⁴⁵⁹ heat
370 Be over, and the sun more cool decline.”³⁴⁶⁰

Whom thus the angelic Virtue³⁴⁶¹ answered mild:

372 “Adam, I therefore came, nor art thou such
373 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,
374 As may not oft invite, though Spirits of Heav’n,
375 To visit thee. Lead on, then, where thy bow’r
376 O’ershades, for these mid-hours, till evening rise,

377 I have at will.”³⁴⁶² So to the sylvan³⁴⁶³ lodge
378 They came, that like Pomona’s³⁴⁶⁴ arbor³⁴⁶⁵ smiled,
379 With flow’rets decked, and fragrant smells. But Eve,
380 Undecked save with herself, more lovely fair
381 Than wood-nymph, or the fairest goddess feigned ³⁴⁶⁶
382 Of three that in mount Ida naked strove,³⁴⁶⁷
383 Stood to entertain her guest from Heav’n. No veil³⁴⁶⁸
384 She needed, virtue-proof: no thought infirm³⁴⁶⁹
385 Altered her cheek. On whom the Angel “Hail”
386 Bestowed, the holy salutation used
387 Long after to blest Mary, second Eve:
388 “Hail, mother of mankind, whose fruitful womb
389 Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons,
390 Than with these various fruits the trees of God
391 Have heaped this table!

—Raised of grassy tur

392 Their table was, and mossy seats had round,
393 And on her ample square³⁴⁷⁰ from side to side
394 All autumn piled, though spring and autumn here
395 Danced hand in hand. A while discourse they hold—
396 No fear lest dinner cool—when thus began
397 Our author:³⁴⁷¹
“Heav’nly stranger, please to taste
398 These bounties,³⁴⁷² which our Nourisher, from whom
399 All perfect good, unmeasured out, descends,
400 To us for food and for delight hath caused
401 The earth to yield—unsavory food perhaps
402 To spiritual natures. Only this I know,
403 That one celestial Father gives to all.
404 To whom the Angel:
“Therefore what He gives

405 *(Whose praise be ever sung) to man in part [3473](#)*
406 *Spiritual, may of purest Spirits be found*
407 *No ungrateful[3474](#) food. And food alike those pure*
408 *Intelligential substances require,*
409 *As doth your rational, [3475](#) and both [3476](#) contain*
410 *Within them every lower faculty*
411 *Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,*
412 *Tasting concoct, [3477](#) digest, assimilate,*
413 *And corporeal to incorporeal turn.*
414 *For know, whatever was created, needs*
415 *To be sustained and fed. Of elements*
416 *The grosser feeds the purer, earth the sea,*
417 *Earth and the sea feed air, the air those fires*
418 *Ethereal, and as lowest first the moon,*
419 *Whence in her visage round [3478](#) those spots, unpurged [3479](#)*
420 *Vapors not yet into her substance turned.*
421 *Nor doth the moon no nourishment exhale*
422 *From her moist continent [3480](#) to higher orbs.*
423 *The sun, that light imparts to all, receives*
424 *From all [3481](#) his alimantal [3482](#) recompence*
425 *In humid exhalations, and at ev'n [3483](#)*
426 *[3484](#) with the ocean. Though in Heav'n the trees*
427 *Of life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines*
428 *Yield nectar; though from off the boughs each morn*
429 *We brush mellifluous [3485](#) dews, and find the ground*
430 *Covered with pearly grain; yet God hath here [3486](#)*
431 *Varied His bounty so with new delights*
432 *As may compare with Heaven, and to taste*
433 *Think not I shall be nice. " [3487](#) So down they sat,*
434 *And to their viands [3488](#) fell, nor seemingly [3489](#)*
435 *The Angel, nor in mist, [3490](#) the common gloss [3491](#)*

436 *Of theologians, but with keen dispatch*
437 *Of real [3492](#) hunger, and concoctive³⁴⁹³ heat*
438 *To transubstantiate. [3494](#) What redounds,³⁴⁹⁵ transpires³⁴⁹⁶*
439 *Through Spirits with ease—nor wonder, if by fire*
440 *Of sooty coal the empiric³⁴⁹⁷ alchemist*
441 *Can turn, or holds it possible to turn,*
442 *Metals of drossiest ore to perfect gold,*
443 *As from³⁴⁹⁸ the mine. Meanwhile at table Eve*
444 *Ministered ³⁴⁹⁹naked, and their flowing cups*
445 *With pleasant liquors crowned.³⁵⁰⁰ O innocence*
446 *Deserving Paradise! If ever, then,*
447 *Then had the sons of God excuse to have been*
448 *Enamored at that sight. But in those hearts*
449 *Love unlibidinous³⁵⁰¹ reigned, nor jealousy*
450 *Was understood, the injured lover's hell.*
451

Thus when with meats³⁵⁰² and
drinks they had sufficed,

452

Not burdened Nature, ³⁵⁰³ sudden
mind arose

453

In Adam, not to let th' occasion pass

454

Giv'n him by this great
conference³⁵⁰⁴ to know

455

Of things above his world, and of
their being

456

Who dwell in Heav'n, whose
excellence he saw

457

Transcend his own so far, whose
radiant forms,

458

Divine effulgence, ³⁵⁰⁵ whose high
power, so far

459

Exceeded human. And his wary ³⁵⁰⁶
speech

460

Thus to the empyreal minister he
framed:³⁵⁰⁷

461

“Inhabitant with God, now know I
well

462

Thy favor, in this honor done to man,

463

Under whose lowly roof thou hast
vouchsafed ³⁵⁰⁸

464

To enter, and these earthly fruits to
taste,

465

Food not of Angels, yet accepted so

466

As that more willingly thou could'st
not seem

467

At Heav'n's high feasts t' have fed.
Yet what compare?

468

To whom the wingèd Hierarch³⁵⁰⁹
replied:

469

“O Adam, one Almighty is, from
whom

470 All things proceed, and up to Him
return,
471 If not depraved [3510](#) from good,
created all
472 Such to perfection, one first [3511](#)
matter all,
473 Endued [3512](#) with various forms,
various degrees
474 Of substance and, in things that live,
of life,
475 But more refined, more spiritous,
and pure,
476 As nearer to Him placed, or nearer
tending
477 Each in their several active spheres
assigned,
478 Till body up to spirit work, in
bounds [3513](#)
479 Proportioned to each kind. So from
the root
480 Springs lighter the green stalk, from
thence the leaves
481 More airy, last the bright
consummate [3514](#) flower
482 Spirits odorous breathes. Flow'rs
and their fruit,
483 Man's nourishment, by gradual scale
sublimed, [3515](#)
484 To vital spirits aspire, to animal,
485 To intellectual, give both life and
sense,
486 Fancy and understanding, whence
the soul
487 Reason receives, and reason is her
being,

488 Discursive, or intuitive. [3516](#)
Discourse
489 Is ofttest yours, the latter most is
ours,
490 Differing but in degree, of kind the
same.
491 Wonder not then, what God for you
saw good
492 If I refuse not, but convert, as you,
493 To proper substance. Time may come
when men
494 With Angels may participate, and
find
495 No inconvenient [3517](#) diet, nor too
light fare.
496 And from these corporal nutriments
perhaps
497 Your bodies may at last turn all to
spirit,
498 Improved by tract[3518](#) of time and,
winged, ascend
499 Ethereal, as we. Or may, at choice,
500 Here or in Heav'nly Paradises
dwell,
501 If ye be found obedient, and retain
502 Unalterably firm His love entire,
503 Whose [3519](#) progeny [3520](#) you are.
Meanwhile enjoy
504 Your fill what [3521](#) happiness this
happy state
505 Can comprehend, incapable of more.
506 To whom the patriarch of mankind
replied:
507 "O favorable Spirit, propitious[3522](#)
guest,

508 Well hast thou taught the way that
 might direct
509 Our knowledge, and the scale of
 Nature set
510 From center to circumference,
 whereon,
511 In contemplation of created things,
512 By steps we may ascend to God. But
 say,
513 What meant that caution joined,[3523](#)
 ‘If ye be found
514 Obedient?’ Can we want [3524](#)
 obedience then
515 To Him, or possibly His love desert,
516 Who formed us from the dust and
 placed us here
517 Full to the utmost measure of what
 bliss
518 Human desires can seek or
 apprehend?
519 To whom the Angel:
 “Son of Heav’n and ear
520 Attend:[3525](#) that thou art happy, owe
 to God;
521 That thou continuest such, owe to
 thyself—
522 That is, to thy obedience: therein
 stand.[3526](#)
523 This was that caution given thee: be
 advised.[3527](#)
524 God made thee perfect,[3528](#) not
 immutable,[3529](#)
525 And good He made thee, but to
 persevere
526 He left it in thy power, ordained thy

will
527 By nature free, not overruled by fate
528 Inextricable, [3530](#) or strict necessity.
529 Our voluntary service He requires,
530 Not our necessitated. Such with Him
531 Finds no acceptance, nor can find,
for how
532 Can hearts, not free, be tried [3531](#)
whether they serve
533 Willing or no, who will but what they
must [3532](#)
534 By destiny, and can no other
choose?
535 Myself, and all th'Angelic host that
stand
536 In sight of God enthroned, our
happy state
537 Hold, as you yours, while our
obedience holds,
538 On other surety [3533](#) none. Freely we
serve,
539 Because we freely love, as in our
will
540 To love or not. In this we stand or
fall,
541 And some are fall'n, to disobedience
fall'n,
542 And so from Heav'n to deepest Hell.
O fall [3534](#)
543 From what high state of bliss, into
what woe!
544 To whom our great progenitor: [3535](#)
"Thy words
545 Attentive, and with more delighted
ear,

546 *Divine instructor, I have heard, than*
when
547 *Cherubic songs by night from*
neighboring hills
548 *Aerial music send. Nor knew I not*
549 *To be both will and deed created*
free.
550 *Yet that we never shall forget to love*
551 *Our Maker, and obey Him whose*
command,
552 *Single, [3536](#) is yet so just, my*
constant thoughts
553 *Assured me, and still assure. Though*
what thou tellest
554 *Hath passed in Heav'n, some doubt*
within me move, [3537](#)
555 *But more desire to hear, if thou*
consent,
556 *The full relation, [3538](#) which must*
needs be strange,
557 *Worthy of sacred [3539](#) silence to be*
heard.
558 *And we have yet large [3540](#) day, [3541](#)*
for scarce the sun
559 *Hath finished half his journey, and*
scarce begins
560 *His other half in the great zone [3542](#)*
of Heav'n.
561 *Thus Adam made request, and*
Raphael,
562 *After short pause assenting, thus*
began:
563 *“High matter thou enjoin’st [3543](#)*
me, O prime [3544](#) of men,
564 *Sad [3545](#) task and hard. For how*

shall I relate
565 To human sense the invisible exploits
566 Of warring Spirits? How, without
remorse, [3546](#)
567 The ruin of so many, glorious once,
568 And perfect while they stood? How
last [3547](#) unfold
569 The secrets of another world,
perhaps
570 Not lawful to reveal? Yet for thy
good
571 This is dispensed, [3548](#) and what
surmounts the reach
572 Of human sense I shall delineate [3549](#)
so,
573 By lik'ning spiritual to corporal
forms,
574 As may express them best. Though
what if earth
575 Be but a shadow [3550](#) of Heav'n, and
things therein
576 Each t' other like, more than on
earth is thought?
577 "As yet this world was not, and
Chaos wild
578 Reign'd where these Heav'ns now
roll, where earth now rests
579 Upon her center poised, when on a
day
580 (For time, though in eternity,
applied
581 To motion, measures all things
durable
582 By present, past, and future), on
such day

583 *As Heav'n's great year [3551](#) brings*
 forth, the empyreal [3552](#) host
584 *Of Angels by imperial summons*
 called,
585 *Innumerable before the Almighty's*
 throne
586 *Forthwith, from all the ends of*
 Heav'n, appeared
587 *Under their Hierarchs [3553](#) in orders*
 bright.
588 *Ten thousand thousand ensigns [3554](#)*
 high advanced,
589 *Standards [3555](#) and gonfalons [3556](#)*
 'twixt van [3557](#) and rear
590 *Stream in the air, and for distinction*
 serve [3558](#)
591 *Of hierarchies, of orders, and*
 degrees,
592 *Or in their glittering tissues [3559](#)*
 bear emblazed [3560](#)
593 *Holy memorials, [3561](#) acts of zeal and*
 love
594 *Recorded eminent. [3562](#) Thus when in*
 orbs
595 *Of circuit inexpressible they stood,*
596 *Orb within orb, the Father Infinite,*
597 *By whom in bliss embosomed [3563](#) sat*
 the Son,
598 *Amidst as [3564](#) from a flaming mount*
 whose top
599 *Brightness had made invisible, thus*
 spoke:
600 *“‘Hear, all ye Angels, progeny [3565](#)*
 of light,

601 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms,
 Virtues, Powers!
602 Hear my decree, which unrevoked
 shall stand.³⁵⁶⁶
603 This day I have begot ³⁵⁶⁷whom³⁵⁶⁸
 I declare
604 My only Son, and on this holy hill
605 Him have anointed, whom ye now
 behold
606 At my right hand. Your head I him
 appoint,
607 And by myself have sworn, to him
 shall bow
608 All knees in Heav'n, and shall
 confess³⁵⁶⁹ him Lord.
609 Under his great vice-gerent³⁵⁷⁰ reign
 abide
610 United, as one individual soul,
611 Forever happy. Him who disobeys,
612 Me disobeys, breaks union, and that
 day,
613 Cast out from God and blessèd
 vision, falls
614 Into utter darkness, deep
 engulfed,³⁵⁷¹ his place
615 Ordained without redemption,
 without end.
616 “So spoke the Omnipotent, and
 with His words
617 All seemed well pleased—all
 seemed, but were not all.
618 That day, as other solemn days, they
 spent
619 In song and dance about the sacred
 hill,

620 Mystical dance, which yonder starry
 sphere
621 Of planets, and of fixed,[3572](#) in all
 her wheels
622 Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,
623 Eccentric,[3573](#) intervolved,[3574](#) yet
 regular
624 Then most when most irregular they
 seem.
625 And in their motions harmony divine
626 So smooths[3575](#) her [3576](#) charming
 tones,[3577](#) that God's own ear
627 Listens delighted. Ev'ning now
 approached
628 (For we have also our ev'ning and
 our morn,
629 We ours for change delectable, [3578](#)
 not need)
630 Forthwith from dance to sweet
 repast they turn
631 Desirous, all in circles as they stood.
632 Tables are set, and on a sudden piled
633 With Angels' food, and rubied nectar
 flows
634 In pearl, in diamond,[3579](#) and massy
 gold,
635 Fruit of delicious vines, the
 growth[3580](#) of Heav'n.
636 On flow'rs reposed,[3581](#) and with
 fresh flow'rets crowned,
637 They eat, they drink, and in
 communion[3582](#) sweet
638 Quaff [3583](#) immortality and joy,
 secure
639

Of [3584](#) surfeit where full measure
only bounds [3585](#)
640 Excess, before the all-bounteous
King, who show'ed
641 With copious [3586](#) hand, rejoicing in
their joy.
642 Now when ambrosial [3587](#) night
with clouds exhaled
643 From that high mount of God,
whence light and shade
644 Spring both, the face of brightest
Heav'n had changed
645 To grateful [3588](#) twilight (for night
comes not there
646 In darker veil), and roseate [3589](#) dews
disposed [3590](#)
647 All but the unsleeping eyes of God to
rest.
648 Wide over all the plain, and wider
far
649 Than all this globous [3591](#) earth in
plain outspread
650 (Such are the courts of God),
th'Angelic throng,
651 Dispersed in bands and files, their
camp extend
652 By living [3592](#) streams among the
trees of life,
653 Pavilions [3593](#) numberless, and
sudden reared,
654 Celestial tabernacles [3594](#) where they
slept,
655 Fanned with cool winds, save those
who, in their course, [3595](#)
656 Melodious hymns about the

sov'reign throne
657 Alternate all night long. But not so
waked
658 Satan—so call him now, his former
name
659 Is heard no more in Heav'n. He of
[3596](#) the first,
660 If not the first Arch-Angel, great in
power,
661 In favor and pre-eminence, yet
fraught^{[3597](#)}
662 With envy against the Son of God,
that day
663 Honored by his great Father, and
proclaimed
664 Messiah, King anointed, could not
bear
665 Through pride that sight, and
thought himself impaired.^{[3598](#)}
666 Deep malice thence conceiving, and
disdain,
667 Soon as midnight brought on the
dusky hour
668 Friendliest to sleep and silence, he
resolved
669 With all his legions to dislodge, ^{[3599](#)}
and leave
670 Unworshipped, unbayed, the throne
supreme,
671 Contemptuous. And his next
subordinate^{[3600](#)}
672 Awak'ning, thus to him in secret
spoke:
673 “‘Sleep'st thou, companion dear?
What sleep can close

674 Thy eye-lids, and [3601](#) rememb'rest
what decree
675 Of yesterday, so late hath passed the
lips
676 Of Heav'n's Almighty? Thou to me
thy thoughts
677 Wast wont, [3602](#) I mine to thee was
wont t' impart. [3603](#)
678 Both waking, [3604](#) we were one. How
then can now
679 Thy sleep dissent? [3605](#) New laws
thou see'st imposed:
680 New laws from Him who reigns, new
minds may raise
681 In us who serve, new counsels to
debate
682 What doubtful may ensue. More in
this place
683 To utter is not safe. Assemble thou
684 Of all those myriads [3606](#) which we
lead the chief. [3607](#)
685 Tell them that by command, ere yet
dim night
686 Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am
to haste, [3608](#)
687 And all who under me their banners
wave,
688 Homeward, with flying [3609](#) march,
where we possess [3610](#)
689 The quarters [3611](#) of the North, there
to prepare
690 Fit entertainment to receive our
King,
691 The great Messiah, and his new
commands,

692 Who speedily through all the
hierarchies³⁶¹²
693 Intends to pass triumphant, and give
laws.
694 “So spoke the false Arch-Angel,
and infused ³⁶¹³
695 Bad influence³⁶¹⁴ into th’ unwary
breast
696 Of his associate. He³⁶¹⁵ together
calls,
697 Or several ³⁶¹⁶ one by one, ³⁶¹⁷ the
regent ³⁶¹⁸ Powers
698 Under him Regent;³⁶¹⁹ tells, as he
was taught,
699 That the Most High commanding,
now ere night,
700 Now ere dim night had
disincumbered ³⁶²⁰ Heav’n,
701 The great hierarchal standard³⁶²¹
was to move;
702 Tells the suggested cause, and casts
between
703 Ambiguous words and jealousies, to
sound ³⁶²²
704 Or taint ³⁶²³ integrity. But all obeyed
705 The wonted ³⁶²⁴ signal and superior
voice³⁶²⁵
706 Of their great Potentate, ³⁶²⁶ for
great indeed
707 His name, and high was his
degree³⁶²⁷ in Heav’n.
708 His count’nance, as the morning-
star that guides
709 The starry flock, allured ³⁶²⁸ them,

and with lies
710 Drew after him the third part of
Heav'n's host.
711 Meanwhile th' Eternal eye, whose
sight discerns
712 Abstrusest [3629](#) thoughts, from forth
His holy mount
713 And from within the golden lamps
that burn
714 Nightly before Him, saw without
their light
715 Rebellion rising, saw in whom, how
spread
716 Among the sons of morn, what
multitudes
717 Were banded to oppose His high
decree
718 And, smiling, to His only Son thus
said:
719 "Son, thou in whom my glory I
behold
720 In full resplendence, heir of all my
might,
721 Nearly [3630](#) it now concerns us to be
sure
722 Of our omnipotence, and with what
arms
723 We mean to hold what anciently [3631](#)
we claim
724 Of deity or empire. Such a foe
725 Is rising who intends t' erect his
throne
726 Equal to ours, throughout the
spacious North,
727 Nor so content, hath in his thought

728 to try
In battle what our power is, or our
right.

729 Let us advise, [3632](#) and to this hazard
[3633](#) draw

730 With speed what force is left, and all
employ

731 In our defence, lest unawares we
lose

732 This our high place, our sanctuary,
our hill.

733 To whom the Son with calm aspect
and clear,

734 Ligh'tning divine, ineffable, [3634](#)
serene,

735 Made answer:
 'Mighty Father, Thou Thy foe

736 Justly hast in derision and, secure,
[3635](#)

737 Laugh'st at their vain designs and
tumults[3636](#) vain,

738 Matter to me of glory, whom their
hate

739 Illustrates,[3637](#) when they see all
regal power

740 Giv'n me, to quell [3638](#) their pride,
[3639](#) and in event[3640](#)

741 Know whether I be dextrous[3641](#) to
subdue

742 Thy rebels, or be found the worst in
Heav'n.

743 “So spoke the Son. But Satan, with
his Powers,

744 Far was advanced on[3642](#) wingèd
speed, an host

745 Innumerable³⁶⁴³ as the stars of
night,
746 Or stars of morning, dew-drops,
which the sun
747 Impearls on every leaf and every
flower.
748 Regions they passed, the mighty
regencies
749 Of Seraphim, and Potentates, and
Thrones
750 In their triple degrees³⁶⁴⁴ —regions
to which
751 All thy dominion, Adam, is no more
752 Than what this garden is to all the
earth
753 And all the sea, from one entire
globose³⁶⁴⁵
754 Stretched into longitude³⁶⁴⁶ —which,
having passed,
755 At length into the limits³⁶⁴⁷ of the
North
756 They came. And Satan to his royal
seat
757 High on a hill, far blazing, as a
mount
758 Raised on a mount, with pyramids
and tow'rs
759 From diamond quarries hewn, and
rocks of gold,
760 The palace of great Lucifer (so call
761 That structure, in the dialect of men
762 Interpreted)³⁶⁴⁸ which, not long
after, he
763 (Affecting all equality with God)
764 In imitation of that mount whereon

765 *Messiah was declared, in sight of*
 Heav'n,
766 *The Mountain of the Congregation*
 called,
767 *For thither he assembled all his*
 train,
768 *Pretending^{[3649](#)} so commanded to*
 consult
769 *About the great reception of their*
 King,
770 *Thither to come, and with*
 calumnious^{[3650](#)} art
771 *Of counterfeited truth thus held their*
 ears:
772 *“Thrones, Dominations,*
 Princedom, Virtues, Powers—
773 *If these magnific titles yet remain*
774 *Not merely titular, ^{[3651](#)} since by*
 decree
775 *Another now hath to himself*
 engrossed ^{[3652](#)}
776 *All power, and us eclipsed under the*
 name
777 *Of King anointed, for whom all this*
 haste
778 *Of midnight-march and hurried*
 meeting here,
779 *This only to consult how we may*
 best,
780 *With what may be devised of honors*
 new,
781 *Receive him coming to receive from*
 us
782 *Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration*
 vile!

783 *Too much to one! But double how*
 endured,
784 *To one and to His image*[3653](#) *now*
 proclaimed?
785 *But what if better counsels might*
 erect [3654](#)
786 *Our minds, and teach us to cast off*
 this yoke?
787 *Will ye submit your necks, and*
 choose to bend
788 *The supple knee? Ye will not, if I*
 trust
789 *To know ye right, or if ye know*
 yourselves
790 *Natives and sons of Heav'n,*
 possessed before
791 *By none, and if not equal all, yet*
 free,
792 *Equally free, for orders and degrees*
793 *Jar not with liberty, but well*
 consist. [3655](#)
794 *Who can in reason, then, or right,*
 assume
795 *Monarchy over such as live by right*
796 *His equals, if in power and splendor*
 less,
797 *In freedom equal? Or can introduce*
798 *Law and edict on us, who without*
 law
799 *Err not? Much less for this to be our*
 Lord
800 *And look for adoration, to th'*
 abuse [3656](#)
801 *Of those imperial titles which assert*
802 *Our being ordained to govern, not to*

serve.

803 *“Thus far his bold discourse*
 without control[3657](#)
804 *Had audience, when among the*
 Seraphim
805 *Abdiel,*[3658](#) *than whom none with*
 more zeal adored
806 *The Deity, and divine commands*
 obeyed,
807 *Stood up, and in a flame of zeal*
 severe[3659](#)
808 *The current* [3660](#) *of his fury thus*
 opposed:
809 *““O argument blasphemous, false,*
 and proud!
810 *Words which no ear ever to hear in*
 Heav’n
811 *Expected, least of all from thee,*
 ingrate,
812 *In place thyself so high above thy*
 peers.
813 *Canst thou with impious obloquy*[3661](#)
 condemn
814 *The just decree of God, pronounced*
 and sworn,
815 *That to His only Son, by right*
 endued[3662](#)
816 *With regal scepter, every soul in*
 Heav’n
817 *Shall bend the knee, and in that*
 honor due[3663](#)
818 *Confess*[3664](#) *him rightful King?*
 Unjust, thou say’st,
819 *Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the*
 free,

820 *And equal over equals to let reign,*
821 *One over all with unsucceeded [3665](#)*
power.
822 *Shalt thou give law to God? Shalt*
thou dispute
823 *With Him the points of liberty, who*
made
824 *Thee what thou art, and formed the*
Powers of Heav'n
825 *Such as He pleased, and*
circumscribed [3666](#) their being?
826 *Yet, by experience taught, we know*
how good,
827 *And of our good and of our dignity*
828 *How provident [3667](#) He is, how far*
from thought
829 *To make us less, bent [3668](#) rather to*
exalt
830 *Our happy state, under one head*
more near [3669](#)
831 *United. But to grant it thee*
unjust [3670](#)
832 *That equal over equals monarch*
reign:
833 *Thyself, though great and glorious,*
dost thou count—
834 *Or all Angelic nature joined in one*
835 *Equal to him, begotten Son? By*
whom,
836 *As by His Word, the Mighty Father*
made
837 *All things, ev'n thee, and all the*
Spirits of Heav'n
838 *By Him created in their bright*
degrees,

839 Crowned them with glory, and to
 their glory named
840 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms,
 Virtues, Powers,
841 Essential Powers, nor by His reign
 obscured [3671](#)
842 But more illustrious made, since He
 the head
843 One of our number thus reduced
 becomes,
844 His laws our laws, all honor to Him
 done
845 Returns our own. Cease then this
 impious rage,
846 And tempt not these, [3672](#) but hasten
 to appease [3673](#)
847 Th' incensèd Father and th'
 incensèd Son,
848 While pardon may be found, in
 time [3674](#) besought.
849 “So spoke the fervent [3675](#) Angel,
 but his zeal
850 None seconded, as out of season [3676](#)
 judged,
851 Or singular [3677](#) and rash. [3678](#)
 Whereat rejoiced
852 Th' apostate and, more haughty,
 thus replied:
853 ““That we were formed then, say'st
 thou? And the work
854 Of secondary [3679](#) hands, by task
 transferred
855 From Father to His Son?
 Strange [3680](#) point and new!
856 Doctrine which we would know

whence learned. Who saw
857 When this creation was?
Remember'st thou
858 Thy making, while the Maker gave
thee being?
859 We know no time when we were not
as now,
860 Know none before us, self-begot,
self-raised
861 By our own quick'ning [3681](#) power,
when fatal [3682](#) course
862 Had circled his full orb, the birth
mature [3683](#)
863 Of this our native Heav'n,
ethereal [3684](#) sons.
864 Our puissance [3685](#) is our own: our
own right hand
865 Shall teach us highest deeds, by
proof to try
866 Who is our equal. Then thou shalt
behold
867 Whether by supplication we intend
868 Address, [3686](#) and to begirt [3687](#) th'
Almighty throne
869 Beseeching or besieging. This
report,
870 These tidings carry to th' anointed
King,
871 And fly, [3688](#) ere evil intercept thy
flight.
872 "He said, and as the sound of
waters deep
873 Hoarse murmur echoed to his words
applause, [3689](#)
874 Through the infinite host. Nor less

for that
875 The flaming Seraph fearless, though
alone,
876 Encompassed round with foes, thus
answered bold:
877 “‘O alienate³⁶⁹⁰ from God, O Spirit
accursed,
878 Forsaken of all good! I see thy fall
879 Determined,³⁶⁹¹ and thy hapless³⁶⁹²
crew involved
880 In this perfidious fraud, contagion
spread
881 Both of thy crime and punishment.
Henceforth
882 No more be troubled how to quit the
yoke
883 Of God’s Messiah. Those indulgent
³⁶⁹³ laws
884 Will not be now vouchsafed;³⁶⁹⁴
other decrees
885 Against thee are gone forth without
recall.
886 That golden scepter, which thou
did’st reject,
887 Is now an iron rod to bruise³⁶⁹⁵ and
break
888 Thy disobedience. Well thou didst
advise. ³⁶⁹⁶
889 Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly
890 These wicked tents devoted,³⁶⁹⁷ lest
the wrath
891 Impendent,³⁶⁹⁸ raging into sudden
flame,
892 Distinguish not.³⁶⁹⁹ For soon expect
to feel

893 *His thunder on thy head, devouring*
fire.
894 *Then who created thee lamenting*
learn,
895 *When who can uncreate thee thou*
shalt know.
896 *“So spoke the Seraph Abdiel,*
faithful found
897 *Among the faithless, faithful only he,*
898 *Among innumerable false.*
Unmoved,
899 *Unshaken, unseduced, unterrified,*
900 *His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal,*
901 *Nor number, nor example, with him*
wrought [3700](#)
902 *To swerve from truth, or change his*
constant mind,
903 *Though single. [3701](#) From amidst*
them forth he passed,
904 *Long way through hostile scorn,*
which he sustained
905 *Superior, nor of violence [3702](#) feared*
aught,
906 *And with retorted [3703](#) scorn, his*
back he turned
907 *On those proud tow’rs to swift*
destruction doomed.

The End of the Fifth Book

BOOK VI

THE ARGUMENT

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his Angels. The first fight described: Satan and his Powers retire under night; he calls a council, invents devilish engines,³⁷⁰⁴ which in the second day's fight put Michael and his Angels to some disorder, but they at length, pulling up mountains, overwhelmed both the force and machines of Satan.

Yet the tumult not so ending, God on the third day sends Messiah his Son, for whom he had reserved the glory of that victory. He in the power of his Father coming to the place, and causing all his legions to stand still on either side, with his chariot and thunder driving into the midst of his enemies, pursues them unable to resist towards the wall of Heaven; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepared for them in the deep. Messiah returns with triumph to his Father.

- 1 *“All night the dreadless³⁷⁰⁵ Angel,³⁷⁰⁶ unpursued,*
- 2 *Through Heav’n’s wide champaign³⁷⁰⁷ held his way, till*
morn,
- 3 *Waked by the circling hours, with rosy hand*
- 4 *Unbarred the gates of light. There is a cave*
- 5 *Within the mount of God, fast by³⁷⁰⁸ His throne,*
- 6 *Where light and darkness in perpetual round*
- 7 *Lodge³⁷⁰⁹ and dislodge³⁷¹⁰ by turns, which makes through*
Heav’n
- 8 *Grateful ³⁷¹¹vicissitude, ³⁷¹²like day and night.*
- 9 *Light issues forth, and at the other door*

10 *Obsequious³⁷¹³ darkness enters, till her hour*
11 *To veil the Heav'n, though darkness there might well*
12 *Seem twilight here. And now went forth the morn*
13 *Such as³⁷¹⁴ in highest Heav'n, arrayed in gold*
14 *Empyreal.³⁷¹⁵ From before her vanished night,*
15 *Shot through with orient ³⁷¹⁶beams. When all the plain³⁷¹⁷*
16 *Covered with thick embattled squadrons bright,*
17 *Chariots, and flaming arms, and fiery steeds,*
18 *Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his³⁷¹⁸ view,*
19 *War he perceived, war in procinct,³⁷¹⁹ and found*
20 *Already known what he for news had thought*
21 *To have reported. Gladly then he mixed*
22 *Among those friendly Powers, who him received*
23 *With joy and acclamations loud—that one*
24 *That of so many myriads³⁷²⁰ fall'n—yet one*
25 *Returned not lost. On to the sacred hill*
26 *They led him, high applauded, and present³⁷²¹*
27 *Before the seat supreme, from whence a voice,*
28 *From midst a golden cloud, thus mild was heard:*
29 *“‘Servant of God, well done, well hast thou fought*
30 *The better fight, who single hast maintained*
31 *Against revolted multitudes the cause*
32 *Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms,*
33 *And for the testimony of truth hast borne*
34 *Universal reproach, far worse to bear*
35 *Than violence. For this was all thy care,*
36 *To stand approved ³⁷²²in sight of God, though worlds*
37 *Judged thee perverse. ³⁷²³The easier conquest now*
38 *Remains³⁷²⁴ thee, aided by this host of friends,*
39 *Back on thy foes more glorious to return*
40 *Than, scorned, thou didst depart, and to subdue*

41 *By force, who reason for their law refuse,*
42 *Right reason for their law, and for their King*
43 *Messiah, who by right of merit reigns.*
44 *“Go, Michael, of celestial armies prince,*
45 *And thou, in military prowess next,*
46 *Gabriel, lead forth to battle these my sons*
47 *Invincible, lead forth my armèd Saints,*
48 *By thousands and by millions, ranged for fight,*
49 *Equal in number to that Godless crew*
50 *Rebellious. Them with fire and hostile arms*
51 *Fearless assault, [3725](#) and to the brow [3726](#) of Heav’n*
52 *Pursuing, drive them out from God and bliss,*
53 *Into their place of punishment, the gulf*
54 *Of Tartarus, [3727](#) which ready opens wide*
55 *His fiery chaos to receive their fall.*
56 *“So spoke the Sov’rein Voice, and clouds began*
57 *To darken all the hill, and smoke to roll*
58 *In dusky wreaths, reluctant [3728](#) flames, the sign*
59 *Of wrath awaked, nor with less dread [3729](#) the loud*
60 *Ethereal trumpet from on high ’gan blow.*
61 *At which command the Powers militant*
62 *That stood [3730](#) for Heav’n, in mighty quadrate [3731](#) joined*
63 *Of union irresistible, moved on*
64 *In silence their bright legions, to the sound*
65 *Of instrumental harmony that breathed*
66 *Heroic ardor to advent’rous deeds*
67 *Under their godlike leaders, in the cause*
68 *Of God and His Messiah. On they move*
69 *Indissolubly firm, nor [3732](#) obvious [3733](#) hill,*
70 *Nor straitening [3734](#) vale, nor wood, nor stream, divides*
71 *Their perfect ranks, for high above the ground*

72 Their march was, and the passive [3735](#) air upbore
73 Their nimble [3736](#) tread. As when the total kind [3737](#)
74 Of birds, in orderly array on wing,
75 Came summoned over Eden to receive
76 Their names of thee, [3738](#) so over many a tract [3739](#)
77 Of Heav'n they marched, and many a province wide,
78 Tenfold the length of this terrene. [3740](#) At last,
79 Far in the horizon to the north appeared
80 From skirt [3741](#) to skirt a fiery region, stretched
81 In battailous [3742](#) aspect, and nearer view [3743](#)
82 Bristled with upright beams [3744](#) innumerable
83 Of rigid spears, and helmets thronged, [3745](#) and shields
84 Various, with boastful argument [3746](#) portrayed, [3747](#)
85 The banded Powers of Satan hasting on
86 With furious [3748](#) expedition, [3749](#) for they weened [3750](#)
87 That self-same day, by fight or by surprise,
88 To win the mount of God, and on His throne
89 To set the envier of His state, the proud
90 Aspirer. But their thoughts proved fond [3751](#) and vain
91 In the mid way, [3752](#) though strange to us it seemed
92 At first, that Angel should with Angel war,
93 And in fierce hosting [3753](#) meet, who wont to [3754](#) meet
94 So oft in festivals of joy and love
95 Unanimous, [3755](#) as sons of one great Sire,
96 Hymning th' Eternal Father. But the shout
97 Of battle now began, and rushing sound
98 Of onset ended soon each milder thought.
99 High in the midst, exalted as a god,
100 Th' apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat,
101 Idol of majesty divine, enclosed
102 With flaming Cherubim, and golden shields.

103 Then lighted [3756](#) from his gorgeous throne, for now
104 'Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,
105 A dreadful [3757](#) interval, [3758](#) and front to front
106 Presented stood in terrible array
107 Of hideous length. Before the cloudy [3759](#) van, [3760](#)
108 On the rough [3761](#) edge of battle ere it joined,
109 Satan, with vast and haughty strides advanced,
110 Came tow'ring, armed in adamant and gold.
111 Abdiel that sight endured not, where he stood
112 Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,
113 And thus his own undaunted heart explores:
114 "O Heav'n! that such resemblance of the Highest
115 Should yet remain, where faith and realty [3762](#)
116 Remain not. Wherefore should not strength and might
117 There fail where virtue fails, or weakest prove
118 Where boldest, though to fight unconquerable?
119 His puissance, trusting [3763](#) in th'Almighty's aid,
120 I mean to try, [3764](#) whose reason I have tried
121 Unsound and false, nor is it aught but just
122 That he, who in debate of truth hath won,
123 Should win in arms, in both disputes alike
124 Victor, though brutish [3765](#) that contest [3766](#) and foul, [3767](#)
125 When reason hath to deal with force, yet so
126 Most reason is that reason overcome.
127 So pondering, and from his armèd peers
128 Forth stepping opposite, half-way he met
129 His daring foe, at this prevention [3768](#) more
130 Incensed, [3769](#) and thus securely him [3770](#) defied:
131 "Proud, art thou met? Thy hope was to have reached
132 The height of thy aspiring unopposed,
133 The throne of God unguarded, and His side

134 *Abandoned, at the terror of thy power*
135 *Or potent tongue. Fool! Not to think how vain*
136 *Against the Omnipotent to rise in arms,*
137 *Who out of smallest things could, without end,*
138 *Have raised incessant armies to defeat*
139 *Thy folly, or with solitary hand,*
140 *Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow*
141 *Unaided could have finished thee, and whelmed [3771](#)*
142 *Thy legions under darkness. But thou see'st*
143 *All are not of thy train. [3772](#) There be who [3773](#) faith*
144 *Prefer, and piety to God, though then*
145 *To thee not visible when I alone*
146 *Seemed in thy world erroneous [3774](#) to dissent*
147 *From all. My sect [3775](#) thou see'st. Now learn too late*
148 *How few [3776](#) sometimes may know, when thousands err.*
149 *Whom the grand [3777](#) foe, with scornful eye askance, [3778](#)*
150 *Thus answered: " 'Ill for thee, but in wished hour*
151 *Of my revenge, first sought for. Thou return'st*
152 *From flight, seditious [3779](#) Angel! to receive*
153 *Thy merited reward, the first assay [3780](#)*
154 *Of this right hand provoked, since first that tongue,*
155 *Inspired with contradiction, durst oppose*
156 *A third part of the gods, in synod met*
157 *Their deities to assert, [3781](#) who while they feel*
158 *Vigor divine within them, can allow*
159 *Omnipotence to none. But well thou com'st*
160 *Before thy fellows, ambitious to win*
161 *From me some plume, [3782](#) that thy success [3783](#) may show*
162 *Destruction [3784](#) to the rest. This pause between*
163 *(Unanswered lest thou boast) to let thee know:*
164 *At first I thought that liberty and Heav'n*

165 *To Heav'nly souls had been all one, but now*
166 *I see that most through sloth had rather serve,*
167 *Minist'ring Spirits, trained up in feast and song!*
168 *Such hast thou armed, the minstrelsy of Heav'n,*
169 *Servility with freedom to contend,*
170 *As both their deeds compared this day shall prove.*
171 *To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern replied:*
172 *“‘Apostate! Still thou err'st, nor end wilt find*
173 *Of erring, from the path of truth remote.*
174 *Unjustly thou deprav'st [3785](#) it with the name*
175 *Of servitude, to serve whom God ordains,*
176 *Or Nature: God and Nature bid [3786](#) the same,*
177 *When he who rules is worthiest, and excels*
178 *Them whom he governs. This is servitude,*
179 *To serve the unwise, or him who hath rebelled*
180 *Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee,*
181 *Thyself not free, but to thyself enthralled.[3787](#)*
182 *Yet lewdly [3788](#) dar'st our minist'ring [3789](#) upbraid.[3790](#)*
183 *Reign thou in Hell, thy kingdom! Let me serve*
184 *In Heav'n God ever blest, and His divine*
185 *Behests[3791](#) obey, worthiest to be obeyed.*
186 *Yet chains in Hell, not realms, expect. Meanwhile,*
187 *From me returned, as erst thou saidst, from flight,*
188 *This greeting on thy impious crest [3792](#) receive.*
189 *“So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,*
190 *Which hung not, but so swift with tempest [3793](#) fell*
191 *On the proud crest of Satan, that no sight*
192 *Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield,*
193 *Such ruin[3794](#) intercept. Ten paces huge[3795](#)*
194 *He back recoiled; the tenth on bended knee,*
195 *His massy spear upstaid,[3796](#) as if on earth*

196 Winds under ground, or waters forcing way,
197 Sidelong had pushed a mountain from his seat,
198 Half sunk with all his pines. Amazement seized
199 The rebel Thrones, but greater rage, to see
200 Thus foiled [3797](#) their mightiest; ours joy filled, and shout,
201 Presage of victory, [3798](#) and fierce desire
202 Of battle. Whereat Michael [3799](#) bid sound
203 The Arch-Angel trumpet. Through the vast [3800](#) of Heav'n
204 It sounded, and the faithful armies rung
205 Hosanna to the Highest.

“Nor stood at gaze [3801](#)

206 The adverse legions, nor less hideous, joined, [3802](#)
207 The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,
208 And clamor such as heard in Heav'n till now
209 Was never. Arms on armor clashing brayed [3803](#)
210 Horrible discord, and the madding [3804](#) wheels
211 Of brazen [3805](#) chariots raged. Dire [3806](#) was the noise
212 Of conflict. Overhead the dismal hiss
213 Of fiery darts [3807](#) in flaming volleys flew,
214 And flying vaulted [3808](#) either host with fire.
215 So under fiery cope [3809](#) together rushed
216 Both battles [3810](#) main, [3811](#) with ruinous assault
217 And inextinguishable rage. All Heav'n
218 Resounded, and had earth been then, all earth
219 Had to her center shook.

“What wonder, when

220 Millions of fierce encount'ring Angels fought
221 On either side, the least of whom could wield
222 These elements, and arm him with the force
223 Of all their regions? How much more of power
224 Army against army numberless to raise

225 Dreadful combustion³⁸¹² warring, and disturb,
226 Though not destory, their happy native seat,
227 Had not the Eternal King Omnipotent,
228 From His stronghold of Heav'n high, over-ruled³⁸¹³
229 And limited their might, though numbered ³⁸¹⁴ such
230 As each divided³⁸¹⁵ legion might have seemed
231 A numerous host, in strength each armèd band
232 A legion. Led in fight, yet leader seemed
233 Each warrior single as in chief, expert
234 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway
235 Of battle, open when, and when to close
236 The ridges³⁸¹⁶ of grim³⁸¹⁷ war. No thought of flight,
237 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed
238 That argued fear. Each on himself relied,
239 As³⁸¹⁸ only in his arm the moment ³⁸¹⁹ lay
240 Of victory. Deeds of eternal fame
241 Were done, but infinite, for wide was spread
242 That war and various. Sometimes on firm ground
243 A standing fight; then soaring on main³⁸²⁰ wing
244 Tormented ³⁸²¹ all the air. All air seemed then
245 Conflicting³⁸²² fire.

“Long time in even scale

246 The battle hung, till Satan, who that day
247 Prodigious³⁸²³ power had shown, and met in arms
248 No equal, ranging through the dire attack
249 Of fighting Seraphim confused,³⁸²⁴ at length
250 Saw where the sword of Michael smote, and felled
251 Squadrons at once: with huge two-handed sway ³⁸²⁵
252 Brandished aloft, the horrid ³⁸²⁶ edge came down
253 Wide-wasting. Such destruction to withstand
254 He hasted, and opposed ³⁸²⁷ the rocky orb

Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield,
 A vast circumference. At his approach
 The great Arch-Angel from his warlike toil
 Surceased,^{[3828](#)} and glad, as hoping here to end
 Intestine^{[3829](#)} war in Heav'n, th' arch-foe subdued
 Or captive dragged in chains, with hostile frown
 And visage all inflamed first thus began:
 “‘Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,
 Unnamed in Heav’n, now plenteous, as thou see’st—
 These acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,
 Though heaviest by just measure^{[3830](#)} on thyself
 And thy adherents! How hast thou disturbed
 Heav’n’s blessèd peace, and into Nature brought
 Misery, uncreated till the crime
 Of thy rebellion! How hast thou instilled
 Thy malice into thousands, once upright
 And faithful, now proved false! But think not here
 To trouble holy rest.^{[3831](#)} Heav’n casts thee out
 From all her confines.^{[3832](#)} Heav’n, the seat of bliss,
 Brooks^{[3833](#)} not the works of violence and war.
 Hence then, and evil go with thee along,
 Thy offspring, to the place of evil, Hell,
 Thou and thy wicked crew! There mingle^{[3834](#)} broils,^{[3835](#)}
 Ere this avenging sword begin thy doom,
 Or some more sudden vengeance, winged from God,
 Precipitate thee with augmented pain.
 “So spoke the Prince of Angels, to whom thus
 The adversary:
 “‘Nor think thou wit
 Of airy threats to awe whom yet with deeds
 Thou canst not. Hast thou turned the least of these

285 *To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise*
286 *Unvanquished? Easier to transact [3836](#) with me*
287 *That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats*
288 *To chase me hence? Err not, that so shall end*
289 *The strife which thou call'st evil, but we style*
290 *The strife of glory, which we mean to win,*
291 *Or turn this Heav'n itself into the Hell*
292 *Thou fablest, here however to dwell free,*
293 *If not to reign. Meanwhile, thy utmost force*
294 *(And join Him named Almighty to thy aid)*
295 *I fly not, but have sought thee far and nigh.*
296 *“They ended parle, [3837](#) and both addressed [3838](#) for fight*
297 *Unspeakable, for who, though with the tongue*
298 *Of Angels, can relate, or to what things*
299 *Liken on earth conspicuous, [3839](#) that may lift*
300 *Human imagination to such height*
301 *Of godlike power? For likest gods they seemed,*
302 *Stood they or moved, in stature, motion, arms,*
303 *Fit to decide the empire of great Heav'n.*
304 *Now waved their fiery swords, and in the air*
305 *Made horrid circles: two broad suns their shields*
306 *Blazed opposite, while expectation stood*
307 *In horror. From each hand [3840](#) with speed retired,*
308 *Where erst was thickest [3841](#) fight, th'Angelic throng,*
309 *And left large field, [3842](#) unsafe within the wind [3843](#)*
310 *Of such commotion—such as, to set forth*
311 *Great things by small, if Nature's concord broke,*
312 *Among the constellations war were sprung,*
313 *Two planets, rushing from aspect [3844](#) malign*
314 *Of fiercest opposition, in mid sky*
315 *Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound. [3845](#)*

316 Together both with next to almighty arm
317 Up-lifted imminent, one stroke they aimed
318 That might determine, [3846](#) and not need repeat,
319 As not of power at once, nor odds [3847](#) appeared
320 In might or swift prevention. [3848](#) But the sword
321 Of Michael from the armory of God
322 Was giv'n him tempered so that neither keen
323 Nor solid might resist that edge. It met
324 The sword of Satan, with steep force to smite
325 Descending, and in half cut sheer, [3849](#) nor stayed,
326 But with swift wheel reverse, deep ent'ring, shared [3850](#)
327 All his right side. Then Satan first knew pain,
328 And writhed him to and fro convolved, [3851](#) so sore
329 The griding [3852](#) sword with discontinuous [3853](#) wound
330 Passed through him. But the ethereal substance closed,
331 Not long divisible, and from the gash
332 A stream of nectarous humor [3854](#) issuing flowed
333 Sanguine, [3855](#) such as celestial Spirits may bleed,
334 And all his armor stained, erewhile so bright.
335 Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run
336 By Angels many and strong, who interposed
337 Defence, while others bore him on their shields
338 Back to his chariot, where it stood retired [3856](#)
339 From off the files of war. [3857](#) There they him laid
340 Gnashing for anguish and despite [3858](#) and shame
341 To find himself not matchless, and his pride
342 Humbled by such rebuke, [3859](#) so far beneath
343 His confidence to equal God in power.
344 Yet soon he healed, for Spirits that live throughout
345 Vital in every part, not as frail man
346 In entrails, heart or head, liver or reins, [3860](#)

347 Cannot but³⁸⁶¹ by annihilating die,
348 Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound
349 Receive, no more than can the fluid air.
350 All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear,
351 All intellect, all sense, and as they please
352 They limb themselves, and color, shape, or size
353 Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.
354 “Meanwhile in other parts like³⁸⁶² deeds deserved
355 Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought,
356 And with fierce ensigns³⁸⁶³ pierced the deep array³⁸⁶⁴
357 Of Moloch, furious king, who him defied,
358 And at his chariot-wheels to drag him bound
359 Threat’ned, nor from the Holy One of Heav’n
360 Refrained his tongue blasphemous. But anon³⁸⁶⁵
361 Down cloven to the waist, with shattered arms
362 And uncouth³⁸⁶⁶ pain, fled bellowing. On each wing³⁸⁶⁷
363 Uriel and Raphael his³⁸⁶⁸ vaunting³⁸⁶⁹ foe,
364 Though huge and in a rock of diamond armed,
365 Vanquished Adramelech³⁸⁷⁰ and Asmadai,³⁸⁷¹
366 Two potent Thrones,³⁸⁷² that to be less than gods
367 Disdained, but meaner ³⁸⁷³ thoughts learned in their flight,
368 Mangled ³⁸⁷⁴ with ghastly wounds through plate and mail.
369 Nor stood unmindful Abdiel to annoy
370 The atheist crew, but with redoubled blow
371 Ariel,³⁸⁷⁵ and Arioch,³⁸⁷⁶ and the violence
372 Of Ramiel ³⁸⁷⁷ scorched and blasted, overthrew.
373 “I might relate of thousands, and their names
374 Eternize here on earth, but those elect
375 Angels, contented with their fame in Heav’n,
376 Seek not the praise of men. The other sort,
377 In might though wondrous and in acts of war,

378 *Nor of renown less eager, yet by doom*³⁸⁷⁸
379 *Cancelled from Heav'n and sacred memory,*
380 *Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell.*
381 *For strength from truth divided, and from just,*³⁸⁷⁹
382 *Illaudable,* ³⁸⁸⁰ *nought merits but dispraise*
383 *And ignominy,* ³⁸⁸¹ *yet to glory aspires,*
384 *Vain-glorious, and through infamy seeks fame.*
385 *Therefore eternal silence be their doom.*³⁸⁸²
386 *“And now, their mightiest quelled,*³⁸⁸³ *the battle*
 *swerved,*³⁸⁸⁴
387 *With many an inroad* ³⁸⁸⁵ *gored.* ³⁸⁸⁶ *Deformèd* ³⁸⁸⁷ *rout*
388 *Entered, and foul disorder, all the ground*
389 *With shivered armor strewn, and on a heap*
390 *Chariot and charioteer lay overturned,*
391 *And fiery-foaming steeds. What stood, recoiled*
392 *O'er-wearied, through the faint*³⁸⁸⁸ *Satanic host*
393 *Defensive scarce, or with pale*³⁸⁸⁹ *fear surprised* ³⁸⁹⁰
394 *(Then first with fear surprised, and sense of pain)*
395 *Fled ignominious, to such evil brought*
396 *By sin of disobedience, till that hour*
397 *Not liable to fear, or flight, or pain.*
398 *Far otherwise th' inviolable*³⁸⁹¹ *Saints,*
399 *In cubic phalanx*³⁸⁹² *firm, advanced entire,*³⁸⁹³
400 *Invulnerable, impenetrably armed,*
401 *Such high advantages their innocence*
402 *Gave them above their foes, not to have sinned,*
403 *Not to have disobeyed. In fight they stood*
404 *Unwearied, unobnoxious*³⁸⁹⁴ *to be pained*
405 *By wound, though from their place by violence moved.*
406 *“Now Night her course began and, over Heav'n*
407 *Inducing darkness, grateful truce imposed,*

408 *And silence on the odious³⁸⁹⁵ din of war.*
409 *Under her cloudy covert both retired,*
410 *Victor and vanquished. On the foughen field*
411 *Michael and his Angels prevalent³⁸⁹⁶*
412 *Encamping, placed in guard their watches round,³⁸⁹⁷*
413 *Cherubic³⁸⁹⁸ waving fires. On th' other part,³⁸⁹⁹*
414 *Satan with his rebellious disappeared,*
415 *Far in the dark dislodged ³⁹⁰⁰ and, void ³⁹⁰¹ of rest,*
416 *His potentates to council called by night,*
417 *And in the midst thus, undismayed, began:*
418 *“‘O now in danger tried, now known in arms*
419 *Not to be overpowered, companions dear,*
420 *Found worthy not of liberty alone,*
421 *Too mean pretence! ³⁹⁰² but what we more affect,³⁹⁰³*
422 *Honor, dominion, glory, and renown,*
423 *Who have sustained one day in doubtful ³⁹⁰⁴ fight*
424 *(And if one day, why not eternal days?*
425 *What Heaven's Lord had powerfulest to send*
426 *Against us from about His throne, and judged*
427 *Sufficient to subdue us to His will,*
428 *But proves not so. Then fallible, it seems,*
429 *Of future we may deem Him, though till now*
430 *Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly armed,*
431 *Some disadvantage we endured and pain,*
432 *Till now not known, but known, as soon contemned,³⁹⁰⁵*
433 *Since now we find this our empyreal ³⁹⁰⁶ form*
434 *Incapable of mortal injury,*
435 *Imperishable, and though pierced with wound,*
436 *Soon closing, and by native vigor healed.*
437 *Of evil then so small, as easy think ³⁹⁰⁷*
438 *The remedy. Perhaps more valid ³⁹⁰⁸ arms,*

439 *Weapons more violent, when next we meet,*
440 *May serve to better us, and worse our foes,*
441 *Or equal what between us made the odds,*
442 *In Nature none. If other hidden cause*
443 *Left them superior, while we can preserve*
444 *Unhurt our minds, and understanding sound,*
445 *Due search and consultation will disclose.*
446 *“He sat; and in the assembly next upstood*
447 *Nisroch, [3909](#) of Principalities [3910](#) the prime. [3911](#)*
448 *As one he stood escaped from cruel fight,*
449 *Sore toiled, [3912](#) his riven [3913](#) arms [3914](#) to havoc [3915](#) hewn,*
450 *And cloudy [3916](#) in aspect [3917](#) thus answering spoke:*
451 *“‘Deliverer from new Lords, leader to free*
452 *Enjoyment of our right as gods! Yet hard*
453 *For gods, and too unequal work we find,*

454 *Against unequal arms to fight in pain,*
455 *Against unpained, impassive, [3918](#) from which evil*
456 *Ruin must needs ensue. For what avails*
457 *Valor or strength, though matchless, quelled [3919](#) with pain*
458 *Which all subdues, and makes remiss³⁹²⁰ the hands*
459 *Of mightiest? Sense of pleasure we may well*
460 *Spare [3921](#) out of life, perhaps, and not repine, [3922](#)*
461 *But live content, which is the calmest life.*
462 *But pain is perfect misery, the worst*
463 *Of evils and, excessive, overturns*
464 *All patience. He who therefore can invent³⁹²³*
465 *With what more forcible we may offend [3924](#)*
466 *Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm*
467 *Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves*
468 *No less than for deliverance what we owe.*
469 *Whereto with look composed Satan replied:*
470 *“Not uninvented that, which thou aright [3925](#)*
471 *Believ’st so main³⁹²⁶ to our success, I bring.*
472 *Which of us who beholds the bright surface*
473 *Of this ethereous [3927](#) mould [3928](#) whereon we stand,*
474 *This continent of spacious Heav’n, adorned*
475 *With plant, fruit, flow’r ambrosial, gems, and gold—*
476 *Whose eye so superficially [3929](#) surveys*
477 *These things, as not to mind [3930](#) from whence they grow*
478 *Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,*
479 *Of spiritous and fiery spume, [3931](#) till touched*
480 *With Heav’n’s ray, and tempered,³⁹³² they shoot forth*
481 *So beauteous, opening to the ambient [3933](#) light?*
482 *These in their dark nativity³⁹³⁴ the deep*
483 *Shall yield us, pregnant with infernal flame,*
484 *Which into hollow engines, long and round,*
485 *Thick rammed,³⁹³⁵ at th’ other bore [3936](#) with touch of fire*
486 *Dilated [3937](#) and infuriate, shall send forth*

487 From far, with thund'ring noise, among our foes
488 Such implements of mischief as shall dash
489 To pieces and o'erwhelm whatever stands
490 Adverse, [3938](#) that they shall fear we have disarmed
491 The Thunderer of His only dreaded bolt.
492 Nor long shall be our labor: yet ere dawn,
493 Effect [3939](#) shall end our wish. Meanwhile revive,
494 Abandon fear, to strength and counsel joined
495 Think nothing hard, much less to be despaired.
496 "He ended, and his words their drooping cheer [3940](#)
497 Enlightened, [3941](#) and their languished [3942](#) hope revived.
498 Th' invention all admired, and each, how he
499 To be the inventer missed, so easy it seemed
500 Once found, which yet unfound most would have thought
501 Impossible. Yet, haply, [3943](#) of thy race
502 In future days, if malice should abound,
503 Someone intent on mischief, or inspired
504 With devilish machination, [3944](#) might devise
505 Like [3945](#) instrument to plague the sons of men
506 For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.
507 Forthwith from council to the work they flew.
508 None arguing stood; innumerable hands
509 Were ready. In a moment up they turned
510 Wide the celestial soil, and saw beneath
511 The originals [3946](#) of Nature in their crude
512 Conception. Sulphurous and nitrous foam
513 They found, they mingled and, with subtle art,
514 Concocted [3947](#) and adjusted, [3948](#) they reduced
515 To blackest grain, [3949](#) and into store conveyed.
516 Part [3950](#) hidden veins digged up (nor hath this earth
517 Entrails unlike) of mineral and stone,
518 Whereof to found [3951](#) their engines and their balls
519 Of missive ruin; [3952](#) part incentive [3953](#) reed

520 Provide, pernicious³⁹⁵⁴ with one touch to fire.
521 So all ere day-spring, under conscious Night,³⁹⁵⁵
522 Secret they finished, and in order set,
523 With silent circumspection,³⁹⁵⁶ unespied.
524 “Now when fair morn orient ³⁹⁵⁷ in Heav’n appeared,
525 Up rose the victor-Angels, and to arms
526 The matin trumpet sung. In arms they stood
527 Of golden panoply, ³⁹⁵⁸ refulgent³⁹⁵⁹ host,³⁹⁶⁰
528 Soon banded.³⁹⁶¹ Others from the dawning hills
529 Look round, and scouts each coast light-armèd scour,
530 Each quarter to descry ³⁹⁶² the distant foe,
531 Where lodged, or whither fled, or if for fight,
532 In motion or in halt. Him soon they met
533 Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in slow
534 But firm battalion. Back with speediest sail
535 Zophiel,³⁹⁶³ of Cherubim the swiftest wing,
536 Came flying, and in mid air aloud thus cried:
537 “‘Arm, warriors, arm for fight! The foe at hand,
538 Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit
539 This day. Fear not his flight: so thick a cloud
540 He comes, and settled in his face I see
541 Sad ³⁹⁶⁴ resolution, and secure. ³⁹⁶⁵ Let each
542 His adamantine coat gird ³⁹⁶⁶ well, and each
543 Fit well his helm, grip fast his orbèd shield,
544 Borne ev’n³⁹⁶⁷ or high, for this day will pour down,
545 If I conjecture ³⁹⁶⁸ aught, no drizzling shower,
546 But rattling storm of arrows barbed with fire.
547 “So warned he them, aware themselves, and soon
548 In order, quit of all impediment,
549 Instant without disturb they took alarm,³⁹⁶⁹
550 And onward moved embattled.³⁹⁷⁰ When behold!
551 Not distant far with heavy ³⁹⁷¹ pace the foe
552 Approaching, gross³⁹⁷² and huge, ³⁹⁷³ in hollow cube

553 Training [3974](#) his devilish enginery, impaled [3975](#)
554 On every side with shadowing squadrons deep,
555 To hide the fraud. At interview [3976](#) both stood
556 A while, but suddenly at head appeared
557 Satan, and thus was heard commanding loud:
558 “‘Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold, [3977](#)
559 That all may see, who hate us, how we seek
560 Peace and composure, [3978](#) and with open breast
561 Stand ready to receive them, if they like
562 Our overture, [3979](#) and turn not back perverse. [3980](#)
563 But that I doubt. However, witness, Heav’n!
564 Heav’n, witness thou anon! [3981](#) while we discharge
565 Freely our part. Ye who appointed stand
566 Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch
567 What we propound, [3982](#) and loud that all may hear!
568 “So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce
569 Had ended, when to right and left the front
570 Divided, and to either flank retired,
571 Which to our eyes discovered, new and strange,
572 A triple mounted row of pillars laid
573 On wheels (for like to pillars most they seemed,
574 Or hollowed bodies made of oak or fir,
575 With branches lopped, in wood or mountain felled)
576 Brass, iron, stony mould, [3983](#) had not their mouths
577 With hideous orifice [3984](#) gaped on us wide,
578 Portending hollow truce. At each, behind,
579 A Seraph stood, and in his hand a reed
580 Stood waving, tipped with fire, while we, suspense, [3985](#)
581 Collected stood, within our thoughts amused. [3986](#)
582 Not long, for sudden all at once their reeds
583 Put forth, and to a narrow vent [3987](#) applied
584 With nicest [3988](#) touch. Immediate in a flame,
585 But soon obscured with smoke all Heav’n appeared,

586 From those deep-throated engines belched, ³⁹⁸⁹ whose roar
587 Emboweled ³⁹⁹⁰ with outrageous ³⁹⁹¹ noise the air
588 And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul
589 Their devilish glut, ³⁹⁹² chained thunderbolts and hail
590 Of iron globes which, on the victor host
591 Levelled, with such impetuous ³⁹⁹³ fury smote
592 That, whom they hit, none on their feet might stand,
593 Though standing else as rocks, but down they fell

c

595 The sooner for ³⁹⁹⁴ their arms. ³⁹⁹⁵ Unarmed, they might
596 Have easily, as Spirits, evaded swift
597 By quick contraction or remove, but now
598 Foul dissipation ³⁹⁹⁶ followed, and forced rout,
599 Nor served it to relax ³⁹⁹⁷ their serried ³⁹⁹⁸ files. ³⁹⁹⁹
600 What should they do? If on they rushed, repulse
601 Repeated, and indecent ⁴⁰⁰⁰ overthrow
602 Doubled, would render them yet more despised,
603 And to their foes a laughter, for in view
604 Stood ranked of Seraphim another row,
605 In posture to displace ⁴⁰⁰¹ their second tire ⁴⁰⁰²
606 Of thunder. Back defeated to return
607 They worse abhorred. Satan beheld their plight,
608 And to his mates thus in derision called:
609 “‘O friends! Why come not on, these victors proud?
610 Erewhile they fierce were coming, and when we,
611 To entertain them fair, with open front
612 And breast (what could we more?), propounded terms
613 Of composition, straight they changed their minds,
614 Flew off, and into strange vagaries ⁴⁰⁰³ fell,
615 As they would dance. Yet for a dance they seemed
616 Somewhat extravagant and wild—perhaps
617 For joy of offered peace. But I suppose,
618 If our proposals once again were heard,

619 *We should compel them to a quick result.*
620 *To whom thus Belial, in like gamesome mood:*
621 *“‘Leader! the terms we sent were terms of weight,*
622 *Of hard contents, and full of force urged home,*
623 *Such as we might perceive amused [4004](#) them all,*
624 *And stumbled [4005](#) many. Who receives them right*
625 *Had need from head to foot well understand.[4006](#)*
626 *Not understood, this gift they have besides,*
627 *They show us when our foes walk not upright.*
628 *“So they among themselves in pleasant vein*
629 *Stood scoffing, heightened [4007](#) in their thoughts beyond*
630 *All doubt of victory. Eternal Might*
631 *To match with their inventions they presumed*
632 *So easy, and of His thunder made a scorn,*
633 *And all His host derided, while they stood*
634 *A while in trouble. But they [4008](#) stood not long.*
635 *Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms*
636 *Against such hellish mischief fit t’ oppose.*
637 *Forthwith (behold the excellence, the power,*
638 *Which God hath in His mighty Angels placed!*
639 *Their arms away they threw, and to the hills*
640 *(For earth hath this variety from Heav’n,*
641 *Of pleasure situate [4009](#) in hill and dale)*
642 *Light [4010](#) as the lightning glimpse they ran, they flew.*
643 *From their foundations loos’ning to and fro,*
644 *They plucked the seated hills, with all their load,*
645 *Rocks, waters, woods, and by the shaggy tops*
646 *Up-lifting bore them in their hands. Amaze,*
647 *Be sure, and terror, seized the rebel host,*
648 *When coming towards them so dread they saw [4011](#)*
649 *The bottom of the mountains upward turned,*
650 *Till on those cursed engines’ triple-row*
651 *They saw them whelmed, [4012](#) and all their confidence*

652 Under the weight of mountains buried deep,
653 Themselves invaded [4013](#) next, and on their heads
654 Main [4014](#) promontories [4015](#) flung, which in the air
655 Came shadowing, and oppressed [4016](#) whole legions armed.
656 Their armor helped their harm, crushed in and bruised
657 Into their substance pent, [4017](#) which wrought them pain
658 Implacable, [4018](#) and many a dolorous groan,
659 Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind
660 Out of such prison, though Spirits of purest light,
661 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.
662 The rest, in imitation, to like arms
663 Betook them, and the neighboring hills uptore.
664 So hills amid the air encountered hills,
665 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation [4019](#) dire, [4020](#)
666 That under ground they fought in dismal shade.
667 Infernal noise! War seemed a civil game
668 To this uproar. Horrid confusion heaped
669 Upon confusion rose.

“And now all Heav’n

670 Had gone to wrack, [4021](#) with ruin overspread,
671 Had not th’Almighty Father, where He sits
672 Shrined in His sanctuary of Heav’n secure,
673 Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen
674 This tumult, and permitted all, advised, [4022](#)
675 That His great purpose He might so fulfil,
676 To honor His anointed Son avenged
677 Upon his enemies, and to declare
678 All power on him transferred. Whence to His Son,
679 The assessor [4023](#) of His throne, He thus began:
680 “‘Effulgence [4024](#) of my glory, Son belov’d,
681 Son, in whose face invisible is beheld
682 Visibly, what by Deity I am,
683 And in whose hand what by decree I do,

684 *Second Omnipotence! Two days are past,*
685 *Two days, as we compute the days of Heav'n,*
686 *Since Michael and his Powers went forth to tame*
687 *These disobedient. Sore hath been their fight,*
688 *As likeliest was, when two such foes met armed,*
689 *For to themselves I left them, and thou know'st*
690 *Equal in their creation they were formed,*
691 *Save what sin hath impaired, which yet hath wrought*
692 *Insensibly, for I suspend their doom.*^{[4025](#)}
693 *Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last* ^{[4026](#)}
694 *Endless, and no solution will be found.*
695 *War wearied hath performed what war can do,*
696 *And to disordered rage let loose the reins*
697 *With mountains, as with weapons, armed, which makes*
698 *Wild work in Heav'n, and dangerous to the main.*^{[4027](#)}
699 *Two days are therefore past, the third is thine,*
700 *For thee I have ordained it, and thus far*
701 *Have suffered* ^{[4028](#)} *that the glory may be thine*
702 *Of ending this great war, since none but thou*
703 *Can end it. Into thee such virtue and grace*
704 *Immense I have transfused,*^{[4029](#)} *that all may know*
705 *In Heav'n and Hell thy power above compare*
706 *And, this perverse*^{[4030](#)} *commotion*^{[4031](#)} *governed* ^{[4032](#)} *thus,*
707 *To manifest thee worthiest to be heir*
708 *Of all things, to be heir, and to be King*
709 *By sacred unction,*^{[4033](#)} *thy deservèd right.*
710 *Go then, thou mightiest, in thy Father's might.*
711 *Ascend my chariot, guide the rapid wheels*
712 *That shake Heav'n's basis, bring forth all my war,*
713 *My bow and thunder. My almighty arms*
714 *Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh.*
715 *Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out*
716 *From all Heav'n's bounds into the utter deep.*
717 *There let them learn, as likes them,*^{[4034](#)} *to despise*

718 God, and Messiah his anointed King.
719 "He said, and on His Son with rays direct
720 Shone full. He all his Father full expressed
721 Ineffably [4035](#) into his face received,
722 And thus the Filial Godhead, answering, spoke:
723 "'O Father, O Supreme of Heav'nly Thrones,
724 First, Highest, Holiest, Best! Thou always seek'st
725 To glorify Thy Son, I always Thee,
726 As is most just. This I my glory account, [4036](#)
727 My exaltation, and my whole delight,
728 That Thou, in me well pleased, declar'st Thy will
729 Fulfilled, which to fulfil is all my bliss.
730 Scepter and power, Thy giving, I assume,
731 And gladlier shall resign, when in the end
732 Thou shalt be all in all, and I in Thee
733 Forever, and in me all whom Thou lov'st.
734 But whom Thou hat'st, I hate, and can put on
735 Thy terrors, as I put Thy mildness on,
736 Image of Thee in all things, and shall soon,
737 Armed with Thy might, rid Heav'n of these rebelled,
738 To their prepared ill mansion driven down,
739 To chains of darkness, and th' undying worm, [4037](#)
740 That from Thy just obedience could revolt,
741 Whom to obey is happiness entire.
742 Then shall Thy Saints unmixed, [4038](#) and from th' impure
743 Far separate, circling Thy holy mount,
744 Unfeignèd Halleluiahs to Thee sing,
745 Hymns of high praise, and I among them chief.
746 "So said, he o'er his scepter bowing, rose
747 From the right hand of Glory where he sat.
748 And the third sacred morn began to shine,
749 Dawning through Heav'n. Forth rushed with whirlwind sound
750 The chariot of paternal Deity,
751 Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel undrawn, [4039](#)

752 *Itself instinct [4040](#) with Spirit, but convoyed⁴⁰⁴¹*
753 *By four Cherubic shapes. Four faces each*
754 *Had wondrous. As with stars, their bodies all*
755 *And wings were set with eyes, with eyes the wheels*
756 *Of beryl, and careering [4042](#) fires between.*
757 *Over their heads a crystal firmament,*
758 *Whereon a sapphire throne, inlaid with pure*
759 *Amber, and colors of the showery⁴⁰⁴³ arch.⁴⁰⁴⁴*
760 *He in celestial panoply all armed*
761 *Of radiant Urim,⁴⁰⁴⁵ work divinely wrought,*
762 *Ascended. At his right hand victory*
763 *Sat eagle-winged; beside him hung his bow*
764 *And quiver with three-bolted thunder stored,*
765 *And from about him fierce effusion⁴⁰⁴⁶ rolled*
766 *Of smoke, and bickering [4047](#) flame, and sparkles dire.*
767 *Attended with ten thousand thousand Saints,*
768 *He onward came. Far off his coming shone,*
769 *And twenty thousand (I their number heard)*
770 *Chariots of God, half on each hand, were seen.*
771 *He on the wings of Cherub rode sublime⁴⁰⁴⁸*
772 *On the crystalline sky, in sapphire throned,*
773 *Illustrious⁴⁰⁴⁹ far and wide, but by his own*
774 *First seen. Them unexpected joy surprised,*
775 *When the great ensign of Messiah blazed*
776 *Aloft, by Angels borne, his sign in Heav'n,*
777 *Under whose conduct Michael soon reduced [4050](#)*
778 *His army, circumfused [4051](#) on either wing,*
779 *Under their head [4052](#) embodied [4053](#) all in one.*
780 *Before him Power Divine his way prepared;*
781 *At his command the uprooted hills retired [4054](#)*
782 *Each to his place. They heard his voice, and went*
783 *Obsequious.⁴⁰⁵⁵ Heav'n his wonted [4056](#) face renewed,*
784 *And with fresh flow'rets hill and valley smiled.*

785 This saw his hapless⁴⁰⁵⁷ foes, but stood obdured,⁴⁰⁵⁸
786 And to rebellious fight rallied their Powers,
787 Insensate, ⁴⁰⁵⁹ hope conceiving⁴⁰⁶⁰ from despair.
788 *“In Heav’nly Spirits could such perverseness dwell?*
789 *But to convince the proud what signs avail,*
790 *Or wonders move th’ obdurate to relent?*
791 *They, hardened more by what might most reclaim, ⁴⁰⁶¹*
792 *Grieving to see his glory, at the sight*
793 *Took envy and, aspiring to his height,*
794 *Stood re-embattled fierce, by force or fraud*
795 *Weening⁴⁰⁶² to prosper, and at length prevail*
796 *Against God and Messiah, or to fall*
797 *In universal ruin last.⁴⁰⁶³ And now*
798 *To final battle drew, disdaining flight,*
799 *Or faint retreat. When the great Son of God*
800 *To all his host on either hand thus spoke:*
801 *“‘Stand still in bright array, ye Saints; here stand,*
802 *Ye Angels armed; this day from battle rest.*
803 *Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God*
804 *Accepted, fearless in His righteous cause,*
805 *And as ye have received, so have ye done,*
806 *Invincibly. But of this cursèd crew*
807 *The punishment to other hand belongs.*
808 *Vengeance is His, or whose He sole appoints.*
809 *Number to this day’s work is not ordained,*
810 *Nor multitude. Stand only, and behold*
811 *God’s indignation on these godless poured*
812 *By me. Not you, but me, they have despised,*
813 *Yet envied. Against me is all their rage,*
814 *Because the Father, to whom in Heav’n supreme*
815 *Kingdom, and power, and glory appertains,*
816 *Hath honored me, according to His will.*
817 *Therefore to me their doom⁴⁰⁶⁴ He hath assigned,*
818 *That they may have their wish, to try ⁴⁰⁶⁵ with me*

819 *In battle which the stronger proves, they all,*
82 *Or I alone against them, since by strength*
821 *They measure all, of other excellence*
822 *Not emulous, [4066](#) nor care who them excels.*
823 *Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe. ' [4067](#)*
824 *“So spoke the Son, and into terror changed*
825 *His count'nance, too severe to be beheld,*
826 *And full of wrath bent on his enemies.*
827 *At once the Four spread out their starry wings*
828 *With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs*
829 *Of his fierce chariot rolled, as with the sound*
830 *Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host. [4068](#)*
831 *He on his impious foes right onward drove,*
832 *Gloomy [4069](#) as night. Under his burning wheels*
833 *The steadfast empyrean [4070](#) shook throughout,*
834 *All but the throne itself of God. Full soon*
835 *Among them he arrived, in his right hand*
836 *Grasping ten thousand thunders, which he sent*
837 *Before him, such as in their souls infixed*
838 *Plagues. [4071](#) They astonished [4072](#) all resistance lost,*
839 *All courage. Down their idle [4073](#) weapons dropped.*
840 *O'er shields, and helms, and helmèd heads he rode*
841 *Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,*
842 *That wished the mountains now might be again*
843 *Thrown on them, as a shelter from his ire. [4074](#)*
844 *Nor less on either side tempestuous fell*
845 *His arrows, from the fourfold-visaged Four*
846 *Distinct [4075](#) with eyes, and from the living wheels*
847 *Distinct alike with multitude of eyes.*
848 *One Spirit in them ruled; and every eye*
849 *Glared lightning, and shot forth pernicious [4076](#) fire*
850 *Among the accursed, that withered all their strength,*
851 *And of their wonted [4077](#) vigor left them drained,*

852 Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.
853 Yet half his strength he put not forth, but checked
854 His thunder in mid volley, for he meant
855 Not to destroy, but root them out of Heav'n.
856 The overthrown he raised, and as a herd
857 Of goats or timorous flock together thronged
858 Drove them before him thunder-struck, pursued
859 With terrors, and with furies, to the bounds
860 And crystal wall of Heav'n, which op'ning wide,
861 Rolled inward, and a spacious gap disclosed
862 Into the wasteful [4078](#) deep. The monstrous sight
863 Struck them with horror backward, but far worse
864 Urged them behind. Headlong themselves they threw
865 Down from the verge [4079](#) of Heav'n. Eternal wrath
866 Burnt after them to the bottomless pit.
867 "Hell heard th' unsufferable [4080](#) noise, Hell saw
868 Heav'n ruining [4081](#) from Heav'n, and would have fled
869 Affrighted, but strict [4082](#) Fate had cast too deep
870 Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound.
871 Nine days they fell. Confounded [4083](#) Chaos roared,
872 And felt tenfold confusion in their fall
873 Through his wild anarchy, so huge a rout [4084](#)
874 Encumbered him with ruin. Hell at last
875 Yawning [4085](#) received them whole, and on them closed,
876 Hell their fit habitation, fraught [4086](#) with fire
877 Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain.
878 Disburdened Heav'n rejoiced, and soon repaired
879 Her mural [4087](#) breach, returning whence it rolled.
880 "Sole victor, from th' expulsion of his foes,
881 Messiah his triumphal chariot turned.
882 To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood
883 Eye-witnesses of his almighty acts,
884 With jubilee [4088](#) advanced and, as they went,

885 *Shaded with branching palm, each Order bright*
886 *Sung triumph, and him sung victorious King,*
887 *Son, heir, and Lord, to him dominion giv'n,*
888 *Worthiest to reign. He celebrated rode*
889 *Triumphant through mid Heav'n, into the courts*
890 *And temple of his Mighty Father throned*
891 *On high, who into glory him received,*
892 *Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.*
893 *“Thus, measuring things in Heav'n by things on earth,*
894 *At thy⁴⁰⁸⁹ request, and that thou may'st beware⁴⁰⁹⁰*
895 *By what is past, to thee I have revealed*
896 *What might have else to human race been hid,*
897 *The discord which befell,⁴⁰⁹¹ and war in Heav'n*
898 *Among th' angelic Powers, and the deep fall*
899 *Of those too high aspiring, who rebelled*
900 *With Satan—he who envies now thy state,*
901 *Who now is plotting how he may seduce*
902 *Thee also from obedience, that⁴⁰⁹² with⁴⁰⁹³ him*
903 *Bereaved ⁴⁰⁹⁴ of happiness, thou may'st partake*
904 *His punishment, eternal misery,*
905 *Which would be all his solace and revenge,*
906 *As a despite ⁴⁰⁹⁵ done against the Most High,*
907 *Thee once⁴⁰⁹⁶ to gain companion⁴⁰⁹⁷ of his woe.*
908 *But listen not to his temptations, warn*
909 *Thy weaker. ⁴⁰⁹⁸ Let it profit thee t' have heard,*
910 *By terrible example, the reward*
911 *Of disobedience. Firm they might have stood,*
912 *Yet fell. Remember, and fear to transgress.*

The End of the Sixth Book

BOOK VII

THE ARGUMENT

Raphael at the request of Adam relates how and wherefore this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his Angels out of Heaven, declared His pleasure to create another world and other creatures to dwell therein; sends His Son with glory and attendance of Angels to perform the work of Creation in six days.

The Angels celebrate with hymns the performance thereof, and his⁴⁰⁹⁹ re-ascension into Heaven.

- 1 *Descend from Heav'n, Urania,*⁴¹⁰⁰ *by that name*
- 2 *If rightly thou art called, whose voice divine*
- 3 *Following, above the Olympian hill I soar,*
- 4 *Above the flight of Pegasean*⁴¹⁰¹ *wing!*⁴¹⁰²
- 5 *The meaning, not the name, I call, for thou*
- 6 *Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top*
- 7 *Of old Olympus, dwell'st, but Heav'nly-born,*
- 8 *Before the hills appeared, or fountain flowed,*
- 9 *Thou with eternal wisdom didst converse,* ⁴¹⁰³
- 10 *Wisdom thy sister, and with her did'st play*
- 11 *In presence of th'Almighty Father, pleased*
- 12 *With thy celestial song. Up led by thee*
- 13 *Into the Heav'n of Heav'ns I have presumed,*
- 14 *An earthly guest, and drawn*⁴¹⁰⁴ *empyreal air,*
- 15 *Thy temp'ring.* ⁴¹⁰⁵ *With like safety guided down,*
- 16 *Return me to my native element,*⁴¹⁰⁶

17 *Lest from this flying steed unreined (as once*
18 *Bellerophon, though from a lower clime)*
19 *Dismounted, [4107](#) on the Aleian field [4108](#) I fall,*
20 *Erroneous [4109](#) there to wander, and forlorn. [4110](#)*
21 *Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound [4111](#)*
22 *Within the visible diurnal sphere: [4112](#)*
23 *Standing on earth, not rapt [4113](#) above the pole, [4114](#)*
24 *More safe I sing with mortal voice, unchanged*
25 *To hoarse or mute, though fall'n on evil days,*
26 *On evil days though fall'n, and evil tongues,*
27 *In darkness, and with dangers compassed round, [4115](#)*
28 *And solitude. Yet not alone while thou*
29 *Visit'st my slumbers nightly, or when morn*
30 *Purples the east. Still govern thou my song,*
31 *Urania, and fit audience find, though few.*
32 *But drive far off the barbarous dissonance*
33 *Of Bacchus and his revellers, the race [4116](#)*
34 *Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard [4117](#)*
35 *In Rhodopé, [4118](#) where woods and rocks had ears*
36 *To rapture, [4119](#) till the savage clamor drowned*
37 *Both harp and voice. Nor could the Muse defend*
38 *Her son. [4120](#) So fail not thou, who thee implores,*
39 *For thou art Heav'nly, she an empty dream.*
40 *Say, goddess, what ensued when Raphael,*
41 *The affable Arch-Angel, had forewarned*
42 *Adam, by dire example, to beware*
43 *Apostasy, by what befell [4121](#) in Heav'n*
44 *To those apostates, lest the like befall*
45 *In Paradise to Adam or his race,*
46 *Charged not to touch the interdicted tree,*
47 *If they transgress, and slight [4122](#) that sole command,*

48 *So easily obeyed amid the choice*
49 *Of all tastes else to please their appetite,*
50 *Though wand'ring. [4123](#) He with his consort [4124](#) Eve*
51 *The story heard, attentive, and was filled*
52 *With admiration [4125](#) and deep muse [4126](#) to hear*
53 *Of things so high [4127](#) and strange [4128](#) —things to their thought*
54 *So unimaginable, as hate in Heav'n,*
55 *And war so near the peace of God in bliss,*
56 *With such confusion, [4129](#) but the evil, soon*
57 *Driv'n back, redounded [4130](#) as a flood on those*
58 *From whom it sprung, impossible to mix*
59 *With blessedness. Whence Adam soon repealed [4131](#)*
60 *The doubts that in his heart arose, and now*
61 *Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know*
62 *What nearer might concern him, how this world*
63 *Of Heav'n and earth conspicuous [4132](#) first began,*
64 *When, and whereof created, for what cause,*
65 *What within Eden, or without, was done*
66 *Before his memory—as one whose drought*
67 *Yet scarce allayed, still eyes the current [4133](#) stream,*
68 *Whose liquid murmur heard, new thirst excites,*
69 *Proceeded thus to ask his Heav'nly guest:*
70 *“Great things, and full of wonder in our ears,*
71 *Far differing from this world, thou hast revealed,*
72 *Divine interpreter! [4134](#) by favor sent*
73 *Down from the empyrean, to forewarn*
74 *Us timely of what might else have been our loss,*
75 *Unknown, which human knowledge could not reach.*
76 *For which to the infinitely Good we owe*
77 *Immortal thanks, and His admonishment*
78 *Receive, with solemn purpose to observe*

79 *Immutably His sov'reign will, the end*⁴¹³⁵
80 *Of what we are. But since thou hast vouchsafed* ⁴¹³⁶
81 *Gently,* ⁴¹³⁷ *for our instruction, to impart*
82 *Things above earthly thought, which yet concerned*
83 *Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seemed,*
84 *Deign to descend now lower, and relate*
85 *What may no less perhaps avail us, known,*
86 *How first began this Heav'n which we behold*
87 *Distant so high, with moving fires adorned*
88 *Innumerable, and this which yields or fills*
89 *All space, the ambient* ⁴¹³⁸ *air wide interfused* ⁴¹³⁹
90 *Embracing round this florid*⁴¹⁴⁰ *earth. What cause*
91 *Moved the Creator, in His holy rest* ⁴¹⁴¹
92 *Through all eternity, so late* ⁴¹⁴² *to build*
93 *In Chaos, and the work begun, how soon*
94 *Absolved.*⁴¹⁴³ *If unforbid thou may'st unfold*
95 *What we, not to explore the secrets, ask*
96 *Of His eternal empire, but the more*
97 *To magnify His works, the more we know.*
98 *And the great light of day yet wants*⁴¹⁴⁴ *to run*
99 *Much of his race, though steep. Suspense in Heav'n,*
100 *Held by thy voice, thy potent voice he hears,*
101 *And longer will delay to hear thee tell*
102 *His generation,*⁴¹⁴⁵ *and the rising birth*
103 *Of Nature from the unapparent*⁴¹⁴⁶ *deep.*⁴¹⁴⁷
104 *Or if the star of ev'ning and the moon*
105 *Haste to thy audience, night with her will bring*
106 *Silence—and sleep, list'ning to thee, will watch,*⁴¹⁴⁸
107 *Or we can bid* ⁴¹⁴⁹ *his absence till thy song*
108 *End, and dismiss*⁴¹⁵⁰ *thee ere the morning shine.*
109 *Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought,*⁴¹⁵¹

110 *And thus the godlike Angel answered mild:*
111 *“This also thy request, with caution asked,*
112 *Obtain, though to recount Almighty works*
113 *What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,*
114 *Or heart of man suffice to comprehend?*
115 *Yet what thou canst attain,[4152](#) which best may serve*
116 *To glorify the Maker, and infer [4153](#)*
117 *Thee also happier, shall not be withheld*
118 *Thy hearing. Such commission from above*
119 *I have received, to answer thy desire*
120 *Of knowledge within bounds. Beyond,[4154](#) abstain*
121 *To ask, nor let thine own inventions[4155](#) hope*
122 *Things not revealed, which the invisible King,*
123 *Only [4156](#) Omniscient, hath suppressed [4157](#) in night,*
124 *To none communicable in earth or Heaven:*
125 *Enough is left besides to search and know.*
126 *But knowledge is as food, and needs no less*
127 *Her temp’rance over appetite, to know*
128 *In measure what the mind may well contain,*
129 *Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns*
130 *Wisdom to folly, as nourishment to wind.*
131 *“Know then, that after Lucifer from Heav’n*
132 *(So call him, brighter once amidst the host*
133 *Of Angels than that star [4158](#) the stars among)*
134 *Fell with his flaming legions through the deep*
135 *Into his place, and the great Son returned*
136 *Victorious with his Saints, the Omnipotent*
137 *Eternal Father from His throne beheld*
138 *Their multitude, and to His Son thus spoke:*
139 *“‘At last our envious foe hath failed, who thought*
140 *All[4159](#) like himself rebellious, by whose aid*

141 *This inaccessible high strength, the seat*
142 *Of Deity supreme, us dispossessed,*
143 *He trusted to have seized, and into fraud*
144 *Drew many, whom their place knows here no more.*
145 *Yet far the greater part have kept, I see,*
146 *Their station.*⁴¹⁶⁰ *Heaven, yet populous, retains*
147 *Number sufficient to possess*⁴¹⁶¹ *her realms*
148 *Though wide, and this high temple to frequent*⁴¹⁶²
149 *With ministeries*⁴¹⁶³ *due, and solemn rites.*
150 *But lest his heart exalt him in the harm*
151 *Already done, to have dispeopled Heav'n,*
152 *My damage fondly*⁴¹⁶⁴ *deemed,*⁴¹⁶⁵ *I can repair*
153 *That detriment,*⁴¹⁶⁶ *if such it be to lose*
154 *Self-lost, and in a moment will create*
155 *Another world, out of one man a race*
156 *Of men innumerable, there to dwell,*
157 *Not here, till by degrees of merit raised*
158 *They open to themselves at length the way*
159 *Up hither, under long obedience tried,*⁴¹⁶⁷
160 *And earth be changed to Heav'n, and Heav'n to earth,*
161 *One kingdom, joy and union without end.*
162 *Meanwhile inhabit lax,*⁴¹⁶⁸ *ye Powers of Heav'n,*
163 *And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee*
164 *This I perform. Speak thou, and be it done!*
165 *My overshadowing*⁴¹⁶⁹ *Spirit and Might with thee*
166 *I send along. Ride forth, and bid the deep*
167 *Within appointed bounds be Heav'n and earth—*
168 *Boundless the deep, because I Am who fill*
169 *Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.*
170 *Though I, uncircumscribed myself, retire,*
171 *And put not forth my goodness, which is free*

172 *To act or not, necessity and chance*
173 *Approach not me, and what I will is fate.*
174 *“So spoke th’Almighty and, to what He spoke,*
175 *His Word, the Filial Godhead gave effect.*
176 *Immediate are the acts of God, more swift*
177 *Than time or motion, but to human ears*
178 *Cannot without process of speech be told,*
179 *So told as earthly notion can receive.*
180 *Great triumph and rejoicing was in Heav’n,*
181 *When such was heard declared th’Almighty’s will.*
182 *Glory they sung to the Most High, good will*
183 *To future men, and in their dwellings peace*
184 *Glory to Him, whose just avenging ire*
185 *Had driven out the ungodly from His sight*
186 *And th’ habitations of the just; to Him*
187 *Glory and praise, whose wisdom had ordained*
188 *Good out of evil to create, instead*
189 *Of Spirits malign a better race to bring*
190 *Into their vacant room,^{[4170](#)} and thence diffuse*
191 *His good to worlds and ages infinite.*
192 *So sang the Hierarchies.^{[4171](#)}*

“Meanwhile the Son

193 *On his great expedition now appeared,*
194 *Girt with Omnipotence, with radiance crowned*
195 *Of Majesty Divine. Sapience^{[4172](#)} and love*
196 *Immense, and all his Father in him shone.*
197 *About his chariot numberless were poured*
198 *Cherub, and Seraph, Potentates, and Thrones,*
199 *And Virtues, wingèd Spirits, and chariots winged*
200 *From th’ armory^{[4173](#)} of God, where stand of old*
201 *Myriads, between two brazen^{[4174](#)} mountains lodged ^{[4175](#)}*

202 *Against a solemn day, harnessed at hand,*
203 *Celestial equipage, [4176](#) and now came forth*
204 *Spontaneous, [4177](#) for within them Spirit lived,*
205 *Attendant on their Lord. Heav'n op'ned wide*
206 *Her ever-during [4178](#) gates, harmonious sound*
207 *On golden hinges moving, to let forth*
208 *The King of Glory, in his powerful Word*
209 *And Spirit, coming to create new worlds.*
210 *On Heav'nly ground they stood, and from the shore*
211 *They viewed the vast immeasurable abyss*
212 *Outrageous [4179](#) as a sea, dark, wasteful, [4180](#) wild,*
213 *Up from the bottom turned by furious winds*
214 *And surging waves, as mountains, to assault*
215 *Heav'n's height, and with the center mix the pole.*
216 *“‘Silence, ye troubled waves, and thou, deep: peace!*
217 *Said then the Omnific [4181](#) Word. ‘Your discord end!*
218 *Nor stayed but on the wings of Cherubim*
219 *Uplifted, in paternal glory rode*
220 *Far into Chaos and the world unborn,*
221 *For Chaos heard His voice. Him all his train*
222 *Followed in bright procession, to behold*
223 *Creation, and the wonders of His might.*
224 *Then stayed the fervid [4182](#) wheels, and in His hand*
225 *He took the golden compasses, prepared*
226 *In God's eternal store, to circumscribe [4183](#)*
227 *This universe, and all created things.*
228 *One foot He centered, and the other turned*
229 *Round through the vast profundity [4184](#) obscure.*
230 *And said: ‘Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds,*
231 *This be thy just circumference, O world!*
232 *Thus God the Heav'n created, thus the earth,*

233 *Matter unformed and void. Darkness profound*⁴¹⁸⁵
234 *Covered the abyss, but on the wat'ry calm*
235 *His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspread,*
236 *And vital virtue infused, and vital warmth*
237 *Throughout the fluid mass, but downward purged* ⁴¹⁸⁶
238 *The black tartareous*⁴¹⁸⁷ *cold infernal dregs,*
239 *Adverse to life. Then founded,*⁴¹⁸⁸ *then conglobed*⁴¹⁸⁹
240 *Like things to like; the rest to several place*
241 *Disparted,*⁴¹⁹⁰ *and between*⁴¹⁹¹ *spun out the air,*
242 *And earth self-balanced on her center hung.*
243 *'Let there be light,' said God, and forthwith light*
244 *Ethereal,*⁴¹⁹² *first of things, quintessence*⁴¹⁹³ *pure,*
245 *Sprung from the deep, and from her native east*
246 *To journey through the airy gloom began,*
247 *Sphered in a radiant cloud, for yet the sun*
248 *Was not; she*⁴¹⁹⁴ *in a cloudy tabernacle*⁴¹⁹⁵
249 *Sojourned* ⁴¹⁹⁶ *the while. God saw the light was good,*
250 *And light from darkness by the hemisphere*
251 *Divided; light the Day, and darkness Night*
252 *He named. Thus was the first day, ev'n and morn,*
253 *Nor passed uncelebrated, nor unsung*
254 *By the celestial choirs, when orient*⁴¹⁹⁷ *light*
255 *Exhaling*⁴¹⁹⁸ *first from darkness they beheld,*
256 *Birth-day of Heav'n and earth. With joy and shout*
257 *The hollow universal orb they filled,*
258 *And touched their golden harps, and hymning praised*
259 *God and His works. Creator Him they sung,*
260 *Both when first ev'ning was, and when first morn.*
261 *Again, God said: 'Let there be firmament*⁴¹⁹⁹
262 *Amid the waters, and let it divide*
263 *The waters from the waters. 'And God made*

264 *The firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,*
265 *Transparent, elemental air, diffused*
266 *In circuit to the uttermost convex*
267 *Of this great round, partition⁴²⁰⁰ firm and sure,*
268 *The waters underneath from those above*
269 *Dividing, for as earth, so He the world*
270 *Built on circumfluous⁴²⁰¹ waters calm, in wide*
271 *Crystalline ocean, and the loud ⁴²⁰² misrule⁴²⁰³*
272 *Of Chaos far removed, ⁴²⁰⁴ lest fierce extremes*
273 *Contiguous⁴²⁰⁵ might distemper⁴²⁰⁶ the whole frame.*
274 *And Heav'n He named the firmament. So ev'n*
275 *And morning chorus sung the second day.*
276 *"The earth was formed, but in the womb as yet*
277 *Of waters, embryon⁴²⁰⁷ immature involved, ⁴²⁰⁸*
278 *Appeared not. Over all the face of earth*
279 *Main ocean flowed, not idle⁴²⁰⁹ but with warm*
280 *Prolific⁴²¹⁰ humor⁴²¹¹ soft'ning all her globe,*
281 *Fermented ⁴²¹² the great mother to conceive,*
282 *Satiate with genial⁴²¹³ moisture, when God said:*
283 *'Be gathered now ye waters under Heav'n*
284 *Into one place, and let dry land appear.*
285 *Immediately the mountains huge appear*
286 *Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave*
287 *Into the clouds, their tops ascend the sky,*
288 *So high as heaved the tumid ⁴²¹⁴ hills, so low*
289 *Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,*
290 *Capacious bed of waters. Thither they⁴²¹⁵*
291 *Hasted with glad precipitance, ⁴²¹⁶ uprolled ⁴²¹⁷*
292 *As drops on dust conglobing⁴²¹⁸ from the dry.*
293 *Part rise in crystal wall, or ridge⁴²¹⁹ direct,*
294 *For haste: such flight the great command impressed*

295 *On the swift floods. As armies at the call*
296 *Of trumpet (for of armies thou hast heard)*
297 *Troop⁴²²⁰ to their standard, so the wat'ry throng,*
298 *Wave rolling after wave, where way they found,*
299 *If steep, with torrent ⁴²²¹ rapture, ⁴²²² if through plain,*
300 *Soft-ebbing, ⁴²²³ nor withstood them rock or hill,*
301 *But they, or ⁴²²⁴ under ground, or circuit wide*
302 *With serpent error⁴²²⁵ wand'ring, found their way,*
303 *And on the washy⁴²²⁶ ooze deep channels wore*
304 *Easy, ⁴²²⁷ ere God had bid the ground be dry,*
305 *All but within those banks, where rivers now*
306 *Stream and perpetual draw their humid train.⁴²²⁸*
307 *The dry land, earth,⁴²²⁹ and the great receptacle*
308 *Of congregated waters, He called seas,*
309 *And saw that it was good. And said: 'Let th' earth*
310 *Put forth the verdant⁴²³⁰ grass, herb yielding seed,*
311 *And fruit-tree yielding fruit after her kind,*
312 *Whose seed is in herself upon the earth.*
313 *He scarce had said, when the bare earth, till then*
314 *Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorned,*
315 *Brought forth the tender grass, whose verdure clad*
316 *Her universal face with pleasant green.*
317 *Then herbs of every leaf, that sudden flowered*
318 *Op'ning their various colors, and made gay*
319 *Her bosom, smelling sweet, and these scarce blown,⁴²³¹*
320 *Forth flourished thick the clust'ring vine, forth crept*
321 *The swelling gourd, up stood the corny⁴²³² reed*
322 *Embattled ⁴²³³ in her field, and the humble shrub,*
323 *And bush with frizzled hair implicit.⁴²³⁴ Last*
324 *Rose, as in dance, the stately trees, and spread*
325

326 *Their branches hung with copious fruit, or gemmed [4235](#)*
327 *Their blossoms. With high woods the hills were crowned,*
328 *With tufts [4236](#) the valleys, and each fountain-side,*
329 *With borders long [4237](#) the rivers, that earth now*
330 *Seemed like to Heav'n, a seat where gods might dwell,*
331 *Or wander with delight, and love to haunt [4238](#)*
332 *Her sacred shades, though God had yet not rained*
333 *Upon the earth, and man to till the ground*
334 *None was. But from the earth a dewy mist*
335 *Went up, and watered all the ground, and each*
336 *Plant of the field, which ere it was in th' earth*
337 *God made, and every herb, before it grew*
338 *On the green stem. God saw that it was good.*
339 *So ev'n and morn recorded the third day.*
340 *“Again th' Almighty spoke: ‘Let there be lights*
341 *High in th' expanse of Heaven, to divide*
342 *The day from night, and let them be for signs,*
343 *For seasons, and for days, and circling years,*
344 *And let them be for lights, as I ordain*
345 *Their office in the firmament of Heav'n,*
346 *To give light on the earth. 'And it was so.*
347 *And God made two great lights, great for their use*
348 *To man, the greater to have rule by day,*
349 *The less by night, altern. [4239](#) And made the stars,*
350 *And set them in the firmament of Heav'n*
351 *T' illuminate the earth, and rule the day*
352 *In their vicissitude, [4240](#) and rule the night,*
353 *And light from darkness to divide. God saw,*
354 *Surveying His great work, that it was good,*
355 *For of celestial bodies first the sun*
356 *A mighty sphere He framed, unlightsome [4241](#) first, [4242](#)*

356 *Though of ethereal mould, then formed the moon*
357 *Globose, [4243](#) and every magnitude of stars,*
358 *And sowed with stars the Heav'n, thick as a field.*
35 *Of light by far the greater part He took,*
360 *Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and placed*
361 *In the sun's orb, made porous to receive*
362 *And drink the liquid light, firm to retain*
363 *Her gathered beams, great palace [4244](#) now of light.*
364 *Hither, as to their fountain, other stars*
365 *Repairing, [4245](#) in their golden urns draw light,*
366 *And hence the morning-planet [4246](#) gilds her horns. [4247](#)*
367 *By tincture [4248](#) or reflection they augment*
368 *Their small peculiar, [4249](#) though from human sight*
369 *So far remote, with diminution seen. [4250](#)*
370 *First in his east the glorious lamp was seen,*
371 *Regent [4251](#) of day, and all th' horizon round*
372 *Invested [4252](#) with bright rays, jocund [4253](#) to run*
373 *His longitude [4254](#) through Heav'n's high road. The gray*
374 *Dawn and the Pleiades before him danced,*
375 *Shedding sweet influence. [4255](#) Less bright the moon,*
376 *But opposite in levelled [4256](#) west was set,*
377 *His [4257](#) mirror, with full face borrowing her light*
378 *From him, for other light she needed none*
379 *In that aspect, [4258](#) and still that distance keeps*
380 *Till night, then in the east her turn she shines,*
381 *Revolved on Heav'n's great axle, and her reign*
382 *With thousand lesser lights dividual [4259](#) holds,*
383 *With thousand thousand stars, that then appeared*
384 *Spangling [4260](#) the hemisphere. Then first adorned*
385 *With their bright luminaries that set and rose,*

386 Glad ev'ning and glad morn crowned the fourth day.
387 "And God said: 'Let the waters generate
388 Reptile with spawn abundant, living soul,
389 And let fowl fly above the earth, with wings
390 Displayed on the open firmament of Heav'n.
391 And God created the great whales, and each
392 Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously
393 The waters generated by their kinds,
394 And every bird of wing after his kind,
395 And saw that it was good, and blessed them, saying:
396 'Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas,
397 And lakes, and running streams, the waters fill,
398 And let the fowl be multiplied on th' earth.
399 Forthwith the sounds⁴²⁶¹ and seas, each creek and bay,
400 With fry⁴²⁶² innumerable swarm, and shoals
401 Of fish that with their fins, and shining scales,
402 Glide under the green wave, in sculls⁴²⁶³ that oft
403 Bank⁴²⁶⁴ the mid sea, part single, or with mate,
404 Graze the sea-weed their pasture, and through groves
405 Of coral stray, or sporting⁴²⁶⁵ with quick glance,
406 Show to the sun their waved coats dropped ⁴²⁶⁶ with gold,
407 Or in their pearly shells at ease, attend ⁴²⁶⁷
408 Moist nutriment, or under rocks their food
409 In jointed armour watch.⁴²⁶⁸ On smooth⁴²⁶⁹ the seal
410 And bended ⁴²⁷⁰ dolphins play, part huge of bulk,
411 Wallowing⁴²⁷¹ unwieldy, ⁴²⁷² enormous in their gait
412 Tempest⁴²⁷³ the ocean. There Leviathan,
413 Hugest of living creatures, on the deep
414 Stretched like a promontory sleeps or swims,
415 And seems a moving land, and at his gills
416 Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out, a sea.

417 Meanwhile the tepid [4274](#) caves, and fens,[4275](#) and shores
418 Their brood as numerous hatch, from th' egg that soon
419 Bursting with kindly [4276](#) rupture forth disclosed
420 Their callow[4277](#) young, but feathered soon and fledge[4278](#)
421 They summed [4279](#) their pens[4280](#) and, soaring the air sublime, [4281](#)
422 With clang[4282](#) despised[4283](#) the ground, under a cloud
423 In prospect.[4284](#) There the eagle and the stork
424 On cliffs and cedar tops their eyries build.
425 Part loosely wing the region,[4285](#) part more wise
426 In common, ranged [4286](#) in figure, [4287](#) wedge[4288](#) their way,
427 Intelligent[4289](#) of seasons, and set forth
428 Their airy caravan, high over seas
429 Flying, and over lands, with mutual [4290](#) wing
430 Easing their flight. So steers the prudent crane
431 Her annual voyage, borne on winds. The air
432 Floats[4291](#) as they pass, fanned with unnumbered plumes.
433 From branch to branch the smaller birds with song
434 Solaced [4292](#) the woods, and spread their painted wings
435 Till ev'n,[4293](#) nor then the solemn[4294](#) nightingale
436 Ceased warbling, but all night tuned her soft lays.[4295](#)
437 Others, on silver lakes and rivers, bathed
438 Their downy breast; the swan with archèd neck,
439 Between her white wings mantling[4296](#) proudly, rows
440 Her state with oary feet; yet oft they quit
441 The dank [4297](#) and, rising on stiff pennons, tow'r[4298](#)
442 The mid aerial sky. Others on ground
443 Walked firm, the crested cock whose clarion[4299](#) sounds
444 The silent hours, and th' other [4300](#) whose gay train
445 Adorns him, colored with the florid hue
446 Of rainbows and starry eyes. The waters thus

447 With fish replenished, [4301](#) and the air with fowl,
448 Ev'ning and morn solemnized [4302](#) the fifth day.
449 "The sixth, and of Creation last, arose
450 With ev'ning harps, and matin, [4303](#) when God said:
451 'Let th' earth bring forth soul living, in her kind, [4304](#)
452 Cattle, and creeping things, and beast of th' earth,
453 Each in their kind. 'The earth obeyed, and straight
454 Op'ning her fertile womb teemed [4305](#) at a birth
455 Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms,
456 Limbed and full grown. Out of the ground up rose,
457 As from his lair, the wild beast where he wons [4306](#)
458 In forest wild, in thicket, brake, [4307](#) or den.
459 Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walked,
460 The cattle in the fields and meadows green,
461 Those [4308](#) rare and solitary, these [4309](#) in flocks
462 Pasturing at once, and in broad herds upsprung. [4310](#)
463 The grassy clods [4311](#) now calved: now half appeared
464 The tawny lion, pawing to get free
465 His hinder parts, then springs as broke from bonds,
466 And rampant [4312](#) shakes his brindled [4313](#) mane. The ounce, [4314](#)
467 The libbard, [4315](#) and the tiger, as the mole
468 Rising, the crumbled earth above them threw
469 In hillocks. The swift stag from under ground
470 Bore up his branching head. Scarce from his mould
471 Behemoth, [4316](#) biggest born of earth, upheaved
472 His vastness. Fleeced the flocks, and bleating rose
473 As [4317](#) plants. Ambiguous [4318](#) between [4319](#) sea and land
474 The river-horse, [4320](#) and scaly crocodile.
475 At once came forth whatever creeps the ground,
476 Insect or worm. Those waved their limber [4321](#) fans [4322](#)

477 For wings, and smallest lineaments⁴³²³ exact⁴³²⁴
478 In all the liveries decked of summer's pride
479 With spots of gold and purple, azure and green.
480 These as a line their long dimension drew,
481 Streaking⁴³²⁵ the ground with sinuous trace.⁴³²⁶ Not all
482 Minims⁴³²⁷ of Nature: some of serpent-kind,
483 Wondrous in length and corpulence, ⁴³²⁸involved ⁴³²⁹
484 Their snaky folds, and added ⁴³³⁰wings. First crept
485 The parsimonious emmet, ⁴³³¹provident
486 Of future, in small room large heart enclosed,
487 Pattern of just equality perhaps
488 Hereafter, joined in her popular⁴³³² tribes
489 Of commonalty. Swarming, next appeared
490 The female bee, that feeds her husband drone
491 Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells
492 With honey stored. The rest are numberless,
493 And thou their natures know'st, and gav'st them names,
494 Needless to thee repeated. Nor unknown
495 The serpent, subtlest⁴³³³ beast of all the field,
496 Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes
497 And hairy mane terrific, ⁴³³⁴though to thee
498 Not noxious, ⁴³³⁵but obedient at thy call.
499 "Now Heav'n in all her glory shone, and rolled
500 Her motions, as the great first Mover's hand
501 First wheeled their course. Earth in her rich attire
502 Consummate⁴³³⁶ lovely smiled. Air, water, earth,
503 By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was walked,
504 Frequent, and of the sixth day yet remained.
505 There wanted yet the master-work, the end ⁴³³⁷
506 Of all yet done, a creature who not prone⁴³³⁸
507 And brute ⁴³³⁹as other creatures, but endued

508 With sanctity [4340](#) of reason, might erect
509 His stature, and upright with front [4341](#) serene
510 Govern the rest, self-knowing, and from thence
511 Magnanimous [4342](#) to correspond [4343](#) with Heav'n,
512 But grateful to acknowledge whence his good
513 Descends, thither with heart, and voice, and eyes
514 Directed in devotion, to adore
515 And worship God Supreme, who made him chief
516 Of all His works. Therefore th' Omnipotent
517 Eternal Father (for where is not He
518 Present?) thus to His Son audibly spoke:
519 “Let us make now man in our image, man
520 In our similitude, [4344](#) and let them [4345](#) rule
521 Over the fish and fowl of sea and air,
522 Beast of the field, and over all the earth,
523 And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.
524 This said, He formed thee, Adam, thee, O man,
525 Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breathed
526 The breath of life. In His own image He
527 Created thee, in the image of God
528 Express, [4346](#) and thou becam'st a living soul.
529 Male He created thee, but thy consort
530 Female, for race, [4347](#) then blessed mankind, and said:
531 ‘Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth;
532 Subdue [4348](#) it, and throughout dominion hold
533 Over fish of the sea, and fowl of the air,
534 And every living thing that moves on th' earth.
535 Wherever thus created, for no place
536 Is yet distinct [4349](#) by name, thence, as thou know'st,
537 He brought thee into this delicious grove,
538 This garden, planted with the trees of God,

539 *Delectable both to behold and taste,*
540 *And freely all their pleasant fruit for food*
541 *Gave thee. All sorts are here that all th' earth yields,*
542 *Variety without end. But of the tree*
543 *Which tasted, works knowledge of good and evil,*
544 *Thou may'st not. In the day thou eat'st, thou di'st.*[⁴³⁵⁰](#)
545 *Death is the penalty imposed. Beware,*
546 *And govern well thy appetite, lest Sin*
547 *Surprise thee, and her black attendant, Death.*
548 *"Here finished He, and all that He had made*
549 *Viewed, and behold all was entirely good.*
550 *So ev'n and morn accomplished the sixth day.*
551 *"Yet not till the Creator from His work*
552 *Desisting, though unwearied, up returned,*
553 *Up to the Heav'n of Heav'ns, His high abode,*
554 *Thence to behold this new created world,*
555 *Th' addition of His empire, how it showed*
556 *In prospect from His throne, how good, how fair,*
557 *Answering*[⁴³⁵¹](#) *His great idea.*[⁴³⁵²](#) *Up He rode*
558 *Followed with acclamation, and the sound*
559 *Symphonious of ten thousand harps, that tuned*
560 *Angelic harmonies. The earth, the air*
561 *Resounded (thou rememb'rest, for thou heard'st)*
562 *The Heav'ns and all the constellations rung,*
563 *The planets in their station listening stood,*
564 *While the bright pomp*[⁴³⁵³](#) *ascended jubilant.*
565 *'Open, ye everlasting gates!' they sung,*
566 *'Open, ye Heav'ns! your living doors! Let in*
567 *The great Creator from His work returned*
568 *Magnificent, His six days work, a world!*
569 *Open, and henceforth oft, for God will deign*

570 *To visit oft the dwellings of just men,*
571 *Delighted, and with frequent intercourse*
572 *Thither will send His wingèd messengers*
573 *On errands of supernal [4354](#) grace. ’ So sung*
574 *The glorious train⁴³⁵⁵ ascending. He through Heav’n,*
575 *That opened wide her blazing portals, led*
576 *To God’s eternal house direct the way,*
577 *A broad and ample road, whose dust is gold*
578 *And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear,*
579 *Seen in the galaxy, that milky way*
580 *Which nightly, as a circling zone, [4356](#) thou see’st*
581 *Powdered with stars. And now on earth the seventh*
582 *Ev’ning arose in Eden, for the sun*
583 *Was set, and twilight from the east came on,*
584 *Forerunning night, when at the holy mount*
585 *Of Heav’n’s high-seated top, the imperial throne*
586 *Of Godhead, fixed for ever firm and sure,*
587 *The Filial Power arrived, and sat him down*
588 *With his great Father, for he also went*
589 *Invisible, yet stayed [4357](#) (such privilege*
590 *Hath Omnipresence), and the work ordained,*
591 *Author and End of all things, and from work*
592 *Now resting, blessed and hallowed the sev’nth day,*
593 *As resting on that day from all His work,*
594 *But not in silence holy kept. The harp*
595 *Had work and rested not, the solemn pipe,*
596 *And dulcimer, all organs of sweet stop,*
597 *All sounds on fret [4358](#) by string or golden wire,*
598 *Tempered [4359](#) soft tunings, intermixed with voice*
599 *Choral or unison. Of incense clouds,*
600 *Fuming from golden censers, hid the mount.*

601 *Creation and the six days acts they sung:*
602 *“‘Great are thy works, Jehovah! Infinite*
603 *Thy power! What thought can measure Thee, or tongue*
604 *Relate thee? Greater now in Thy return*
605 *Than from the giant Angels. Thee that day*
606 *Thy thunders magnified, but to create*
607 *Is greater than created [4360](#) to destroy.*
608 *Who can impair [4361](#) Thee, Mighty King, or bound [4362](#)*
609 *Thy empire? Easily the proud attempt*
610 *Of Spirits apostate, and their counsels vain,*
611 *Thou hast repelled, while impiously they thought*
612 *Thee to diminish, and from Thee withdraw*
613 *The number of Thy worshippers. Who seeks*
614 *To lessen Thee, against his purpose serves*
615 *To manifest the more Thy might. His evil*
616 *Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.*
617 *Witness this new-made world, another Heav'n*
618 *From Heaven-gate not far, founded in view*
619 *On the clear hyaline, [4363](#) the glassy sea,*
620 *Of amplitude almost immense, [4364](#) with stars*
621 *Numerous, and every star perhaps a world*
622 *Of destined habitation. But thou know'st*
623 *Their seasons. Among [4365](#) these the seat of men,*
624 *Earth, with her nether [4366](#) ocean circumfused, [4367](#)*
625 *Their pleasant dwelling-place. Thrice happy men,*
626 *And sons of men, whom God hath thus advanced! [4368](#)*
627 *Created in His image, there to dwell*
628 *And worship Him, and in reward to rule*
629 *Over His works, on earth, in sea, or air,*
630 *And multiply a race of worshippers*
631 *Holy and just. Thrice happy, if they know*

632 *Their happiness, and persevere upright!*
633 *“So sung they, and the empyrean rung*
634 *With hallelujahs. Thus was sabbath kept.*
635 *And thy request think now fulfilled, that asked*
636 *How first this world and face [4369](#) of things began,*
637 *And what before thy memory was done*
638 *From the beginning, that [4370](#) posterity,*
639 *Informed by thee, might know. If else thou seek'st*
640 *Aught, not surpassing human measure, [4371](#) say.*

The End of the Seventh Book

BOOK VIII

THE ARGUMENT

Adam inquires concerning celestial motions, is doubtfully answered, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge. Adam assents, and still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remembered since his own creation, his placing in Paradise, his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society, his first meeting and nuptials with Eve, his discourse with the Angel thereupon, who after admonitions repeated departs.

1 *The Angel ended, and in Adam's ear*
2 *So charming⁴³⁷² left his voice, that he a while*
3 *Thought him still speaking, still stood fixed ⁴³⁷³ to hear,*
4 *Then, as new waked, thus gratefully replied:*
5 *“What thanks sufficient, or what recompence*
6 *Equal, have I to render thee, divine*
7 *Historian,⁴³⁷⁴ who thus largely ⁴³⁷⁵ hast allayed*
8 *The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsafed*
9 *This friendly condescension to relate*
10 *Things else by me unsearchable?⁴³⁷⁶ now heard*
11 *With wonder, but delight, and as is due*
12 *With glory attributed to the high*
13 *Creator! Something yet of doubt remains,*
14 *Which only thy solution⁴³⁷⁷ can resolve.*
15 *When I behold this goodly frame, ⁴³⁷⁸ this world,*
16 *Of Heav'n and earth consisting, and compute*

17 *Their magnitudes, this earth, a spot, a grain,*
18 *An atom, with the firmament compared*
19 *And all her numbered stars, that seem to roll*
20 *Spaces incomprehensible (for such*
21 *Their distance argues,*[4379](#) *and their swift return*
22 *Diurnal)*[4380](#) *merely to officiate*[4381](#) *light*
23 *Round this opaceous*[4382](#) *earth, this punctual* [4383](#) *spot,*
24 *One day and night, in all her vast survey* [4384](#)
25 *Useless besides, reasoning I oft admire*[4385](#)
26 *How Nature wise and frugal could commit*
27 *Such disproportions, with superfluous hand*
28 *So many nobler bodies to create,*
29 *Greater so manifold, to this one use*
30 *(For aught appears), and on their orbs impose*
31 *Such restless*[4386](#) *revolution*[4387](#) *day by day*
32 *Repeated, while the sedentary*[4388](#) *earth,*
33 *That better might with far less compass*[4389](#) *move,*
34 *Served by more*[4390](#) *noble than herself, attains*
35 *Her end without least motion, and receives,*
36 *As tribute, such a sumless*[4391](#) *journey brought* [4392](#)
37 *Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light—*
38 *Speed, to describe whose swiftness number fails.*
39 *So spoke our sire, and by his count'nance seemed*
40 *Entering on studious thoughts abstruse,* [4393](#) *which Eve*
41 *Perceiving, where she sat retired in*[4394](#) *sight,*
42 *With lowliness*[4395](#) *majestic from her seat,*
43 *And grace that won*[4396](#) *who*[4397](#) *saw to wish her stay,*
44 *Rose and went forth among her fruits and flow'rs,*
45 *To visit* [4398](#) *how they prospered, bud and bloom,*
46 *Her nursery. They at her coming sprung*
47

And, touched by her fair tendance, [4399](#) gladlier grew.
48 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse
49 Delighted, or not capable her ear
50 Of what was high: such pleasure she reserved, [4400](#)
51 Adam relating, [4401](#) she sole auditress. [4402](#)
52 Her husband the relater she preferred
53 Before the Angel, and of him to ask
54 Chose [4403](#) rather. He, she knew, would intermix
55 Grateful [4404](#) digressions, and solve high dispute
56 With conjugal caresses: from his lip
57 Not words alone pleased her. (O! when meet [4405](#) now
58 Such pairs, in love and mutual honor joined?
59 With goddess-like demeanor forth she went,
60 Not unattended, for on her, as queen,
61 A pomp [4406](#) of winning graces waited still,
62 And from about her shot darts of desire
63 Into all eyes, to wish her still in sight.
64 And Raphael now, to Adam's doubt proposed,
65 Benevolent and facile, [4407](#) thus replied:
66 "To ask or search, I blame thee not, for Heav'n
67 Is as the book of God before thee set,
68 Wherein to read His wondrous works, and learn
69 His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years.
70 This to attain, [4408](#) whether Heav'n move or earth,
71 Imports [4409](#) not if [4410](#) thou reckon [4411](#) right. The rest
72 From man or Angel the great Architect
73 Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge
74 His secrets to be scanned [4412](#) by them who ought
75 Rather admire, [4413](#) or if they list [4414](#) to try
76 Conjecture, He His fabric of the Heav'ns
77 Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move

78 His laughter at their quaint⁴⁴¹⁵ opinions wide⁴⁴¹⁶
79 Hereafter. When they come to model ⁴⁴¹⁷Heav'n
80 And calculate the stars, how they will wield ⁴⁴¹⁸
81 The mighty frame, how build, unbuild, contrive
82 To save⁴⁴¹⁹ appearances, ⁴⁴²⁰how gird ⁴⁴²¹the sphere
83 With centric⁴⁴²² and eccentric⁴⁴²³ scribbled o'er,
84 Cycle⁴⁴²⁴ and epicycle, ⁴⁴²⁵orb⁴⁴²⁶ in orb.
85 Already by thy reasoning this I guess,
86 Who⁴⁴²⁷ art to lead thy offspring, and supposest
87 That bodies bright and greater should not serve
88 The less not bright, nor Heav'n such journeys run,
89 Earth sitting still, when she alone receives
90 The benefit.

“Consider, first, that great
91 Or bright infers⁴⁴²⁸ not excellence. The earth,
92 Though in comparison of Heav'n so small,
93 Nor glistening, ⁴⁴²⁹may of solid good contain
94 More plenty than the sun that barren shines,
95 Whose virtue⁴⁴³⁰ on itself works no effect,
96 But in the fruitful earth, there first received,
97 His beams, unactive⁴⁴³¹ else, ⁴⁴³²their vigor⁴⁴³³ find.
98 Yet not to earth are those bright luminaries
99 Officious, ⁴⁴³⁴but to thee, earth's habitant.
100 And for the Heav'n's wide circuit, let it speak
101 The Maker's high magnificence, who built
102 So spacious, and His line stretched out so far
103 That man may know he dwells not in his own,
104 An edifice too large for him to fill,
105 Lodged in a small partition, ⁴⁴³⁵and the rest
106 Ordained for uses to his Lord best known.
107 The swiftness of those circles attribute, ⁴⁴³⁶

108 *Though numberless, to His Omnipotence,*
109 *That to corporeal substances could add*
110 *Speed almost spiritual. Me thou think'st not slow,*
111 *Who since the morning-hour set out from Heav'n*
112 *Where God resides, and ere mid-day arrived*
113 *In Eden—distance inexpressible*
114 *By numbers that have name. But this I urge, [4437](#)*
115 *Admitting [4438](#) motion in the Heav'ns, to show*
116 *Invalid that which thee to doubt it moved. [4439](#)*
117 *Not that I so affirm, [4440](#) though so it seem*
118 *To thee who hast thy dwelling here on earth.*
119 *God, to remove His ways from human sense,*
120 *Placed Heav'n from earth so far, that earthly sight,*
121 *If it presume, might err in things too high,*
122 *And no advantage gain. What if the sun*
123 *Be center to the world? and other stars,*
124 *By his [4441](#) attractive [4442](#) virtue [4443](#) and their own*
125 *Incited, dance about him various rounds?*
126 *Their wand'ring course now high, now low, then hid,*
127 *Progressive, [4444](#) retrograde, [4445](#) or standing still,*
128 *In six [4446](#) thou see'st? And what if sev'nth to these*
129 *The planet earth, so steadfast though she seem,*
130 *Insensibly three different motions move,*
131 *Which else to several spheres thou must ascribe,*
132 *Moved contrary with thwart [4447](#) obliquities, [4448](#)*
133 *Or save the sun his labor, and that swift*
134 *Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb [4449](#) supposed,*
135 *Invisible [4450](#) else above all stars, the wheel*
136 *Of day and night, which needs not thy belief*
137 *If earth, industrious [4451](#) of herself, fetch [4452](#) day*
138 *Travelling east, and with her part averse*

139 *From the sun's beam meet night, her other part*
140 *Still luminous by his⁴⁴⁵³ ray? What if that light,*
141 *Sent from her ⁴⁴⁵⁴ through the wide transpicious⁴⁴⁵⁵ air,*
142 *To the terrestrial moon be as a star,*
143 *Enlight'ning her⁴⁴⁵⁶ by day, as she ⁴⁴⁵⁷ by night*
144 *This earth, reciprocal, if land be there,*
145 *Fields and inhabitants? Her spots thou see'st*
146 *As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce*
147 *Fruits in her softened soil for some to eat*
148 *Allotted ⁴⁴⁵⁸ there. And other suns perhaps,*
149 *With their attendant moons, thou wilt descry,*
150 *Communicating male and female light,⁴⁴⁵⁹*
151 *Which two great sexes animate the world,*
152 *Stored in each orb perhaps with some that live.*
153 *For such vast room⁴⁴⁶⁰ in Nature unpossessed*
154 *By living soul, desert ⁴⁴⁶¹ and desolate,*
155 *Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute⁴⁴⁶²*
156 *Each orb a glimpse of light, conveyed so far*
157 *Down to this habitable, ⁴⁴⁶³ which returns*
158 *Light back to them, is obvious to dispute. ⁴⁴⁶⁴*
159 *But whether thus these things, or whether not—*
160 *But whether the sun, predominant in Heav'n,*
161 *Rise on the earth, or earth rise on the sun—*
162 *He from the east his flaming road begin,*
163 *Or she from west her silent course advance,*
164 *With inoffensive⁴⁴⁶⁵ pace that spinning sleeps*
165 *On her soft axle, while she paces ev'n,⁴⁴⁶⁶*
166 *And bears thee soft with the smooth air along—*
167 *Solicit⁴⁴⁶⁷ not thy thoughts with matters hid.*
168 *Leave them to God above. Him serve, and fear!*
169 *Of other creatures, as Him pleases best,*

170 *Wherever placed, let Him dispose. Joy thou*
171 *In what He gives to thee, this Paradise*
172 *And thy fair Eve. Heav'n is for thee too high*
173 *To know what passes there. Be lowly [4468](#) wise,*
174 *Think only what concerns thee, and thy being.*
175 *Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there*
176 *Live, in what state, [4469](#) condition, [4470](#) or degree, [4471](#)*
177 *Contented that thus far hath been revealed*
178 *Not of earth only, but of highest Heav'n.*
179 *To whom thus Adam, cleared of doubt, replied:*
180 *“How fully hast thou satisfied me, pure*
181 *Intelligence of Heav'n, Angel serene!*
182 *And, freed from intricacies, [4472](#) taught to live*
183 *The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts*
184 *To interrupt the sweet of life, from which*
185 *God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares,*
186 *And not molest [4473](#) us, unless we ourselves*
187 *Seek them with wand'ring thoughts, and notions vain.*
188 *But apt the mind or fancy is to rove*
189 *Unchecked, and of her roving is no end,*
190 *Till warned, or by experience taught, she learn*
191 *That not to know at large [4474](#) of things remote*
192 *From use, obscure and subtle, [4475](#) but to know*
193 *That which before us lies in daily life,*
194 *Is the prime wisdom. What is more, is fume [4476](#)*
195 *Or emptiness, or fond [4477](#) impertinence, [4478](#)*
196 *And renders us, in things that most concern*
197 *Unpractised, unprepared, and still to seek.*
198 *Therefore from this high pitch [4479](#) let us descend [4480](#)*
199 *A lower flight, and speak of things at hand*
200 *Useful, whence haply, [4481](#) mention may arise*

201 *Of something not unseasonable to ask,*
202 *By sufferance, [4482](#) and thy wonted [4483](#) favor, deigned.*
203 *“Thee I have heard relating what was done*
204 *Ere my remembrance. Now, hear me relate*
205 *My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard.*
206 *And day is not yet spent—till then thou see’st*
207 *How subtly to detain thee I devise,*
208 *Inviting thee to hear while I relate.*
209 *Fond! [4484](#) were it not in hope of thy reply,*
210 *For while I sit with thee, I seem in Heav’n,*
211 *And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear*
212 *Than fruits of palm-tree pleasantest to thirst*
213 *And hunger both, from [4485](#) labor, at the hour*
214 *Of sweet repast. [4486](#) They satiate, [4487](#) and soon fill,*
215 *Though pleasant, but thy words, with grace divine*
216 *Imbued, [4488](#) bring to their sweetness no satiety.”[4489](#)*
217 *To whom thus Raphael answered, Heav’nly meek:[4490](#)*
218 *“Nor are thy lips ungraceful, sire of men,*
219 *Nor tongue ineloquent. For God on thee*
220 *Abundantly His gifts hath also poured*
221 *Inward and outward both, His image fair.*
222 *Speaking or mute, [4491](#) all comeliness and grace*
223 *Attends thee, and each word, each motion [4492](#) forms. [4493](#)*
224 *Nor less think we in Heav’n of thee on earth*
225 *Than of our fellow-servant, and inquire*
226 *Gladly into the ways of God with man,*
227 *For God, we see, hath honored thee, and set*
228 *On man His equal love. Say therefore on,*
229 *For I that day was absent, as befell, [4494](#)*
230 *Bound on a voyage uncouth [4495](#) and obscure, [4496](#)*
231 *Far on excursion [4497](#) toward the gates of Hell,*

232 *Squared [4498](#) in full legion⁴⁴⁹⁹ (such command we had)*
233 *To see that none thence issued forth a spy*
234 *Or enemy, while God was in His work,*
235 *Lest He, incensed at such eruption⁴⁵⁰⁰ bold,*
236 *Destruction with creation might have mixed.*
237 *Not that they durst without His leave attempt—*
238 *But us He sends upon His high behests*
239 *For state, as Sov'reign King, and to inure⁴⁵⁰¹*
240 *Our prompt obedience. ⁴⁵⁰² Fast we found, fast shut,*
241 *The dismal gates, and barricado'd ⁴⁵⁰³ strong,*
242 *But long ere our approaching heard within*
243 *Noise, other than the sound of dance or song,*
244 *Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.*
245 *Glad we returned up to the coasts of light*
246 *Ere sabbath-ev'ning: so we had in charge. ⁴⁵⁰⁴*
247 *But thy relation⁴⁵⁰⁵ now, for I attend, ⁴⁵⁰⁶*
248 *Pleased with thy words no less than thou with mine.*
249 *So spoke the godlike Power, and thus our sire:*
250 *“For man to tell how human life began*
251 *Is hard, for who himself beginning knew?*
252 *Desire with thee still longer to converse*
253 *Induced ⁴⁵⁰⁷ me. As new waked from soundest sleep,*
254 *Soft on the flow'ry herb⁴⁵⁰⁸ I found me laid,*
255 *In balmy⁴⁵⁰⁹ sweat, which with his beams the sun*
256 *Soon dried, and on the reeking⁴⁵¹⁰ moisture fed.*
257 *Straight toward Heav'n my wond'ring eyes I turned,*
258 *And gazed a while the ample sky, till raised*
259 *By quick instinctive motion, up I sprung,*
260 *As thitherward endeavoring, and upright*
261 *Stood on my feet. About me round I saw*
262 *Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,*

263 And liquid lapse⁴⁵¹¹ of murmuring streams. By⁴⁵¹² these,
264 Creatures that lived and moved, and walked, or flew,
265 Birds on the branches warbling—all things smiled.
266 With fragrance and with joy my heart o'erflowed.
267 Myself I then perused, and limb by limb
268 Surveyed, and sometimes went,⁴⁵¹³ and sometimes ran
269 With supple joints, as lively vigor led.
270 But who I was, or where, or from what cause,
271 Knew not. To speak I tried, and forthwith spoke.
272 My tongue obeyed, and readily could name
273 Whate'er I saw. 'Thou Sun,' said I, 'fair light,
274 And thou enlight'ned ⁴⁵¹⁴ earth, so fresh and gay,
275 Ye hills and dales, ye rivers, woods, and plains,
276 And ye that live and move, fair creatures, tell,
277 Tell, if ye saw, how I came thus, how here?
278 Not of myself—by some great Maker, then,
279 In goodness and in power preëminent.
280 Tell me, how may I know Him, how adore,
281 From whom I have that thus I move and live,
282 And feel that I am happier than I know.
283 While thus I called, and strayed I knew not whither
284 From where I first drew air, and first beheld
285 This happy light—when, answer none returned,
286 On a green shady bank, profuse of flowers,
287 Pensive I sat me down. There gentle sleep
288 First found me, and with soft oppression⁴⁵¹⁵ seized
289 My drowsèd ⁴⁵¹⁶ sense, untroubled, though I thought
290 I then was passing to my former state
291 Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve.
292 When suddenly stood at my head a dream,
293 Whose inward apparition⁴⁵¹⁷ gently moved

294 *My fancy to believe I yet had being,*
295 *And lived. One came, methought, of shape divine,*
296 *And said, ‘Thy mansion⁴⁵¹⁸ wants⁴⁵¹⁹ thee, Adam. Rise,*
297 *First man, of men innumerable ordained*
298 *First father! Called by thee, I come thy guide*
299 *To the garden of bliss, thy seat prepared.*
300 *So saying, by the hand He took me raised,*
301 *And over fields and waters, as in air*
302 *Smooth-sliding without step, last led me up*
303 *A woody mountain, whose high top was plain,*
304 *A circuit wide, enclosed with goodliest trees*
305 *Planted, with walks, and bowers, that what I saw*
306 *Of earth before scarce pleasant seemed. Each tree,*
307 *Loaden with fairest fruit that hung to the eye*
308 *Tempting, stirred in me sudden appetite*
309 *To pluck and eat, whereat I waked, and found*
310 *Before mine eyes all real,⁴⁵²⁰ as the dream*
311 *Had lively⁴⁵²¹ shadowed.⁴⁵²² Here had new begun*
312 *My wand’ring, had not He, who was my guide*
313 *Up hither, from among the trees appeared,*
314 *Presence Divine. Rejoicing, but with awe,*
315 *In adoration at His feet I fell*
316 *Submiss. He reared me, and ‘Whom thou sought’st I am,*
317 *Said mildly, ‘Author of all this thou see’st*
318 *Above, or round about thee, or beneath.*
319 *This Paradise I give thee, count it thine*
320 *To till ⁴⁵²³ and keep, and of the fruit to eat.*
321 *Of every tree that in the garden grows*
322 *Eat freely with glad heart, fear here no dearth.⁴⁵²⁴*
323 *But of the tree whose operation⁴⁵²⁵ brings*
324 *Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set*

325 The pledge⁴⁵²⁶ of thy obedience and thy faith,
326 Amid the garden by⁴⁵²⁷ the Tree of Life,
327 Remember what I warn thee: shun to taste,
328 And shun the bitter consequence. For know,
329 The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command
330 Transgressed, inevitably⁴⁵²⁸ thou shalt die,
331 From that day mortal, and this happy state
332 Shalt lose, expelled from hence into a world
333 Of woe and sorrow. ' Sternly He pronounced
334 The rigid interdiction, which resounds
335 Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice
336 Not to incur. But soon His clear aspect⁴⁵²⁹
337 Returned, and gracious purpose⁴⁵³⁰ thus renewed:
338 'Not only these fair bounds,⁴⁵³¹ but all the earth
339 To thee and to thy race I give. As lords
340 Possess it, and all things that therein live,
341 Or live in sea, or air, beast, fish, and fowl.
342 In sign whereof each bird and beast behold
343 After their kinds; I bring them to receive
344 From thee their names, and pay thee fealty⁴⁵³²
345 With low subjection. Understand the same
346 Of fish within their wat'ry residence,
347 Not hither summoned, since they cannot change
348 Their element, to draw⁴⁵³³ the thinner air.
349 As thus he spoke, each bird and beast behold
350 Approaching two and two, these⁴⁵³⁴ cowering low
351 With blandishment,⁴⁵³⁵ each bird stooped on his wing.
352 I named them, as they passed, and understood
353 Their nature, with such knowledge God endued ⁴⁵³⁶
354 My sudden apprehension.⁴⁵³⁷ But in these
355 I found not what methought I wanted still,

356 *And to the Heav'nly vision thus presumed:*[4538](#)
357 *“O by what name, for Thou above all these,*
358 *Above mankind, or aught than mankind higher,*
359 *Surpassest far my naming? How may I*
360 *Adore Thee, Author of this universe,*
361 *And all this good to man? for whose well being*
362 *So amply, and with hands so liberal,*
363 *Thou hast provided all things. But with me*
364 *I see not who partakes. In solitude*
365 *What happiness? Who can enjoy alone,*
366 *Or all enjoying, what contentment find?*
367 *Thus I presumptuous, and the Vision bright,*
368 *As with a smile more bright'ned, thus replied:*
369 *“What call'st thou solitude? Is not the earth*
370 *With various living creatures, and the air*
371 *Replenished,*[4539](#) *and all these at thy command*
372 *To come and play*[4540](#) *before thee? Know'st thou not*
373 *Their language and their ways? They also know,*
374 *And reason not contemptibly. With these*
375 *Find pastime,*[4541](#) *and bear*[4542](#) *rule. Thy realm is large.*
376 *So spoke the Universal Lord, and seemed*
377 *So ordering. I, with leave of speech implored,*
378 *And humble deprecation,*[4543](#) *thus replied:*
379 *“Let not my words offend Thee, Heav'nly Power.*
380 *My Maker, be propitious*[4544](#) *while I speak.*
381 *Hast Thou not made me here Thy substitute,*
382 *And these inferior far beneath me set?*
383 *Among inequals what society*
384 *Can sort,*[4545](#) *what harmony or true delight?*
385 *Which must be mutual, in proportion due*
386 *Giv'n and received. But in disparity*

387 *The one intense, [4546](#) the other still remiss, [4547](#)*
388 *Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove*
389 *Tedious [4548](#) alike. [4549](#) Of fellowship I speak*
390 *Such as I seek, fit to participate [4550](#)*
391 *All rational delight, wherein the brute*
392 *Cannot be human consort. [4551](#) They rejoice*
393 *Each with their kind, lion with lioness,*
394 *So fitly [4552](#) them in pairs Thou hast combined.*
395 *Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl*
396 *So well converse, [4553](#) nor with the ox the ape.*
397 *Worse then can man with beast, and least of*
398 *Whereto the Almighty answer*
399 *“A nice [4554](#) and subtle happiness, I see,*
400 *Thou to thyself proposest, in the choice*
401 *Of thy associates, Adam! And wilt taste*
402 *No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.*
403 *What think’st thou then of me, and this m*
404 *Seem I to thee sufficiently possessed*
405 *Of happiness, or not? who am alone*
406 *From all eternity? For none I know*
407 *Second to me or like, equal much less.*
408 *How have I then with whom to hold converse, [4555](#)*
409 *Save with the creatures which I made*
410 *To me inferior, infinite descents*
411 *Beneath what other creatures are to thee?*
412 *He ceased; I lowly answered:*

“‘To attain

413 *The height and depth of Thy eternal ways*
414 *All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things!*
415 *Thou in Thyself art perfect, and in Thee*
416 *Is no deficiency found. Not so is man,*

417 But in degree, the cause of his desire
418 By conversation⁴⁵⁵⁶ with his like to help
419 Or solace⁴⁵⁵⁷ his defects. No need that Thou
420 Should'st propagate, already Infinite,
421 And through all numbers Absolute, ⁴⁵⁵⁸ though One.
422 But man by number is to manifest⁴⁵⁵⁹
423 His single imperfection,⁴⁵⁶⁰ and beget
424 Like of his like, his image multiplied,
425 In unity defective, which requires
426 Collateral⁴⁵⁶¹ love, and dearest amity. ⁴⁵⁶²
427 Thou in Thy secrecy⁴⁵⁶³ although alone,
428 Best with Thyself accompanied, seek'st not
429 Social communication, yet, so pleased,
430 Canst raise Thy creature to what height Thou wilt
431 Of union or communion, deified.
432 I by conversing cannot these⁴⁵⁶⁴ erect
433 From prone, nor in their ways complacence⁴⁵⁶⁵ find.
434 Thus I embold'ned spoke, and freedom used
435 Permissive, and acceptance found, which gained
436 This answer from the gracious voice Divine:
437 “Thus far to try⁴⁵⁶⁶ thee, Adam, I was pleased,
438 And find thee knowing, not of beasts alone,
439 Which thou hast rightly named, but of thyself,
440 Expressing well the spirit within thee free,
441 My image, not imparted to the brute,
442 Whose fellowship therefore unmeet ⁴⁵⁶⁷ for thee
443 Good reason was thou freely should'st dislike,
444 And be so minded still.⁴⁵⁶⁸ I ere thou spok'st
445 Knew it not good for man to be alone,
446 And no such company as then thou saw'st
447 Intended thee—for trial only brought,⁴⁵⁶⁹

448 *To see how thou could'st judge of fit and meet.*
449 *What next I bring shall please thee, be assured,*
550 *Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self,*
451 *Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire.*
452 *He ended, or I heard no more, for now*
453 *My earthly by His Heav'nly overpowered,*
454 *Which it had long stood [4570](#) under, strained to the height*
455 *In that celestial colloquy [4571](#) sublime, [4572](#)*
456 *As with an object that excels [4573](#) the sense,*
457 *Dazzled and spent, sunk down, and sought repair [4574](#)*
458 *Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, called*
459 *By Nature as in aid, and closed mine eyes.*
460 *“Mine eyes He closed, but open left the cell*
461 *Of fancy, my internal sight, by which,*
462 *Abstract [4575](#) as in a trance, methought I saw, [4576](#)*
463 *Though sleeping where I lay, and saw the shape*
464 *Still glorious before whom awake I stood,*
465 *Who stooping op'ned my left side, and took*
466 *From thence a rib, with cordial [4577](#) spirits warm,*
467 *And life-blood streaming fresh. Wide was the wound,*
468 *But suddenly with flesh filled up and healed.*
469 *The rib He formed and fashioned with His hands.*
470 *Under His forming hands a creature grew,*
471 *Man-like, but different sex, so lovely fair*
472 *That what seemed fair in all the world seemed now*
473 *Mean [4578](#) or in her summed up, in her contained*
474 *And in her looks, which from that time infused [4579](#)*
475 *Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before,*
476 *And into all things from her air [4580](#) inspired*
477 *The spirit of love and amorous delight.*
478 *She disappeared, and left me dark; I waked*

479 To⁴⁵⁸¹ find her, or for ever to deplore
480 Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure—⁴⁵⁸²
481 When, out of hope, behold her, not far off,
482 Such as I saw her in my dream, adorned
483 With what all earth or Heav'n could bestow
484 To make her amiable. ⁴⁵⁸³ On she came,
485 Led by her Heav'nly Maker, though unseen,
486 And guided by His voice, nor uninformed
487 Of nuptial sanctity and marriage rites.
488 Grace was in all her steps, Heav'n in her eye,
489 In every gesture dignity and love.
490 I overjoyed could not forbear ⁴⁵⁸⁴ aloud:
491 “‘This turn⁴⁵⁸⁵ hath made amends! Thou hast fulfilled
492 Thy words, Creator bounteous and benign,
493 Giver of all things fair! But fairest this
494 Of all Thy gifts, nor enviest. ⁴⁵⁸⁶ I now see
495 Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh, myself
496 Before me. Woman is her name, of man
497 Extracted. ⁴⁵⁸⁷ For this cause he shall forego
498 Father and mother, and to his wife adhere,
499 And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul.
500 “She heard me thus, and though divinely brought⁴⁵⁸⁸
501 Yet innocence, and virgin modesty,
502 Her virtue, and the conscience ⁴⁵⁸⁹ of her worth,
503 That would be wooed, and not unsought be won,
504 Not obvious, ⁴⁵⁹⁰ not obtrusive, ⁴⁵⁹¹ but retired, ⁴⁵⁹²
505 The more desirable—or, to say all,
506 Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,
507 Wrought ⁴⁵⁹³ in her so that, seeing me, she turned.
508 I followed her. She what was honor knew,
509 And with obsequious⁴⁵⁹⁴ majesty approved ⁴⁵⁹⁵

510 *My pleaded [4596](#) reason.[4597](#) To the nuptial bow'r*
511 *I led her blushing like the morn. All Heav'n,*
512 *And happy constellations, on that hour*
513 *Shed their selected [4598](#) influence, the earth*
514 *Gave sign of gratulation,[4599](#) and each hill;*
515 *Joyous the birds; fresh gales and gentle airs*
516 *Whispered it to the woods, and from their wings*
517 *Flung rose, flung odors from the spicy [4600](#) shrub,*
518 *Disporting, [4601](#) till the amorous bird of night[4602](#)*
519 *Sung spousal,[4603](#) and bid haste the ev'ning-star [4604](#)*
520 *On his hill top, to light the bridal lamp.*
521 *“Thus have I told thee all my state, and brought*
522 *My story to the sum of earthly bliss*
523 *Which I enjoy, and must confess to find*
524 *In all things else delight indeed, but such*
525 *As, used or not, works in the mind no change,*
526 *Nor vehement [4605](#) desire—these delicacies*
527 *I mean of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and flow'rs,*
528 *Walks, and the melody of birds. But here*
529 *Far otherwise, transported [4606](#) I behold,*
530 *Transported touch;[4607](#) here passion first I felt,*
531 *Commotion [4608](#) strange! in all enjoyments else*
532 *Superior and unmoved, here only weak*
533 *Against the charm of beauty's powerful glance.*
534 *Or [4609](#) Nature failed in me, and left some part*
535 *Not proof enough such object to sustain,[4610](#)*
536 *Or, from my side subducting, [4611](#) took perhaps*
537 *More than enough, at least on her bestowed*
538 *Too much of ornament, in outward show*
539 *Elaborate, [4612](#) of inward less exact.*
540 *For well I understand in the prime end[4613](#)*

541 *Of Nature her th' inferior, in the mind*
542 *And inward faculties, which most excel.* [4614](#)
543 *In outward also her resembling less*
544 *His image who made both, and less expressing*
545 *The character of that dominion giv'n*
546 *O'er other creatures. Yet when I approach*
547 *Her loveliness, so absolute* [4615](#) *she seems*
548 *And in herself complete, so well to know*
549 *Her own, that what she wills to do or say*
550 *Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best.*
551 *All higher knowledge in her presence falls*
552 *Degraded,* [4616](#) *wisdom in discourse with her*
553 *Looses* [4617](#) *discount'nanced,* [4618](#) *and like folly shows.* [4619](#)
554 *Authority and reason on her wait,*
555 *As* [4620](#) *one intended first, not after made* [4621](#)
556 *Occasionally.* [4622](#) *And, to consummate* [4623](#) *all,*
557 *Greatness of mind and nobleness their seat*
558 *Build in her loveliest, and create an awe*
559 *About her, as* [4624](#) *a guard Angelic placed.*
560 *To whom the Angel with contracted brow:*
561 *"Accuse not Nature. She hath done her part;*
562 *Do thou but thine, and be not diffident* [4625](#)
563 *Of wisdom. She deserts thee not, if thou*
564 *Dismiss* [4626](#) *not her, when most thou need'st her nigh,*
565 *By attributing* [4627](#) *overmuch to things*
566 *Less excellent, as thou thyself perceiv'st.*
567 *For what admir'st thou, what transports thee so?*
568 *An outside? Fair, no doubt, and worthy well*
569 *Thy cherishing, thy honoring, and thy love.*
570 *Not thy subjection. Weigh with her thyself,*
571 *Then value. Oft-times nothing profits more*

572 Than self-esteem, grounded on just and right
573 Well managed. Of that skill [4628](#) the more thou know'st
574 The more she will acknowledge thee her head,[4629](#)
575 And to realities yield all her shows,[4630](#)
576 Made so adorn for thy delight the more,
577 So awful [4631](#) that with honor thou may'st love
578 Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.
579 But if the sense of touch, whereby mankind
580 Is propagated, seem such dear delight
581 Beyond all other, think the same vouchsafed
582 To cattle and each beast, which would not be
583 To them made common and divulged, if aught
584 Therein enjoyed were worthy to subdue
585 The soul of man, or passion in him move.
586 What higher in her society thou find'st
587 Attractive, human, rational, love still.[4632](#)
588 In loving thou dost well, in passion not,
589 Wherein true love consists not. Love refines
590 The thoughts, and heart enlarges, hath his seat
591 In reason, and is judicious, is the scale
592 By which to Heav'nly love thou may'st ascend,
593 Not sunk in carnal pleasure. For which cause
594 Among the beasts no mate for thee was found.
595 To whom thus, half abashed, Adam replied:
596 "Neither her outside formed so fair, nor aught
597 In procreation common to all kinds
598 (Though higher of the genial [4633](#) bed by far,
599 And with mysterious reverence, I deem)[4634](#)
600 So much delights me as those graceful[4635](#) acts,
601 Those thousand decencies,[4636](#) that daily flow
602 From all her words and actions, mixed with love

603 *And sweet compliance, which declare unfeigned*
604 *Union of mind, or in us both one soul.*
605 *Harmony to behold in wedded pair*
606 *More grateful [4637](#) than harmonious sound to th' ear.*
607 *Yet these subject [4638](#) not. I to thee disclose*
608 *What inward thence I feel, not therefore foiled, [4639](#)*
609 *Who meet with various objects [4640](#) from the sense*
610 *Variously representing, [4641](#) yet still free*
611 *Approve the best, and follow what I approve.*
612 *To love, thou blam'st me not, for love, thou say'st,*
613 *Leads up to Heav'n, is both the way and guide.*
614 *Bear with me, then, if lawful what I ask:*
615 *Love not the Heav'nly Spirits, and how their love*
616 *Express they? by looks only? or do they mix*
617 *Irradiance, [4642](#) virtual [4643](#) or immediate touch?*
618 *To whom the Angel, with a smile that glowed*
619 *Celestial rosy red, love's proper hue,*
620 *Answered:*

“Let it suffice thee that thou know'st

621 *Us happy, and without love no happiness.*
622 *Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st*
623 *(And pure thou wert created), we enjoy*
624 *In eminence, [4644](#) and obstacle find none*
625 *Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive [4645](#) bars.*
626 *Easier than air with air, if Spirits embrace:*
627 *Total they mix, union of pure with pure*
628 *Desiring, nor restrained [4646](#) conveyance [4647](#) need,*
629 *As flesh to mix with flesh, or soul with soul.*
630 *But I can now no more. The parting sun*
631 *Beyond the earth's green cape and verdant isles [4648](#)*
632 *Hesperian [4649](#) sets: my signal to depart.*

633 *Be strong, live happy, and love! But first of all [4650](#)*
634 *Him whom to love is to obey, and keep*
635 *His great command. Take heed lest passion sway*
636 *Thy judgment to do aught which else free will*
637 *Would not admit.[4651](#) Thine, and of all thy sons,*
638 *The weal [4652](#) or woe in thee is placed. Beware!*
639 *I in thy persevering shall rejoice,*
640 *And all the Blest. Stand fast! To stand or fall*
641 *Free in thine own arbitrement [4653](#) it lies.*
642 *Perfect [4654](#) within, no outward aid require,*
643 *And all temptation to transgress repel.*
644 *So saying, he arose, whom Adam thus*
645 *Followed with benediction. “Since to part,*
646 *Go, Heav’nly guest, ethereal messenger,*
647 *Sent from whose sov’reign goodness I adore!*
648 *Gentle[4655](#) to me and affable hath been*
649 *Thy condescension, and shall be honored ever*
650 *With grateful memory. Thou to mankind*
651 *Be good and friendly still,[4656](#) and oft return!*
652 *So parted they, the Angel up to Heav’n*
653 *From the thick shade, and Adam to his bow’r.*

The End of the Eighth Book

BOOK IX

THE ARGUMENT

Satan having compassed⁴⁶⁵⁷ the earth, with meditated guile returns as a mist by night into Paradise, enters into the serpent sleeping.⁴⁶⁵⁸ Adam and Eve in the morning go forth to their labors, which Eve proposes to divide in⁴⁶⁵⁹ several places, each laboring apart. Adam consents not, alleging the danger, lest that enemy, of whom they were forewarned, should attempt⁴⁶⁶⁰ her, found alone. Eve, loath to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make trial of her strength. Adam at last yields.

The serpent finds her alone; his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve wondering to hear the serpent speak, asks how he attained to human speech and such understanding not till now. The serpent answers that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden he attained both to speech and reason, till then void of both. Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the Tree of Knowledge, forbidden.

The serpent, now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments induces her at length⁴⁶⁶¹ to eat. She, pleased with the taste, deliberates awhile whether to impart thereof to Adam or not, at last brings him of the fruit, relates what persuaded her to eat thereof. Adam at first amaz'd, but perceiving her lost, resolves through vehemence⁴⁶⁶² of love to perish with her and, extenuating the trespass, eats also of the fruit.

The effects thereof in them both; they seek to cover their nakedness, then fall to variance⁴⁶⁶³ and accusation of one another.

- 1 *No more of talk where God or Angel guest*
- 2 *With man, as with his ⁴⁶⁶⁴ friend, familiar used, ⁴⁶⁶⁵*
- 3 *To sit indulgent, ⁴⁶⁶⁶ and with him ⁴⁶⁶⁷ partake*

4 Rural⁴⁶⁶⁸ repast, permitting him⁴⁶⁶⁹ the while
5 Venial⁴⁶⁷⁰ discourse unblamed.⁴⁶⁷¹ I now must change
6 Those notes⁴⁶⁷² to tragic, foul distrust, and breach⁴⁶⁷³
7 Disloyal on the part of man, revolt,
8 And disobedience; on the part of Heav'n,
9 Now alienated,⁴⁶⁷⁴ distance and distaste,
10 Anger and just rebuke, and judgment giv'n,
11 That brought into this world a world of woe,
12 Sin and her shadow Death, and misery,
13 Death's harbinger⁴⁶⁷⁵—sad task, yet argument⁴⁶⁷⁶
14 Not less but more heroic than the wrath
15 Of stern⁴⁶⁷⁷ Achilles on his foe⁴⁶⁷⁸ pursued
16 Thrice fugitive ⁴⁶⁷⁹ about Troy wall, or rage
17 Of Turnus ⁴⁶⁸⁰ for Lavinia⁴⁶⁸¹ disespoused,⁴⁶⁸²
18 Or Neptune's ire, ⁴⁶⁸³ or Juno's, ⁴⁶⁸⁴ that so long
19 Perplexed⁴⁶⁸⁵ the Greek, ⁴⁶⁸⁶ and Cytherea's son.⁴⁶⁸⁷
20 If answerable⁴⁶⁸⁸ style I can obtain
21 Of ⁴⁶⁸⁹ my celestial patroness,⁴⁶⁹⁰ who deigns⁴⁶⁹¹
22 Her nightly visitation unimplored,
23 And dictates to me slumb'ring, or inspires
24 Easy⁴⁶⁹² my unpremeditated ⁴⁶⁹³ verse,
25 Since first this subject for heroic song
26 Pleased me, long choosing, and beginning late, ⁴⁶⁹⁴
27 Not sedulous⁴⁶⁹⁵ by nature to indite⁴⁶⁹⁶
28 Wars, hitherto the only argument⁴⁶⁹⁷
29 Heroic deemed, ⁴⁶⁹⁸ chief mastery ⁴⁶⁹⁹ to dissect ⁴⁷⁰⁰
30 With long and tedious havoc⁴⁷⁰¹ fabled knights
31 In battles feigned ⁴⁷⁰²—the better fortitude
32 Of patience and heroic martyrdom
33 Unsung—or to describe races and games,

34 Or tilting⁴⁷⁰³ furniture, ⁴⁷⁰⁴ emblazoned ⁴⁷⁰⁵ shields,
35 Impresses⁴⁷⁰⁶ quaint, ⁴⁷⁰⁷ caparisons⁴⁷⁰⁸ and steeds,
36 Bases⁴⁷⁰⁹ and tinsel ⁴⁷¹⁰ trappings, gorgeous⁴⁷¹¹ knights
37 At joust and tournament, then marshalled ⁴⁷¹² feast
38 Served up in hall with sewers⁴⁷¹³ and senechals, ⁴⁷¹⁴
39 The skill of artifice⁴⁷¹⁵ or office⁴⁷¹⁶ mean, ⁴⁷¹⁷
40 Not that which justly gives heroic name
41 To person or to poem. Me, of these
42 Nor skilled nor studious, higher argument
43 Remains, sufficient of itself to raise⁴⁷¹⁸
44 That name, ⁴⁷¹⁹ unless an age too late, or cold
45 Climate, or years, damp my intended wing⁴⁷²⁰
46 Depressed. ⁴⁷²¹ And much they may, if all be mine,
47 Not hers, who brings it nightly to my ear.
48 The sun was sunk, and after him the star
49 Of Hesperus, ⁴⁷²² whose office⁴⁷²³ is to bring
50 Twilight upon the earth, short arbiter ⁴⁷²⁴
51 'Twixt day and night. And now from end to end
52 Night's hemisphere had veiled th' horizon round,
53 When Satan, who late⁴⁷²⁵ fled before the threats
54 Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improved⁴⁷²⁶
55 In meditated fraud and malice, bent
56 On man's destruction, maugre⁴⁷²⁷ what might hap⁴⁷²⁸
57 Of heavier on himself, fearless returned.
58 By night he fled, and at midnight returned
59 From compassing⁴⁷²⁹ the earth, cautious of day,
60 Since Uriel, regent of the sun, descried ⁴⁷³⁰
61 His entrance, and forewarned the Cherubim
62 That kept their watch. Thence full of anguish driv'n,
63 The space of seven continued nights he rode⁴⁷³¹

64 With darkness. Thrice the equinoctial⁴⁷³² line
65 He circled, four times crossed the car⁴⁷³³ of night
66 From pole to pole, traversing each colure. ⁴⁷³⁴
67 On the eighth returned and, on the coast averse⁴⁷³⁵
68 From entrance or Cherubic watch, by stealth
69 Found unsuspected ⁴⁷³⁶ way. ⁴⁷³⁷

There was a place,

70 Now not, though Sin, not time, first wrought the change,
71 Where Tigris,⁴⁷³⁸ at the foot of Paradise,
72 Into a gulf ⁴⁷³⁹ shot ⁴⁷⁴⁰ under ground, till part
73 Rose up a fountain by the Tree of Life.
74 In with the river sunk, and with it rose
75 Satan, involved⁴⁷⁴¹ in rising mist, then sought
76 Where to lie hid. Sea he had searched, and land,
77 From Eden over Pontus⁴⁷⁴² and the pool
78 Maeotis,⁴⁷⁴³ up beyond the river Ob,⁴⁷⁴⁴
79 Downward as far Antarctic, and in length
80 West from Orontes⁴⁷⁴⁵ to the ocean barred
81 At Darien,⁴⁷⁴⁶ thence to the land where flows
82 Ganges and Indus. Thus the orb⁴⁷⁴⁷ he roamed
83 With narrow⁴⁷⁴⁸ search, and with inspection deep
84 Considered every creature, which of all
85 Most opportune might serve his wiles, and found
86 The serpent, subtlest beast of all the field.
87 Him after long debate, irresolute
88 Of thoughts revolved, his final sentence⁴⁷⁴⁹ chose
89 Fit vessel, fittest imp⁴⁷⁵⁰ of fraud, in whom
90 To enter, and his dark suggestions hide
91 From sharpest sight, for in the wily snake,
92 Whatever sleights,⁴⁷⁵¹ none would suspicious mark,⁴⁷⁵²
93 As from his wit and native subtlety

94 *Proceeding, which in other beasts observed*
95 *Doubt might beget [4753](#) of diabolic power*
96 *Active within, beyond the sense[4754](#) of brute.*
97 *Thus he resolved, but first from inward grief*
98 *His bursting passion into plaints[4755](#) thus poured:*
99 *“O earth, how like to Heav’n, if not preferred*
100 *More justly, seat worthier of gods, as built*
101 *With second thoughts, reforming[4756](#) what was old!*
102 *For what god, after better, worse would build?*
103 *Terrestrial Heav’n, danced round by other Heav’ns*
104 *That shine, yet bear their bright officious[4757](#) lamps,*
105 *Light above light, for thee[4758](#) alone, as seems,*
106 *In thee concent’ring all their precious beams*
107 *Of sacred influence! As God in Heav’n*
108 *Is center, yet extends to all, so thou,*
109 *Cent’ring, receiv’st from all those orbs. In thee,*
110 *Not in themselves, all their known virtue[4759](#) appears*
111 *Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth*
112 *Of creatures animate with gradual [4760](#) life*
113 *Of growth, sense, reason, all summed up in man.*
114 *With what delight could I have walked thee round*
115 *(If I could joy in aught), sweet interchange[4761](#)*
116 *Of hill, and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,*
117 *Now land, now sea and shores with forest crowned,*
118 *Rocks, dens, and caves! But I in none of these*
119 *Find place or refuge, and the more I see*
120 *Pleasures about me, so much more I feel*
121 *Torment within me, as from the hateful siege*
122 *Of contraries.[4762](#) All good to me becomes*
123 *Bane[4763](#) —and in Heav’n much worse would be my state,*
124 *“But neither here seek I, no, nor in Heav’n*

125 *To dwell, unless by mast'ring Heav'n's Supreme, [4764](#)*
126 *Nor hope to be myself less miserable*
127 *By what I seek, but others to make such*
128 *As I, though thereby worse to me redound. [4765](#)*
129 *For only in destroying I find ease*
130 *To my relentless thoughts and, him [4766](#) destroyed,*
131 *Or won to what may work his utter loss,*
132 *For whom all this was made, all this will soon*
133 *Follow, as to him linked in weal [4767](#) or woe.*
134 *In woe then. That destruction wide may range: [4768](#)*
135 *To me shall be the glory sole among*
136 *Th' infernal Powers, in one day to have marred [4769](#)*
137 *What He, Almighty styled, six nights and days*
138 *Continued making—and who knows how long*
139 *Before had been contriving? Though perhaps*
140 *Not longer than since I, in one night, freed*
141 *From servitude inglorious well nigh half*
142 *Th' Angelic name, and thinner left the throng*
143 *Of His adorers. He, to be avenged,*
144 *And to repair His numbers thus impaired,*
145 *Whether such virtue spent of old now failed*
146 *More Angels to create (if they at least*
147 *Are His created) or, to spite us more,*
148 *Determined to advance into our room [4770](#)*
149 *A creature formed of earth, and him endow,*
150 *Exalted from so base original, [4771](#)*
151 *With Heav'nly spoils—our spoils. What He decreed,*
152 *He effected. Man He made, and for him built*
153 *Magnificent this world, and earth his seat,*
154 *Him lord pronounced and, O indignity!*
155 *Subjected to his service angel-wings,*

156 And flaming ministers⁴⁷⁷² to watch and tend
157 Their earthly charge. Of these the vigilance
158 I dread and, to elude, thus wrapped in mist
159 Of midnight vapor glide obscure, ⁴⁷⁷³ and pry⁴⁷⁷⁴
160 In every bush and brake, ⁴⁷⁷⁵ where hap⁴⁷⁷⁶ may find
161 The serpent sleeping, in whose mazy folds⁴⁷⁷⁷
162 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.
163 “O foul descent! that I, who erst contended
164 With gods to sit the highest, am now constrained ⁴⁷⁷⁸
165 Into a beast and, mixed with bestial slime,
166 This essence to incarnate⁴⁷⁷⁹ and imbrute⁴⁷⁸⁰
167 That⁴⁷⁸¹ to the height of Deity aspired!
168 But what will not ambition and revenge
169 Descend to? Who⁴⁷⁸² aspires, must down⁴⁷⁸³ as low
170 As high he soared, obnoxious, ⁴⁷⁸⁴ first or last,
171 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,
172 Bitter ere long, back on itself recoils.
173 Let it. I reckon⁴⁷⁸⁵ not, so it light⁴⁷⁸⁶ well aimed,
174 Since higher I fall short, on him who next
175 Provokes my envy, this new favorite
176 Of Heav’n, this man of clay, son of despite⁴⁷⁸⁷
177 Whom us the more to spite his Maker raised
178 From dust. Spite then with spite is best repaid.
179 So saying, through each thicket dank or dry,
180 Like a black mist low-creeping, he held ⁴⁷⁸⁸ on
181 His midnight-search, where soonest he might find
182 The serpent. Him fast-sleeping soon he found
183 In labyrinth of many a round ⁴⁷⁸⁹ self-rolled,
184 His head the midst, well stored with subtle wiles,
185 Not yet in horrid ⁴⁷⁹⁰ shade or dismal den, ⁴⁷⁹¹
186 Nor nocent⁴⁷⁹² yet, but on the grassy herb,

187 *Fearless unfeared he slept. In at his mouth*
188 *The Devil entered and his⁴⁷⁹³ brutal sense,*
189 *In heart or head, possessing, soon inspired*
190 *With act intelligential, but his sleep*
191 *Disturbed not, waiting close⁴⁷⁹⁴ the approach of morn.*
192 *Now when as sacred light began to dawn*
193 *In Eden on the humid flow'rs, that breathed*
194 *Their morning incense, ⁴⁷⁹⁵ when all things that breathe*
195 *From th' earth's great altar send up silent praise*
196 *To the Creator, and His nostrils fill*
197 *With grateful ⁴⁷⁹⁶ smell, forth came the human pair*
198 *And joined their vocal worship to the choir*
199 *Of creatures wanting⁴⁷⁹⁷ voice. That done, partake⁴⁷⁹⁸*
200 *The season prime for sweetest scents and airs,*
201 *Then commune⁴⁷⁹⁹ how that day they best may ply⁴⁸⁰⁰*
202 *Their growing work, for much their work out-grew*
203 *The hands' dispatch⁴⁸⁰¹ of two gard'ning so wide. ⁴⁸⁰²*
204 *And Eve first to her husband thus began:*
205 *"Adam, well may we labor still⁴⁸⁰³ to dress⁴⁸⁰⁴*
206 *This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flow'r,*
207 *Our pleasant task enjoined, ⁴⁸⁰⁵ but till more hands*
208 *Aid us the work under our labor grows*
209 *Luxurious⁴⁸⁰⁶ by restraint. What we by day*
210 *Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind,*
211 *One night or two with wanton⁴⁸⁰⁷ growth derides, ⁴⁸⁰⁸*
212 *Tending⁴⁸⁰⁹ to wild. Thou therefore now advise, ⁴⁸¹⁰*
213 *Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present.*
214 *Let us divide our labors—thou where choice*
215 *Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind*
216 *The woodbine round this arbor, or direct*
217 *The clasping ivy where to climb, while I,*

218 *In yonder spring⁴⁸¹¹ of roses intermixed*
219 *With myrtle, find what to redress⁴⁸¹² till noon.*
220 *For while so near each other thus all day*
221 *Our task we choose, what wonder if so near*
222 *Looks intervene and smiles, or object new*
223 *Casual discourse draw on, which intermits⁴⁸¹³*
224 *Our day's work, brought to little, though begun*
225 *Early, and th' hour of supper comes unearned?*
226 *To whom mild answer Adam thus returned:*
227 *"Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond*
228 *Compare above all living creatures dear!*
229 *Well hast thou motioned,⁴⁸¹⁴ well thy thoughts employed,*
230 *How we might best fulfil the work which here*
231 *God hath assigned us, nor of me shalt pass*
232 *Unpraised, for nothing lovelier can be found*
233 *In woman, than to study houshold good,*
234 *And good works in her husband to promote.*
235 *Yet not so strictly hath our Lord imposed*
236 *Labor, as to debar us when we need*
237 *Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,*
238 *Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse*
239 *Of looks and smiles, for smiles from reason flow,*
240 *To brute denied, and are of love the food—*
241 *Love, not the lowest end⁴⁸¹⁵ of human life.*
242 *For not to irksome⁴⁸¹⁶ toil, but to delight*
243 *He made us, and delight to reason joined.*
244 *These paths and bowers⁴⁸¹⁷ doubt not but our joint hands*
245 *Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide*
246 *As we need walk, till younger hands ere long*
247 *Assist us. But if much converse perhaps*
248 *Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield,⁴⁸¹⁸*

249 *For solitude sometimes is best society,*
250 *And short retirement [4819](#) urges sweet return.*
251 *“But other doubt possesses me, lest harm*
252 *Befall thee, severed from me, for thou know’st*
253 *What hath been warned us, what malicious foe*
254 *Envyng our happiness, and of his own*
255 *Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame*
256 *By sly assault. And somewhere nigh at hand*
257 *Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find*
258 *His wish and best advantage, us asunder.*
259 *Hopeless to circumvent us joined, where each*
260 *To other speedy aid might lend at need,*
261 *Whether his first design be to withdraw*
262 *Our fealty from God, or to disturb*
263 *Conjugal love, than which perhaps no bliss*
264 *Enjoyed by us excites his envy more.*
265 *Or [4820](#) this, or worse, leave not the faithful side*
266 *That gave thee being, still shades thee, and protects.*
267 *The wife, where danger or dishonor lurks,*
268 *Safest and seemliest [4821](#) by her husband stays,*
269 *Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.*
270 *To whom the virgin [4822](#) majesty of Eve,*
271 *As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,*
272 *With sweet austere [4823](#) composure thus replied:*
273 *“Offspring of Heav’n and earth, and all earth’s lord!*
274 *That such an enemy we have, who seeks*
275 *Our ruin, both by thee informed I learn,*
276 *And from the parting Angel over-heard,*
277 *As in a shady nook I stood behind,*
278 *Just then returned at shut of evening flow’rs.*
279 *But that thou should’st my firmness [4824](#) therefore doubt*

280 *To God or thee, because we have a foe*
281 *May tempt it, I expected not to hear.*
282 *His violence thou fear'st not, being such*
283 *As we, not capable of death or pain,*
284 *Can either not receive, or can repel.*
285 *His fraud is then thy fear, which plain infers*
286 *Thy equal fear that my firm faith and love*
287 *Can by his fraud be shaken or seduced,*
288 *Thoughts which how found they harbor in thy breast,*
289 *Adam, mis-thought of her to thee so dear?*
290 *To whom with healing words Adam replied:*
291 *“Daughter of God and man, immortal Eve!*
292 *For such thou art, from sin and blame entire. [4825](#)*
293 *Not diffident [4826](#) of thee do I dissuade*
294 *Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid*
295 *Th' attempt itself, intended by our foe.*
296 *For he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses [4827](#)*
297 *The tempted with dishonor foul, supposed*
298 *Not incorruptible of faith, not proof*
299 *Against temptation. Thou thyself with scorn*
300 *And anger would'st resent the offered wrong,*
301 *Though ineffectual found. Misdemean not, then,*
302 *If such affront I labor to avert*
303 *From thee alone, which on us both at once*
304 *The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare,*
305 *Or daring, first on me th' assault shall light.*
306 *Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn. [4828](#)*
307 *Subtle he needs must be, who could seduce*
308 *Angels, nor think superfluous others' aid.*
309 *I, from the influence of thy looks, receive*
310 *Access [4829](#) in every virtue, in thy sight*

311 More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were
312 Of outward strength, while shame, thou looking on,
313 Shame to be overcome or over-reached,⁴⁸³⁰
314 Would utmost vigor raise, and raised unite. ⁴⁸³¹
315 Why should'st not thou like⁴⁸³² sense within thee feel
316 When I am present, and thy trial⁴⁸³³ choose
317 With me, best witness of thy virtue tried?
318 So spoke domestic⁴⁸³⁴ Adam in his care
319 And matrimonial love. But Eve, who thought
320 Less attributed ⁴⁸³⁵ to her faith sincere,
321 Thus her reply with accent sweet renewed:
322 "If this be our condition, thus to dwell
323 In narrow circuit, straitened ⁴⁸³⁶ by a foe,
324 Subtle or violent, we not endued
325 Single⁴⁸³⁷ with like⁴⁸³⁸ defence, wherever met,
326 How are we happy, still in fear of harm?
327 But harm precedes not sin. Only our foe
328 Tempting affronts⁴⁸³⁹ us with his foul esteem⁴⁸⁴⁰
329 Of our integrity. His foul esteem
330 Sticks no dishonor on our front,⁴⁸⁴¹ but turns
331 Foul on himself. Then wherefore shunned or feared
332 By us? who rather double honor gain
333 From his surmise⁴⁸⁴² proved false, find peace within,
334 Favor from Heav'n, our witness, from th' event.
335 And what is faith, love, virtue, unassayed
336 Alone, without exterior help sustained?
337 Let us not then suspect⁴⁸⁴³ our happy state
338 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise
339 As not secure⁴⁸⁴⁴ to⁴⁸⁴⁵ single or combined.
340 Frail is our happiness, if this be so,
341 And Eden were no Eden, thus exposed.

342 To whom thus Adam fervently⁴⁸⁴⁶ replied:
343 "O woman, best are all things as the will
344 Of God ordained them! His creating hand
345 Nothing imperfect or deficient left
346 Of all that He created, much less man,
347 Or aught that might his⁴⁸⁴⁷ happy state secure,
348 Secure from outward force. Within himself
349 The danger lies, yet lies within his power.
350 Against his will he can receive no harm.
351 But God left free the will, for what obeys
352 Reason, is free; and reason He made right,
353 But bid her well beware, and still erect,⁴⁸⁴⁸
354 Lest, by some fair-appearing good surprised,
355 She dictate⁴⁸⁴⁹ false, and mis-inform the will
356 To do what God expressly hath forbid.
357 Not then mistrust, but tender love, enjoins⁴⁸⁵⁰
358 That I should mind⁴⁸⁵¹ thee oft, and mind thou me.
359 Firm we subsist,⁴⁸⁵² yet possible to swerve,
360 Since reason not impossibly may meet
361 Some specious⁴⁸⁵³ object by the foe suborned,⁴⁸⁵⁴
362 And fall into deception unaware,
363 Not keeping strictest watch, as she⁴⁸⁵⁵ was warned.
364 Seek not temptation, then, which to avoid
365 Were better, and most likely if from me
366 Thou sever not. Trial will come unsought.
367 Would'st⁴⁸⁵⁶ thou approve⁴⁸⁵⁷ thy constancy, approve
368 First thy obedience. Th' other who can know,
369 Not seeing thee attempted, who attest?
370 But if thou think trial unsought may find
371 Us both securer⁴⁸⁵⁸ than thus warned thou seem'st,
372 Go, for thy stay not free absents thee more.

373 *Go in thy native innocence, rely*
374 *On what thou hast of virtue, summon all!*
375 *For God towards thee hath done His part. Do thine.*
376 *So spoke the patriarch of mankind. But Eve*
377 *Persisted, yet [4859](#) submit, though last [4860](#) replied:*
378 *“With thy permission, then, and thus forewarned*
379 *Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words*
380 *Touched [4861](#) only, that our trial, when least sought,*
381 *May find us both perhaps far less prepared,*
382 *The willinger I go, nor much expect*
383 *A foe so proud will first the weaker seek.*
384 *So bent, [4862](#) the more shall shame him his repulse.*
385 *Thus saying, from her husband’s hand her hand*
386 *Soft she withdrew and, like a wood-nymph light,*
387 *Oread [4863](#) or dryad, [4864](#) or of Delia’s [4865](#) train,*
388 *Betook her to the groves, but Delia’s self*
389 *In gait surpassed, and goddess-like deport, [4866](#)*
390 *Though not as she with bow and quiver armed,*
391 *But with such gard’ning tools as art [4867](#) yet rude, [4868](#)*
392 *Guiltless [4869](#) of fire, had formed, or Angels brought.*
393 *To Pales, [4870](#) or Pomona, [4871](#) thus adorned,*
394 *Likest she seemed, Pomona when she fled*
395 *Vertumnus, [4872](#) or to Ceres [4873](#) in her prime,*
396 *Yet virgin [4874](#) of Proserpina from Jove.*
397 *Her long with ardent look his eye pursued,*
398 *Delighted, but desiring more her stay.*
399 *Oft he to her his charge [4875](#) of quick return*
400 *Repeated; she to him as oft engaged [4876](#)*
401 *To be returned by noon amid the bow’r,*
402 *And all things in best order to invite [4877](#)*
403 *Noontide repast, or afternoon’s repose.*

404 O much deceived, much failing, hapless⁴⁸⁷⁸ Eve,
405 Of thy presumed ⁴⁸⁷⁹ return! Event perverse! ⁴⁸⁸⁰
406 Thou never from that hour in Paradise
407 Found'st either sweet repast, or sound repose.
408 Such ambush, hid among sweet flow'rs and shades,
409 Waited with hellish rancor ⁴⁸⁸¹ imminent
410 To intercept thy way, or send thee back
411 Despoiled of innocence, of faith, of bliss!
412 For now, and since first break of dawn the fiend,
413 Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come,
414 And on his quest, where likeliest he might find
415 The only two of mankind, but in them
416 The whole included race, his purposed prey.
417 In bow'r and field he sought, where any tuft
418 Of grove or garden-plot more pleasant lay,
419 Their tendance or plantation⁴⁸⁸² for delight.
420 By fountain or by shady rivulet
421 He sought them both, but wished his hap⁴⁸⁸³ might find
422 Eve separate. He wished, but not with hope
423 Of what so seldom chanced, when to his wish,
424 Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,
425 Veiled in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood,
426 Half spied, so thick the roses bushing round
427 About her glowed, oft stooping to support
428 Each flower of slender stalk, whose head, though gay
429 Carnation, purple, azure, or specked with gold,
430 Hung drooping unsustained. Them she upstays
431 Gently with myrtle band, mindless the while
432 Herself, though fairest unsupported flower,
433 From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.
434 Nearer he drew, and many a walk traversed

435 *Of stateliest covert,*⁴⁸⁸⁴ *cedar, pine, or palm,*
436 *Then voluble*⁴⁸⁸⁵ *and bold, now hid, now seen*
437 *Among thick-woven arborets,*⁴⁸⁸⁶ *and flow'rs*
438 *Imbordered on each bank, the hand*⁴⁸⁸⁷ *of Eve*
439 *Spot more delicious than those gardens feigned*⁴⁸⁸⁸
440 *Or*⁴⁸⁸⁹ *of revived Adonis,*⁴⁸⁹⁰ *or renowned*
441 *Alcinous,*⁴⁸⁹¹ *host of old Laertes' son,*⁴⁸⁹²
442 *Or that, not mystic,*⁴⁸⁹³ *where the sapient*⁴⁸⁹⁴ *king*⁴⁸⁹⁵
443 *Held dalliance*⁴⁸⁹⁶ *with his fair Egyptian spouse.*⁴⁸⁹⁷
444 *Much he the place admired,*⁴⁸⁹⁸ *the person more.*
445 *As one who long in populous city pent,*⁴⁸⁹⁹
446 *Where houses thick and sewers annoy*⁴⁹⁰⁰ *the air,*
447 *Forth issuing on a summer's morn to breathe*
448 *Among the pleasant villages and farms*
449 *Adjoined, from each thing met conceives delight,*
450 *The smell of grain, or tedded grass,*⁴⁹⁰¹ *or kine,*⁴⁹⁰²
451 *Or dairy,*⁴⁹⁰³ *each rural sight, each rural sound.*
452 *If chance, with nymph-like step, fair virgin pass,*
453 *What pleasing seemed, for her*⁴⁹⁰⁴ *now pleases more,*
454 *She most, and in her look sums all delight.*
455 *Such pleasure took the serpent to behold*
456 *This flowery plat,*⁴⁹⁰⁵ *the sweet recess*⁴⁹⁰⁶ *of Eve*
457 *Thus early, thus alone. Her Heav'nly form*
458 *Angelic, but more soft, and feminine,*
459 *Her graceful innocence, her every air*
460 *Of gesture, or least action, overawed*⁴⁹⁰⁷
461 *His malice, and with rapine*⁴⁹⁰⁸ *sweet bereaved*⁴⁹⁰⁹
462 *His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought.*
463 *That space*⁴⁹¹⁰ *the Evil One abstracted*⁴⁹¹¹ *stood*
464 *From his own evil, and for the time remained*

465 *Stupidly [4912](#) good, of enmity disarmed,*
466 *Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge.*
467 *But the hot Hell that always in him burns,*
468 *Though in mid Heav'n, soon ended his delight,*
469 *And tortures him now more, the more he sees*
470 *Of pleasure, not for him ordained. Then soon*
471 *Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts*
472 *Of mischief, gratulating, [4913](#) thus excites:[4914](#)*
473 *“Thoughts, whither have ye led me! with what sweet*
474 *Compulsion thus transported, to forget*
475 *What hither brought us! Hate, not love, nor hope*
476 *Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste*
477 *Of pleasure, but all pleasure to destroy,*
478 *Save what is in destroying. Other joy*
479 *To me is lost. Then let me not let pass[4915](#)*
480 *Occasion[4916](#) which now smiles. Behold alone*
481 *The woman, opportune [4917](#) to all attempts,*
482 *Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,*
483 *Whose higher intellectual [4918](#) more I shun,*
484 *And strength, of courage haughty, [4919](#) and of limb*
485 *Heroic built, though of terrestrial mould,*
486 *Foe not formidable! [4920](#) exempt from wound,*
487 *I not, so much hath Hell debased, and pain*
488 *Enfeebled me, to what I was in Heav'n.*
489 *She fair, divinely fair, fit love for Gods!*
490 *Not terrible, though terror be in love*
491 *And beauty, not[4921](#) approached [4922](#) by stronger hate,*
492 *Hate stronger, under show of love well feigned,*
493 *The way which to her ruin now I tend.”[4923](#)*
494 *So spoke the enemy of mankind, enclosed*
495 *In serpent, inmate[4924](#) bad! and toward Eve*

496 Addressed [4925](#) his way, not with indented [4926](#) wave,
497 Prone on the ground, as since, but on his rear,
498 Circular base of rising folds, that tow' red
499 Fold above fold, a surging maze! His head
500 Crested aloft, and carbuncle [4927](#) his eyes,
501 With burnished neck of verdant gold, erect
502 Amidst his circling spires, [4928](#) that on the grass
503 Floated [4929](#) redundant. [4930](#) Pleasing was his shape
504 And lovely, never since of serpent-kind
505 Lovelier, not those that in Illyria changed [4931](#)
506 Hermione [4932](#) and Cadmus, [4933](#) or the god
507 In Epidaurus, [4934](#) nor to which transformed
508 Ammonian Jove, [4935](#) or Capitoline, [4936](#) was seen,
509 He with Olympias, this with her who bore
510 Scipio, the height [4937](#) of Rome. With tract [4938](#) oblique [4939](#)
511 At first, as one who sought access [4940](#) but feared
512 To interrupt, sidelong he works his way.
513 As when a ship, by skilful steersman wrought
514 Nigh river's mouth or foreland, [4941](#) where the wind
515 Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail,
516 So varied he, and of his tortuous [4942](#) train
517 Curled many a wanton [4943](#) wreath [4944](#) in sight of Eve,
518 To lure her eye. She, busied, heard the sound
519 Of rustling leaves, but minded not, as used
520 To such disport before [4945](#) her through the field,
521 From every beast, more duteous [4946](#) at her call
522 Than at Circean call the herd disguised. [4947](#)
523 He, bolder now, uncalled before her stood,
524 But as in gaze admiring. Oft he bowed
525 His turret crest, and sleek enamelled neck,

526 *Fawning, and licked the ground whereon she trod.*
527 *His gentle dumb expression turned at length*
528 *The eye of Eve to mark his play. He, glad*
529 *Of her attention gained, with serpent-tongue*
530 *Organic, [4948](#) or impulse⁴⁹⁴⁹ of vocal air,*
531 *His fraudulent temptation thus began:*
532 *“Wonder not, sov’ reign mistress, if perhaps*
533 *Thou canst, who art sole [4950](#) wonder! Much less arm*
534 *Thy looks, the Heav’n of mildness, with disdain,*
535 *Displeased that I approach thee thus, and gaze*
536 *Insatiate, [4951](#) I thus single, nor have feared*
537 *Thy awful [4952](#) brow, more awful thus retired.⁴⁹⁵³*
538 *Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair,*
539 *Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine*
540 *By gift, and thy celestial beauty adore*
541 *With ravishment [4954](#) beheld! There best beheld,*
542 *Where universally admired, but here*
543 *In this enclosure wild, these beasts among,*
544 *Beholders rude, and shallow [4955](#) to discern*
545 *Half what in thee is fair, one man except,*
546 *Who sees thee? And what is one? Who should be seen*
547 *A goddess among gods, adored and served*
548 *By Angels numberless, thy daily train.*
549 *So glozed [4956](#) the Tempter, and his proem⁴⁹⁵⁷ tuned.⁴⁹⁵⁸*
550 *Into the heart of Eve his words made way,*
551 *Though at the voice much marvelling. At length,*
552 *Not unamazed, she thus in answer spoke:*
553 *“What may this mean? Language of man pronounced*
554 *By tongue of brute, and human sense expressed?*
555 *The first, at least, of these I thought denied*
556 *To beasts, whom God, on their creation-day,*

557 *Created mute to all articulate sound.*
558 *The latter I demur, [4959](#) for in their looks*
559 *Much reason, and in their actions, oft appears.*
560 *Thee, serpent, subtlest beast of all the field*
561 *I knew, but not with human voice endued.*
562 *Redouble then this miracle, and say*
563 *How cam'st thou speakable [4960](#) of [4961](#) mute, and how*
564 *To me so friendly grown above the rest*
565 *Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight?*
566 *Say, for such wonder [4962](#) claims attention due.*
567 *To whom the guileful Tempter thus replied:*
568 *“Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve!*
569 *Easy to me it is to tell thee all*
570 *What thou command'st, and right thou should'st be obeyed.*
571 *I was at first as other beasts that graze*
572 *The trodden herb, of abject [4963](#) thoughts and low,*
573 *As was my food, nor aught but food discerned,*
574 *Or sex, and apprehended nothing high.*
575 *Till on a day, roving the field, I chanced*
576 *A goodly tree far distant to behold,*
577 *Loaden with fruit of fairest colors mixed,*
578 *Ruddy and gold. I nearer drew to gaze,*
579 *When from the boughs a savory odor blown,*
580 *Grateful [4964](#) to appetite, more pleased my sense*
581 *Than smell of sweetest fennel, [4965](#) or the teats*
582 *Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at ev'n, [4966](#)*
583 *Unsucked of lamb or kid, that tend [4967](#) their play.*
584 *To satisfy the sharp desire I had*
585 *Of tasting those fair apples, I resolved*
586 *Not to defer. Hunger and thirst at once,*
587 *Powerful persuaders, quick'ned at the scent*

588 *Of that alluring⁴⁹⁶⁸ fruit, urged me so keen.*
589 *About the mossy trunk I wound me soon,⁴⁹⁶⁹*
590 *For high from ground the branches would require*
591 *Thy utmost reach, or Adam's. Round the tree*
592 *All other beasts that saw, with like desire*
593 *Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.*

594 *Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung*
595 *Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill*
596 *I spared not, for such pleasure till that hour,*
597 *At feed [4970](#) or fountain never had I found.*
598 *Sated at length, ere long I might [4971](#) perceive*
599 *Strange alteration in me, to degree*
600 *Of reason in my inward powers, and speech*
601 *Wanted [4972](#) not long, though to this shape retained.[4973](#)*
602 *Thenceforth to speculations high or deep*
603 *I turned my thoughts, and with capacious mind*
604 *Considered all things visible in Heav'n,*
605 *Or earth, or middle, [4974](#) all things fair and good.*
606 *But all that fair and good in thy divine*
607 *Semblance, and in thy beauty's Heav'nly ray,*
608 *United I beheld: no fair to thine*
609 *Equivalent or second! Which compelled*
610 *Me thus, though importune[4975](#) perhaps, to come*
611 *And gaze, and worship thee of right declared*
612 *Sov'reign of creatures, universal Dame!"[4976](#)*
613 *So talked the spirited [4977](#) sly snake, and Eve,*
614 *Yet more amazed, unwary thus replied:*
615 *"Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt*
616 *The virtue[4978](#) of that fruit, in thee first proved.[4979](#)*
617 *But say, where grows the tree? from hence how far?*
618 *For many are the trees of God that grow*
619 *In Paradise, and various, yet unknown*
620 *To us. In such abundance lies our choice,*
621 *As leaves a greater store of fruit untouched,*
622 *Still hanging incorruptible, till men*
623 *Grow up to their provision,[4980](#) and more hands*
624 *Help to disburden Nature of her birth." [4981](#)*
625 *To whom the wily adder, blithe and glad:*
626 *"Empress, the way is ready, and not long.*

627 *Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,*⁴⁹⁸²
628 *Fast*⁴⁹⁸³ *by a fountain, one small thicket past*
629 *Of blowing myrrh and balm. If thou accept*
630 *My conduct,*⁴⁹⁸⁴ *I can bring thee thither soon.*
631 *“Lead then,” said Eve. He, leading, swiftly rolled*
632 *In tangles, and made intricate seem straight,*
633 *To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy*
634 *Bright’ns his crest, as when a wand’ring fire,*
635 *Compact*⁴⁹⁸⁵ *of unctuous*⁴⁹⁸⁶ *vapor, which the night*
636 *Condenses, and the cold environs*⁴⁹⁸⁷ *round,*
637 *Kindled through agitation*⁴⁹⁸⁸ *to a flame,*
638 *Which oft, they say, some evil Spirit attends,*⁴⁹⁸⁹
639 *Hovering and blazing with delusive light,*
640 *Misleads th’ amazed night-wanderer from his way*
641 *To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool,*
642 *There swallowed up and lost, from succor far.*
643 *So glistered the dire snake, and into fraud*
644 *Led Eve, our credulous mother, to the tree*
645 *Of prohibition,*⁴⁹⁹⁰ *root of all our woe,*
646 *Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spoke:*
647 *“Serpent, we might have spared our coming hither,*
648 *Fruitless*⁴⁹⁹¹ *to me, though fruit be here to excess,*
649 *The credit*⁴⁹⁹² *of whose virtue rest with thee,*
650 *Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects.*
651 *But of this tree we may not taste nor touch.*
652 *God so commanded, and left that command*
653 *Sole daughter*⁴⁹⁹³ *of His voice. The rest, we live*
654 *Law to ourselves. Our reason is our law.*
655 *To whom the Tempter guilefully replied:*
656 *“Indeed! Hath God then said that of the fruit*
657 *Of all these garden-trees ye shall not eat,*
658 *Yet lords declared of all in earth or air?*
659 *To whom thus Eve, yet sinless:*

“Of the fruit

660 *Of each tree in the garden we may eat,*
661 *But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst*
662 *The garden, God hath said, ‘Ye shall not eat*
663 *Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.*
664 *She scarce had said, though brief, when now more bold*
665 *The Tempter, but with show of zeal and love*
666 *To man, and indignation at his wrong,*
667 *New part [4994](#) puts on and, as [4995](#) to passion moved,*
668 *Fluctuates [4996](#) disturbed, yet comely [4997](#) and in act [4998](#)*
669 *Raised as of some great matter to begin. [4999](#)*
670 *As when of old some orator renowned,*
671 *In Athens or free Rome, where eloquence*
672 *Flourished, since mute! to some great cause addressed, [5000](#)*
673 *Stood in himself collected, while each part,*
674 *Motion, each act, won audience ere the tongue,*
675 *Sometimes in height began, as no delay*
676 *Of preface brooking, through his zeal of right. [5001](#)*
677 *So standing, moving, or to height up grown,*
678 *The Tempter, all impassioned, thus began:*
679 *“O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving plant,*
680 *Mother of science! [5002](#) Now I feel thy power*
681 *Within me clear, not only to discern*
682 *Things in their causes, but to trace the ways*
683 *Of highest agents, [5003](#) deemed however [5004](#) wise.*
684 *Queen of this universe! Do not believe*
685 *Those rigid threats of death. Ye shall not die.*
686 *How should you? By the fruit? It gives you life*
687 *To knowledge. By the threat’ner? [5005](#) Look on me,*
688 *Me, who have touched and tasted, yet both live,*
689 *And life more perfect have attained than Fate*
690 *Meant me, by vent’ring [5006](#) higher than my lot.*
691 *Shall that be shut to man, which to the beast*

692 *Is open? Or will God incense⁵⁰⁰⁷ His ire*
693 *For such a petty trespass? and not praise*
694 *Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain*
695 *Of death denounced,⁵⁰⁰⁸ whatever thing death be,*
696 *Deterred not from achieving what might lead*
697 *To happier life, knowledge of good and evil?*
698 *Of good, how just? Of evil, if what is evil*
699 *Be real, why not known, since easier shunned?*
700 *God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just—*
701 *Not just, not God. Not feared then, nor obeyed:*
702 *Your fear itself of death removes the fear.*
703 *Why then was this forbid? Why but to awe?*
704 *Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,*
705 *His worshippers? He knows that in the day*
706 *Ye eat thereof, your eyes that seem so clear,*
707 *Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then*
708 *Op'ned and cleared, and ye shall be as gods,*
709 *Knowing both good and evil, as they know.*
710 *That ye should be as gods, since I as man,*
711 *Internal man, is but proportion meet—⁵⁰⁰⁹*
712 *I of brute, human; ye of human, gods.*
713 *So ye shall die, perhaps, by putting off*
714 *Human, to put on gods—death to be wished,*
715 *Though threat'ned, which no worse than this can bring.*
716 *And what are gods, that man may not become*
717 *As they, participating ⁵⁰¹⁰ godlike food?*
718 *The gods are first, and that advantage use⁵⁰¹¹*
719 *On our belief that all from them proceeds.*
720 *I question it, for this fair earth I see,*
721 *Warmed by the sun, producing every kind,*
722 *Them⁵⁰¹² nothing. If they all things, who enclosed*
723 *Knowledge of good and evil in this tree,*
724 *That whoso eats thereof, forthwith attains*
725 *Wisdom without their leave? And wherein lies*

726 *Th' offence, that man should thus attain to know?*
727 *What can your knowledge hurt Him, or this tree*
728 *Impart against His will, if all be His?*
729 *Or is it envy? and can envy dwell*
730 *In Heav'nly breasts? These, these, and many more*
731 *Causes⁵⁰¹³ import⁵⁰¹⁴ your need of this fair fruit.*
732 *Goddess humane, reach then, and freely taste!*
733 *He ended, and his words replete⁵⁰¹⁵ with guile*
734 *Into her heart too easy entrance won.*
735 *Fixed on the fruit she gazed, which to behold*
736 *Might tempt alone, ⁵⁰¹⁶ and in her ears the sound*
737 *Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd⁵⁰¹⁷*
738 *With reason (to her seeming) and with truth.*
739 *Meanwhile the hour of noon drew on, and waked*
740 *An eager appetite, raised by the smell*
741 *So savory of that fruit, which with desire,*
742 *Inclinable⁵⁰¹⁸ now grown to touch or taste,*
743 *Solicited ⁵⁰¹⁹ her longing eye. Yet first*
744 *Pausing a while, thus to herself she mused:*
745 *“Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits,*
746 *Though kept from man, and worthy to be admired,*
747 *Whose taste, too long forborn, at first assay⁵⁰²⁰*
748 *Gave elocution⁵⁰²¹ to the mute, and taught*
749 *The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise.*
750 *Thy praise He also, who forbids thy use,*
751 *Conceals not from us, naming thee the Tree*
752 *Of Knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil,*
753 *Forbids us then to taste! But His forbidding*
754 *Commends thee more, while it infers the good*
755 *By thee communicated, and our want.⁵⁰²²*
756 *For good unknown sure is not had or, had*
757 *And yet unknown, is as not had at all.*
758 *In plain⁵⁰²³ then, what forbids He but to know,*

759 *Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise?*
760 *Such prohibitions bind not. But if death*
761 *Bind us with after-bands, what profits then*
762 *Our inward freedom? In the day we eat*
763 *Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die!*
764 *How dies the serpent? He hath eaten and lives,*
765 *And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,*
766 *Irrational⁵⁰²⁴ till then. For us alone*
767 *Was death invented? Or to us denied*
768 *This intellectual food, for beasts reserved?*
769 *For beasts it seems. Yet that one beast which first*
770 *Hath tasted envies not, but brings with joy*
771 *The good befall'n him, author unsuspect,⁵⁰²⁵*
772 *Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.*
773 *What fear I then? Rather, what know to fear*
774 *Under this ignorance of good and evil,*
775 *Of God or death, of law or penalty?*
776 *Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,*
777 *Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,*
778 *Of virtue to make wise. What hinders then*
779 *To reach, and feed at once both body and mind?"*
780 *So saying, her rash hand in evil hour*
781 *Forth reaching to the fruit, she plucked, she ate!⁵⁰²⁶*
782 *Earth felt the wound, and Nature from her seat,*
783 *Sighing through all her works, gave signs of woe,*
784 *That all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk*
785 *The guilty ⁵⁰²⁷ serpent, and well might, for Eve,*
786 *Intent now wholly on her taste, nought else*
787 *Regarded.⁵⁰²⁸ Such delight till then, as seemed,*
788 *In fruit she never tasted, whether true*
789 *Or fancied so, through expectation high*
790 *Of knowledge, nor was godhead from her thought.*
791 *Greedily she ingorged without restraint,*
792 *And knew not eating death. Sate at length,*

793 And heightened as with wine, jocund and boon,⁵⁰²⁹
794 Thus to herself she pleasingly began:
795 "O sov'reign, virtuous, precious of all trees
796 In Paradise! Of operation⁵⁰³⁰ blest
797 To sapience,⁵⁰³¹ hitherto obscured,⁵⁰³² infamed,⁵⁰³³
798 And thy fair fruit let⁵⁰³⁴ hang, as to no end ⁵⁰³⁵
799 Created. But henceforth my early care,
800 Not without song, each morning, and due praise,
801 Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease
802 Of thy full branches offered free to all,
803 Till dieted ⁵⁰³⁶ by thee I grow mature
804 In knowledge, as the gods, who all things know,
805 Though others envy what they cannot give—
806 For had the gift been theirs, it had not here
807 Thus grown. Experience, next, to thee I owe,
808 Best guide. Not following thee, I had remained
809 In ignorance. Thou op'nest wisdom's way,
810 And giv'st access, though secret she retire.
811 And I perhaps am secret.⁵⁰³⁷ Heav'n is high,
812 High and remote to see from thence distinct
813 Each thing on earth. And other care perhaps
814 May have diverted from continual watch
815 Our great Forbidder, safe with all His spies
816 About him. But to Adam in what sort⁵⁰³⁸
817 Shall I appear? Shall I to him make known
818 As yet my change, and give him to partake⁵⁰³⁹
819 Full happiness with me, or rather not,
820 But keep the odds of knowledge in my power
821 Without co-partner? So to add what wants⁵⁰⁴⁰
822 In female sex, the more to draw his love,
823 And render me more equal, and perhaps,
824 A thing not undesirable, sometime
825 Superior—for inferior, who is free?

826 *This may be well. But what if God have seen,*
827 *And death ensue?⁵⁰⁴¹ Then I shall be no more!*
828 *And Adam, wedded to another Eve,*
829 *Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct:*
830 *A death to think! ⁵⁰⁴² Confirmed then I resolve,*
831 *Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe!*
832 *So dear I love him, that with him all deaths*
833 *I could endure, without him live no life.”*
834 *So saying, from the tree her step she turned,*
835 *But first low reverence done, as to the power*
836 *That dwelt within, whose presence had infused*
837 *Into the plant sciential ⁵⁰⁴³ sap, derived*
838 *From nectar, drink of gods. Adam the while,*
839 *Waiting desirous her return, had wove*
840 *Of choicest flow’rs a garland, to adorn*
841 *Her tresses, and her rural labors crown,*
842 *As reapers oft are wont their harvest-queen.*
843 *Great joy he promised to his thoughts, and new*
844 *Solace in her return, so long delayed,*
845 *Yet oft his heart, divine⁵⁰⁴⁴ of something ill,*
846 *Misgave him. He the fault’ring⁵⁰⁴⁵ measure⁵⁰⁴⁶ felt,⁵⁰⁴⁷*
847 *And forth to meet her went, the way she took*
848 *That morn when first they parted. By the Tree*
849 *Of Knowledge he must pass. There he her met,*
850 *Scarce from the tree returning, in her hand*
851 *A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smiled,*
852 *New gathered, and ambrosial smell diffused.*
853 *To him she hasted. In her face excuse*
854 *Came prologue,⁵⁰⁴⁸ and apology too prompt,*
855 *Which, with bland⁵⁰⁴⁹ words at will,⁵⁰⁵⁰ she thus addressed:*
856 *“Hast thou not wondered, Adam, at my stay?*
857 *Thee I have missed, and thought it long, deprived⁵⁰⁵¹*
858 *Thy presence. Agony of love till now*
859 *Not felt, nor shall be twice, for never more*

860 *Mean I to try, what rash untried I sought,*
861 *The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange*
862 *Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear.*
863 *This tree is not, as we are told, a tree*
864 *Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown*
865 *Op'ning the way, but of divine effect*
866 *To open eyes, and make them gods who taste,*
867 *And hath been tasted such. The serpent wise,*
868 *Or not restrained as we, or not obeying,*
869 *Hath eaten of the fruit, and is become—*
870 *Not dead, as we are threat'ned, but thenceforth*
871 *Endued⁵⁰⁵² with human voice and human sense,*
872 *Reasoning to admiration,⁵⁰⁵³ and with me*
873 *Persuasively hath so prevailed, that I*
874 *Have also tasted, and have also found*
875 *Th' effects to correspond.⁵⁰⁵⁴ Opener mine eyes,*
876 *Dim erst, dilated ⁵⁰⁵⁵ spirits, ampler heart,*
877 *And growing up to godhead—which for thee*
878 *Chiefly I sought—without thee can despise.*
879 *For bliss, as⁵⁰⁵⁶ thou hast part,⁵⁰⁵⁷ to me is bliss.*
880 *Tedious, unshared with thee, and odious soon.*
881 *Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot⁵⁰⁵⁸*
882 *May join us, equal joy, as equal love,*
883 *Lest thou not tasting, different degree*
884 *Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce*
88 *Deity for thee, when Fate will not permit.”*
886 *Thus Eve with count'nance blithe⁵⁰⁵⁹ her story told,*
887 *But in her cheek distemper⁵⁰⁶⁰ flushing glowed.*
888 *On th' other side Adam, soon as he heard*
889 *The fatal trespass done by Eve, amazed,*
890 *Astonied⁵⁰⁶¹ stood and blank,⁵⁰⁶² while horror chill*
891 *Ran through his veins, and all his joints relaxed.⁵⁰⁶³*
892 *From his slack hand the garland wreathed for Eve*

893 *Down dropped, and all the faded roses shed.* [5064](#)
894 *Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length*
895 *First to himself he inward silence broke:*
896 *“O fairest of Creation, last and best*
897 *Of all God’s works, creature in whom excelled*
898 *Whatever can to sight or thought be formed,*
899 *Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!*
900 *How art thou lost! How on a sudden lost,*
901 *Defaced, deflow’red, and now to death devote!* [5065](#)
902 *Rather, how hast thou yielded to transgress*
903 *The strict forbiddance, how to violate*
904 *The sacred fruit forbidden! Some cursèd fraud*
905 *Of enemy hath beguiled thee, yet unknown,*
906 *And me with thee hath ruined, for with thee*
907 *Certain my resolution is to die!*
908 *How can I live without thee? How forego*
909 *Thy sweet converse,* [5066](#) *and love so dearly joined,*
910 *To live again in these wild woods forlorn?* [5067](#)
911 *Should God create another Eve, and I*
912 *Another rib afford, yet loss of thee*
913 *Would never* [5068](#) *from my heart. No, no, I feel*
914 *The link of Nature draw me. Flesh of flesh,*
915 *Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state* [5069](#)
916 *Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.”*
917 *So having said, as one from sad dismay*
918 *Recomforted,* [5070](#) *and after thoughts disturbed*
919 *Submitting to what seemed remediless,*
920 *Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turned:*
921 *“Bold deed thou hast presumed, advent’rous Eve,*
922 *And peril great provoked, who thus hast dared,*
923 *Had it been only coveting to eye*
924 *That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence,*
925 *Much more to taste it under ban to touch.*
926 *But past who can recall, or done undo?*

927 Not God Omnipotent, nor Fate. Yet so
928 Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the fact
929 Is not so heinous,⁵⁰⁷¹ now, foretasted ⁵⁰⁷² fruit,
930 Profaned⁵⁰⁷³ first by the serpent, by him first
931 Made common⁵⁰⁷⁴ and unhallowed,⁵⁰⁷⁵ ere our taste,
932 Nor yet on him found deadly. Yet he lives,
933 Lives, as thou said'st, and gains to live, as man,
934 Higher degree of life—inducement strong
935 To us, as likely tasting to attain
936 Proportional ascent, which cannot be
937 But to be gods, or Angels, demi-gods.
938 Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,
939 Though threat'ning, will in earnest so destroy
940 Us His prime creatures, dignified so high,
941 Set over all His works, which in our fall,
942 For us created, needs with us must fail,
943 Dependent made. So God shall uncreate,
944 Be frustrate, do, undo, and labor lose—
945 Not well conceived of God, who though His power
946 Creation could repeat, yet would be loath
947 Us to abolish, lest the adversary
948 Triumph, and say: 'Fickle their state whom God
949 Most favors. Who can please Him long? Me first
950 He ruined, now mankind. Whom will He next?'
951 Matter of scorn, not to be giv'n the foe.
952 However, I with thee have fixed my lot,
953 Certain⁵⁰⁷⁶ to undergo like⁵⁰⁷⁷ doom. If death
954 Consort⁵⁰⁷⁸ with thee, death is to me as life,
955 So forcible ⁵⁰⁷⁹ within my heart I feel
956 The bond of Nature draw me to my own,
957 My own in thee, for what thou art is mine,
958 Our state cannot be severed. We are one,
959 One flesh. To lose thee were to lose myself."
960 So Adam, and thus Eve to him replied:

961 *“O glorious trial of exceeding⁵⁰⁸⁰ love,*
962 *Illustrious evidence,⁵⁰⁸¹ example high!*
963 *Engaging me to emulate. But short ⁵⁰⁸²*
964 *Of thy perfection, how shall I attain,⁵⁰⁸³*
965 *Adam, from whose dear side I boast me sprung,*
966 *And gladly of our union hear thee speak,*
967 *One heart, one soul in both—whereof good proof*
968 *This day affords, declaring thee resolved,*
969 *Rather than death, or aught than death more dread,*
970 *Shall separate us, linked in love so dear,*
971 *To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,*
972 *If any be, of tasting this fair fruit,*
973 *Whose virtue, for of good still good proceeds,*
974 *Direct, or by occasion,⁵⁰⁸⁴ hath presented*
975 *This happy trial of thy love, which else*
976 *So eminently ⁵⁰⁸⁵ never had been known?*
977 *Were it ⁵⁰⁸⁶ I thought death menaced ⁵⁰⁸⁷ would ensue⁵⁰⁸⁸*
978 *This my attempt, I would sustain⁵⁰⁸⁹ alone*
979 *The worst, and not persuade thee, rather die*
980 *Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact ⁵⁰⁹⁰*
981 *Pernicious⁵⁰⁹¹ to thy peace, chiefly assured*
982 *Remarkably so late⁵⁰⁹² of thy so true,*
983 *So faithful, love unequalled. But I feel*
984 *Far otherwise th’ event. Not death, but life*
985 *Augmented, opened eyes, new hopes, new joys,*
986 *Taste so divine, that what of sweet before*
987 *Hath touched my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.*
988 *On my experience, Adam, freely taste,*
989 *And fear of death deliver to the winds.*
990 *So saying, she embraced him, and for joy*
991 *Tenderly wept, much won⁵⁰⁹³ that he his love*
992 *Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur*
993 *Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.*

994 *In recompence (for such compliance bad,*
995 *Such recompence best merits) from the bough*
996 *She gave him of that fair enticing fruit*
997 *With liberal hand. He scrupled not to eat,*
998 *Against his better knowledge, not deceived,*
999 *But fondly⁵⁰⁹⁴ overcome with female charm.*
1000 *Earth trembled from her entrails, as again*
1001 *In pangs, and Nature gave a second groan,*
1002 *Sky loured ⁵⁰⁹⁵ and, muttering thunder, some sad drops*
1003 *Wept at completing⁵⁰⁹⁶ of the mortal sin*
1004 *Original ⁵⁰⁹⁷—while Adam took no thought,*
1005 *Eating his fill, nor Eve to iterate⁵⁰⁹⁸*
1006 *Her former trespass feared, the more to soothe*
1007 *Him with her loved society, that now,*
1008 *As with new wine intoxicated both,*
1009 *They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel*
1010 *Divinity within them breeding wings*
1011 *Wherewith to scorn the earth. But that false fruit*
1012 *Far other operation⁵⁰⁹⁹ first displayed,*
1013 *Carnal desire inflaming. He on Eve*
1014 *Began to cast lascivious eyes, she him*
1015 *As wantonly repaid. In lust they burn,*
1016 *Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance⁵¹⁰⁰ move:*
1017 *“Eve, now I see thou art exact ⁵¹⁰¹ of taste,*
1018 *And elegant,⁵¹⁰² of ⁵¹⁰³ sapience⁵¹⁰⁴ no small part.*
1019 *Since to each meaning savor ⁵¹⁰⁵ we apply,*
1020 *And palate ⁵¹⁰⁶ call judicious,⁵¹⁰⁷ I the praise*
1021 *Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purveyed.⁵¹⁰⁸*
1022 *Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstained*
1023 *From this delightful fruit, nor known till now*
1024 *True relish,⁵¹⁰⁹ tasting. If such pleasure be*
1025 *In things to us forbidden, it might be wished*
1026 *For this one tree had been forbidden ten.*

1027 *But come, so well refreshed, now let us play,*
1028 *As meet is, after such delicious fare,*
1029 *For never did thy beauty, since the day*
1030 *I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorned*
1031 *With all perfections, so inflame my sense*
1032 *With ardor to enjoy thee, fairer now*
1033 *Than ever—bounty⁵¹¹⁰ of this virtuous⁵¹¹¹ tree!*
1034 *So said he, and forbore not glance or toy ⁵¹¹²*
1035 *Of amorous intent, well understood*
1036 *Of Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire.*
1037 *Her hand he seized, and to a shady bank,*
1038 *Thick overhead with verdant roof embow'ed,*
1039 *He led her, nothing loath. Flow'rs were the couch,*
1040 *Pansies, and violets, and asphodel,*
1041 *And hyacinth, earth's freshest softest lap.⁵¹¹³*
1042 *There they their fill of love and love's disport ⁵¹¹⁴*
1043 *Took largely, ⁵¹¹⁵ of their mutual guilt the seal,*
1044 *The solace of their sin, till dewy⁵¹¹⁶ sleep*
1045 *Oppressed ⁵¹¹⁷ them, wearied with their amorous play.*
1046 *Soon as the force of that fallacious⁵¹¹⁸ fruit,*
1047 *That with exhilarating vapor bland ⁵¹¹⁹*
1048 *About their spirits had played, and inmost powers*
1049 *Made err, was now exhaled, and grosser sleep,*
1050 *Bred of unkindly⁵¹²⁰ fumes, with conscious dreams*
1051 *Encumbered, ⁵¹²¹ now had left them, up they rose*
1052 *As from unrest ⁵¹²² and, each the other viewing,*
1053 *Soon found their eyes how opened, and their minds*
1054 *How darkened. Innocence, that as a veil*
1055 *Had shadowed them from knowing ill, was gone,*
1056 *Just ⁵¹²³ confidence, and native righteousness, ⁵¹²⁴*
1057 *And honor, from⁵¹²⁵ about them, naked left*
1058 *To guilty shame. He covered, ⁵¹²⁶ but his robe*
1059 *Uncovered more. So rose the Danite⁵¹²⁷ strong,*

1060 *Herculean Samson, from the harlot-lap*
1061 *Of Philistean⁵¹²⁸ Dalilah,⁵¹²⁹ and waked*
1062 *Shorn of his strength. They destitute and bare*
1063 *Of all their virtue, silent, and in face*
1064 *Confounded,⁵¹³⁰ long they sat, as stricken mute,*
1065 *Till Adam, though not less than Eve abashed,*
1066 *At length gave utterance to these words constrained:⁵¹³¹*
1067 *“O Eve, in evil hour thou did’st give ear*
1068 *To that false worm, of whomsoever taught*
1069 *To counterfeit man’s voice, true in our fall,*
1070 *False in our promised rising, since our eyes*
1071 *Op’ned we find, indeed, and find we know*
1072 *Both good and evil—good lost, and evil got!*
1073 *Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know,*
1074 *Which leaves us naked thus, of honor void,*
1075 *Of innocence, of faith, of purity,*
1076 *Our wonted⁵¹³² ornaments now soiled and stained,*
1077 *And in our faces evident the signs*
1078 *Of foul concupiscence,⁵¹³³ whence evil store,⁵¹³⁴*
1079 *Ev’n shame, the last⁵¹³⁵ of evils. Of the first*
1080 *Be sure then. How shall I behold the face*
1081 *Henceforth of God or Angel, erst with joy*
1082 *And rapture so oft beheld? Those Heav’nly shapes*
1083 *Will dazzle now this earthly with their blaze*
1084 *Insufferably bright. O! might I here*
1085 *In solitude live savage, in some glade*
1086 *Obscured,⁵¹³⁶ where highest woods, impenetrable*
1087 *To star or sun-light, spread their umbrage⁵¹³⁷ broad*
1088 *And brown as evening. Cover me, ye pines!*
1089 *Ye cedars, with innumerable boughs*
1090 *Hide me, where I may never see them⁵¹³⁸ more!*
1091 *“But let us now, as in bad plight,⁵¹³⁹ devise*
1092 *What best may for the present serve to hide*

1093 *The parts of each from other, that seem most*
1094 *To shame obnoxious,⁵¹⁴⁰ and unseemliest ⁵¹⁴¹ seen.*
1095 *Some tree, whose broad smooth leaves together sewed,*
1096 *And girded on our loins, may cover round*
1097 *Those middle parts, that this newcomer, shame,*
1098 *There sit not, and reproach us as unclean.*
1099 *So counselled he, and both together went*
1100 *Into the thickest wood. There soon they chose*
1101 *The fig-tree—not that kind for fruit renowned,*
1102 *But such⁵¹⁴² as at this day, to Indians known,*
1103 *In Malabar⁵¹⁴³ or Deccan⁵¹⁴⁴ spreads her arms*
1104 *Branching so broad and long, that in the ground*
1105 *The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow*
1106 *About the mother tree, a pillared shade*
1107 *High over-arched, and echoing walks between.*
1108 *There oft the Indian herdsman, shunning heat,*
1109 *Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing herds*
1110 *At loop-holes cut through thickest shade. Those leaves*
1111 *They gathered, broad as Amazonian targe⁵¹⁴⁵*
1112 *And, with what skill they had, together sewed,*
1113 *To gird their waist—vain covering, if to hide*
1114 *Their guilt and dreaded shame! O how unlike*
1115 *To that first naked glory! Such of late*
1116 *Columbus found th’American, so girt⁵¹⁴⁶*
1117 *With feathered cincture, ⁵¹⁴⁷ naked else, and wild*
1118 *Among the trees on isles and woody shores.*
1119 *Thus fenced ⁵¹⁴⁸ and, as they thought, their shame in part*
1120 *Covered, but not at rest or ease of mind,*
1121 *They sat them down to weep, nor only tears*
1122 *Rained at their eyes, but high winds worse within*
1123 *Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,*
1124 *Mistrust, suspicion, discord, and shook sore*
1125 *Their inward state of mind, calm region once*
1126 *And full of peace, now tossed and turbulent,*

1127 *For understanding ruled not, and the will*
1128 *Heard not her [5149](#) lore, [5150](#) both [5151](#) in subjection now*
1129 *To sensual appetite, who from beneath*
1130 *Usurping over sov'reign reason claimed*
1131 *Superior sway. [5152](#) From thus distempered [5153](#) breast,*
1132 *Adam, estranged [5154](#) in look and altered style, [5155](#)*
1133 *Speech intermitted [5156](#) thus to Eve renewed:*
1134 *“Would thou had'st hearkened to my words, and stayed*
1135 *With me, as I besought [5157](#) thee, when that strange*
1136 *Desire of wand'ring, this unhappy morn,*
1137 *I know not whence possessed thee. We had then*
1138 *Remained still happy—not, as now, despoiled [5158](#)*
1139 *Of all our good, shamed, naked, miserable!*
1140 *Let none henceforth seek needless causet' approve*
1141 *The faith they owe! [5159](#) When earnestly they seek*
1142 *Such proof, conclude they then begin to fail.”*
1143 *To whom, soon [5160](#) moved with touch of blame, thus Eve:*
1144 *“What words have passed thy lips, Adam severe!*
1145 *Imput'st thou that to my default, or will*
1146 *Of wand'ring, as thou call'st it, which who knows*
1147 *But might as ill have happened thou being by—*
1148 *Or to thyself perhaps? Had'st thou been there,*
1149 *Or here th' attempt, thou could'st not have discerned*
1150 *Fraud in the serpent, speaking as he spoke.*
1151 *No ground of enmity between us known,*
1152 *Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm?*
1153 *Was I t' have never parted from thy side?*
1154 *As good have grown there still, a lifeless rib.*
1155 *Being as I am, why did'st not thou, the head,*
1156 *Command me absolutely not to go,*
1157 *Going into such danger as thou said'st?*
1158 *Too facile [5161](#) then, thou did'st not much gainsay—[5162](#)*
1159 *Nay, did'st permit, approve, and fair [5163](#) dismiss. [5164](#)*

1160 *Had'st thou been firm and fixed in thy dissent,*
1161 *Neither had I transgressed, nor thou with me.*
1162 *To whom, then first incensed, Adam replied:*
1163 *"Is this the love, is this the recompence*
1164 *Of mine to thee, ungrateful Eve! expressed*
1165 *Immutable, [5165](#) when thou wert lost, not I,*
1166 *Who might have lived, and joyed [5166](#) immortal bliss,*
1167 *Yet willingly chose rather death with thee?*
1168 *And am I now upbraided as the cause*
1169 *Of thy transgressing? Not enough severe,*
1170 *It seems, in thy restraint. What could I more?*
1171 *I warned thee, I admonished thee, foretold*
1172 *The danger, and the lurking enemy*
1173 *That lay in wait. Beyond this had been force,*
1174 *And force upon free will hath here no place.*
1175 *But confidence then bore thee on, secure [5167](#)*
1176 *Either to meet no danger, or to find*
1177 *Matter [5168](#) of glorious trial. [5169](#) And perhaps*
1178 *I also erred, in overmuch admiring*
1179 *What seemed in thee so perfect that I thought*
1180 *No evil durst attempt thee. But I rue [5170](#)*
1181 *The error now, which is become my crime,*
1182 *And thou th' accuser. Thus it shall befall [5171](#)*
1183 *Him who, to worth in women overtrusting,*
1184 *Lets her will [5172](#) rule. Restraint she will not brook*
1185 *And left t' herself, if evil thence ensue, [5173](#)*
1186 *She first his weak indulgence will accuse.*
1187 *Thus they in mutual accusation spent*
1188 *The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning,*
1189 *And of their vain contest [5174](#) appeared no end.*

The End of the Ninth Book

BOOK X

THE ARGUMENT

Man's transgression known, the Guardian Angels forsake Paradise, and return up to Heaven to approve⁵¹⁷⁵ their vigilance, and are approved, God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the transgressors, who descends and gives sentence accordingly, then in pity clothes them both, and reascends.

Sin and Death sitting till then at the gates of Hell, by wondrous sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confined in Hell, but to follow Satan their sire up to the place of man. To make the way easier from Hell to this world, to and fro, they pave a broad highway or bridge over Chaos, according to the track that Satan first made. Then preparing for earth, they meet him, proud of his success, returning to Hell; their mutual gratulation.

Satan arrives at Pandemonium, in full assembly relates with boasting his success against man. Instead of applause is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transformed—with himself also—suddenly into serpents, according to his doom, given in Paradise. Then deluded with show of the forbidden tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes.

The proceedings of Sin and Death; God foretells the final victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things, but for the present commands his Angels to make several alterations in the heavens and elements. Adam more and more perceiving his fallen condition heavily bewails, rejects the condolment of Eve. She persists and at length appeases him, then to evade the curse likely to fall on their offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not, but conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be revenged on the serpent, and exhorts her with him to seek peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.

1 Meanwhile the heinous [5176](#) and despiteful [5177](#) act
2 Of Satan, done in Paradise, and how
3 He, in the serpent, had perverted [5178](#) Eve,
4 Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,
5 Was known in Heav'n, for what can 'scape the eye
6 Of God all-seeing, or deceive His heart
7 Omniscient? Who, in all things wise and just,
8 Hindered not Satan to attempt the mind
9 Of man, with strength entire [5179](#) and free will armed,
10 Complete to have discovered and repulsed
11 Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend.
12 For still they [5180](#) knew and ought t' have still [5181](#) remembered
13 The high injunction not to taste that fruit,
14 Whoever tempted, which they not obeying,
15 Incurred (what could they less?) the penalty
16 And, manifold [5182](#) in sin, deserved to fall.
17 Up into Heav'n from Paradise in haste
18 The Angelic guards ascended, mute, and sad
19 For man, for of his state by this they knew,
20 Much wond'ring how the subtle fiend had stol'n
21 Entrance unseen. Soon as th' unwelcome news
22 From earth arrived at Heaven-gate, displeased
23 All were who heard. Dim sadness did not spare,
24 That time, celestial visages, yet mixed
25 With pity violated [5183](#) not their bliss.
26 About the new-arrived in multitudes
27 The ethereal people ran, to hear and know
28 How all befell. [5184](#) They towards the Throne Supreme
29 Accountable, [5185](#) made haste to make appear [5186](#)
30 With righteous [5187](#) plea their utmost vigilance,

31 *And easily approved,*⁵¹⁸⁸ *when the Most High*
32 *Eternal Father, from His secret cloud,*
33 *Amidst in thunder, uttered thus His voice:*
34 *“Assembled Angels, and ye Powers returned*
35 *From unsuccessful charge,*⁵¹⁸⁹ *be not dismayed,*
36 *Nor troubled at these tidings from the earth,*
37 *Which your sincerest*⁵¹⁹⁰ *care could not prevent,*
38 *Foretold*⁵¹⁹¹ *so lately*⁵¹⁹² *what would come to pass,*
39 *When first this Tempter crossed the gulf from Hell.*
40 *I told ye then he should prevail, and speed*⁵¹⁹³
41 *On his bad errand. Man should*⁵¹⁹⁴ *be seduced*
42 *And flattered out of all, believing lies*
43 *Against his Maker, no decree of mine*
44 *Concurring to necessitate his fall*
45 *Or touch with lightest moment*⁵¹⁹⁵ *of impulse*⁵¹⁹⁶
46 *His free will, to her*⁵¹⁹⁷ *own inclining left*
47 *In ev’n scale. But fall’n he is. And now*
48 *What rests*⁵¹⁹⁸ *but*⁵¹⁹⁹ *that the mortal*⁵²⁰⁰ *sentence pass*⁵²⁰¹
49 *On his transgression, death denounced*⁵²⁰² *that day,*
50 *Which he presumes already vain and void*
51 *Because not yet inflicted, as he feared,*
52 *By some immediate stroke, but soon shall find*
53 *Forbearance*⁵²⁰³ *no acquittance,*⁵²⁰⁴ *ere day end.*
54 *Justice shall not return as bounty scorned.*⁵²⁰⁵
55 *But whom send I to judge them? Whom but thee,*
56 *Vice-gerent*⁵²⁰⁶ *Son? To thee I have transferred*
57 *All judgment, whether in Heav’n, or earth, or Hell.*
58 *Easy it may be seen that I intend*
59 *Mercy colleague*⁵²⁰⁷ *with justice, sending thee*
60 *Man’s friend, his mediator, his designed*⁵²⁰⁸
61 *Both ransom and redeemer voluntary,*

62 *And destined, man himself, to judge man fallen.*
63 *So spoke the Father and, unfolding bright*
64 *Toward the right hand His glory, on the Son*
65 *Blazed forth unclouded Deity. He full*
66 *Resplendent all his Father manifest*
67 *Expressed, and thus divinely answered mild:*
68 *“Father Eternal, Thine is to decree,*
69 *Mine, both in Heav’n and earth, to do Thy will*
70 *Supreme, that Thou in me, Thy Son beloved,*
71 *May’st ever rest well pleased. I go to judge*
72 *On earth these Thy transgressors, but Thou know’st,*
73 *Whoever judged, the worst on me must light,*[5209](#)
74 *When time shall be, for so I undertook*
75 *Before Thee, and not repenting, this obtain*[5210](#)
76 *Of right, that I may mitigate*[5211](#) *their doom*[5212](#)
77 *On me derived.*[5213](#) *Yet I shall temper so*
78 *Justice with mercy, as may illustrate*[5214](#) *most*
79 *Them fully satisfied,*[5215](#) *and Thee appease.* [5216](#)
80 *Attendance*[5217](#) *none shall need,*[5218](#) *nor train, where none*
81 *Are to behold the judgment but the judged,*
82 *Those two. The third,*[5219](#) *best absent,*[5220](#) *is condemned,*
83 *Convict* [5221](#) *by flight, and rebel to all law.*
84 *Conviction*[5222](#) *to the serpent*[5223](#) *none belongs.*
85 *Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose*
86 *Of high collateral* [5224](#) *glory. Him Thrones, and Powers,*
87 *Princedom, and Dominations ministrant* [5225](#)
88 *Accompanied to Heaven-gate, from whence*
89 *Eden, and all the coast, in prospect lay.*
90 *Down he descended straight: the speed of gods*
91 *Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes winged.*
92 *Now was the sun in western cadence*[5226](#) *low*

93 *From noon, and gentle airs, due at their hour,*
94 *To fan the earth now waked, and usher in*
95 *The ev'ning cool, when He, from wrath more cool,*
96 *Came the mild Judge and Intercessor⁵²²⁷ both,*
97 *To sentence man. The voice of God they heard*
98 *Now walking in the garden, by soft winds*
99 *Brought to their ears, while day decline. They heard,*
100 *And from His presence hid themselves among*
101 *The thickest trees, both man and wife, till God,*
102 *Approaching, thus to Adam called aloud:*
103 *“Where art thou, Adam, wont with joy to meet*
104 *My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,*
105 *Not pleased, thus entertained ⁵²²⁸ with solitude,*
106 *Where obvious duty erewhile appeared unsought.*
107 *Or ⁵²²⁹ come I less conspicuous, ⁵²³⁰ or what change*
108 *Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth.*
109 *He came, and with him Eve, more loath, though first*
110 *T' offend. Discount'nanced ⁵²³¹ both, and discomposed. ⁵²³²*
111 *Love was not in their looks, either to God*
112 *Or to each other, but apparent ⁵²³³ guilt,*
113 *And shame, and perturbation, and despair,*
114 *Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile.*
115 *Whence Adam, falt'ring long, thus answered brief:*
116 *“I heard Thee in the garden, and of Thy voice*
117 *Afraid, being naked hid myself.” To whom*
118 *The gracious Judge, without revile, ⁵²³⁴ replied:*
119 *“My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not feared,*
120 *But still rejoiced, How is it now become*
121 *So dreadful to thee? That thou art naked, who*
122 *Hath told thee? Hast thou eaten of the tree*
123 *Whereof I gave thee charge⁵²³⁵ thou should'st not eat?*

124 To whom thus Adam sore beset [5236](#) replied:
125 “O Heav’n! In evil strait [5237](#) this day I stand
126 Before my Judge, either to undergo [5238](#)
127 Myself the total crime, or to accuse
128 My other self, the partner of my life,
129 Whose failing, while her faith to me remains,
130 I should conceal, and not expose to blame
131 By my complaint. But strict necessity
132 Subdues me, and calamitous [5239](#) constraint,
133 Lest on my head both sin and punishment,
134 However insupportable, [5240](#) be all
135 Devolved. [5241](#) Though should I hold my peace, yet Thou
136 Would’st easily detect what I conceal.
137 “This woman, whom Thou mad’st to be my help,
138 And gav’st me as Thy perfect gift, so good,
139 So fit, so acceptable, [5242](#) so divine,
140 That from her hand I could suspect no ill,
141 And what she did, whatever in itself,
142 Her doing seemed to justify the deed.
143 She gave me of the tree, and I did eat.
144 To whom the sov’reign Presence thus replied:
145 “Was she thy God, that her thou did’st obey
146 Before His voice? Or was she made thy guide,
147 Superior, [5243](#) or but [5244](#) equal, that to her
148 Thou did’st resign thy manhood, and the place
149 Wherein God set thee above her, made of thee
150 And for thee, whose perfection far excelled
151 Hers in all real [5245](#) dignity? [5246](#) Adorned
152 She was indeed, and lovely, to attract
153 Thy love, not thy subjection, and her gifts
154 Were such, as under government [5247](#) well seemed,

155 Unseemly [5248](#) to bear rule, which was thy part
156 And person, [5249](#) had'st thou known thyself aright.
157 So having said, He thus to Eve in few:
158 “Say, woman, what is this which thou hast done?
159 To whom sad Eve, with shame nigh overwhelmed,
160 Confessing soon, [5250](#) yet not before her Judge
161 Bold or loquacious, [5251](#) thus abashed replied:
162 “The serpent me beguiled, and I did eat.
163 Which when the Lord God heard, without delay
164 To judgment He proceeded on th' accused
165 Serpent (though brute, unable to transfer
166 The guilt on him who made him instrument
167 Of mischief, and polluted from the end [5252](#)
168 Of his creation), justly then accursed,
169 As vitiated [5253](#) in Nature. More to know
170 Concerned not man (since he no further knew)
171 Nor altered his offense. Yet God at last [5254](#)
172 To Satan (first in sin) his doom [5255](#) applied,
173 Though in mysterious [5256](#) terms, judged
174 And on the serpent thus His curse let fall:
175 “Because thou hast done this, thou art accursed
176 Above all cattle, [5257](#) each beast of the field.
177 Upon thy belly groveling thou shalt go,
178 And dust shalt eat all the days of thy life.
179 Between thee and the woman I will put
180 Enmity, and between thine and her seed.
181 Her seed shall bruise [5258](#) thy head, thou bruise his heel.
182 So spoke this oracle, then verified
183 When Jesus, Son of Mary, second Eve,
184 Saw Satan fall, like lightning, down from Heav'n,
185 Prince of the air. Then rising from his [5259](#) grave

186 Spoiled [5260](#) Principalities and Powers, triumphed
187 In open show [5261](#) and, with ascension bright,
188 Captivity led captive through the air,
189 The realm itself of Satan, long usurped, [5262](#)
190 Whom he [5263](#) shall tread at last under our feet,
191 Ev'n he, [5264](#) who now foretold his [5265](#) fatal bruise, [5266](#)
192 And to the woman thus His sentence turned:
193 "Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply
194 By thy conception. [5267](#) Children thou shalt bring
195 In sorrow forth, and to thy husband's will
196 Thine shall submit. He over thee shall rule.
197 On Adam last thus judgment He pronounced:
198 "Because thou hast heark'ned to the voice of thy wife,
199 And eaten of the tree, concerning which
200 I charged thee, saying, 'Thou shalt not eat thereof,
201 Cursed is the ground for thy sake. Thou in sorrow
202 Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy life.
203 Thorns also and thistles it shall bring thee forth
204 Unbid, [5268](#) and thou shalt eat th' herb of the field.
205 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread,
206 Till thou return unto the ground, for thou
207 Out of the ground wast taken: know thy birth,
208 For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return.
209 So judged He man, both Judge and Savior sent,
210 And th' instant stroke of death denounced [5269](#) that day,
211 Removed far off. Then pitying how they stood
212 Before Him, naked to the air, that now
213 Must suffer change, disdained not to begin
214 Thenceforth the form of servant to assume,
215 As when He washed His servant's feet. So now,
216 As Father of His family, He clad

217 *Their nakedness with skins of beasts, or slain,*
218 *Or as the snake with youthful coat⁵²⁷⁰ repaid,⁵²⁷¹*
219 *And thought not much⁵²⁷² to clothe His enemies.*
220 *Nor He their outward only with the skins*
221 *Of beasts, but inward nakedness, much more*
222 *Opprobrious,⁵²⁷³ with His robe of righteousness*
223 *Arraying, covered from His Father's sight.*
224 *To Him with swift ascent he up returned,*
225 *Into His blissful bosom reassumed*
226 *In glory, as of old. To Him appeased,⁵²⁷⁴*
227 *All (though all-knowing) what had passed with man*
228 *Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.*
229 *Meanwhile, ere thus was sinned and judged on earth,*
230 *Within the gates of Hell sat Sin and Death,*
231 *In counterview⁵²⁷⁵ within the gates, that now*
232 *Stood open wide, belching outrageous⁵²⁷⁶ flame*
233 *Far into Chaos, since the fiend passed through,*
234 *Sin opening, ⁵²⁷⁷ who thus now to Death began:*
235 *"O son, why sit we here, each other viewing*
236 *Idly, while Satan, our great author, thrives*
237 *In other worlds, and happier seat⁵²⁷⁸ provides*
238 *For us, his offspring dear? It cannot be*
239 *But that success attends him. If mishap,*
240 *Ere this he had returned, with fury driv'n*
241 *By his avengers, since no place like this*
242 *Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.*
243 *Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,*
244 *Wings growing, and dominion⁵²⁷⁹ giv'n me large⁵²⁸⁰*
245 *Beyond this deep. Whatever draws me on,⁵²⁸¹*
246 *Or⁵²⁸² sympathy, ⁵²⁸³ or some connatural ⁵²⁸⁴ force,*
247 *Powerful ⁵²⁸⁵ at greatest distance to unite,*

248 *With secret amity, things of like kind,*
249 *By secretest conveyance. Thou, my shade*
250 *Inseparable, must with me along,*
251 *For Death from Sin no power can separate.*
252 *But lest the difficulty of passing back*
253 *Stay his return, perhaps, over this gulf [5286](#)*
254 *Impassable, impervious, [5287](#) let us try*
255 *Advent'rous [5288](#) work, yet to thy power and mine*
256 *Not unagreeable, to found [5289](#) a path*
257 *Over this main [5290](#) from Hell to that new world*
258 *Where Satan now prevails, a monument*
259 *Of merit high to all th' infernal host,*
260 *Easing their passage hence, for intercourse [5291](#)*
261 *Or transmigration, as their lot shall lead.*
262 *Nor can I miss [5292](#) the way, so strongly drawn*
263 *By this new-felt attraction and instinct.*
264 *Whom thus the meager shadow answered soon:*
265 *“Go whither Fate and inclination strong*
266 *Leads thee. I shall not lag behind, nor err [5293](#)*
267 *The way, thou leading—such a scent I draw [5294](#)*
268 *Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste [5295](#)*
269 *The savor of death from all things there that live.*
270 *Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest [5296](#)*
271 *Be wanting, [5297](#) but afford thee equal aid.*
272 *So saying, with delight he snuffed the smell*
273 *Of mortal [5298](#) change on earth. As when a flock*
274 *Of ravenous fowl, though many a league remote,*
275 *Against the day of battle, to a field*
276 *Where armies lie encamped, come flying, lured*
277 *With scent of living carcasses designed*
278 *For death the following day, in bloody fight,*

279 *So scented the grim feature, [5299](#) and upturned*
280 *His nostril wide into the murky air,*
281 *Sagacious[5300](#) of his quarry from so far.*
282 *Then both from out Hell-gates, into the waste,*
283 *Wide anarchy of Chaos, damp and dark,*
284 *Flew diverse, [5301](#) and with power (their power was great)*
285 *Hovering[5302](#) upon the waters, what[5303](#) they met*
286 *Solid or slimy, as in raging sea*
287 *Tossed up and down, together crowded drove,*
288 *From each side shoaling[5304](#) towards the mouth of Hell,*
289 *As when two polar winds, blowing adverse*
290 *Upon the Cronian[5305](#) sea, together drive*
291 *Mountains of ice, that stop[5306](#) th' imagined[5307](#) way*
292 *Beyond Petsora[5308](#) eastward, to the rich*
293 *Cathaian[5309](#) coast. The aggregated soil[5310](#)*
294 *Death with his mace petrific, [5311](#) cold and dry,*
295 *As with a trident, [5312](#) smote, and fixed as firm*
296 *As Delos, [5313](#) floating once. The rest his look*
297 *Bound with Gorgonian[5314](#) rigor[5315](#) not to move,*
298 *And with asphaltic[5316](#) slime, broad as the gate,*
299 *Deep to the roots of Hell the gathered beach[5317](#)*
300 *They fastened, and the mole[5318](#) immense wrought[5319](#) on*
301 *Over the foaming deep high-arched, a bridge*
302 *Of length prodigious, joining to the wall*
303 *Immoveable[5320](#) of this now fenceless[5321](#) world,*
304 *Forfeit[5322](#) to Death. From hence a passage broad,*
305 *Smooth, easy, inoffensive, [5323](#) down to Hell.*
306 *So (if great things to small may be compared)*
307 *Xerxes, [5324](#) the liberty of Greece to yoke,*
308 *From Susa, [5325](#) his Memnonian palace high,*

309 *Came to the sea, and over Hellespont* [5326](#)
310 *Bridging his way, Europe with Asia joined,*
311 *And scourged* [5327](#) *with many a stroke th' indignant waves.*
312 *Now had they brought the work by wondrous art*
313 *Pontifical,* [5328](#) *a ridge of pendant* [5329](#) *rock*
314 *Over the vexed* [5330](#) *abyss, following the track*
315 *Of Satan to the self-same place where he*
316 *First lighted* [5331](#) *from his wing,* [5332](#) *and landed safe*
317 *From out of Chaos, to the outside bare*
318 *Of this round world. With pins of adamant*
319 *And chains they made all fast—too fast they made*
320 *And durable! And now in little space*
321 *The confines* [5333](#) *met of empyrean Heav'n*
322 *And of this world, and on the left hand Hell*
323 *With long reach interposed.* [5334](#) *Three sev'ral* [5335](#) *ways* [5336](#)
324 *In sight, to each of these three places led.*
325 *And now their way to earth they had descried,* [5337](#)
326 *To Paradise first tending* [5338](#) *—when, behold!*
327 *Satan, in likeness of an Angel bright,*
328 *Betwixt the Centaur and the Scorpion steering*
329 *His zenith,* [5339](#) *while the sun in Aries rose.* [5340](#)
330 *Disguised he came, but those his children dear*
331 *Their parent soon discerned,* [5341](#) *though in disguise.*
332 *He, after Eve seduced, unminded* [5342](#) *slunk*
333 *Into the wood fast by and, changing shape*
334 *T' observe the sequel, saw his guileful act*
335 *By Eve, though all unweeting,* [5343](#) *seconded*
336 *Upon her husband, saw their shame that sought*
337 *Vain covertures,* [5344](#) *but when he saw descend*
338 *The Son of God to judge them, terrified*
339 *He fled, not hoping to escape, but shun*

340 *The present, fearing, guilty, what His⁵³⁴⁵ wrath*
341 *Might suddenly inflict. That past, returned ⁵³⁴⁶*
342 *By night, and list'ning where the hapless⁵³⁴⁷ pair*
343 *Sat in their sad discourse and various plaint,*
344 *Thence gathered his own doom, which understood*
345 *Not instant, but of future time. With joy*
346 *And tidings fraught,⁵³⁴⁸ to Hell he now returned,*
347 *And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot*
348 *Of this new wondrous pontifice, unhop'd*
349 *Met who to meet him came, his offspring dear.*
350 *Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight*
351 *Of that stupendious bridge his joy increased.*
352 *Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair*
353 *Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke:*
354 *“O parent, these are thy magnific deeds,*
355 *Thy trophies! which thou view'st as not thine own.*
356 *Thou art their author and prime architect,*
357 *For I no sooner in my heart divin'd*
358 *(My heart, which by a secret harmony*
359 *Still moves with thine, joined in connection sweet)*
360 *That thou on earth had'st prosper'd, which thy looks*
361 *Now also evidence, but straight I felt*
362 *(Though distant from thee worlds between), yet felt*
363 *That I must after⁵³⁴⁹ thee, with this thy son,*
364 *Such fatal ⁵³⁵⁰ consequence⁵³⁵¹ unites us three!*
365 *Hell could no longer hold us in our bounds,*
366 *Nor this unvoyageable gulf obscure*
367 *Detain from following thy illustrious track.*
368 *Thou hast achieved our liberty, confin'd*
369 *Within Hell-gates till now. Thou us empowered*
370 *To fortify⁵³⁵² thus far, and overlay,*

371 With this portentous⁵³⁵³ bridge, the dark abyss.
372 Thine now is all this world. Thy virtue hath won
373 What thy hands builded not, thy wisdom gained
374 With odds⁵³⁵⁴ what war hath lost, and fully avenged
375 Our foil ⁵³⁵⁵ in Heav'n. Here thou shalt monarch reign,
376 There did'st not. There let Him still victor sway, ⁵³⁵⁶
377 As battle hath adjudged, from this new world
378 Retiring, by His own doom⁵³⁵⁷ alienated, ⁵³⁵⁸
379 And henceforth monarchy with thee divide
380 Of all things, parted by the empyreal bounds,
381 His quadrature, ⁵³⁵⁹ from thy orbicular⁵³⁶⁰ world—
382 Or try⁵³⁶¹ thee, now more dang'rous to His throne.
383 Whom thus the Prince of darkness answered glad:
384 "Fair daughter, and thou son and grandchild both:
385 High proof ye now have giv'n to be the race
386 Of Satan (for I glory in the name,
387 Antagonist of Heaven's Almighty King)
388 Amply have merited of me, of all
389 Th' infernal empire, that so near Heav'n's door
390 Triumphal with triumphal act have met,
391 Mine⁵³⁶² with this glorious work, and made one realm,
392 Hell and this world, one realm, one continent
393 Of easy thoroughfare. Therefore, while I
394 Descend through darkness, on your road with ease,
395 To my associate Powers, them to acquaint
396 With these successes, and with them rejoice,
397 You two this way, among these numerous orbs,
398 All yours, right down to Paradise descend.
399 There dwell, and reign in bliss, thence on the earth
400 Dominion exercise and in the air,
401 Chiefly on man, sole lord of all declared.

402 Him first make sure your thrall, [5363](#) and lastly kill.
403 My substitutes I send ye, and create
404 Plenipotent [5364](#) on earth, of matchless might
405 Issuing from me. On your joint vigor now
406 My hold of this new kingdom all depends,
407 Through Sin to Death exposed [5365](#) by my exploit. [5366](#)
408 If your joint power prevail, th' affairs of Hell
409 No detriment [5367](#) need fear. Go, and be strong!
410 So saying he dismissed them. They with speed
411 Their course through thickest constellations held,
412 Spreading their bane. [5368](#) The blasted [5369](#) stars looked wan,
413 And planets, planet-struck, [5370](#) real [5371](#) eclipse [5372](#)
414 Then suffered. Th' other way Satan went down
415 The causey [5373](#) to Hell-gate. On either side
416 Disparted [5374](#) Chaos overbuilt exclaimed [5375](#)
417 And with rebounding surge the bars [5376](#) assailed,
418 That scorned his indignation. Through the gate,
419 Wide open and unguarded, Satan passed,
420 And all about found desolate, for those
421 Appointed to sit there had left their charge,
422 Flown to the upper world. The rest were all
423 Far to the inland retired, [5377](#) about the walls
424 Of Pandemonium, city and proud seat
425 Of Lucifer, so by allusion called
426 Of that bright star to Satan paragoned. [5378](#)
427 There kept their watch the legions, while the grand
428 In council sat, solicitous [5379](#) what chance
429 Might intercept [5380](#) their emperor sent. [5381](#) So he
430 Departing gave [5382](#) command, and they observed.
431 As when the Tartar from his Russian foe
432 By Astrakhan [5383](#) over the snowy plains

433 *Retires, or Bactrin Sophi,*[5384](#) *from the horns*
434 *Of Turkish crescent, leaves all waste beyond*
435 *The realm of Aladule,*[5385](#) *in his retreat*
436 *To Tauris*[5386](#) *or Casbeen,*[5387](#) *so these, the late*[5388](#)
437 *Heav'n-banished host left desert*[5389](#) *utmost*[5390](#) *Hell*
438 *Many a dark league, reduced*[5391](#) *in careful watch*
439 *Round their metropolis, and now expecting*
440 *Each hour their great adventurer, from the search*
441 *Of foreign worlds. He through the midst unmarked,*[5392](#)
442 *In show*[5393](#) *plebeian*[5394](#) *Angel militant*[5395](#)
443 *Of lowest order, passed, and from the door*
444 *Of that Plutonian hall, invisible*
445 *Ascended his high throne, which under state*[5396](#)
446 *Of richest texture spread, at th' upper end*
447 *Was placed in regal luster. Down a while*
448 *He sat, and round about him saw unseen.*
449 *At last, as from a cloud, his fulgent*[5397](#) *head*
450 *And shape star-bright appeared, or brighter, clad*
451 *With what permissive glory since his fall*
452 *Was left him, or false glitter. All amazed*
453 *At that so sudden blaze, the Stygian*[5398](#) *throng*
454 *Bent*[5399](#) *their aspect,*[5400](#) *and whom they wished beheld,*
455 *Their mighty chief returned. Loud was th' acclaim!*
456 *Forth rushed in haste the great consulting peers,*
457 *Raised from their dark divan,*[5401](#) *and with like joy*
458 *Congratulant approached him, who with hand*
459 *Silence, and with these words attention won:*
460 *“Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers!*
461 *For in possession such, not only of right,*
462 *I call ye and declare ye now, returned*
463 *Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth*

464 *Triumphant out of this infernal pit*
465 *Abominable, accursed, the house of woe*
466 *And dungeon of our tyrant. Now possess,*
467 *As lords, a spacious world, t' our native Heav'n*
468 *Little inferior, by my adventure hard*
469 *With peril great achieved. Long were to tell*
470 *What I have done, what suffered, with what pain*
471 *Voyaged th' unreal, [5402](#) vast, unbounded deep*
472 *Of horrible confusion, over which*
473 *By Sin and Death a broad way now is paved,*
474 *To expedite your glorious march. But I*
475 *Toiled out my uncouth [5403](#) passage, forced to ride [5404](#)*
476 *The untractable [5405](#) abyss, plunged in the womb*
477 *Of unoriginal [5406](#) Night and Chaos wild*
478 *That, jealous of their secrets, fiercely opposed*
479 *My journey strange, [5407](#) with clamorous uproar*
480 *Protesting Fate supreme. Thence how I found*
481 *The new created world, which fame [5408](#) in Heav'n*
482 *Long had foretold, a fabric [5409](#) wonderful*
483 *Of absolute [5410](#) perfection, therein man*
484 *Placed in a Paradise, by our exile*
485 *Made happy. Him by fraud I have seduced [5411](#)*
486 *From his Creator and, the more to increase*
487 *Your wonder, with an apple. [5412](#) He, [5413](#) thereat*
488 *Offended (worth your laughter!) hath given up*
489 *Both His belovèd man and all his world*
490 *To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us,*
491 *Without our hazard, labor, or alarm, [5414](#)*
492 *To range [5415](#) in, and to dwell, and over man*
493 *To rule, as over all He should have ruled.*
494 *“True is, me also He hath judged, or rather*

495 *Me not, but the brute serpent in whose shape*
496 *Man I deceived. That which to me belongs*
497 *Is enmity, which He will put between*
498 *Me and mankind. I am to bruise⁵⁴¹⁶ his heel.*
499 *His seed (when is not set⁵⁴¹⁷) shall bruise my head.*
500 *A world who would not purchase with a bruise,*
501 *Or much more grievous pain?*

“Ye have th’ acc

502 *Of my performance. What remains, ye Gods,*
503 *But up, and enter now into full bliss?*
504 *So having said, a while he stood, expecting*
505 *Their universal shout and high applause*
506 *To fill his ear—when, contrary, he hears*
507 *On all sides, from innumerable tongues,*
508 *A dismal universal hiss, the sound*
509 *Of public scorn. He wondered, but not long*
510 *Had leisure, wond’ring at himself now more.*
511 *His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare;*
512 *His arms clung to his ribs, his legs entwining*
513 *Each other, till supplanted⁵⁴¹⁸ down he fell,*
514 *A monstrous serpent on his belly prone,*
515 *Reluctant,⁵⁴¹⁹ but in vain. A greater power*
516 *Now ruled him, punished in the shape he sinned,*
517 *According to his doom.⁵⁴²⁰ He would have spoke,*
518 *But hiss for hiss returned with forkèd tongue*
519 *To forkèd tongue, for now were all transformed*
520 *Alike, to serpents all, as accessories*
521 *To his bold⁵⁴²¹ riot.⁵⁴²² Dreadful was the din*
522 *Of hissing through the hall, thick swarming now*
523 *With complicated⁵⁴²³ monsters head and tail,*
524 *Scorpion, and asp, and amphisbaena⁵⁴²⁴ dire,*

525 Cerastes hornèd, hydrus,⁵⁴²⁵ and elops⁵⁴²⁶ drear, ⁵⁴²⁷
526 And dipsas⁵⁴²⁸ (not so thick swarmed once the soil
527 Bedropped with blood of Gorgon,⁵⁴²⁹ or the isle
528 Ophiusa),⁵⁴³⁰ but still greatest he the midst,
529 Now dragon grown, larger than whom⁵⁴³¹ the sun
530 Engendered in the Pythian⁵⁴³² vale on slime, ⁵⁴³³
531 Huge python, and his ⁵⁴³⁴ power no less he seemed
532 Above the rest still to retain. They all
533 Him followed, issuing forth to th' open field,
534 Where all yet left of that revolted rout,⁵⁴³⁵
535 Heav'n-fall'n, in station⁵⁴³⁶ stood or just⁵⁴³⁷ array,
536 Sublime⁵⁴³⁸ with expectation when to see
537 In triumph issuing forth their glorious chief.
538 They saw, but other sight instead! a crowd
539 Of ugly serpents. Horror on them fell,
540 And horrid sympathy, for what they saw
541 They felt themselves now changing. Down their arms,
542 Down fell both spear and shield, down they as fast,
543 And the dire hiss renewed, and the dire form
544 Caught by contagion,⁵⁴³⁹ like⁵⁴⁴⁰ in punishment
545 As in their crime. Thus was th' applause they meant
546 Turned to exploding hiss, triumph to shame
547 Cast on themselves from their own mouths.

There stood

548 A grove hard by, sprung up with⁵⁴⁴¹ this their change
549 (His will who reigns above, to aggravate⁵⁴⁴²
550 Their penance), laden with fair fruit, like that
551 Which grew in Paradise, the bait of Eve
552

*Used by the Tempter. On that
prospect [5443](#) strange [5444](#)*

553 *Their earnest eyes they fixed, imagining*
554 *For one forbidden tree a multitude*
555 *Now ris'n, to work them further woe or*
shame.
556 *Yet parched with scalding thirst and*
hunger fierce,
557 *Though to delude them sent, could not*
abstain,
558 *But on they rolled in heaps, and up the*
trees
559 *Climbing, sat thicker than the snaky*
locks
560 *That curled Megaera. [5445](#) Greedily they*
plucked
561 *The fruitage fair to sight, like that*
which grew
562 *Near that bituminous [5446](#) lake [5447](#)*
where Sodom flamed—
563 *This more delusive, not the touch, but*
taste
564 *Deceived. They fondly [5448](#) thinking to*
allay
565 *Their appetite with gust, [5449](#) instead of*
fruit
566 *Chewed bitter ashes, which th' offended*
taste
567 *With spattering noise rejected. Oft they*
assayed,
568 *Hunger and thirst constraining,*
drugged [5450](#) as oft,
569 *With hatefullest disrelish [5451](#) writhed*
their jaws,
570 *With soot and cinders filled. So oft they*

fell
571 Into the same illusion, not as man
572 Whom they triumphed [5452](#) once [5453](#)
lapsed. Thus were they plagued
573 And worn with famine, [5454](#) long and
ceaseless hiss,
574 Till their lost shape, permitted, they
resumed,
575 Yearly enjoined, some say, to undergo
576 This annual humbling certain [5455](#)
numbered days,
577 To dash [5456](#) their pride and joy for man
seduced.
578 However, some tradition [5457](#) they
dispersed [5458](#)
579 Among the heathen, of their
purchase [5459](#) got,
580 And fabled how the serpent, whom they
called
581 Ophion, [5460](#) with Eurynome [5461](#) (the
wide-
582 Encroaching Eve, [5462](#) perhaps), had
first the rule
583 Of high Olympus, thence by Saturn
driv'n
584 And Ops, [5463](#) ere yet Dictaeon Jove [5464](#)
was born.
585 Meanwhile in Paradise the hellish
pair
586 Too soon arrived, Sin there in power
before,
587 Once [5465](#) actual, [5466](#) now in body, and
to dwell
588 Habitual habitant; behind her Death,

589 Close following pace for pace, not
 mounted yet
590 On his pale horse. [5467](#) To whom Sin
 thus began:
591 “Second of Satan sprung, all-
 conquering Death!
592 What think’st thou of our empire now,
 though earned
593 With travel difficult, not better far
594 Than still at Hell’s dark threshold to
 have sat watch,
595 Unnamed, undreaded, and thyself half
 starved?
596 Whom thus the Sin-born monster
 answered soon:[5468](#)
597 “To me, who with eternal famine pine,
 [5469](#)
598 Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven—
599 There best, where most with ravine[5470](#) I
 may meet,
600 Which here, though plenteous, all too
 little seems
601 To stuff this maw, this vast unhide-
 bound [5471](#) corpse.” [5472](#)
602 To whom th’ incestuous mother thus
 replied:
603 “Thou therefore on these herbs, and
 fruits, and flow’rs
604 Feed first. On each beast next, and fish,
 and fowl—
605 No homely [5473](#) morsels! And whatever
 thing
606 The scythe of Time mows down, devour
 unspared,[5474](#)
607 Till I, in man residing through the race,

608 *His thoughts, his looks, words, actions,*
 all infect,
609 *And season him thy last and sweetest*
 prey.
610 *This said, they both betook them*
 several [5475](#) ways,
611 *Both to destroy, or unimmortal make*
612 *All kinds, and for destruction to*
 mature [5476](#)
613 *Sooner or later. Which th'Almighty*
 seeing,
614 *From His transcendent seat the Saints*
 among,
615 *To those bright orders uttered thus His*
 voice:
616 *"See with what heat these dogs of*
 Hell advance
617 *To waste [5477](#) and havoc [5478](#) yonder*
 world, which I
618 *So fair and good created, and had still*
619 *Kept in that state, had not the folly of*
 man
620 *Let in these wasteful Furies, who*
 impute [5479](#)
621 *Folly to me! So doth the Prince of Hell*
622 *And his adherents, that with so much*
 ease
623 *I suffer [5480](#) them to enter and possess*
624 *A place so Heav'nly, and conniving [5481](#)*
 seem
625 *To gratify [5482](#) my scornful enemies,*
626 *That laugh, as if transported [5483](#) with*
 some fit
627 *Of passion, I to them had quitted [5484](#)*
 all,

628 At random⁵⁴⁸⁵ yielded up to their
misrule,
629 And know not that I called, and drew
them thither,
630 My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff⁵⁴⁸⁶
and filth
631 Which man's polluting sin with taint
hath shed
632 On what was pure, till ⁵⁴⁸⁷ crammed
⁵⁴⁸⁸ and gorged,⁵⁴⁸⁹ night⁵⁴⁹⁰ burst
633 With sucked ⁵⁴⁹¹ and glutted ⁵⁴⁹²
offal,⁵⁴⁹³ at one sling⁵⁴⁹⁴
634 Of thy victorious arm, well-pleasing
Son,
635 Both Sin and Death, and yawning⁵⁴⁹⁵
grave at last
636 Through Chaos hurled, obstruct ⁵⁴⁹⁶ the
mouth of Hell
637 Forever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.
638 Then Heav'n and earth renewed shall
be made pure
639 To sanctity⁵⁴⁹⁷ that shall receive no
stain:
640 Till then, the curse pronounced on both
precedes."⁵⁴⁹⁸
641 He ended, and the Heav'nly audience
loud
642 Sung Hallelujah, as⁵⁴⁹⁹ the sound of
seas,
643 Through multitude that sung:
"Just are Thy way
644 Righteous are Thy decrees on all Thy
works.
645 Who can extenuate⁵⁵⁰⁰ Thee?"

Next, [5501](#) to the Son,
646 *Destined Restorer of mankind, by whom*
647 *New Heav'n and earth shall to the ages*
rise,
648 *Or down from Heav'n descend.*
Such was their song,
649 *While the Creator, calling forth by*
name
650 *His mighty Angels, gave them several*
charge [5502](#)
651 *As sorted* [5503](#) *best with present things.*
The sun
652 *Had first his precept* [5504](#) *so to move, so*
shine,
653 *As might affect the earth with cold and*
heat
654 *Scarce tolerable, and from the north to*
call
655 *Decrepit* [5505](#) *winter, from the south to*
bring
656 *Solstitial* [5506](#) *summer's heat. To the*
blanc [5507](#) *moon*
657 *Her office they prescribed; to th' other*
five [5508](#)
658 *Their planetary motions, and*
aspects, [5509](#)
659 *In sextile,* [5510](#) *square,* [5511](#) *and trine,*
[5512](#) *and opposite,* [5513](#)
660 *Of noxious* [5514](#) *efficacy, and when to*
join
661 *In synod* [5515](#) *unbenign, and taught the*
fixed [5516](#)
662 *Their influence malignant when to*
shower,

663 Which of them rising with the sun, or
664 falling,
Should prove tempestuous.⁵⁵¹⁷ To the
winds they set
665 Their corners,⁵⁵¹⁸ when with bluster⁵⁵¹⁹
to confound ⁵⁵²⁰
666 Sea, air, and shore; the thunder when to
roll
667 With terror through the dark aerial
hall.
668 Some say He bid his Angels turn
askance⁵⁵²¹
669 The poles of earth, twice ten degrees
and more
670 From the sun's axle. They with labor
pushed
671 Oblique⁵⁵²² the centric globe. ⁵⁵²³ Some
say the sun⁵⁵²⁴
672 Was bid turn reins from th' equinoctial
⁵⁵²⁵ road
673 Like⁵⁵²⁶ distant breadth to Taurus⁵⁵²⁷
with the Sev'n
674 Atlantic Sisters,⁵⁵²⁸ and the Spartan
Twins,⁵⁵²⁹
675 Up to the Tropic Crab,⁵⁵³⁰ thence down
again⁵⁵³¹
676 By Leo, ⁵⁵³² and the Virgin, ⁵⁵³³ and the
Scales, ⁵⁵³⁴
677 As deep as Capricorn, to bring in
change
678 Of seasons to each clime. Else ⁵⁵³⁵ had
the Spring
679 Perpetual smiled on earth with vernant
⁵⁵³⁶ flowers,

680 *Equal in days and nights, except to*
 those
681 *Beyond the polar circles: to them day*
682 *Had unbenighted [5537](#) shone, while the*
 low sun,
683 *To recompense [5538](#) his distance, in their*
 sight
684 *Had rounded still the horizon, and not*
 known
685 *Or east or west, which had forbid the*
 snow
686 *From cold Estotiland, [5539](#) and south as*
 far
687 *Beneath Magellan. [5540](#) At that tasted*
 fruit [5541](#)
688 *The sun, as from Thyestean*
 banquet, [5542](#) turned
689 *His course intended: else how had the*
 world
690 *Inhabited, [5543](#) though sinless more than*
 now,
691 *Avoided pinching [5544](#) cold and*
 scorching heat?
692 *These changes in the heav'ns, though*
 slow, produced
693 *Like [5545](#) change on sea and land,*
 sideral [5546](#) blast,
694 *Vapor, and mist, and exhalation hot,*
695 *Corrupt and pestilent. Now from the*
 north
696 *Of Norumbega, [5547](#) and the Samoed*
 shore, [5548](#)
697 *Bursting their brazen dungeon, [5549](#)*
 armed with ice,

698 And snow, and hail, and stormy gust
and flaw, [5550](#)
699 Boreas, [5551](#) and Caecias, [5552](#) and
Argestes [5553](#) loud,
700 And Thrascias, [5554](#) rend the woods, and
seas upturn.
701 With adverse [5555](#) blast upturns them
from the south
702 Notus, [5556](#) and Afer, [5557](#) black with
thund'rous clouds
703 From Serralliona. [5558](#) Thwart of [5559](#)
these, as [5560](#) fierce,
704 Forth rush the Levant [5561](#) and the
Ponent [5562](#) winds,
705 Eurus and Zephyr, with their lateral [5563](#)
noise, [5564](#)
706 Sirocco [5565](#) and Libecchio. [5566](#)
Thus began
707 Outrage [5567](#) from lifeless things, but
Discord first,
708 Daughter of Sin, among th' irrational
[5568](#)
709 Death introduced, through fierce
antipathy. [5569](#)
710 Beast now with beast 'gan war, and
fowl with fowl,
711 And fish with fish. To graze the herb all
leaving, [5570](#)
712 Devoured each other, nor stood much in
awe
713 Of man, but fled him or, with
count'nance grim, [5571](#)
714 Glared on him passing.
These were from without [5572](#)

715 The growing miseries, which Adam saw
716 Already in part, though hid in gloomiest
 shade,
717 To sorrow abandoned, but worse felt
 within,
718 And in a troubled sea of passion tossed,
719 Thus to disburden sought⁵⁵⁷³ with sad
 complaint:
720 “O miserable of ⁵⁵⁷⁴ happy! Is this
 the end
721 Of this new glorious world, and me so
 late⁵⁵⁷⁵
722 The glory of that glory, who now
 become
723 Accursed, of ⁵⁵⁷⁶ blessèd? Hide me
 from the face
724 Of God, whom to behold was then my
 height
725 Of happiness! Yet well,⁵⁵⁷⁷ if here
 would end
726 The misery. I deserved it, and would
 ⁵⁵⁷⁸ bear
727 My own deservings. But this will not
 serve:⁵⁵⁷⁹
728 All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,
729 Is propagated ⁵⁵⁸⁰ curse. O voice, once
 heard
730 Delightfully, ‘Increase and multiply,
731 Now death to hear! For what can I
 increase
732 Or multiply, but curses on my head?
733 Who of all ages to succeed,⁵⁵⁸¹ but
 feeling
734 The evil on him brought by me, will
 curse

735 My head? 'Ill fare our ancestor impure,
736 For this we may thank Adam!' But his
thanks
737 Shall be the execration.⁵⁵⁸² So, besides
738 Mine own⁵⁵⁸³ that bide⁵⁵⁸⁴ upon me, all
from me
739 Shall with a fierce reflux⁵⁵⁸⁵ on me
redound—⁵⁵⁸⁶
740 On me, as on their natural center, light
⁵⁵⁸⁷
741 Heavy, though in their place. ⁵⁵⁸⁸ O
fleeting joys
742 Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting
woes!
743 Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay
744 To mould me man? Did I solicit Thee
745 From darkness to promote⁵⁵⁸⁹ me, or
here place
746 In this delicious⁵⁵⁹⁰ garden? As my will
747 Concurred ⁵⁵⁹¹ not to my being, it were
but right
748 And equal to reduce me to my dust,
749 Desirous to resign⁵⁵⁹² and render back
750 All I received, unable to perform
751 Thy terms too hard, by which I was to
hold
752 The good I sought not. To the loss of
that,
753 Sufficient penalty: why hast Thou added
754 The sense of endless woes? Inexplicable
755 Thy Justice seems. Yet to say truth, too
late
756 I thus contest. Then should have been
refused

757 Those terms whatever, when they were
 proposed.
758 Thou⁵⁵⁹³ didst accept them. Wilt
 thou⁵⁵⁹⁴ enjoy the good,
759 Then cavil ⁵⁵⁹⁵ the conditions? And
 though God
760 Made thee without thy leave, ⁵⁵⁹⁶ what
 if thy ⁵⁵⁹⁷ son
761 Prove disobedient, and reprov'd, retort,
762 'Wherefore did'st thou beget me? I
 sought it not.
763 Would'st thou admit ⁵⁵⁹⁸ for his
 contempt of thee
764 That proud excuse? Yet him not thy
 election⁵⁵⁹⁹
765 But natural necessity begot.⁵⁶⁰⁰
766 God made thee of choice His own, and
 of His own
767 To serve Him: thy reward was of His
 grace,
768 Thy punishment then justly is at His
 will.
769 "Be it so, for I submit: His doom⁵⁶⁰¹
 is fair,
770 That dust I am, and shall to dust return.
771 O welcome hour whenever! Why delays
772 His hand to execute what His decree
773 Fixed ⁵⁶⁰² on this day? ⁵⁶⁰³ Why do I
 overlive,⁵⁶⁰⁴
774 Why am I mocked with death, and
 lengthen'd out
775 To deathless pain? How gladly would I
 meet
776 Mortality, my sentence, and be earth

777 Insensible!^{[5605](#)} How glad would lay me
down
778 As in my mother's lap! There I should
rest,
779 And sleep secure. ^{[5606](#)} His dreadful
voice no more
780 Would thunder in my ears. No fear of
worse
781 To me, and to my offspring, would
torment me
782 With cruel expectation.
“Yet one doubt
783 Pursues me still, lest all ^{[5607](#)} I cannot
die,
784 Lest that pure breath of life, the spirit of
man
785 Which God inspired, cannot together
perish
786 With this corporeal clod.^{[5608](#)} Then in
the grave,
787 Or in some other dismal place, who
knows
788 But I shall die a living death? O
thought
789 Horrid, if true! Yet why? It was but
breath
790 Of life that sinned. What dies but what
had life
791 And sin? The body properly had neither.
792 All of me then shall die: let this
appease^{[5609](#)}
793 The doubt, since human reach no
further knows.
794 For though the Lord of all be infinite,
795 Is His wrath also? Be it, man is not so,

796 But mortal doomed.⁵⁶¹⁰ How can He
exercise
797 Wrath without end on man, whom death
must end?
798 Can He make deathless death? That
were to make
799 Strange contradiction, which to God
Himself
800 Impossible is held,⁵⁶¹¹ as argument ⁵⁶¹²
801 Of weakness, not of power. Will He
draw out,
802 For anger's sake, finite to infinite,
803 In punished man, to satisfy His rigor,
⁵⁶¹³
804 Satisfied never? That were to extend
805 His sentence beyond dust and Nature's
law,
806 By which all causes else, ⁵⁶¹⁴ according
still
807 To the reception⁵⁶¹⁵ of their matter,
act,⁵⁶¹⁶
808 Not to th' extent of their own sphere.
"But say
809 That death be not one stroke, as I
supposed,
810 Bereaving⁵⁶¹⁷ sense, but endless misery
811 From this day onward, which I feel
begun
812 From in⁵⁶¹⁸ me, and without ⁵⁶¹⁹ me—
and so last
813 To perpetuity. Aye me, that fear
814 Comes thundering back with dreadful
revolution⁵⁶²⁰
815 On my defenceless head. Both Death
and I

816 Am found eternal, and incorporate [5621](#)
both,
817 Nor I on my part single. [5622](#) In me all
818 Posterity stands cursed: fair patrimony
819 That I must leave ye, sons. O were I
able
820 To waste [5623](#) it all myself, and leave ye
none!
821 So disinherited, how would you bless
822 Me, now your curse! Ah, why should all
mankind,
823 For one man's fault, thus guiltless be
condemned—
824 If guiltless? But from me what can
proceed,
825 But all corrupt, both mind and will
depraved [5624](#)
826 Not to do only, but to will the same
827 With [5625](#) me? How can they then
acquitted stand
828 In sight of God? Him after all disputes,
829 Forced [5626](#) I absolve. All my evasions
vain,
830 And reasonings, though through mazes,
lead me still
831 But to my own conviction: first and last
832 On me, me only, as the source and
spring
833 Of all corruption, all the blame
lights [5627](#) due.
834 So might the wrath. Fond [5628](#) wish!
Could'st thou [5629](#) support
835 That burden, heavier than the earth to
bear,
836 Than all the world much heavier,

though divided [5630](#)
837 With that bad woman?[5631](#) Thus what
thou desir'st,
838 And what thou fear'st, alike destroys all
hope
839 Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable
840 Beyond all past example and future.
841 To Satan only like[5632](#) both crime and
doom.[5633](#)
842 O Conscience! Into what abyss of fears
843 And horrors hast thou[5634](#) driv'n me,
out of which
844 I find no way, from deep to deeper
plunged!
845 Thus Adam to himself lamented loud
846 Through the still night—not now, as
ere[5635](#) man fell,
847 Wholesome, and cool, and mild, but
with black air
848 Accompanied, with damps,[5636](#) and
dreadful gloom,
849 Which to his[5637](#) evil conscience
represented[5638](#)
850 All things with double terror. On the
ground
851 Outstretched he lay, on the cold ground,
and oft
852 Cursed his creation, Death as oft
accused
853 Of tardy execution, since denounced[5639](#)
854 The day of his offence. “Why comes not
Death,
855 Said he, “with one thrice-
acceptable[5640](#) stroke

856 *To end me? Shall truth fail to keep her*
 word,
857 *Justice Divine not hasten to be just?*
858 *But Death comes not at call, Justice*
 Divine
859 *Mends⁵⁶⁴¹ not her slowest pace for*
 prayers or cries.
860 *O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales,*
 and bow'rs!
861 *With other echo late ⁵⁶⁴² I taught your*
 shades
862 *To answer, and resound ⁵⁶⁴³ far other*
 song!
863 *Whom thus afflicted when sad Eve*
 beheld,
864 *Desolate where she sat, approaching*
 nigh
865 *Soft words to his fierce passion she*
 assayed,⁵⁶⁴⁴
866 *But her with stern regard he thus*
 repelled:
867 *“Out of my sight, thou serpent! That*
 name best
868 *Befits⁵⁶⁴⁵ thee, with him leagued,⁵⁶⁴⁶*
 thyslf as false
869 *And hateful.⁵⁶⁴⁷ Nothing wants,⁵⁶⁴⁸ but*
 that thy shape,
870 *Like his, and color serpentine, may*
 show
871 *Thy inward fraud, to warn all creatures*
 from thee
872 *Henceforth, lest that too Heav'nly form,*
 pretended⁵⁶⁴⁹
873 *To hellish falsehood, snare them! But*
 ⁵⁶⁵⁰ for thee

874 I had [5651](#) persisted [5652](#) happy, had not
thy pride
875 And wand'ring [5653](#) vanity, when least
was safe,
876 Rejected my forewarning and disdained
877 Not to be trusted—longing to be seen,
878 Though by the Devil himself, him
overweening [5654](#)
879 To over-reach, [5655](#) but with the serpent
meeting
880 Fooled and beguiled. By him, thou, I by
thee.
881 To trust thee from my side, imagined
[5656](#) wise,
882 Constant, mature, proof against all
assaults,
883 And understood not [5657](#) all was but a
show
884 Rather than solid virtue, all but a rib
885 Crookèd by nature, bent, as now
appears,
886 More to the part sinister, [5658](#) from me
drawn, [5659](#)
887 Well if thrown out, as
supernumerary [5660](#)
888 To my just number found. [5661](#) O why did
God,
889 Creator wise, that peopled highest
Heav'n
890 With Spirits masculine, create at last
891 This novelty on earth, this fair defect
892 Of Nature, and not fill the world at once
893 With men, as [5662](#) Angels without
feminine,

894 Or find some other way to generate⁵⁶⁶³
895 Mankind? This mischief had not been
befallen,⁵⁶⁶⁴
896 And more that shall befall, innumerable
897 Disturbances on earth through female
snares,
898 And strait conjunction⁵⁶⁶⁵ with this sex.
For either
899 He never shall find out fit ⁵⁶⁶⁶ mate, but
such
900 As some misfortune brings him, or
mistake,
901 Or whom⁵⁶⁶⁷ he wishes most shall
seldom gain,
902 Through her perverseness,⁵⁶⁶⁸ but shall
see her gained
903 By a far worse, ⁵⁶⁶⁹ or if she love, ⁵⁶⁷⁰
withheld
904 By parents, or his happiest choice too
late
905 Shall meet, already linked and wedlock-
bound
906 To a fell ⁵⁶⁷¹ adversary, ⁵⁶⁷² his hate or
shame.
907 Which infinite calamity shall cause
908 To human life, and household peace
confound.”⁵⁶⁷³
909 He added not, and from her turned,
but Eve,
910 Not so⁵⁶⁷⁴ repulsed, with tears that
ceased not flowing
911 And tresses all disordered, at his feet
912 Fell humble and, embracing them,
besought⁵⁶⁷⁵

913 His peace, [5676](#) and thus proceeded in
her plaint:
914 “Forsake[5677](#) me not thus, Adam!
Witness Heav’n
915 What love sincere, and reverence in my
heart
916 I bear thee, and unweeting[5678](#) have
offended,
917 Unhappily deceived! Thy suppliant
918 I beg, and clasp thy knees. Bereave[5679](#)
me not
919 Whereon I live, [5680](#) thy gentle [5681](#)
looks, thy aid,
920 Thy counsel, in this uttermost [5682](#)
distress,
921 My only strength and stay. [5683](#)
Forlorn[5684](#) of thee,
922 Whither shall I betake [5685](#) me, where
subsist?[5686](#)
923 While yet we live, scarce one short hour
perhaps,
924 Between us two let there be peace, both
joining,
925 As joined in injuries, one enmity
926 Against a foe by doom express[5687](#)
assigned us,
927 That cruel serpent. On me exercise not
928 Thy hatred for this misery befall’n,
929 On me already lost, me than thyself
930 More miserable! Both have sinned, but
thou
931 Against God only, I against God and
thee,
932 And to the place of judgment will

return,
933 *There with my cries importune Heav'n*
 that all
934 *The sentence, from thy head removed,*
 may light[5688](#)
935 *On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe*
936 *Me, me only, just object of His ire!*
937 *She ended weeping, and her lowly*
 [5689](#) plight, [5690](#)
938 *Immoveable, [5691](#) till peace obtained*
 from fault
939 *Acknowledged and deplored, [5692](#) in*
 Adam wrought [5693](#)
940 *Commiseration. [5694](#) Soon his heart*
 relented
941 *Towards her, his life so late, [5695](#) and*
 sole delight,
942 *Now at his feet submissive in distress,*
943 *Creature so fair his reconcilment*
 seeking,
944 *His counsel, whom she had displeased,*
 his aid.
945 *As one disarmed, his anger all he lost,*
946 *And thus with peaceful words upraised*
 her soon: [5696](#)
947 *“Unwary, and too desirous, as before,*
948 *So now of what thou know'st not, who*
 desir'st
949 *The punishment all on thyself! Alas!*
950 *Bear thine own first, ill able to sustain*
951 *His full wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet*
 least part,
952 *And my displeasure bear'st so ill. If*
 prayers
953 *Could alter high decrees, I to that place*

954 *Would speed before thee, and be louder*
 heard,
955 *That on my head all might be visited,*
956 *Thy frailty [5697](#) and infirmer [5698](#) sex*
 forgiv'n,
957 *To me committed [5699](#) and by me*
 exposed.[5700](#)
958 *But rise, let us no more contend,[5701](#) nor*
 blame
959 *Each other, blamed enough elsewhere,*
 but strive
960 *In offices[5702](#) of love, how we may*
 lighten
961 *Each other's burden in our share of*
 woe,
962 *Since this day's death denounced,[5703](#) if*
 ought I see,[5704](#)
963 *Will prove no sudden but a slow-paced*
 evil,
964 *A long day's dying, to augment our*
 pain,
965 *And to our seed (O hapless Seed!)*
 derived."[5705](#)
966 *To whom thus Eve, recovering heart,*
 replied:
967 *"Adam, by sad experiment I know*
968 *How little weight my words with thee*
 can find,
969 *Found so erroneous, thence by just*
 event [5706](#)
970 *Found so unfortunate. Nevertheless,*
971 *Restored by thee, vile as I am, to place*
972 *Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain*
973 *Thy love, the sole contentment of my*
 heart

974 *Living or dying, from thee I will not*
hide
975 *What thoughts in my unquiet breast are*
ris'n,
976 *Tending to some relief of our extremes,*
977 *Or end, though sharp and sad, yet*
tolerable,
978 *As in our evils, and of easier choice.*
979 *If care of our descent perplex us most,*
980 *Which must be born to certain woe,*
devoured
981 *By Death at last (and miserable it is*
982 *To be to others cause of misery,*
983 *Our own begotten, and of our loins to*
bring
984 *Into this cursèd world a woeful race,*
985 *That after wretched life must be at last*
986 *Food for so foul a monster), in thy*
power
987 *It lies, yet ere conception, to prevent*
988 *The race unblest, to being yet unbegot.*
989 *Childless thou art: childless remain. So*
Death
990 *Shall be deceived [5707](#) his glut, and with*
us two
991 *Be forced to satisfy his ravenous maw.*
992 *But if thou judge it hard and difficult,*
993 *Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain*
994 *From love's due [5708](#) rites, nuptial*
embraces sweet,
995 *And with desire to languish [5709](#) without*
hope,
996 *Before the present object [5710](#)*
languishing
997 *With like desire, which would be misery*

998 And torment less than none of what we
 dread,
999 Then both ourselves and seed at once to
 free
1000 From what we fear for both, let us make
 short [5711](#) —
1001 Let us seek Death, or he not found,
 supply
1002 With our own hands his office [5712](#) on
 ourselves.
1003 Why stand we longer shivering under
 fears
1004 That show no end but death, and have
 the power
1005 Of many ways to die the shortest
 choosing,
1006 Destruction with destruction to destroy?
1007 She ended here, or vehement [5713](#)
 despair
1008 Broke off the rest: so much of death her
 thoughts
1009 Had entertained [5714](#) as dyed her cheeks
 with pale.
1010 But Adam, with such counsel nothing
 swayed, [5715](#)
1011 To better hopes his more attentive [5716](#)
 mind
1012 Laboring had raised, and thus to Eve
 replied:
1013 “Eve, thy contempt of life and
 pleasure seems
1014 To argue in thee something more
 sublime
1015 And excellent than what thy mind
 contemns. [5717](#)

1016 *But self-destruction therefore sought*
refutes
1017 *That excellence thought in thee, and*
implies,
1018 *Not thy contempt, but anguish and*
regret
1019 *For loss of life and pleasure overloved.*
1020 *Or if thou covet death, as utmost end*
1021 *Of misery, so thinking to evade*
1022 *The penalty pronounced, doubt not but*
God
1023 *Hath wiselier armed His vengeful ire,*
than so
1024 *To be forestalled. Much more I fear lest*
death,
1025 *So snatched, will not exempt us from the*
pain
1026 *We are by doom*[*5718*](#) *to pay. Rather, such*
acts
1027 *Of contumacy*[*5719*](#) *will provoke the*
Highest
1028 *To make death in us live. Then let us*
seek
1029 *Some safer resolution, which methinks*
1030 *I have in view, calling to mind with*
heed
1031 *Part of our sentence, that thy seed shall*
bruise[*5720*](#)
1032 *The serpent's head. Piteous amends!*
unless
1033 *Be meant, whom I conjecture, our*
grand foe,
1034 *Satan, who in the serpent hath*
contrived
1035 *Against us this deceit. To crush his head*

1036 *Would be revenge indeed! Which will be*
lost
1037 *By death brought on ourselves, or*
childless days
1038 *Resolved,*[*5721*](#) *as thou proposest. So*[*5722*](#)
our foe
1039 *Shall 'scape his punishment ordained,*
and we
1040 *Instead shall double ours upon our*
heads.
1041 *No more be mentioned then of violence*
1042 *Against ourselves, and wilful*
barrenness,
1043 *That cuts us off from hope, and*
savors[*5723*](#) *only*
1044 *Rancor*[*5724*](#) *and pride, impatience and*
despite,[*5725*](#)
1045 *Reluctance*[*5726*](#) *against God and His*
just yoke
1046 *Laid on our necks. Remember with what*
mild
1047 *And gracious temper He both heard and*
judged,
1048 *Without wrath or reviling. We expected*
1049 *Immediate dissolution,*[*5727*](#) *which we*
thought
1050 *Was meant by death that day, when lo,*
to thee
1051 *Pains only in child-bearing were*
foretold,
1052 *And bringing forth, soon recompensed*
with joy,
1053 *Fruit of thy womb. On me the curse*
aslope[*5728*](#)
1054 *Glanced*[*5729*](#) *on the ground: with labor I*

must earn
1055 My bread. What harm? Idleness had
been worse.
1056 My labor will sustain me and, lest cold
1057 Or heat should injure us, His timely⁵⁷³⁰
care
1058 Hath, undesought, provided, and His
hands
1059 Clothed us unworthy, pitying while He
judged.
1060 How much more, if we pray Him, will
His ear
1061 Be open, and His heart to pity incline,
1062 And teach us further by what means to
shun
1063 Th' inclement⁵⁷³¹ seasons, rain, ice,
hail, and snow,
1064 Which now the sky, with various⁵⁷³²
face, begins
1065 To show us in this mountain, while the
winds
1066 Blow moist and keen, shattering the
graceful locks
1067 Of these fair spreading trees—which
bids us seek
1068 Some better shroud,⁵⁷³³ some better
warmth to cherish
1069 Our limbs benumbed, ere this diurnal
⁵⁷³⁴ star⁵⁷³⁵
1070 Leave cold the night, how we his
gathered beams
1071 Reflected may with matter sere⁵⁷³⁶
foment⁵⁷³⁷
1072 Or, by collision of two bodies, grind ⁵⁷³⁸
1073 The air attrite⁵⁷³⁹ to fire; as late⁵⁷⁴⁰ the

clouds
1074 Jostling,⁵⁷⁴¹ or pushed with winds,
rude⁵⁷⁴² in their shock,
1075 Tine⁵⁷⁴³ the slant lightning, whose
thwart ⁵⁷⁴⁴ flame, driv'n down,
1076 Kindles the gummy bark of fir or pine
1077 And sends a comfortable heat from far,
1078 Which might supply the sun. Such fire to
use,
1079 And what may else be remedy or cure
1080 To evils which our own misdeeds have
wrought,
1081 He will instruct us, praying,⁵⁷⁴⁵ and of
grace
1082 Beseeching Him, so as we need not fear
1083 To pass commodiously⁵⁷⁴⁶ this life,
sustained
1084 By Him with many comforts, till we end
1085 In dust, our final rest and native home.
1086 What better can we do than, to the
place
1087 Repairing⁵⁷⁴⁷ where He judged us,
prostrate fall
1088 Before Him reverent, and there confess
1089 Humbly our faults, and pardon beg,
with tears
1090 Watering the ground, and with our sighs
the air
1091 Frequenting,⁵⁷⁴⁸ sent from hearts
contrite, in sign
1092 Of sorrow unfeigned and
humiliation⁵⁷⁴⁹ meek?
1093 Undoubtedly He will relent and turn
1094 From His displeasure, in whose look

serene,
1095 When angry most He seemed, and most
severe,
1096 What else but favor, grace, and mercy
shone?”
1097 So spoke our father penitent, nor Eve
1098 Felt less remorse. They forthwith to the
place
1099 Repairing where He judged them,
prostrate fell
1100 Before Him reverent, and both
confessed
1101 Humbly their faults, and pardon
begged, with tears
1102 Watering the ground, and with their
sighs the air
1103 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite,
in sign
1104 Of sorrow unfeigned, and humiliation
meek.

The End of the Tenth Book

BOOK XI

THE ARGUMENT

The son of God presents to his Father the prayers of our first parents, now repenting, and intercedes for them. God accepts them,⁵⁷⁵⁰ but declares they⁵⁷⁵¹ must no longer abide in Paradise; sends Michael with a band of Cherubim to dispossess them, but first to reveal to Adam future things.

Michael's coming down.

Adam shews to Eve certain ominous signs; he discerns Michael's approach, goes out to meet him. The Angel denounces their departure.

Eve's lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits. The Angel leads him up to a high Hill, sets before him in vision what shall happen till the Flood.

- 1 *Thus they, in lowliest plight, repentant stood*
- 2 *Praying, for from the mercy-seat ⁵⁷⁵² above*
- 3 *Prevenient⁵⁷⁵³ grace descending had removed*
- 4 *The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh*
- 5 *Regenerate⁵⁷⁵⁴ grow instead, that sighs now breathed*
- 6 *Unutterable, ⁵⁷⁵⁵ which the spirit of prayer*
- 7 *Inspired, and winged for Heav'n with speedier flight*
- 8 *Than loudest oratory. Yet their port⁵⁷⁵⁶*
- 9 *Not of mean⁵⁷⁵⁷ suitors, nor important less*
- 10 *Seemed their petition than when the ancient pair*
- 11 *In fables old, less ancient yet than these,*
- 12 *Deucalion⁵⁷⁵⁸ and chaste Pyrrha, ⁵⁷⁵⁹ to restore*
- 13 *The race of mankind drowned, ⁵⁷⁶⁰ before the shrine*
- 14 *Of Themis⁵⁷⁶¹ stood devout. To Heav'n their prayers*

15 *Flew up, nor missed the way, by envious winds*
16 *Blown vagabond⁵⁷⁶² or frustrate. In they⁵⁷⁶³ passed*
17 *Dimensionless⁵⁷⁶⁴ through Heav'nly doors, then clad*
18 *With incense, where the golden altar fumed⁵⁷⁶⁵*
19 *By⁵⁷⁶⁶ their great Intercessor,⁵⁷⁶⁷ came in sight*
20 *Before the Father's throne. Then the glad Son*
21 *Presenting, thus to intercede began:*
22 *“See, Father, what first-fruits on earth are sprung*
23 *From Thy implanted grace in man! These sighs*
24 *And prayers, which in this golden censer⁵⁷⁶⁸ mixed*
25 *With incense, I Thy priest, before Thee bring,*
26 *Fruits of more pleasing savor (from Thy seed,*
27 *Sown with contrition in his heart) than those*
28 *Which, his own hand manuring,⁵⁷⁶⁹ all the trees*
29 *Of Paradise could have produced, ere fall'n*
30 *From innocence. Now therefore bend Thine ear*
31 *To supplication. Hear his sighs, though mute.*
32 *Unskilful with what words to pray, let me*
33 *Interpret for him—me, his advocate*
34 *And propitiation.⁵⁷⁷⁰ All his works on me,*
35 *Good, or not good, engraft.⁵⁷⁷¹ My merit those⁵⁷⁷²*
36 *Shall perfect, and for these⁵⁷⁷³ my death shall pay.*
37 *Accept me⁵⁷⁷⁴ and, in me, from these receive*
38 *The smell of peace toward mankind. Let him live*
39 *Before Thee reconciled, at least his days*
40 *Numbered, though sad, till death, his doom (which I*
41 *To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse),*
42 *To better life shall yield him, where with me*
43 *All my redeemed may dwell in joy and bliss,*
44 *Made one with me, as I with Thee am one.”*
45 *To whom the Father, without cloud,⁵⁷⁷⁵ serene:*

46 *“All thy request for man, accepted, Son,*
47 *Obtain. All thy request was my decree.*
48 *But longer in that Paradise to dwell*
49 *The law I gave to Nature him⁵⁷⁷⁶ forbids.*
50 *Those pure immortal elements that know*
51 *No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,*
52 *Eject him, tainted now, and purge him off⁵⁷⁷⁷*
53 *As a distemper,⁵⁷⁷⁸ gross—to air as gross,*
54 *And mortal food—as may dispose him⁵⁷⁷⁹ best*
55 *For dissolution, wrought by sin, that first*
56 *Distempered all things, and of incorrupt*
57 *Corrupted. I, at first, with two fair gifts*
58 *Created him endowed: with happiness*
59 *And immortality. That⁵⁷⁸⁰ fondly⁵⁷⁸¹ lost,*
60 *This other⁵⁷⁸² served but to eternize⁵⁷⁸³ woe,*
61 *Till I provided death. So death becomes*
62 *His final remedy and, after life*
63 *Tried⁵⁷⁸⁴ in sharp tribulation,⁵⁷⁸⁵ and refined*
64 *By faith and faithful works, to second life,*
65 *Waked in the renovation⁵⁷⁸⁶ of the just,*
66 *Resigns⁵⁷⁸⁷ him up with Heav’n and earth renewed.*
67 *“But let us call to synod all the Blest*
68 *Through Heav’n’s wide bounds. From them I will not hide*
69 *My judgments, how with mankind I proceed,*
70 *As how with peccant ⁵⁷⁸⁸Angels late⁵⁷⁸⁹ they saw,*
71 *And in their state,⁵⁷⁹⁰ though firm, stood more confirmed.”*
72 *He ended, and the Son gave signal high*
73 *To the bright minister that watched. He blew*
74 *His trumpet, heard in Oreb⁵⁷⁹¹ since perhaps*
75 *When God descended, and perhaps once more*
76 *To sound at general doom.⁵⁷⁹² The Angelic blast*

77 *Filled all the regions. From their blissful bow'rs*
78 *Of amarantine⁵⁷⁹³ shade, fountain or spring,*
79 *By the waters of life, where'er they sat*
80 *In fellowships of joy, the sons of light*
81 *Hasted, resorting ⁵⁷⁹⁴ to the summons high,*
82 *And took their seats, till from His throne supreme*
83 *Th' Almighty thus pronounced His sov'reign will:*
84 *“O Sons, like one of us man is become*
85 *To know both good and evil, since his taste*
86 *Of that defended⁵⁷⁹⁵ fruit. But let him boast*
87 *His knowledge of good lost, and evil got,*
88 *Happier, had it sufficed him to have known*
89 *Good by itself, and evil not at all.*
90 *He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite,*
91 *My motions⁵⁷⁹⁶ in him. Longer ⁵⁷⁹⁷ than they move,*
92 *His heart I know,⁵⁷⁹⁸ how variable and vain,*
93 *Self-left.⁵⁷⁹⁹ Lest therefore his now bolder hand*
94 *Reach also of the Tree of Life, and eat,*
95 *And live forever—dream at least to live*
96 *Forever—to remove him I decree,*
97 *And send him from the Garden forth to till*
98 *The ground whence he was taken: fitter soil.*
99 *“Michael, this my behest⁵⁸⁰⁰ have thou in charge.*
100 *Take to thee from among the Cherubim*
101 *Thy choice of flaming warriors, lest the fiend,*
102 *Or in⁵⁸⁰¹ behalf of man, or to invade*
103 *Vacant possession,⁵⁸⁰² some new trouble raise.*
104 *Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God*
105 *Without remorse⁵⁸⁰³ drive out the sinful pair,*
106 *From hallowed ground th' unholy, and denounce⁵⁸⁰⁴*
107 *To them, and to their progeny, from thence*

108 *Perpetual banishment. Yet, lest they faint*⁵⁸⁰⁵
109 *At the sad* ⁵⁸⁰⁶ *sentence rigorously urged*⁵⁸⁰⁷
110 *(For I behold them softened, and with tears*
111 *Bewailing their excess), all terror hide.*
112 *If patiently thy bidding they obey,*
113 *Dismiss them not disconsolate.*⁵⁸⁰⁸ *Reveal*
114 *To Adam what shall come in future days,*
115 *As I shall thee enlighten; intermix*⁵⁸⁰⁹
116 *My cov'nant in the Woman's seed renewed.*
117 *So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace,*
118 *And on the east side of the garden place,*
119 *Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,*
120 *Cherubic watch, and of a sword the flame*
121 *Wide-waving, all approach far off to fright,*
122 *And guard all passage to the Tree of Life,*
123 *Lest Paradise a receptacle*⁵⁸¹⁰ *prove*
124 *To Spirits foul, and all my trees their prey,*
125 *With those stolen fruit man once more to delude."*
126 *He ceased, and th' Arch-Angelic Power prepared*
127 *For swift descent, with him the cohort* ⁵⁸¹¹ *bright*
128 *Of watchful Cherubim. Four faces each*
129 *Had, like a double Janus,*⁵⁸¹² *all their shape*
130 *Spangled with eyes more numerous than those*
131 *Of Argus,*⁵⁸¹³ *and more wakeful than to drowse,*
132 *Charmed with Arcadian pipe, the pastoral reed*
133 *Of Hermes,*⁵⁸¹⁴ *or his opiate rod.*⁵⁸¹⁵ *Meanwhile,*
134 *To re-salute the world with sacred light,*
135 *Leucothea*⁵⁸¹⁶ *waked, and with fresh dews embalmed*⁵⁸¹⁷
136 *The earth, when Adam and first matron Eve*
137 *Had ended now their orisons,*⁵⁸¹⁸ *and found*
138 *Strength added from above, new hope to spring*

139 *Out of despair, joy, but with fear yet linked,*
140 *Which thus to Eve his⁵⁸¹⁹ welcome words renewed:*
141 *“Eve, easily may faith admit that all*
142 *The good which we enjoy from Heav’n descends;*
143 *But that from us aught should ascend to Heav’n*
144 *So prevalent⁵⁸²⁰ as to concern the mind*
145 *Of God high-blest, or to incline His will,*
146 *Hard to belief may seem, yet this will⁵⁸²¹ prayer*
147 *Or one short sigh of human breath, upborne*
148 *Ev’n to the seat of God. For since I sought*
149 *By prayer th’ offended⁵⁸²² Deity to appease,*
150 *Kneeled and before Him humbled all my heart,*
151 *Methought I saw him placable⁵⁸²³ and mild,*
152 *Bending his ear. Persuasion in me grew*
153 *That I was heard with favor, peace returned*
154 *Home to my breast, and to my memory*
155 *His promise, that thy seed shall bruise⁵⁸²⁴ our foe—*
156 *Which, then not minded⁵⁸²⁵ in dismay, yet now*
157 *Assures me that the bitterness of death*
158 *Is past, and we shall live. Whence hail to thee,*
159 *Eve rightly called, mother of all mankind,*
160 *Mother of all things living, since by thee*
161 *Man is to live, and all things live for man.”*
162 *To whom thus Eve, with sad ⁵⁸²⁶demeanor meek:*
163 *“Ill-worthy I such title should belong,*
164 *To me transgressor, who for thee ordained*
165 *A help, became thy snare. To me reproach*
166 *Rather belongs, distrust, all dispraise.*
167 *But infinite in pardon was my Judge,*
168 *That I, who first brought death on all, am graced*
169 *The source of life, next favorable⁵⁸²⁷ thou,⁵⁸²⁸*

170 Who highly⁵⁸²⁹ thus to entitle ⁵⁸³⁰ me vouchsaf'st,⁵⁸³¹
171 *Far other name deserving. But the field*
172 *To labor calls us, now⁵⁸³² with sweat imposed,*
173 *Though after sleepless night, for see! the morn,*
174 *All unconcerned with our unrest, begins*
175 *Her rosy progress smiling. Let us forth,*
176 *I never from thy side henceforth to stray,*
177 *Where'er our day's work lies, though now enjoined⁵⁸³³*
178 *Laborious, till day droop. While here we dwell,*
179 *What can be toilsome⁵⁸³⁴ in these pleasant walks?*
180 *Here let us live, though in fall'n state, content."*
181 *So spoke, so wished much humbled Eve, but Fate*
182 *Subscribed⁵⁸³⁵ not. Nature first gave signs, impressed⁵⁸³⁶*
183 *On bird, beast, air—air suddenly eclipsed,⁵⁸³⁷*
184 *After short blush⁵⁸³⁸ of morn. Nigh in her sight*
185 *The bird of Jove,⁵⁸³⁹ stooped⁵⁸⁴⁰ from his airy tour,⁵⁸⁴¹*
186 *Two birds of gayest plume before him drove.*
187 *Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,⁵⁸⁴²*
188 *First hunter then, pursued a gentle brace,⁵⁸⁴³*
189 *Goodliest of all the forest, hart and hind.⁵⁸⁴⁴*
190 *Direct to the eastern gate was bent their flight.*
191 *Adam observed, and with his eye the chase*
192 *Pursuing, not unmoved, to Eve thus spoke:*
193 *"O Eve, some further change awaits us nigh,*
194 *Which Heav'n, by these mute signs in Nature, shows*
195 *Forerunners of His purpose, or to warn*
196 *Us, haply⁵⁸⁴⁵ too secure⁵⁸⁴⁶ of ⁵⁸⁴⁷ our discharge⁵⁸⁴⁸*
197 *From penalty, because from death released*
198 *Some days. How long, and what till then our life,*
199 *Who knows? Or more than this, that we are dust,*
200 *And thither must return, and be no more?*

201 *Why else this double object in our sight*
202 *Of flight pursued in th' air, and o'er the ground,*
203 *One way the self-same hour? Why in the east*
204 *Darkness ere day's mid-course, and morning-light*
205 *More orient⁵⁸⁴⁹ in yon western cloud, that draws*
206 *O'er the blue firmament a radiant white,*
207 *And slow descends with something Heavenly fraught?"⁵⁸⁵⁰*
208 *He erred not, for by this⁵⁸⁵¹ the Heav'nly bands*
209 *Down from a sky of jasper⁵⁸⁵² lighted now*
210 *In Paradise, and on a hill made halt—*
211 *A glorious apparition,⁵⁸⁵³ had not doubt*
212 *And carnal⁵⁸⁵⁴ fear that day dimmed Adam's eye.*
213 *Not that more glorious⁵⁸⁵⁵ when the Angels met*
214 *Jacob in Mahanaim,⁵⁸⁵⁶ where he saw*
215 *The field pavilioned⁵⁸⁵⁷ with His⁵⁸⁵⁸ guardians bright,*
216 *Nor that, which on the flaming mount appeared*
217 *In Dothan,⁵⁸⁵⁹ covered with a camp of fire,*
218 *Against the Syrian king, who to surprise*
219 *One man,⁵⁸⁶⁰ assassin-like,⁵⁸⁶¹ had levied ⁵⁸⁶² war,*
220 *War unproclaimed. The princely Hierarch⁵⁸⁶³*
221 *In their bright stand ⁵⁸⁶⁴ there left his Powers, to seize*
222 *Possession of the Garden. He alone,*
223 *To find where Adam sheltered, took his way,*
224 *Not unperceived of Adam, who to Eve,*
225 *While the great visitant approached, thus spoke:*
226 *"Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps*
227 *Of us will soon determine,⁵⁸⁶⁵ or impose*
228 *New laws to be observed, for I descry,*
229 *From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill,*
230 *One of the Heav'nly host and, by his gait,*
231 *None of the meanest,⁵⁸⁶⁶ some great Potentate*

232 Or of the Thrones above, such majesty
233 Invests⁵⁸⁶⁷ him coming, yet not terrible
234 (That I should fear) nor sociably⁵⁸⁶⁸ mild
235 As Raphael (that I should much confide)⁵⁸⁶⁹
236 But solemn and sublime,⁵⁸⁷⁰ whom not t' offend
237 With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.”
238 He ended, and the Arch-Angel soon drew nigh,
239 Not in his shape celestial, but as man
240 Clad to meet man. Over his lucid⁵⁸⁷¹ arms⁵⁸⁷²
241 A military vest ⁵⁸⁷³of purple flowed,
242 Livelier⁵⁸⁷⁴ than Meliboean⁵⁸⁷⁵ or the grain⁵⁸⁷⁶
243 Of Sarra,⁵⁸⁷⁷ worn by kings and heroes old
244 In time of truce. Iris⁵⁸⁷⁸ had dipped the woof.⁵⁸⁷⁹
245 His starry helm,⁵⁸⁸⁰ unbuckled, showed him prime
246 In manhood where youth ended; by his side,
247 As in a glistening zodiac,⁵⁸⁸¹ hung the sword,
248 Satan's dire dread,⁵⁸⁸² and in his hand the spear.
249 Adam bowed low; he,⁵⁸⁸³ kingly, from his state⁵⁸⁸⁴
250 Inclined not, but his coming thus declared:
251 “Adam, Heav'n's high beh'est ⁵⁸⁸⁵no preface needs.
252 Sufficient that thy prayers are heard, and Death,
253 Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,
254 Defeated of his seizure many days
255 Giv'n thee of grace, wherein thou may'st repent,
256 And one bad act with many deeds well done
257 May'st cover.⁵⁸⁸⁶ Well may then thy Lord, appeased,
258 Redeem thee quite⁵⁸⁸⁷ from Death's rapacious⁵⁸⁸⁸ claim.
259 But longer in this Paradise to dwell
260 Permits not: to remove thee I am come,
261 And send thee from the garden forth to till ⁵⁸⁸⁹

262 *The ground whence thou wast taken, fitter soil.”*
263 *He added not, for Adam at the news*
264 *Heart-struck with chilling grip of sorrow stood,*
265 *That all his senses bound.*⁵⁸⁹⁰ *Eve, who unseen*
266 *Yet all had heard, with audible lament*
267 *Discovered*⁵⁸⁹¹ *soon*⁵⁸⁹² *the place of her retire.*⁵⁸⁹³
268 *“O unexpected stroke, worse than of Death!*
269 *Must I thus leave thee, Paradise? Thus leave*
270 *Thee, native soil, these happy walks and shades,*
271 *Fit haunt of Gods? Where I had hope to spend,*
272 *Quiet though sad, the respite*⁵⁸⁹⁴ *of that day*
273 *That must be mortal* ⁵⁸⁹⁵ *to us both. O flow’rs*
274 *That never will in other climate grow,*
275 *My early visitation,*⁵⁸⁹⁶ *and my last*
276 *At ev’n, which I bred up with tender*⁵⁸⁹⁷ *hand*
277 *From the first op’ning bud, and gave ye names,*
278 *Who now shall rear ye to the sun? or rank*⁵⁸⁹⁸
279 *Your tribes, and water* ⁵⁸⁹⁹ *from th’ ambrosial fount?*
280 *Thee lastly, nuptial bow’r, by me adorned*
281 *With what to sight or smell was sweet: from thee*
282 *How shall I part? and whither wander down*
283 *Into a lower world, to*⁵⁹⁰⁰ *this obscure*⁵⁹⁰¹
284 *And wild? How shall we breathe in other air*
285 *Less pure, accustomed*⁵⁹⁰² *to immortal fruits?”*
286 *Whom thus the Angel interrupted mild:*
287 *“Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign*
288 *What justly thou hast lost, nor set thy heart,*
289 *Thus over-fond,*⁵⁹⁰³ *on that which is not thine.*
290 *Thy going is not lonely; with thee goes*
291 *Thy husband, whom to follow thou art bound.*
292 *Where he abides, think there thy native soil.”*

293 Adam, by this from the cold sudden damp⁵⁹⁰⁴
294 Recovering, and his scattered spirits returned,
295 To Michael thus his humble words addressed:
296 “Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or named
297 Of them the highest, for such of shape may seem
298 Prince above Princes, gently hast thou told
299 Thy message, which might else in telling wound,
300 And in performing⁵⁹⁰⁵ end us. What besides
301 Of sorrow, and dejection, and despair,
302 Our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring,
303 Departure from this happy place, our sweet
304 Recess,⁵⁹⁰⁶ and only consolation left
305 Familiar to our eyes. All places else
306 Inhospitable appear, and desolate,
307 Nor knowing us, nor known. And if by prayer
308 Incessant I could hope to change the will
309 Of Him who all things can, I would not cease
310 To weary Him with my assiduous⁵⁹⁰⁷ cries.
311 But prayer against His absolute decree
312 No more avails than breath against the wind,
313 Blown stifling⁵⁹⁰⁸ back on him that breathes it forth.
314 Therefore to His great bidding I submit.
315 “This most afflicts me that, departing hence,
316 As from His face I shall be hid, deprived
317 His blessèd count’nance. Here I could frequent⁵⁹⁰⁹
318 With worship place by place where He vouchsafed
319 Presence Divine, and to my sons relate
320 On this mount He appeared, under this tree
321 Stood visible, among these pines His voice
322 I heard, here with Him at this fountain talked.
323 So many grateful ⁵⁹¹⁰altars I would rear

324 *Of grassy turf, and pile up every stone*
325 *Of luster from the brook, in memory,*
326 *Or monument to ages, and theron*
327 *Offer sweet-smelling gums, and fruits, and flow'rs.*
328 *In yonder nether⁵⁹¹¹ world where shall I seek*
329 *His bright appearances, or foot-step trace?*
330 *For though I fled Him angry, yet recalled*
331 *To life, prolonged and promised race,⁵⁹¹² I now*
332 *Gladly behold though but His utmost⁵⁹¹³ skirts⁵⁹¹⁴*
333 *Of glory, and far off His steps adore.”*
334 *To whom thus Michael, with regard benign:*
335 *“Adam, thou know'st Heav'n His, and all the earth,*
336 *Not this rock only. His omnipresence fills*
337 *Land, sea, and air, and every kind⁵⁹¹⁵ that lives,*
338 *Fomented⁵⁹¹⁶ by His virtual ⁵⁹¹⁷power and warmed.*
339 *All th' earth He gave thee to possess and rule:*
340 *No despicable⁵⁹¹⁸ gift. Surmise not then*
341 *His presence to these narrow bounds confined*
342 *Of Paradise, or Eden. This had been*
343 *Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread*
344 *All generations, and had hither come*
345 *From all the ends of th' earth, to celebrate*
346 *And reverence thee, their great progenitor.*
347 *But this pre-eminence thou hast lost, brought down*
348 *To dwell on even⁵⁹¹⁹ ground now with thy sons.*
349 *Yet doubt not but in valley, and in plain,*
350 *God is as here, and will be found alike*
351 *Present, and of His presence many a sign*
352 *Still following thee, still compassing thee round*
353 *With goodness and paternal love, His face*
354 *Express,⁵⁹²⁰ and of His steps the track divine.*

355 Which that thou may'st believe, and be confirmed
356 Ere thou from hence depart, know I am sent
357 To show thee what shall come in future days
358 To thee, and to thy offspring. Good with bad
359 Expect to hear, supernal [5921](#) grace contending [5922](#)
360 With sinfulness of men, thereby to learn
361 True patience, and to temper [5923](#) joy with fear
362 And pious sorrow, equally inured
363 By moderation either state to bear,
364 Prosperous or adverse. So shalt thou lead
365 Safest thy life, and best prepared endure
366 Thy mortal [5924](#) passage when it comes.

“Ascend

367 This hill. Let Eve (for I have drenched [5925](#) her eyes)
368 Here sleep below, while thou to foresight [5926](#) wak'st,
369 As once thou slept'st, while she to life was formed.”
370 To whom thus Adam gratefully replied:
371 “Ascend, I follow thee, safe guide, the path
372 Thou lead'st me, and to th' hand of Heav'n submit,
373 However chast'ning. To the evil turn [5927](#)
374 My obvious [5928](#) breast, arming to overcome
375 By suffering, and earn rest from labor won,
376 If so I may attain.”

So both ascend

377 In the visions of God. [5929](#) It was a hill,
378 Of Paradise the highest, from whose top
379 The hemisphere of earth, in clearest ken, [5930](#)
380 Stretched out [5931](#) to amplest reach of prospect [5932](#) lay.
381 Not higher that hill, nor wider looking round,
382 Whereon, for different cause, the Tempter set
383 Our second Adam, [5933](#) in the wilderness,

384 *To show him all earth's kingdoms, and their glory.*
385 *His⁵⁹³⁴ eye might there command wherever stood*
386 *City of old or modern fame, the seat*
387 *Of mightiest empire, from the destined walls*
388 *Of Cambalu,⁵⁹³⁵ seat of Cathaian Can,⁵⁹³⁶*
389 *And Samarchand⁵⁹³⁷ by Oxus,⁵⁹³⁸ Temir's throne,*
390 *To Paquin⁵⁹³⁹ of Sinaean⁵⁹⁴⁰ kings, and thence*
391 *To Agra⁵⁹⁴¹ and Lahor⁵⁹⁴² of great Mogul,*
392 *Down to the golden Chersonese,⁵⁹⁴³ or where*
393 *The Persian in Ecbatan⁵⁹⁴⁴ sat, or since*
394 *In Hispahan,⁵⁹⁴⁵ or where the Russian Tsar*
395 *In Moscow, or the Sultan in Bizance,⁵⁹⁴⁶*
396 *Turkestan-born,⁵⁹⁴⁷ nor could his eye not ken⁵⁹⁴⁸*
397 *The empire of Negus⁵⁹⁴⁹ to his utmost port*
398 *Ercoco,⁵⁹⁵⁰ and the less maritime kings*
399 *Mombaza,⁵⁹⁵¹ and Quiloa,⁵⁹⁵² and Melind,⁵⁹⁵³*
400 *And Sofala,⁵⁹⁵⁴ thought⁵⁹⁵⁵ Ophir,⁵⁹⁵⁶ to the realm*
401 *Of Congo, and Angola farthest south,*
402 *Or thence, from Niger flood⁵⁹⁵⁷ to Atlas⁵⁹⁵⁸ mount,*
403 *The kingdoms of Almansor,⁵⁹⁵⁹ Fez and Sus,⁵⁹⁶⁰*
404 *Morocco, and Algiers, and Tremisen,⁵⁹⁶¹*
405 *On Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway*
406 *The world. In spirit perhaps he also saw*
407 *Rich Mexico, the seat of Montezume,⁵⁹⁶²*
408 *And Cusco⁵⁹⁶³ in Peru, the richer seat*
409 *Of Atabalipa,⁵⁹⁶⁴ and yet unspoiled*
410 *Guiana, whose great city Geryon's⁵⁹⁶⁵ sons*
411 *Call El Dorado. But to nobler sights*
412 *Michael from Adam's eyes the film removed,*
413 *Which that false fruit that promised clearer sight*

414 *Had bred, then purged with euphrasy⁵⁹⁶⁶ and rue⁵⁹⁶⁷*
415 *The visual nerve, for he had much to see,*
416 *And from the well of life three drops instilled.*
417 *So deep the power of these ingredients pierced,*
418 *Ev'n to the inmost seat of mental sight,*
419 *That Adam, now enforced⁵⁹⁶⁸ to close his eyes,*
420 *Sunk down, and all his spirits became entranced.*
421 *But him the gentle Angel by the hand*
422 *Soon raised, and his attention thus recalled:*
423 *“Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold*
424 *Th' effects, which thy original crime hath wrought*
425 *In some to spring from thee, who never touched*
426 *Th' excepted ⁵⁹⁶⁹tree, nor with the snake conspired,*
427 *Nor sinned thy sin, yet from that sin derive⁵⁹⁷⁰*
428 *Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.”*
429 *His eyes he opened, and beheld a field,*
430 *Part arable ⁵⁹⁷¹and tilth,⁵⁹⁷² whereon were sheaves*
431 *New reaped, the other part sheep-walks and folds.*
432 *In th' midst an altar as the landmark stood,*
433 *Rustic, of grassy sord.⁵⁹⁷³ Thither ⁵⁹⁷⁴anon⁵⁹⁷⁵*
434 *A sweaty reaper⁵⁹⁷⁶ from his tillage brought*
435 *First fruits, the green ear, and the yellow sheaf,*
436 *Unculled,⁵⁹⁷⁷ as⁵⁹⁷⁸ came to hand. A shepherd next,*
437 *More meek,⁵⁹⁷⁹ came with the firstlings of his flock,*
438 *Choicest and best, then sacrificing, laid*
439 *The inwards⁵⁹⁸⁰ and their fat, with incense strewn,*
440 *On the cleft wood, and all due rites performed.*
441 *His offering soon propitious⁵⁹⁸¹ fire from Heav'n*
442 *Consumed with nimble ⁵⁹⁸²glance⁵⁹⁸³ and grateful steam;*
443 *The other's⁵⁹⁸⁴ not, for his was not sincere,*
444 *Whereat he inly raged and, as they talked,*

445 *Smote him⁵⁹⁸⁵ into the midriff with a stone*
446 *That beat out life. He fell, and deadly pale*
447 *Groaned out his soul with gushing blood effused.⁵⁹⁸⁶*
448 *Much at that sight was Adam in his heart*
449 *Dismayed, and thus in haste to th' Angel cried:*
450 *“O Teacher, some great mischief⁵⁹⁸⁷ hath befall’n*

451 To that meek man, who well had sacrificed.
452 Is piety thus and pure devotion paid?"
453 T' whom Michael thus, he also moved, replied:
454 "These two are brethren, Adam, and to come
455 Out of thy loins. Th' unjust the just hath slain,
456 For envy that his brother's offering found
457 From Heav'n acceptance. But the bloody fact⁵⁹⁸⁸
458 Will be avenged, and th' other's faith, approved,⁵⁹⁸⁹
459 Lose no reward, though here thou see him die,
460 Rolling in dust and gore."⁵⁹⁹⁰ To which our sire:
461 "Alas! both for the deed, and for the cause!
462 But have I now seen Death? Is this the way
463 I must return to native ⁵⁹⁹¹dust? O sight
464 Of terror, foul and ugly to behold,
465 Horrid to think, how horrible to feel!"
466 To whom thus Michael:⁵⁹⁹²

"Death thou hast seen

467 In his first shape on man, but many shapes⁵⁹⁹³
468 Of Death, and many are the ways that lead
469 To his grim cave, all dismal, yet to sense
470 More terrible at th' entrance, than within.
471 Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,
472 By fire, flood, famine, by intemperance more
473 In meats and drinks, which on the earth shall bring
474 Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew
475 Before thee shall appear, that thou may'st know
476 What misery th' inabstinence⁵⁹⁹⁴ of Eve
477 Shall bring on men."

Immediately a place

478 Before his eyes appeared, sad, noisome,⁵⁹⁹⁵ dark,
479 A lazar ⁵⁹⁹⁶-house it seemed, wherein were laid
480 Numbers of all diseased, all maladies
481 Of ghastly spasm, or racking ⁵⁹⁹⁷torture, qualms⁵⁹⁹⁸

482 Of heart-sick agony, all feverous kinds,
483 Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs,⁵⁹⁹⁹
484 Intestine stone and ulcer, colic ⁶⁰⁰⁰ pangs,
485 Daemoniac frenzy, moping melancholy,
486 And moon-struck⁶⁰⁰¹ madness, pining⁶⁰⁰² atrophy,⁶⁰⁰³
487 Marasmus,⁶⁰⁰⁴ and wide-wasting pestilence,⁶⁰⁰⁵
488 Dropsies,⁶⁰⁰⁶ and asthmas, and joint-racking rheums.
489 Dire was the tossing, deep the groans. Despair
490 Tended the sick, busiest from couch to couch,
491 And over them triumphant Death his dart
492 Shook, but delayed to strike, though oft invoked
493 With vows, as their chief good and final hope.
494 Sight so deform⁶⁰⁰⁷ what heart of rock could long
495 Dry-eyed behold? Adam could not, but wept,
496 Though not of woman born. Compassion quelled⁶⁰⁰⁸
497 His best of man, and gave him up to tears
498 A space, till firmer thoughts restrained excess
499 And, scarce recovering words, his plaint renewed:
500 "O miserable mankind, to what fall
501 Degraded, to what wretched state reserved!
502 Better end here unborn. Why is life giv'n
503 To be thus wrested ⁶⁰⁰⁹ from us? Rather, why
504 Obtruded⁶⁰¹⁰ on us thus? Who, if we knew
505 What we receive, would either not accept
506 Life offered, or soon beg to lay it down,
507 Glad to be so dismissed in peace. Can thus
508 The image of God in man, created once
509 So goodly⁶⁰¹¹ and erect, though faulty since,
510 To such unsightly sufferings be debased
511 Under inhuman pains? Why should not man,
512 Retaining still divine similitude⁶⁰¹²
513 In part, from such deformities be free
514 And, for his Maker's image sake, exempt?"

515 *“Their Maker’s image,” answered Michael, “then*
516 *Forsook them, when themselves they vilified* [6013](#)
517 *To serve ungoverned appetite, and took*
518 *His image whom they served, a brutish* [6014](#) *vice,*
519 *Inductive* [6015](#) *mainly to the sin of Eve.*
520 *Therefore so abject is their punishment,*
521 *Disfiguring not God’s likeness, but their own,*
522 *Or if His likeness, by themselves defaced,*
523 *While they pervert pure Nature’s healthful rules*
524 *To loathsome sickness—worthily, since they*
525 *God’s image did not reverence in themselves.”*
526 *“I yield it just,” said Adam, “and submit.*
527 *But is there yet no other way, besides*
528 *These painful passages,* [6016](#) *how we may come*
529 *To Death, and mix with our connatural* [6017](#) *dust?”*
530 *“There is,” said Michael, “if thou well observe*
531 *The rule of not too much, by temperance taught,*
532 *In what thou eat’st and drink’st, seeking from thence*
533 *Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,*
534 *Till many years over thy head return.* [6018](#)
535 *So may’st thou live till, like ripe fruit, thou drop*
536 *Into thy mother’s lap, or be with ease*
537 *Gathered, nor harshly plucked, for Death mature:*
538 *This is old age. But then thou must outlive*
539 *Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change*
540 *To withered, weak, and gray. Thy senses, then*
541 *Obtuse,* [6019](#) *all taste of pleasure must forego,* [6020](#)
542 *To what thou hast* [6021](#) *and, for the air of youth,*
543 *Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reign*
544 *A melancholy damp* [6022](#) *of cold and dry*
545 *To weigh thy spirits down, and last* [6023](#) *consume*
546 *The balm of life.” To whom our ancestor:*
547 *“Henceforth I fly not Death, nor would prolong*

548 Life much, bent [6024](#) rather how I may be quit, [6025](#)
549 Fairest and easiest, of this cumbrous [6026](#) charge, [6027](#)
550 Which I must keep till my appointed day
551 Of rend'ring up, [6028](#) and patiently attend [6029](#)
552 My dissolution." Michael [6030](#) replied:
553 "Nor [6031](#) love thy life, nor hate, but what thou liv'st
554 Live well. How long, or short, permit [6032](#) to Heav'n.
555 And now prepare thee for another sight."
556 He looked, and saw a spacious plain whereon
557 Were tents of various hue. By some, [6033](#) were herds
558 Of cattle grazing; others, whence the sound
559 Of instruments, that made melodious chime, [6034](#)
560 Was heard, of harp and organ, and who [6035](#) moved
561 Their stops and chords was seen, his volant [6036](#) touch,
562 Instinct [6037](#) through all proportions, low and high,
563 Fled and pursued transverse the resonant fugue.
564 In other part stood one who, at the forge
565 Laboring, two massy clods of iron and brass
566 Had melted (whether found where casual [6038](#) fire
567 Had wasted woods on mountain or in vale,
568 Down to the veins of earth, thence gliding hot
569 To some cave's mouth, or whether washed by stream
570 From underground). The liquid ore he drained
571 Into fit moulds prepared, from which he formed
572 First his own tools, then what might else be wrought, [6039](#)
573 Fusil [6040](#) or graven [6041](#) in metal. After these,
574 But on the hither [6042](#) side, a different sort
575 From the high neighboring hills, which was their seat,
576 Down to the plain descended. By their guise [6043](#)
577 Just [6044](#) men they seemed, and all their study bent
578 To worship God aright, and know His works
579 Not hid, nor those things last [6045](#) which might preserve
580 Freedom and peace to men. They on the plain

581 Long had not walked when, from the tents, behold!
 582 A bevy⁶⁰⁴⁶ of fair women, richly gay
 583 In gems and wanton⁶⁰⁴⁷ dress! To th' harp they sung
 584 Soft amorous ditties,⁶⁰⁴⁸ and in dance came on.⁶⁰⁴⁹
 585 The men, though grave,⁶⁰⁵⁰ eyed them, and let their eyes
 586 Rove without rein till, in the amorous net
 587 Fast caught, they liked, and each his liking chose,
 588 And now of love they treat,⁶⁰⁵¹ till the ev'ningstar,⁶⁰⁵²
 589 Love's harbinger,⁶⁰⁵³ appeared. Then all in heat
 590 They light the nuptial torch, and bid⁶⁰⁵⁴ invoke⁶⁰⁵⁵
 591 Hymen,⁶⁰⁵⁶ then first ⁶⁰⁵⁷ to marriage rites invoked:
 592 With feast and music all the tents resound.
 593 Such happy⁶⁰⁵⁸ interview⁶⁰⁵⁹ and fair event ⁶⁰⁶⁰
 594 Of love and youth not lost, songs, garlands, flow'rs,
 595 And charming symphonies,⁶⁰⁶¹ attached⁶⁰⁶² the heart
 596 Of Adam, soon inclined t' admit ⁶⁰⁶³ delight,
 597 The bent⁶⁰⁶⁴ of Nature, which he thus expressed:
 598 "True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel blest,
 599 Much better seems this vision, and more hope
 600 Of peaceful days portends,⁶⁰⁶⁵ than those two past.
 601 Those were of hate and Death, or pain much worse.
 602 Here Nature seems fulfilled in all her ends."⁶⁰⁶⁶
 603 To whom thus Michael:
 "Judge not what is best
 604 By pleasure, though to Nature seeming meet,⁶⁰⁶⁷
 605 Created, as thou art, to nobler end
 606 Holy and pure, conformity⁶⁰⁶⁸ divine.
 607 Those tents thou saw'st so pleasant were the tents
 608 Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race
 609 Who slew his brother. Studious they appear
 610 Of arts that polish⁶⁰⁶⁹ life, inventors rare,⁶⁰⁷⁰
 611 Unmindful of their Maker, though His Spirit
 612 Taught them, but they His gifts acknowledged none.

613 Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget,
614 For that fair female troop thou saw'st, that seemed
615 Of goddesses, so blithe,⁶⁰⁷¹ so smooth, so gay,
616 Yet empty of all good wherein consists
617 Woman's domestic honor and chief praise,
618 Bred only and completed⁶⁰⁷² to the taste
619 Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance,
620 To dress, and troll ⁶⁰⁷³ the tongue, and roll the eye.
621 To these that sober race of men, whose lives
622 Religious titled them the sons of God,
623 Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame
624 Ignobly, to the trains,⁶⁰⁷⁴ and to the smiles
625 Of these fair atheists, and now swim in joy
626 (Erelong to swim at large),⁶⁰⁷⁵ and laugh, for which
627 The world erelong a world of tears must weep."
628 To whom thus Adam, of short joy bereft:⁶⁰⁷⁶
629 "O pity and shame, that they who to live well
630 Entered⁶⁰⁷⁷ so fair, should turn aside to tread
631 Paths indirect,⁶⁰⁷⁸ or in the mid way faint!⁶⁰⁷⁹
632 But still I see the tenor ⁶⁰⁸⁰ of man's woe
633 Holds on the same, from woman⁶⁰⁸¹ to begin."
634 "From man's effeminate slackness it begins,"
635 Said th' Angel, "who should better hold his place
636 By wisdom, and superior gifts received.
637 But now prepare thee for another scene."
638 He looked, and saw wide territory spread
639 Before him, towns, and rural⁶⁰⁸² works between,
640 Cities of men with lofty gates and tow'rs,
641 Concourse⁶⁰⁸³ in arms, fierce faces threat'ning war,
642 Giants of mighty bone and bold emprise.⁶⁰⁸⁴
643 Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed,
644 Single or in array of battle ranged
645 Both horse and foot, nor idly must'ring⁶⁰⁸⁵ stood.

646 *One way a band select [6086](#) from forage drives*
 647 *A herd of beeves, [6087](#) fair oxen and fair kine, [6088](#)*
 648 *From a fat meadow ground, or fleecy flock,*
 649 *Ewes and their bleating lambs over the plain,*
 650 *Their booty. Scarce with life [6089](#) the shepherds fly,*
 651 *But call in aid, which makes a bloody fray;*
 652 *With cruel [6090](#) tournament [6091](#) the squadrons join.*
 653 *Where cattle pastured late, [6092](#) now scattered lies*
 654 *With carcasses and arms th' ensanguined [6093](#) field,*
 655 *Deserted. Others to a city strong*
 656 *Lay siege, encamped, by battery, [6094](#) scale, [6095](#) and mine, [6096](#)*
 657 *Assaulting; others from the wall defend*
 658 *With dart [6097](#) and javelin, [6098](#) stones, and sulphurous fire;*
 659 *On each hand slaughter, and gigantic deeds.*
 660 *In other part the sceptered heralds call*
 661 *To council, in the city-gates. Anon [6099](#)*
 662 *Gray-headed men and grave, with warriors mixed,*
 663 *Assemble, and harangues [6100](#) are heard, but soon*
 664 *In factious [6101](#) opposition, till at last*
 665 *Of middle age one [6102](#) rising, eminent*
 666 *In wise deport, [6103](#) spoke much of right and wrong,*
 667 *Of justice, or religion, truth, and peace,*
 668 *And judgment from above. Him old and young*
 669 *Exploded, [6104](#) and had seized with violent hands,*
 670 *Had not a cloud descending snatched him thence*
 671 *Unseen amid the throng. So violence*
 672 *Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law,*
 673 *Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.*
 674 *Adam was all in tears, and to his guide*
 675 *Lamenting turned full sad:*
 676 *Death's ministers, not men, who thus deal death*
 677 *Inhumanly to men, and multiply*

“O what are these,

678 Ten thousandfold the sin of him who slew
679 His brother, for of whom such massacre
680 Make they, but of their brethren, men of men?
681 But who was that just man, whom had not Heav'n
682 Rescued, had in his righteousness been lost?"⁶¹⁰⁵
683 To whom thus Michael:⁶¹⁰⁶

"These are the product

684 Of those ill-mated marriages thou saw'st,
685 Where good with bad were matched, who of themselves
686 Abhor⁶¹⁰⁷ to join⁶¹⁰⁸ and, by imprudence mixed,⁶¹⁰⁹
687 Produce prodigious births of body or mind.
688 Such were these giants, men of high renown,
689 For in those days might⁶¹¹⁰ only shall be admired,
690 And valor and heroic virtue called.⁶¹¹¹
691 To overcome in battle, and subdue
692 Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite
693 Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch
694 Of human glory, and for glory done
695 Of triumph, to be styled great conquerors,
696 Patrons of mankind, gods, and sons of gods—
697 Destroyers rightlier called, and plagues of men.
698 Thus fame shall be achieved, renown on earth,
699 And what most merits fame, in silence hid.
700 But he⁶¹¹² the seventh from thee, whom thou beheld'st
701 The only righteous in a world perverse,
702 And therefore hated,⁶¹¹³ therefore so beset⁶¹¹⁴
703 With foes, for daring single⁶¹¹⁵ to be just
704 And utter odious truth: that God would come
705 To judge them with His Saints. Him the Most High,
706 Rapt⁶¹¹⁶ in a balmy⁶¹¹⁷ cloud with wingèd steeds
707 Did, as thou saw'st, receive⁶¹¹⁸ to walk with God,
708 High in salvation⁶¹¹⁹ and the climes of bliss,
709 Exempt from death. To show thee what reward

710 *Awaits the good, the rest what punishment,*
711 *Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold.”*
712 *He looked, and saw the face of things quite changed.*
713 *The brazen throat of war had ceased to roar,*
714 *All now was turned to jollity and game,*
715 *To luxury and riot, feast and dance,*
716 *Marrying or prostituting, as befel, [6120](#)*
717 *Rape or adultery, where passing [6121](#) fair*
718 *Allured them, thence from cups to civil broils. [6122](#)*
719 *At length a reverend sire [6123](#) among them came,*
720 *And of their doings great dislike declared,*
721 *And testified against their ways. He oft*
722 *Frequented their assemblies, whereso [6124](#) met,*
723 *Triumphs or festivals, and to them preached*
724 *Conversion and repentance, as to souls*
725 *In prison, under judgments imminent.*
726 *But all in vain. Which when he saw, he ceased*
727 *Contending, [6125](#) and removed his tents far off.*
728 *Then from the mountain hewing timber tall,*
729 *Began to build a vessel of huge bulk,*
730 *Measured by cubit, length, and breadth, and height,*
731 *Smeared round with pitch, and in the side a door*
732 *Contrived, and of provisions laid in large [6126](#)*
733 *For man and beast, when lo, a wonder strange!*
734 *Of every beast, and bird, and insect small,*
735 *Came sevens, and pairs, and entered in as [6127](#) taught*
736 *Their order. Last the sire and his three sons,*
737 *With their four wives. And God made fast the door.*
738 *Meanwhile the south-wind rose, and with black wings*
739 *Wide-hovering all the clouds together drove*
740 *From under Heav’n. The hills, to their [6128](#) supply,*
741 *Vapor and exhalation, dusk and moist,*
742 *Sent up amain, [6129](#) and now the thickened sky*

743 *Like a dark ceiling stood, down rushed the rain*
744 *Impetuous, [6130](#) and continued till the earth*
745 *No more was seen. The floating vessel swum*
746 *Uplifted, and secure with beakèd prow*
747 *Rode tilting o'er the waves. All dwellings else*
748 *Flood overwhelmed, and them with all their pomp*
749 *Deep under water rolled. Sea covered sea,*
750 *Sea without shore, and in their palaces,*
751 *Where luxury late reigned, sea-monsters whelped [6131](#)*
752 *And stabled. [6132](#) Of mankind, so numerous late, [6133](#)*
753 *All left, in one small bottom [6134](#) swum embarked.*
754 *How didst thou grieve then, Adam, to behold*
755 *The end of all thy offspring, end so sad,*
756 *Depopulation? Thee another flood,*
757 *Of tears and sorrow a flood, thee also drowned,*
758 *And sunk thee as thy sons, till gently reared*
759 *By th' Angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,*
760 *Though comfortless, as when a father mourns*
761 *His children, all in view destroyed at once,*
762 *And scarce [6135](#) to th' Angel utter'dst thus thy plaint:*
763 *"O visions ill foreseen! Better had I*
764 *Lived ignorant of future, so had borne*
765 *My part of evil only, each day's lot*
766 *Enough to bear. Those now, that were dispensed [6136](#)*
767 *The burden of many ages, on me light [6137](#)*
768 *At once, by my foreknowledge gaining birth*
769 *Abortive, to torment me ere their being,*
770 *With thought that they must be. Let no man seek*
771 *Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall*
772 *Him or his children—evil, he may be sure,*
773 *Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,*
774 *And he the future evil shall no less*
775 *In apprehension than in substance feel,*
776 *Grievous to bear. But that care now is past:*

777 Man is not whom to warn.⁶¹³⁸ Those few escaped
 778 Famine and anguish will at last consume,⁶¹³⁹
 779 Wand'ring that wat'ry desert. I had hope,
 780 When violence was ceased, and war on earth,
 781 All would have then gone well, peace would have crowned
 782 With length of happy days the race of man.
 783 But I was far deceived, for now I see
 784 Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.
 785 How comes it thus? Unfold, celestial guide,
 786 And whether here the race of man will end.”
 787 To whom thus Michael:
 “Those, whom last thou saw'st
 788 In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they
 789 First seen in acts of prowess eminent
 790 And great exploits, but of true virtue void,
 791 Who having spilled much blood, and done much waste,
 792 Subduing nations, and achieved thereby
 793 Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey,⁶¹⁴⁰
 794 Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,
 795 Surfeit,⁶¹⁴¹ and lust, till wantonness⁶¹⁴² and pride
 796 Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in peace.
 797 The conquered also, and enslaved by war,
 798 Shall with their freedom lost all virtue lose
 799 And fear of God, from whom their piety feigned
 800 In sharp contest⁶¹⁴³ of battle found no aid
 801 Against invaders. Therefore cooled in zeal,
 802 Thenceforth shall practice how to live secure,⁶¹⁴⁴
 803 Worldly or dissolute, on what their lords
 804 Shall leave them to enjoy, for th' earth shall bear
 805 More than enough that temperance⁶¹⁴⁵ may be tried.⁶¹⁴⁶
 806 So all shall turn degenerate,⁶¹⁴⁷ all depraved,⁶¹⁴⁸
 807 Justice and temperance, truth and faith, forgot—
 808 One man⁶¹⁴⁹ except, the only son of light
 809

In a dark age, against example good,⁶¹⁵⁰
810 Against allurement,⁶¹⁵¹ custom,⁶¹⁵² and a world
811 Offended.⁶¹⁵³ Fearless of reproach and scorn,
812 Or violence, he of their wicked ways
813 Shall them admonish, and before them set
814 The paths of righteousness, how much more safe
815 And full of peace, denouncing⁶¹⁵⁴ wrath to come
816 Of their impenitence,⁶¹⁵⁵ and shall return
817 Of them derided, but of God observed
818 The one just man alive. By His command
819 Shall build a wondrous ark, as thou beheld'st,
820 To save himself, and household, from amidst
821 A world devote to universal wrack.⁶¹⁵⁶
822 No sooner he, with them of man and beast
823 Select ⁶¹⁵⁷ for life shall in the ark be lodged,
824 And sheltered round, but all the cataracts⁶¹⁵⁸
825 Of Heav'n set open on the earth shall pour
826 Rain, day and night. All fountains of the deep,
827 Broke up, shall heave the ocean to usurp
828 Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise
829 Above the highest hills. Then shall this mount
830 Of Paradise by might of waves be moved
831 Out of his place, pushed by the hornèd⁶¹⁵⁹ flood,
832 With all his verdure spoiled,⁶¹⁶⁰ and trees adrift,
833 Down the great river ⁶¹⁶¹ to the op'ning gulf,⁶¹⁶²
834 And there take root an island salt and bare,
835 The haunt of seals, and orcs,⁶¹⁶³ and sea-mew's⁶¹⁶⁴ clang,⁶¹⁶⁵
836 To teach thee that God attributes ⁶¹⁶⁶ to place
837 No sanctity, if none⁶¹⁶⁷ be thither brought
838 By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.
839 And now, what further shall ensue, behold."
840 He looked, and saw the ark hull ⁶¹⁶⁸ on the flood,
841 Which now abated, for the clouds were fled,

842 Driven by a keen north-wind that, blowing dry,
843 Wrinkled the face of deluge, as⁶¹⁶⁹ decayed,⁶¹⁷⁰
844 And the clear sun on his wide wat'ry glass
845 Gazed hot, and of⁶¹⁷¹ the fresh wave largely⁶¹⁷² drew,
846 As after thirst, which made their flowing shrink
847 From standing lake to tripping⁶¹⁷³ ebb, that stole
848 With soft foot towards the deep, who now had stopped⁶¹⁷⁴
849 His sluices,⁶¹⁷⁵ as the Heav'n his windows shut.
850 The ark no more now floats, but seems on ground,
851 Fast on the top of some high mountain fixed.
852 And now the tops of hills as rocks appear.
853 With clamor⁶¹⁷⁶ thence the rapid currents drive
854 Towards the retreating sea their furious⁶¹⁷⁷ tide.⁶¹⁷⁸
855 Forthwith⁶¹⁷⁹ from out the ark a raven flies,
856 And after him the surer⁶¹⁸⁰ messenger,
857 A dove sent forth once and again⁶¹⁸¹ to spy
858 Green tree or ground, whereon his foot may light.⁶¹⁸²
859 The second time returning, in his bill
860 An olive leaf he brings, pacific⁶¹⁸³ sign.
861 Anon⁶¹⁸⁴ dry ground appears, and from his ark
862 The ancient sire descends, with all his train,
863 Then with uplifted hands and eyes devout,
864 Grateful to Heav'n, over his head beholds
865 A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow⁶¹⁸⁵
866 Conspicuous⁶¹⁸⁶ with three lifted⁶¹⁸⁷ colors gay,
867 Betok'ning⁶¹⁸⁸ peace from God, and cov'nant new.
868 Whereat the heart of Adam, erst⁶¹⁸⁹ so sad,
869 Greatly rejoiced, and thus his joy broke forth:
870 "O thou, who future things canst represent
871 As present, Heav'nly instructor, I revive
872 At this last sight, assured that man shall live,
873 With all the creatures and their seed preserve.⁶¹⁹⁰
874 Far less I now lament for one whole world

BOOK XII

THE ARGUMENT

The Angel Michael continues from the Flood, to relate what shall succeed; then, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain who that seed of the woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the Fall; his Incarnation, Death, Resurrection, and Ascension; the state of the Church till his Second Coming.

Adam, greatly satisfied and recomforted by these relations and promises, descends the hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams composed to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.

- 1 *As one who in his journey bates⁶²⁰³ at noon,*
- 2 *Though bent⁶²⁰⁴ on speed, so here the Arch-Angel paused*
- 3 *Betwixt the world destroyed and world restored,*
- 4 *If Adam aught perhaps might interpose.⁶²⁰⁵*
- 5 *Then with transition sweet,⁶²⁰⁶ new speech resumes:*
- 6 *“Thus thou hast seen one world begin, and end,*
- 7 *And man, as from a second stock, proceed.*
- 8 *Much thou hast yet to see, but I perceive*
- 9 *Thy mortal sight to fail; objects divine*
- 10 *Must needs impair⁶²⁰⁷ and weary human sense.*
- 11 *Henceforth what is to come I will relate.*
- 12 *Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.*
- 13 *“This second source⁶²⁰⁸ of men, while yet but few,*
- 14 *And while the dread of judgment past remains*

15 *Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity,*
16 *With some⁶²⁰⁹ regard to what is just and right*
17 *Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace,⁶²¹⁰*
18 *Laboring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,*
19 *Corn, wine, and oil, and from the herd or flock*
20 *Oft sacrificing bullock,⁶²¹¹ lamb, or kid,*
21 *With large wine-offerings poured, and sacred feast,*
22 *Shall spend their days in joy unblamed,⁶²¹² and dwell*
23 *Long time in peace, by families and tribes,*
24 *Under paternal rule. Till one⁶²¹³ shall rise*
25 *Of proud ambitious heart, who not content*
26 *With fair equality, fraternal state,*
27 *Will arrogate dominion undeserved*
28 *Over his brethren, and quite dispossess⁶²¹⁴*
29 *Concord⁶²¹⁵ and law of nature from the earth,*
30 *Hunting (and men not beasts shall be his game)*
31 *With war, and hostile snare, such as refuse*
32 *Subjection to his empire tyrannous.*
33 *A mighty hunter thence he shall be styled*
34 *Before the Lord, as in despite⁶²¹⁶ of Heav'n,*
35 *Or from Heav'n claiming second sov'reignty,*
36 *And from rebellion shall derive his name,*
37 *Though of rebellion others he accuse.*
38 *“He with a crew, whom like ambition joins*
39 *With him or under him to tyrannize,*
40 *Marching from Eden towards the west, shall find*
41 *The plain,⁶²¹⁷ wherein a black bituminous⁶²¹⁸ gurge⁶²¹⁹*
42 *Boils out from under ground, the mouth of Hell.*
43 *Of brick, and of that stuff, they cast ⁶²²⁰ to build*
44 *A city and tow'r,⁶²²¹ whose top may reach to Heav'n,*
45 *And get themselves a name, lest far dispersed*

46 *In foreign lands, their memory be lost,*
47 *Regardless whether good or evil fame.*
48 *But God, who oft descends to visit men*
49 *Unseen, and through their habitations walks*
50 *To mark their doings, them beholding soon,*
51 *Comes down to see their city, ere the tower*
52 *Obstruct Heav'n-tow'rs, and in derision sets*
53 *Upon their tongues a various⁶²²² spirit, to raze⁶²²³*
54 *Quite out their native language and, instead,*
55 *To sow⁶²²⁴ a jangling⁶²²⁵ noise of words unknown.*
56 *Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud*
57 *Among the builders; each to other calls*
58 *Not understood; till hoarse, and all in rage,*
59 *As mocked they storm.⁶²²⁶ Great laughter was in Heav'n*
60 *And looking down, to see the hubbub strange*
61 *And hear the din. Thus was the building⁶²²⁷ left*
62 *Ridiculous, and the work Confusion⁶²²⁸ named."*
63 *Whereto thus Adam, fatherly displeased:*
64 *"O execrable son! so to aspire*
65 *Above his brethren, to himself assuming*
66 *Authority usurped, from God not giv'n.*
67 *He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl,*
68 *Dominion absolute; that right we hold*
69 *By His donation.⁶²²⁹ But man over men*
70 *He made not lord, such title to Himself*
71 *Reserving, human left from human free.*
72 *But this usurper his encroachment⁶²³⁰ proud*
73 *Stays⁶²³¹ not on man! To God his tower intends*
74 *Siege⁶²³² and defiance. Wretched man! What food*
75 *Will he convey up thither, to sustain*
76 *Himself and his rash army, where thin air*

77 Above the clouds will pine⁶²³³ his entrails gross,
78 And famish⁶²³⁴ him of breath, if not of bread?”
79 To whom thus Michael:
“Justly thou abhorr’st
80 That son, who on the quiet state of men
81 Such trouble brought, affecting ⁶²³⁵ to subdue
82 Rational liberty. Yet know withal, ⁶²³⁶
83 Since thy original lapse true liberty
84 Is lost, which always with right reason dwells
85 Twinned, and from her hath no dividual being.
86 Reason in man obscured, or not obeyed,
87 Immediately inordinate desires,
88 And upstart passions, catch⁶²³⁷ the government⁶²³⁸
89 From reason, and to servitude reduce
90 Man, till then free. Therefore, since he permits
91 Within himself unworthy powers to reign
92 Over free reason, God, in judgment just,
93 Subjects him from without to violent lords,
94 Who oft as undeservedly enthrall ⁶²³⁹
95 His outward freedom. Tyranny must be—
96 Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.
97 Yet sometimes nations will decline so low
98 From virtue, which is reason, that no wrong,
99 But justice, and some fatal curse annexed,
100 Deprives them of their outward liberty,
101 Their inward lost. Witness th’ irreverent son⁶²⁴⁰
102 Of him who built the ark, who for the shame
103 Done to his father, ⁶²⁴¹ heard this heavy curse,
104 ‘Servant of servants,’ on his vicious⁶²⁴² race.
105 Thus will this latter, as the former world,
106 Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last,

107 *Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw*
108 *His presence from among them, and avert*
109 *His holy eyes, resolving from thenceforth*
110 *To leave them to their own polluted ways,*
111 *And one peculiar⁶²⁴³ nation⁶²⁴⁴ to select*
112 *From all the rest, of whom to be invoked,*
113 *A nation from one faithful man⁶²⁴⁵ to spring,*
114 *Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,*
115 *Bred up in idol-worship. O that men*
116 *(Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,*
117 *While yet the patriarch lived who 'scaped the Flood,*
118 *As to forsake the living God, and fall*
119 *To worship their own work in wood and stone*
120 *For gods! Yet him God the Most High vouchsafes⁶²⁴⁶*
121 *To call by vision from his father's house,*
122 *His kindred and false gods, into a land*
123 *Which He will show him, and from him will raise*
124 *A mighty nation, and upon him show'r*
125 *His benediction so that in his seed*
126 *All nations shall be blest. He straight⁶²⁴⁷ obeys,*
127 *Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes.*
128 *“I see him, but thou canst not, with what faith*
129 *He leaves his gods, his friends, and native soil,*
130 *Ur⁶²⁴⁸ of Chaldaea, passing now the ford*
131 *To Haran,⁶²⁴⁹ after him a cumbrous train*
132 *Of herds and flocks, and numerous servitude,⁶²⁵⁰*
133 *Not wand'ring poor, but trusting all his wealth*
134 *With God, who called him, in a land unknown.*
135 *Canaan he now attains; I see his tents*
136 *Pitched about Sechem,⁶²⁵¹ and the neighboring plain*
137 *Of Moreh. There by promise he receives*

138 *Gift to his progeny of all that land,*
139 *From Hamath⁶²⁵² northward to the desert south*
140 *(Things by their names I call, though yet unnamed),*
141 *From Hermon⁶²⁵³ east to the great western sea.⁶²⁵⁴*
142 *Mount Hermon—yonder sea—each place behold*
143 *In prospect, as I point them. On the shore,*
144 *Mount Carmel.⁶²⁵⁵ Here, the double-founted⁶²⁵⁶ stream,*
145 *Jordan, true limit ⁶²⁵⁷ eastward, but his⁶²⁵⁸ sons*
146 *Shall dwell to Senir,⁶²⁵⁹ that long ridge of hills.*
147 *“This ponder, that all nations of the earth*
148 *Shall in his seed be blessèd. By that seed*
149 *Is meant thy great Deliverer,⁶²⁶⁰ who shall bruise⁶²⁶¹*
150 *The serpent’s head, whereof to thee anon⁶²⁶²*
151 *Plainlier shall be revealed. This patriarch blest,*
152 *Whom ‘faithful Abraham’ due time⁶²⁶³ shall call,*
153 *A son⁶²⁶⁴ and of his son a grand-child ⁶²⁶⁵ leaves,*
154 *Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown.*
155 *The grandchild, with twelve sons increased, departs*
156 *From Canaan to a land hereafter called*
157 *Egypt, divided by the river Nile.*
158 *See where it flows, disgorging⁶²⁶⁶ at seven mouths*
159 *Into the sea. To sojourn ⁶²⁶⁷ in that land*
160 *He comes, invited by a younger son⁶²⁶⁸*
161 *In time of dearth,⁶²⁶⁹ a son whose worthy deeds*
162 *Raise him to be the second in that realm*
163 *Of Pharaoh. There he dies, and leaves his race*
164 *Growing into a nation, and now grown*
165 *Suspected to a sequent⁶²⁷⁰ king, who seeks*
166 *To stop their overgrowth, as inmate ⁶²⁷¹ guests*
167 *Too numerous,⁶²⁷² whence of ⁶²⁷³ guests he makes them slaves,*

168 *Inhospitably, and kills their infant males.*
169 *Till by two brethren (these two brethren call*
170 *Moses and Aaron) sent from God to claim*
171 *His people from enthrallment, [6274](#) they return,*
172 *With glory and spoil, back to their promised land.*
173 *“But first, the lawless tyrant, who denies [6275](#)*
174 *To know their God, or message to regard,*
175 *Must be compelled by signs and judgments dire.*
176 *To blood unshed [6276](#) the rivers must be turned.*
177 *Frogs, lice, and flies, must all his palace fill*
178 *With loath’d intrusion, [6277](#) and fill all the land.*
179 *His cattle must of rot and murren [6278](#) die,*
180 *Botches [6279](#) and blains [6280](#) must all his flesh emboss, [6281](#)*
181 *And all [6282](#) his people. Thunder mixed with hail,*
182 *Hail mixed with fire, must rend th’ Egyptian sky,*
183 *And wheel [6283](#) on th’ earth, devouring where it rolls.*
184 *What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain,*
185 *A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down*
186 *Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green.*
187 *Darkness must overshadow all his [6284](#) bounds,*
188 *Palpable [6285](#) darkness, and blot out three days.*
189 *Last, with one midnight stroke all the first-born*
190 *Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds*
191 *The river-dragon [6286](#) tamed at length submits*
192 *To let his sojourners depart, and oft*
193 *Humbles his stubborn heart, but still as ice*
194 *More hardened after thaw, till in his rage*
195 *Pursuing whom he late [6287](#) dismissed, [6288](#) the sea*
196 *Swallows him with his host, [6289](#) but them [6290](#) lets pass*
197 *As [6291](#) on dry land, between two crystal walls,*
198 *Awed [6292](#) by the rod of Moses so to stand*

199 *Divided, till his rescued gain their shore.*
200 *“Such wondrous power God to His saint will lend,*
201 *Though present in His Angel, who shall go*
202 *Before them in a cloud and pillar [6293](#) of fire,*
203 *By day a cloud, by night a pillar of fire,*
204 *To guide them in their journey, and remove [6294](#)*
205 *Behind them, while the obdurate [6295](#) king pursues.*
206 *All night he will pursue, but his approach*
207 *Darkness defends [6296](#) between [6297](#) till morning watch.*
208 *Then through the fiery pillar, and the cloud,*
209 *God looking forth will trouble [6298](#) all his [6299](#) host,*
210 *And craze [6300](#) their chariot-wheels, when by command*
211 *Moses once more his potent rod extends*
212 *Over the sea. The sea his rod obeys;*
213 *On their embattled [6301](#) ranks the waves return,*
214 *And overwhelm their war. [6302](#) The race elect [6303](#)*
215 *Safe toward Canaan from the shore [6304](#) advance*
216 *Through the wild desert, not the readiest [6305](#) way,*
217 *Lest ent’ring [6306](#) on the Canaanite alarmed [6307](#)*
218 *War terrify them [6308](#) inexpert, [6309](#) and fear*
219 *Return them [6310](#) back to Egypt, choosing rather*
220 *Inglorious life with servitude, for life*
221 *To noble (and ignoble) is more sweet*
222 *Untrained in arms, where rashness leads not on. [6311](#)*
223 *“This also shall they gain by their delay*
224 *In the wide wilderness. There they shall found [6312](#)*
225 *Their government, and their great senate [6313](#) choose*
226 *Through the twelve tribes, [6314](#) to rule by laws ordained.*
227 *God from the mount of Sinai, whose gray top*
228 *Shall tremble, He descending, will Himself*

229 *In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpets' sound*
230 *Ordain them laws, part such as appertain⁶³¹⁵*
231 *To civil justice, part religious rites*
232 *Of sacrifice, informing them, by types⁶³¹⁶*
233 *And shadows,⁶³¹⁷ of that destined seed ⁶³¹⁸ to bruise⁶³¹⁹*
234 *The serpent, by what means he shall achieve*
235 *Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God*
236 *To mortal ear is dreadful. They beseech*
237 *That Moses might report⁶³²⁰ to them His will,*
238 *And terror cease. He grants what they besought,*
239 *Instructed that to God is no access*
240 *Without mediator, whose high office now*
241 *Moses in figure⁶³²¹ bears, to introduce*
242 *One greater, of whose day he shall foretell,*
243 *And all the prophets in their age the times*
244 *Of great Messiah shall sing.*

“Thus, laws and rites

245 *Established, such delight hath God in men*
246 *Obedient to His will, that he vouchsafes*
247 *Among them to set up His tabernacle,*
248 *The Holy One with mortal men to dwell.*
249 *By His prescript ⁶³²² a sanctuary is framed*
250 *Of cedar, overlaid with gold, therein*
251 *An ark,⁶³²³ and in the ark His testimony,⁶³²⁴*
252 *The records of His cov'nant. Over these*
253 *A mercy-seat of gold,⁶³²⁵ between the wings*
254 *Of two bright Cherubim. Before him⁶³²⁶ burn*
255 *Seven lamps as in a zodiac⁶³²⁷ representing*
256 *The Heav'nly fires. Over the tent a cloud*
257 *Shall rest by day, a fiery gleam by night,*
258 *Save when they journey. And at length they come,*

259 *Conducted by His Angel, to the land*
260 *Promised to Abraham and his seed.*

“The rest

261 *Were long to tell, how many battles fought,*
262 *How many kings destroyed, and kingdoms won,*
263 *Or how the sun shall in mid Heav’n stand still*
264 *A day entire, and night’s due course adjourn,*
265 *Man’s voice commanding, ‘Sun, in Gibeon stand,*
266 *And thou moon in the vale of Aialon,*
267 *Till Israel overcome!’⁶³²⁸ So call ⁶³²⁹ the third*
268 *From Abraham, son of Isaac, and from him*
269 *His whole descent, who thus shall Canaan win.”*
270 *Here Adam interposed:*

“O sent from Heav’n,

271 *Enlight’ner of my darkness, gracious things*
272 *Thou hast revealed, those chiefly which concern*
273 *Just Abraham and his seed. Now first I find*
274 *Mine eyes true-op’ning, and my heart much eased,*
275 *Erewhile perplexed with thoughts what would become*
276 *Of me and all mankind. But now I see*
277 *His day, in whom all nations shall be blest—*
278 *Favor unmerited by me, who sought*
279 *Forbidden knowledge by forbidden means.*
280 *This yet I apprehend not: why to those*
281 *Among whom God will deign to dwell on earth*
282 *So many and so various laws are giv’n?*
283 *So many laws argue so many sins*
284 *Among them. How can God with such reside?”*
285 *To whom thus Michael:*

“Doubt not but that sin

286 *Will reign among them, as of thee begot,*
287 *And therefore was law giv’n them, to evince⁶³³⁰*

288 *Their natural pravity,*⁶³³¹ *by stirring up*
289 *Sin against law to fight, that when they see*
290 *Law can discover*⁶³³² *sin, but not remove*
291 *(Save by those shadowy*⁶³³³ *expiations*⁶³³⁴ *weak,*
292 *The blood of bulls and goats), they may conclude*
293 *Some blood more precious must be paid for man,*
294 *Just for unjust, that*⁶³³⁵ *in such righteousness*
295 *To them by faith imputed they may find*
296 *Justification*⁶³³⁶ *towards God, and peace*
297 *Of conscience, which the law by ceremonies*⁶³³⁷
298 *Cannot appease, nor man the moral part*
299 *Perform*⁶³³⁸ *and, not performing, cannot live.*
300 *So law appears*⁶³³⁹ *imperfect, and but*⁶³⁴⁰ *giv'n*
301 *With purpose to resign*⁶³⁴¹ *them, in full time,*
302 *Up to a better cov'nant, disciplined*⁶³⁴²
303 *From shadowy types*⁶³⁴³ *to truth, from flesh to spirit,*
304 *From imposition of strict laws to free*
305 *Acceptance of large grace, from servile fear*
306 *To filial, works of law to works of faith.*
307 *And therefore shall not Moses, though of God*
308 *Highly belov'd, being but the minister*
309 *Of law, his people into Canaan lead,*
310 *But Joshua, whom the gentiles Jesus call,*
311 *His name and office bearing, who*⁶³⁴⁴ *shall quell*
312 *The adversary-serpent, and bring back*
313 *Through the world's wilderness long-wand' red man*
314 *Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.*
315 *Meanwhile, they in their earthly Canaan placed,*
316 *Long time shall dwell and prosper, but*⁶³⁴⁵ *when sins*
317 *National interrupt their public peace,*
318 *Provoking God to raise them enemies,*

319 *From whom as oft He saves them penitent*
320 *By Judges first, then under Kings. Of whom*
321 *The second, [6346](#) both for piety renowned*
322 *And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive*
323 *Irrevocable, that his regal throne*
324 *Forever shall endure. The like [6347](#) shall sing [6348](#)*
325 *All prophecy, that of the royal stock*
326 *Of David (so I name this king) shall rise*
327 *A son, the woman's seed to thee foretold,*
328 *Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust*
329 *All nations, and to kings foretold, of kings*
330 *The last, for of his reign shall be no end.*
331 *But first a long succession must ensue,*
332 *And his [6349](#) next son, [6350](#) for wealth and wisdom famed,*
333 *The clouded ark of God, till then in tents*
334 *Wand'ring, shall in a glorious temple enshrine.*
335 *Such follow him as shall be registered [6351](#)*
336 *Part good, part bad—of bad the longer scroll,*
337 *Whose foul idolatries and other faults*
338 *Heaped to the popular sum, [6352](#) will so incense*
339 *God, as to [6353](#) leave them, and expose their land,*
340 *Their city, His temple, and His holy ark,*
341 *With all His sacred things, a [6354](#) scorn and prey.*
342 *To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st*
343 *Left in confusion, Babylon thence called.*
344 *There in captivity He lets them dwell*
345 *The space of seventy years, [6355](#) then brings them back,*
346 *Rememb'ring [6356](#) mercy and His cov'nant sworn*
347 *To David, stablished [6357](#) as the days of Heav'n.*
348 *Returned from Babylon by leave of kings [6358](#)*
349 *Their lords, whom God disposed, [6359](#) the house of God*

350 *They first re-edify, [6360](#) and for a while*
351 *In mean [6361](#) estate [6362](#) live moderate. Till grown*
352 *In wealth and multitude, factious they grow.*
353 *But first among the priests dissention springs,*
354 *Men who attend [6363](#) the altar, and should most*
355 *Endeavor [6364](#) peace. Their strife pollution brings*
356 *Upon the temple itself. At last they [6365](#) seize*
357 *The scepter, and regard not David's sons,*
358 *Then lose it to a stranger, [6366](#) that the true*
359 *Anointed King Messiah might be born*
360 *Barred [6367](#) of his right. Yet at his birth a star,*
361 *Unseen before in Heav'n, proclaims him come,*
362 *And guides the eastern sages, who inquire*
363 *His place, to offer incense, myrrh, and gold.*
364 *His place of birth a solemn [6368](#) Angel tells*
365 *To simple shepherds, keeping watch by night.*
366 *They gladly thither [6369](#) haste, and by a choir*
367 *Of squadroned [6370](#) Angels hear his carol sung.*
368 *A virgin is his mother, but his sire*
369 *The power of the Most High. He shall ascend*
370 *The throne hereditary, and bound his reign*
371 *With earth's wide bounds, his glory with the Heav'ns."*
372 *He ceased, discerning Adam with such joy*
373 *Surcharged [6371](#) as had, like grief, been dewed in tears,*
374 *Without the vent [6372](#) of words, which these he breathed:*
375 *"O prophet of glad tidings, finisher [6373](#)*
376 *Of utmost hope! Now clear I understand*
377 *What oft my steadiest thoughts have searched in vain,*
378 *Why our great expectation should be called*
379 *The seed of woman. Virgin Mother, hail,*
380 *High in the love of Heav'n! Yet from my loins*

381 *Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the son*
382 *Of God Most High: so God with man unites!*
383 *Needs must the serpent now his capital bruise⁶³⁷⁴*
384 *Expect with mortal⁶³⁷⁵ pain. Say where and when*
385 *Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor's heel."*
386 *To whom thus Michael:*

"Dream not of their fight

387 *As of a duel,⁶³⁷⁶ or the local ⁶³⁷⁷wounds*
388 *Of head or heel. Not therefore joins the Son*
389 *Manhood to Godhead, with more strength to foil ⁶³⁷⁸*
390 *Thy enemy, nor so is overcome*
391 *Satan, whose fall from Heav'n, a deadlier bruise,*
392 *Disabled not to give thee thy death's wound,*
393 *Which he,⁶³⁷⁹ who comes thy Savior, shall recure,⁶³⁸⁰*
394 *Not by destroying Satan but his⁶³⁸¹ works*
395 *In thee, and in thy seed. Nor can this be*
396 *But by fulfilling that which thou did'st want,⁶³⁸²*
397 *Obedience to the law of God, imposed*
398 *On penalty of death, and suffering death,*
399 *The penalty to thy transgression due,*
400 *And due to theirs which out of thine will grow.*
401 *So only can high Justice rest appaid.⁶³⁸³*
402 *The law of God exact he⁶³⁸⁴ shall fulfill*
403 *Both by obedience and by love, though love*
404 *Alone fulfill the law. Thy punishment*
405 *He shall endure, by coming in the flesh*
406 *To a reproachful ⁶³⁸⁵life and cursèd death,*
407 *Proclaiming life to all who shall believe*
408 *In his redemption, and that his obedience,*
409 *Imputed,⁶³⁸⁶ becomes theirs by faith, his merits*
410 *To save them, not their own, though⁶³⁸⁷ legal ⁶³⁸⁸works.⁶³⁸⁹*

411 *For this he shall live hated, be blasphemed,*⁶³⁹⁰
412 *Seized on by force, judged and to death condemned,*
413 *A shameful and accursed, nailed to the cross*
414 *By his own nation, slain for bringing life.*
415 *But to the cross he nails thy enemies,*
416 *The law that is against thee, and the sins*
417 *Of all mankind, with him there crucified,*
418 *Never to hurt them more who rightly trust*
419 *In this his satisfaction.*⁶³⁹¹ *So he dies,*
420 *But soon revives: Death over him no power*
421 *Shall long usurp.*⁶³⁹² *Ere the third dawning light*
422 *Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise*
423 *Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,*
424 *Thy ransom paid, which man from death redeems,*
425 *His death for man, as many as offered*⁶³⁹³ *life*
426 *Neglect not, and the benefit*⁶³⁹⁴ *embrace*⁶³⁹⁵
427 *By faith not void of works. This God-like act*
428 *Annuls thy doom, the death thou should'st have died,*
429 *In sin forever lost from life. This act*
430 *Shall bruise*⁶³⁹⁶ *the head of Satan, crush his strength,*
431 *Defeating Sin and Death, his two main arms,*
432 *And fix far deeper in his head their stings*
433 *Than temporal* ⁶³⁹⁷ *death shall bruise the victor's heel,*
434 *Or theirs*⁶³⁹⁸ *whom he redeems—a death like sleep,*
435 *A gentle wafting* ⁶³⁹⁹ *to immortal life.*
436 *Nor after resurrection shall he stay*
437 *Longer on earth than certain*⁶⁴⁰⁰ *times to appear*
438 *To his disciples, men who in his life*
439 *Still* ⁶⁴⁰¹ *followed him. To them shall leave in charge*
440 *To teach all nations what of him they learned*
441 *And his salvation,*⁶⁴⁰² *them who shall believe*

442 *Baptizing in the profluent⁶⁴⁰³ stream, the sign*
443 *Of washing them from guilt of sin to life*
444 *Pure, and in mind prepared, if so befall,*
445 *For death, like that which the Redeemer died.*
446 *All nations they shall teach. For from that day,*
447 *Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins*
448 *Salvation shall be preached, but to the sons*
449 *Of Abraham's faith wherever through the world.*
450 *So in his seed all nations shall be blest.*
451 *Then to the Heav'n of Heav'ns he⁶⁴⁰⁴ shall ascend*
452 *With victory, triumphing ⁶⁴⁰⁵ through the air*
453 *Over his foes and thine. There shall surprise*
454 *The serpent, prince of air, and drag in chains*
455 *Through all his⁶⁴⁰⁶ realm, and there⁶⁴⁰⁷ confounded⁶⁴⁰⁸ leave,*
456 *Then enter into glory, and resume*
457 *His seat at God's right hand, exalted high*
458 *Above all names⁶⁴⁰⁹ in Heav'n, and thence shall come,*
459 *When this world's dissolution shall be ripe,*
460 *With glory and power to judge both quick⁶⁴¹⁰ and dead—*
461 *To judge the unfaithful dead, but to reward*
462 *His faithful, and receive them into bliss,*
463 *Whether in Heav'n or earth, for then the earth*
464 *Shall all be Paradise, far happier place*
465 *Than this of Eden, and far happier days.”*
466 *So spoke the Arch-Angel Michael, then paused,*
467 *As at the world's great period;⁶⁴¹¹ and our sire,*
468 *Replete⁶⁴¹² with joy and wonder, thus replied:*
469 *“O goodness infinite, goodness immense!*
470 *That all this good of ⁶⁴¹³ evil shall produce,⁶⁴¹⁴*
471 *And evil turn to good, more wonderful*
472 *Than that which by creation first brought forth*

473 *Light out of darkness! Full of doubt I stand,*
474 *Whether I should repent me now of sin*
475 *By me done and occasioned, [6415](#) or rejoice*
476 *Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring,*
477 *To God more glory, more good-will to men*
478 *From God, and over wrath grace shall abound. [6416](#)*
479 *But say, if our Deliverer up to Heav'n*
480 *Must re-ascend, what will betide [6417](#) the few*
481 *His faithful, left among the unfaithful herd,*
482 *The enemies of truth? Who then shall guide*
483 *His people, who defend? Will they not deal*
484 *Worse with his followers than with him they dealt?"*
485 *“Be sure they will,” said the Angel, “but from Heav'n*
486 *He to his own a comforter [6418](#) will send,*
487 *The promise of the Father, who shall dwell*
488 *His Spirit within them, and the law of faith,*
489 *Working through love, upon their hearts shall write,*
490 *To guide them in all truth, and also arm*
491 *With spiritual armor, able to resist*
492 *Satan's assaults, and quench [6419](#) his fiery darts—*
493 *What man can do against them, not afraid,*
494 *Though to the death, against such cruelties*
495 *With inward consolations recompensed,*
496 *And oft supported [6420](#) so as shall amaze*
497 *Their proudest persecutors. For the Spirit,*
498 *Poured first on his Apostles, whom he sends*
499 *T' evangelize the nations, then on all*
500 *Baptized, shall them with wond'rous gifts endue [6421](#)*
501 *To speak all tongues, [6422](#) and do all miracles,*
502 *As did their Lord before them. Thus they win*
503 *Great numbers of each nation to receive*

504 *With joy the tidings brought from Heav'n.*

“At length

505 *Their ministry performed, and race well run,*

506 *Their doctrine and their story written left,*

507 *They die, but in their room, [6423](#) as they forewarn,*

508 *Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,*

509 *Who all the sacred mysteries of Heav'n*

510 *To their own vile advantages shall turn*

511 *Of lucre [6424](#) and ambition, and the truth*

512 *With superstitions and traditions taint,*

513 *Left only in those written records pure,*

514 *Though not but [6425](#) by the Spirit understood.*

515 *Then shall they [6426](#) seek to avail themselves of names,*

516 *Places, and titles, and with these to join*

517 *Secular power, though feigning still to act*

518 *By spiritual, to themselves appropriating*

519 *The Spirit of God, promised alike and giv'n*

520 *To all believers; and from that pretence,*

521 *Spiritual laws by carnal [6427](#) power shall force*

522 *On every conscience, laws which none shall find*

523 *Left them enrolled [6428](#) or what the Spirit within*

524 *Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then*

525 *But force the spirit of grace itself, and bind*

526 *His consort liberty? What but unbuild*

527 *His living temples, built by faith to stand,*

528 *Their own faith, not another's—for on earth*

529 *Who against faith and conscience can be heard*

530 *Infalible?*

“Yet many will presume. [6429](#)

531 *Whence heavy persecution shall arise*

532 *On all who in the worship persevere*

563 *As in His presence, ever to observe*
564 *His providence, and on Him sole depend,*
565 *Merciful over [6443](#) all His works, with good*
566 *Still [6444](#) overcoming evil, and by small*
567 *Accomplishing great things, by things deemed weak*
568 *Subverting [6445](#) worldly strong, and worldly wise*
569 *By simply meek; that suffering for truth's sake*
570 *Is fortitude to highest victory*
571 *And, to the faithful, death the gate of life,*
572 *Taught this by his example, whom I now*
573 *Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest."*
574 *To whom thus also th' Angel last [6446](#) replied:*
575 *"This having learned, thou hast attained the sum*
576 *Of wisdom. Hope no higher, though all the stars*
577 *Thou knew'st by name, and all the ethereal powers,*
578 *All secrets of the deep, all Nature's works,*
579 *Or works of God in Heav'n, air, earth, or sea,*
580 *And all the riches of this world enjoyd'st,*
581 *And all the rule, one empire. Only add*
582 *Deeds to thy knowledge answerable, [6447](#) add faith,*
583 *Add virtue, patience, temperance, add love,*
584 *By name to come called charity, the soul*
585 *Of all the rest. Then wilt thou not be loath*
586 *To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess*
587 *A Paradise within thee, happier far.*
588 *"Let us descend now therefore from this top [6448](#)*
589 *Of speculation, [6449](#) for the hour precise [6450](#)*
590 *Exacts [6451](#) our parting hence. And see the guards,*
591 *By me encamped on yonder hill! Expect [6452](#)*
592 *Their motion, at whose front [6453](#) a flaming sword,*
593 *In signal of remove, [6454](#) waves fiercely [6455](#) round.*

594 *We may no longer stay. Go, waken Eve.*
595 *Her also I with gentle dreams have calmed,*
596 *Portending⁶⁴⁵⁶ good, and all her spirits composed⁶⁴⁵⁷*
597 *To meek⁶⁴⁵⁸ submission. Thou, at season fit,⁶⁴⁵⁹*
598 *Let her with thee partake⁶⁴⁶⁰ what thou hast heard,*
599 *Chiefly what may concern her faith to know,*
600 *The great deliverance by her seed to come*
601 *(For by the woman's seed) on all mankind,*
602 *That ye may live, which will be many days,*
603 *Both in one faith unanimous,⁶⁴⁶¹ though sad,*
604 *With cause, for evils past, yet much more cheered*
605 *With meditation⁶⁴⁶² on the happy end."*
606 *He ended, and they both descend the hill.*
607 *Descended Adam to the bow'r where Eve*
608 *Lay sleeping, ran before, but found her waked,*
609 *And thus with words not sad she him received:*
610 *"Whence thou return'st, and whither went'st, I know,*
611 *For God is also in sleep, and dreams advise,⁶⁴⁶³*
612 *Which He hath sent propitious,⁶⁴⁶⁴ some great good*
613 *Presaging, since with sorrow and heart's distress*
614 *Wearied I fell asleep. But now lead on:*
615 *In me is no delay. With thee to go*
616 *Is to stay here. Without thee here to stay*
617 *Is to go hence unwilling. Thou to me*
618 *Art all things under Heav'n, all places thou,*
619 *Who for my wilful crime art banished hence.*
620 *This further consolation yet secure*
621 *I carry hence, though all by me is lost,*
622 *Such favor I unworthy am vouchsafed,⁶⁴⁶⁵*
623 *By me the promised seed shall all restore."*
624 *So spoke our mother Eve, and Adam heard*

625 Well pleased, but answered not. For now, too nigh
626 The Arch-Angel stood and, from the other hill
627 To their fixed station, all in bright array
628 The Cherubim descended, on the ground
629 Gliding meteorous,⁶⁴⁶⁶ as ev'ning-mist
630 Ris'n from a river o'er the marish⁶⁴⁶⁷ glides,
631 And gathers ground fast at the laborer's heel
632 Homeward returning. High in front advanced,⁶⁴⁶⁸
633 The brandished sword of God before them blazed,
634 Fierce⁶⁴⁶⁹ as a comet, which with torrid heat,
635 And vapor⁶⁴⁷⁰ as⁶⁴⁷¹ the Libyan air adust,⁶⁴⁷²
636 Began to parch⁶⁴⁷³ that ⁶⁴⁷⁴temperate ⁶⁴⁷⁵clime. Whereat
637 In either hand the hast'ning Angel caught
638 Our ling'ring⁶⁴⁷⁶ parents, and to the eastern gate
639 Led them direct, and down the cliff as fast
640 To the subjected ⁶⁴⁷⁷plain, then disappeared.⁶⁴⁷⁸
641 They looking back, all th' eastern side beheld
642 Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,
643 Waved over by that flaming brand, the gate
644 With dreadful faces thronged and fiery arms.
645 Some natural tears they dropped, but wiped them soon.
646 The world was all before them, where to choose
647 Their place of rest, and Providence their guide.
648 They hand in hand, with wand'ring steps and slow,
649 Through Eden took their solitary way.

The End

PARADISE REGAINED

1671

BOOK I

I, who erewhile⁶⁴⁷⁹ the happy Garden sung
By one man's disobedience lost, now sing
Recovered Paradise to all mankind,
By one man's firm obedience fully tried⁶⁴⁸⁰
Through all temptation, and the Tempter foiled
In all his wiles, defeated and repulsed,
And Eden raised in the waste wilderness.

Thou Spirit, who led'st this glorious Eremite⁶⁴⁸¹
Into the desert, his victorious field
Against the spiritual foe, and brought'st him thence
By proof th' undoubted Son of God, inspire,
As thou art wont,⁶⁴⁸² my prompted⁶⁴⁸³ song, else mute,
And bear through height or depth of Nature's bounds,
With prosperous⁶⁴⁸⁴ wing full summed,⁶⁴⁸⁵ to tell of deeds
Above⁶⁴⁸⁶ heroic, though in secret done,
And unrecorded left through many an age—
Worthy t' have not remained so long unsung.

Now had the great Proclaimer,⁶⁴⁸⁷ with a voice
More awful ⁶⁴⁸⁸ than the sound of trumpet, cried
“Repentance, and Heav'n's kingdom nigh at hand
To all baptized!” To his great baptism flocked
With awe⁶⁴⁸⁹ the regions round, and with them came
From Nazareth, the son of Joseph deemed,⁶⁴⁹⁰
To the flood Jordan—came as then obscure,
Unmarked,⁶⁴⁹¹ unknown. But him the Baptist soon
Descried,⁶⁴⁹² divinely warned, and witness bore
As to his worthier,⁶⁴⁹³ and would have resigned
To him his Heav'nly office. Nor was long

His witness unconfirmed: on him⁶⁴⁹⁴ baptized
Heav'n opened, and in likeness of a dove
The Spirit descended, while the Father's voice
From Heav'n pronounced him His belovèd Son.
That heard the Adversary,⁶⁴⁹⁵ who roving still
About the world, at that assembly famed⁶⁴⁹⁶
Would not be last, and with the voice divine
Nigh thunder-struck,⁶⁴⁹⁷ th' exalted man to whom
Such high attest was giv'n a while surveyed⁶⁴⁹⁸
With wonder. Then with envy fraught,⁶⁴⁹⁹ and rage,
Flies to his place,⁶⁵⁰⁰ nor rests, but in mid air
To council summons all his mighty Peers,⁶⁵⁰¹
Within thick clouds and dark tenfold involved,⁶⁵⁰²
A gloomy consistory,⁶⁵⁰³ and them amidst,
With looks agast⁶⁵⁰⁴ and sad,⁶⁵⁰⁵ he thus bespoke:
 "O ancient Powers of air and this wide world
(For much more willingly I mention air,
This our old conquest, than remember Hell,
Our hated habitation), well ye know
How many ages, as⁶⁵⁰⁶ the years of men,
This universe⁶⁵⁰⁷ we have possessed, and ruled
In manner at our will th' affairs of earth,
Since Adam and his facile⁶⁵⁰⁸ consort Eve
Lost Paradise, deceived by me, though since
With dread attending⁶⁵⁰⁹ when that fatal wound
Shall⁶⁵¹⁰ be inflicted by the seed of Eve
Upon my head. Long the decrees of Heav'n
Delay, for longest time to Him is short.
And now, too soon for us, the circling hours
This dreaded time have compassed,⁶⁵¹¹ wherein we
Must bide⁶⁵¹² the stroke of that long-threat'ned wound
(At least, if so we can, and by the head
Broken⁶⁵¹³ be not intended all our power
To be infringed,⁶⁵¹⁴ our freedom and our being
In this fair empire won of earth and air),

For this ill news I bring: the woman's seed,
Destined to this, is late of woman born.
His birth to our just fear gave no small cause,
But his growth now to youth's full flow'r, displaying
All virtue, grace and wisdom to achieve
Things highest, greatest, multiplies my fear.
Before him a great prophet, to proclaim
His coming, is sent harbinger,⁶⁵¹⁵ who all
Invites, and in the consecrated stream
Pretends⁶⁵¹⁶ to wash off sin, and fit them so
Purified to receive him pure, or rather
To do him honor as their King. All come,
And he⁶⁵¹⁷ himself among them was baptized—
Not thence to be more pure, but to receive
The testimony of Heav'n, that who he is
Thenceforth the nations may not doubt. I saw
The prophet do him reverence. On him, rising
Out of the water, Heav'n above the clouds
Unfold her crystal doors, thence on his head
A perfect dove descend (whate'er it meant),
And out of Heav'n the sov'reign voice I heard,
'This is my Son beloved—in him am pleased. '
His mother, then, is mortal, but his sire
He⁶⁵¹⁸ who obtains⁶⁵¹⁹ the monarchy of Heav'n,
And what will He not do t' advance His Son?
His first-begot we know,⁶⁵²⁰ and sore have felt,
When his fierce thunder drove us to the deep.
Who this is we must learn, for man he seems
In all his lineaments,⁶⁵²¹ though in his face
The glimpses of his Father's glory shine.
Ye see our danger on the utmost edge
Of hazard,⁶⁵²² which admits⁶⁵²³ no long debate,
But must with something sudden be opposed
(Not force, but well-couched⁶⁵²⁴ fraud, well-woven snares),
Ere in the head ⁶⁵²⁵ of nations he appear,
Their king, their leader, and supreme on earth.

*I, when no other durst, sole undertook
The dismal⁶⁵²⁶ expedition⁶⁵²⁷ to find out
And ruin Adam, and the exploit performed
Successfully. A calmer voyage now
Will waft ⁶⁵²⁸ me, and the way found prosperous once
Induces best to hope of like success.”*

*He ended, and his words impression left
Of much amazement to th’ infernal crew,
Distracted and surprised with deep dismay
At these sad tidings. But no time was then⁶⁵²⁹
For long indulgence to their fears or grief:
Unanimous they all commit the care
And management of this main enterprise
To him, their great dictator,⁶⁵³⁰ whose attempt
At first against mankind so well had thrived ⁶⁵³¹
In Adam’s overthrow, and led their march
From Hell’s deep-vaulted den to dwell in light,
Regents, and potentates, and kings, yea gods,
Of many a pleasant realm and province wide.
So to the coast of Jordan he directs
His easy⁶⁵³² steps, girded⁶⁵³³ with snaky wiles,
Where he might likeliest find this new-declared,
This man of men, attested Son of God,
Temptation and all guile on him to try—
So to subvert ⁶⁵³⁴ whom⁶⁵³⁵ he suspected raised
To end his⁶⁵³⁶ reign on earth so long enjoyed.
But contrary unweeting,⁶⁵³⁷ he fulfilled
The purposed counsel, pre-ordained and fixed,
Of the Most High, who in full frequency⁶⁵³⁸ bright
Of Angels, thus to Gabriel smiling spoke:*

*“Gabriel, this day, by proof, thou shalt behold,
Thou and all Angels conversant⁶⁵³⁹ on earth
With man or men’s affairs, how I begin
To verify that solemn message late,
On which I sent thee to the virgin pure
In Galilee, that she should bear a son,*

Great in renown, and called the Son of God.
Then told'st her (doubting⁶⁵⁴⁰ how these things could be
To her a virgin) that on her should come
The Holy Ghost, and the power of the Highest
O'ershadow⁶⁵⁴¹ her. This man, born and now upgrown,
To show him worthy of his birth divine
And high prediction, henceforth I expose ⁶⁵⁴²
To Satan. Let him tempt, and now assay⁶⁵⁴³
His utmost subtlety, because he boasts
And vaunts of his great cunning to the throng
Of his apostasy. He might have learned
Less overweening, ⁶⁵⁴⁴ since he failed in Job,
Whose constant perseverance overcame
Whate'er his⁶⁵⁴⁵ cruel malice could invent.
He now shall know I can produce a man
Of female seed, far abler ⁶⁵⁴⁶ to resist
All his solicitations, and at length
All his vast force, and drive him back to Hell,
Winning by conquest what the first man lost
By fallacy ⁶⁵⁴⁷ surprised.

“But first I mean
To exercise⁶⁵⁴⁸ him⁶⁵⁴⁹ in the wilderness.
There he shall first lay down the rudiments⁶⁵⁵⁰
Of his great warfare, ere I send him forth
To conquer Sin and Death, the two grand foes.
By humiliation⁶⁵⁵¹ and strong sufferance⁶⁵⁵²
His weakness shall o'ercome Satanic strength,
And all the world, and mass⁶⁵⁵³ of sinful flesh,
That⁶⁵⁵⁴ all the Angels and aethereal Powers—
They now, and men hereafter—may discern
From what consummate virtue I have chose
This perfect man, by merit called my Son,
To earn salvation for the sons of men.”

So spoke th' Eternal Father, and all Heav'n
Admiring⁶⁵⁵⁵ stood a space, then into hymns
Burst forth, and in celestial measures⁶⁵⁵⁶ moved,

*Circling the throne and singing while the hand
Sung with the voice, and this the argument:*[6557](#)

*“Victory and triumph to the Son of God,
Now ent’ring his great duel,[6558](#) not of arms,
But to vanquish by wisdom hellish wiles!
The Father knows the Son, therefore secure
Ventures his filial virtue, though untried,
Against whate’er may tempt, whate’er seduce,[6559](#)
Allure, or terrify, or undermine.
Be frustrate, all ye stratagems of Hell,
And devilish machinations come to nought!”
So they in Heav’n their odes[6560](#) and vigils [6561](#) tuned.[6562](#)*

*Meanwhile the Son of God, who yet some days
Lodged in Bethabara,[6563](#) where John baptized,
Musing and much revolving in his breast
How best the mighty work he might begin
Of Savior to mankind, and which way first
Publish[6564](#) his godlike office now mature,[6565](#)
One day forth walked alone, the Spirit leading,
And his deep thoughts, the better to converse
With[6566](#) solitude, till far from track[6567](#) of men,
Thought following thought, and step by step led on,
He entered now the bord’ring desert wild,
And with dark shades and rocks environed round
His holy meditations thus pursued:*

*“O what a multitude of thoughts at once
Awakened in me swarm, while I consider
What from within I feel myself, and hear
What from without comes often to my ears,
Ill sorting[6568](#) with my present state compared!
When I was yet a child, no childish play
To me was pleasing. All my mind was set
Serious to learn and know, and thence to do,
What might be public good. Myself I thought[6569](#)
Born to that end, born to promote all truth,
All righteous things. Therefore, above my years,*

*The Law of God I read, and found it sweet,
Made it my whole delight, and in it grew
To such perfection that, ere yet my age
Had measured twice six years, at our⁶⁵⁷⁰ great feast
I went into the Temple, there to hear
The teachers of our Law, and to propose
What might improve my knowledge or their own,
And was admired⁶⁵⁷¹ by all.*

*“Yet this not all
To which my spirit aspired. Victorious deeds
Flamed in my heart, heroic acts—one while⁶⁵⁷²
To rescue Israel from the Roman yoke,
Then to subdue and quell,⁶⁵⁷³ o’er all the earth,
Brute violence and proud tyrannic power,
Till truth were freed, and equity⁶⁵⁷⁴ restored—
Yet held it more humane, more Heav’nly,⁶⁵⁷⁵ first
By winning words to conquer willing hearts,
And make persuasion do the work of fear,
At least to try, and teach the erring soul,
Not wilfully misdoing, but unaware
Misled. The stubborn only to subdue.*

*“These growing thoughts my mother soon perceiving,
By words at times cast forth, inly rejoiced,
And said to me apart,⁶⁵⁷⁶ ‘High are thy thoughts,
O Son! But nourish them, and let them soar
To what height sacred virtue and true worth
Can raise them, though above example⁶⁵⁷⁷ high.
By matchless deeds express thy matchless sire.
For know, thou art no son of mortal man,
Though men esteem thee low of parentage.
Thy Father is th’ Eternal King who rules
All Heav’n and earth, Angels and sons of men.
A messenger from God foretold thy birth
Conceived in me a virgin. He foretold
Thou should’st be great, and sit on David’s throne,
And of thy kingdom there should be no end.*

At thy nativity a glorious choir
Of Angels, in the fields of Bethlehem, sung
To shepherds, watching at their folds⁶⁵⁷⁸ by night,
And told them the Messiah now was born,
Where they might see him, and to thee they came,
Directed to the manger ⁶⁵⁷⁹ where thou lay'st,
For in the inn was left no better room.⁶⁵⁸⁰
A star, not seen before, in Heav'n appearing,
Guided the Wise Men thither from the East,
To honor thee with incense, myrrh, and gold,
By whose⁶⁵⁸¹ bright course led on they found the place,
Affirming it thy star, new-graven⁶⁵⁸² in Heav'n,
By which they knew thee King of Israel born.
Just Simeon⁶⁵⁸³ and prophetic Anna, ⁶⁵⁸⁴ warned
By vision, found thee in the Temple, and spoke
Before the altar and the vested priest
Like⁶⁵⁸⁵ things of thee to all that present stood. '

“This having heard, straight I again revolved⁶⁵⁸⁶
The Law and prophets, searching what was writ
Concerning the Messiah, to our scribes
Known partly, and soon found of whom they spoke
I am—this chiefly, that my way must lie
Through many a hard assay,⁶⁵⁸⁷ ev'n to the death,
Ere I the promised kingdom can attain
Or work redemption for mankind, whose sins'
Full weight must be transferred upon my head.
Yet neither thus disheart'ned or dismayed,
The time prefixed⁶⁵⁸⁸ I waited, when behold
The Baptist (of whose birth I oft had heard,
Not knew by sight) now come, who was to come
Before Messiah, and his way prepare.
I, as all others, to his baptism came,
Which I believed was from above, but he
Straight knew me, and with loudest voice proclaimed
Me him (for it was shewn him so from Heav'n)—
Me him whose harbinger ⁶⁵⁸⁹ he was, and first

Refused on me his baptism to confer,
As much his greater, and was hardly⁶⁵⁹⁰ won.⁶⁵⁹¹
But as I rose out of the laving⁶⁵⁹² stream
Heav'n op'ned her eternal doors, from whence
The Spirit descended on me like a dove,
And last—the sum⁶⁵⁹³ of all—my Father's voice,
Audibly heard from Heav'n, pronounced me His,
Me His belovèd Son, in whom alone
He was well pleased. By which I knew the time
Now full,⁶⁵⁹⁴ that I no more should live obscure,⁶⁵⁹⁵
But openly begin, as best becomes
Th' authority which I derived from Heav'n.

“And now by some strong motion I am led
Into this wilderness, to what intent
I learn not yet. Perhaps I need not know,
For what concerns my knowledge God reveals.”

So spoke our morning star, then in his rise,
And looking round on every side beheld
A pathless desert, dusk⁶⁵⁹⁶ with horrid shades.⁶⁵⁹⁷
The way he came, not having marked return,
Was difficult, by human steps untrod,
And he still on was led, but with such thoughts
Accompanied of things past and to come
Lodged in his breast as well might recommend⁶⁵⁹⁸
Such solitude before choicest⁶⁵⁹⁹ society.
Full forty days he passed—whether on hill
Sometimes, anon⁶⁶⁰⁰ in shady vale, each night
Under the covert⁶⁶⁰¹ of some ancient oak
Or cedar to defend⁶⁶⁰² him from the dew,
Or harbored⁶⁶⁰³ in one cave, is not revealed.
Nor⁶⁶⁰⁴ tasted human food, nor hunger felt,
Till those days ended. Hungered then at last
Among wild beasts. They at his sight grew mild,⁶⁶⁰⁵
Nor sleeping him nor waking harmed. His walk
The fiery serpent fled and noxious⁶⁶⁰⁶ worm,
The lion and fierce tiger glared⁶⁶⁰⁷ aloof.⁶⁶⁰⁸

But now an aged man in rural weeds,
Following, as seemed, the quest of some stray ewe,
Or withered sticks to gather, which might serve
Against a winter's day when winds blow keen
To warm him, wet returned from field at eve,
He⁶⁶⁰⁹ saw approach, who first with curious eye
Perused him, then with words thus uttered spoke:

“Sir, what ill chance hath brought thee to this place,
So far from path or road of men, who pass
In troop or caravan? For single⁶⁶¹⁰ none
Durst ever, who returned, and dropped not here
His carcass, pined ⁶⁶¹¹ with hunger and with drought?
I ask the rather, and the more admire,
For that⁶⁶¹² to me thou seem'st the man whom late
Our new baptizing prophet at the ford
Of Jordan honored so, and called thee Son
Of God. I saw and heard, for we sometimes
Who dwell this wild, ⁶⁶¹³ constrained⁶⁶¹⁴ by want, come forth
To town or village nigh (nighest is far),
Where aught we hear, and curious are to hear,
What happens new. Fame⁶⁶¹⁵ also finds us out.”
To whom the Son of God:

“Who brought me hither
Will bring me hence. No other guide I seek.”
“By miracle he may,” replied the swain.⁶⁶¹⁶
“What other way I see not, for we here
Live on tough roots and stubs, ⁶⁶¹⁷ to thirst inured
More than the camel, and to drink go far—
Men to much misery and hardship born.
But if thou be the Son of God, command
That out of these hard stones be made thee bread,
So shalt thou save thyself, and us relieve
With food, whereof we wretched seldom taste.”
He ended, and the Son of God replied:

“Think'st thou such force in bread? Is it not written
(For I discern thee other than thou seem'st),

Man lives not by bread only, but each word
Proceeding from the mouth of God, who fed
Our fathers here with manna? In the mount
Moses was forty days, nor ate nor drank,
And forty days Elijah without food
Wandered this barren waste. The same I now.
Why dost thou, then, suggest to me distrust,⁶⁶¹⁸
Knowing who I am, as I know who thou art?"

Whom thus answered th' arch-fiend, now undisguised:
" 'Tis true, I am that Spirit unfortunate
Who, leagued with millions more in rash revolt,
Kept not my happy station, but was driv'n
With them from bliss to the bottomless deep.
Yet to that hideous place not so confined
By rigor⁶⁶¹⁹ unconniving⁶⁶²⁰ but that oft,
Leaving my dolorous⁶⁶²¹ prison, I enjoy
Large liberty to round⁶⁶²² this globe of earth,
Or range⁶⁶²³ in the air, nor from the Heav'n of Heav'ns
Hath He excluded my resort⁶⁶²⁴ sometimes.
I came among the Sons of God when He
Gave up into my hands Uzzean⁶⁶²⁵ Job,
To prove⁶⁶²⁶ him, and illustrate⁶⁶²⁷ his high worth.
And when to all His Angels He proposed
To draw the proud King Ahab⁶⁶²⁸ into fraud,
That he might fall in Ramoth,⁶⁶²⁹ they demurring,⁶⁶³⁰
I undertook that office, and the tongues
Of all his⁶⁶³¹ flattering prophets glibbed ⁶⁶³² with lies
To his destruction, as I had in charge.⁶⁶³³
For what He bids I do. Though I have lost
Much luster of my native brightness, lost
To be beloved of God, I have not lost
To love, at least contemplate⁶⁶³⁴ and admire,
What I see excellent in good, or fair,
Or virtuous.⁶⁶³⁵ I should so have lost all sense.

"What can be then less in me than desire⁶⁶³⁶
To see thee and approach thee, whom I know

Declared the Son of God, to hear attent⁶⁶³⁷
Thy wisdom, and behold thy godlike deeds?
Men generally think me much a foe
To all mankind. Why should I? They to me
Never did wrong or violence. By them
I lost not what I lost. Rather by them
I gained what I have gained, and with them dwell
Copartner in these regions of the world,
If not disposer⁶⁶³⁸ —lend them oft my aid,
Oft my advice by presages⁶⁶³⁹ and signs,
And answers, oracles, portents, and dreams,
Whereby they may direct their future life.

“Envy, they say, excites me, thus to gain
Companions of my misery and woe!
At first it may be but, long since with woe
Nearer acquainted, now I feel by proof
That fellowship in pain divides⁶⁶⁴⁰ not smart,⁶⁶⁴¹
Nor lightens aught each man’s peculiar⁶⁶⁴² load.
Small consolation, then, were man adjoined.⁶⁶⁴³
This wounds me most (what can it less?) that man,
Man fall’n, shall be restored, I never more.”

To whom our Savior sternly thus replied:
“Deservedly thou griev’st, composed⁶⁶⁴⁴ of lies
From the beginning, and in lies wilt end,
Who boast’st release from Hell, and leave to come
Into the Heav’n of Heav’ns! Thou com’st indeed,
As a poor miserable⁶⁶⁴⁵ captive thrall⁶⁶⁴⁶
Comes to the place where he before had sat
Among the prime in splendor, now deposed,
Ejected, emptied, gazed,⁶⁶⁴⁷ unpitied, shunned,
A spectacle of ruin, or of scorn,
To all the host of Heav’n. The happy place
Imparts to thee no happiness, no joy,
Rather inflames thy torment, representing
Lost bliss, to thee no more communicable—
So never more in Hell than when in Heav’n.

*“But thou art serviceable to Heav’n’s King!
Wilt thou impute t’ obedience what thy fear
Extorts, or pleasure to do ill excites?
What but thy malice moved thee to misdeem⁶⁶⁴⁸
Of righteous Job, then cruelly to afflict him
With all inflictions? But his patience won.
The other service was thy chosen task,
To be a liar in four hundred mouths,
For lying is thy sustenance, thy food.
Yet thou pretend’st to truth! All oracles
By thee are giv’n, and what confessed more true
Among the nations? That hath been thy craft,
By mixing somewhat true to vent more lies.
But what have been thy answers? What but dark,
Ambiguous, and with double sense deluding,
Which they who asked have seldom understood,
And not well understood, as good not known?⁶⁶⁴⁹
Who ever, by consulting at thy shrine,
Returned the wiser, or the more instruct
To fly⁶⁶⁵⁰ or follow what concerned him most,
And run not sooner to his fatal snare?
For God hath justly giv’n the nations up
To thy delusions—justly, since they fell
Idolatrous.*

*“But when His purpose is
Among them to declare His providence,
To thee not known, whence hast thou then thy truth,
But from Him, or his Angels president⁶⁶⁵¹
In every province, who themselves disdaining
T’ approach thy temples, give thee in command
What, to the smallest tittle,⁶⁶⁵² thou shalt say
To thy adorers? Thou, with trembling fear,
Or like a fawning⁶⁶⁵³ parasite, obey’st,
Then to thyself ascrib’st the truth foretold.
But this thy glory shall be soon retrenched.⁶⁶⁵⁴
No more shalt thou by oracling abuse⁶⁶⁵⁵*

The gentiles:⁶⁶⁵⁶ henceforth oracles are ceased,
And thou no more with pomp and sacrifice
Shalt be inquired at Delphos or elsewhere—
At least ⁶⁶⁵⁷ in vain, for they shall find thee mute.
God hath now sent His living oracle
Into the world to teach His final will,
And sends His Spirit of truth henceforth to dwell
In pious hearts, an inward oracle
To all truth requisite for men to know.”

So spoke our Savior. But the subtle fiend,
Though inly stung with anger and disdain,⁶⁶⁵⁸
Dissembled, and this answer smooth returned:
“Sharply thou hast insisted on rebuke,
And urged me hard with doings which not will ⁶⁶⁵⁹
But misery hath wrested ⁶⁶⁶⁰ from me. Where
Easily canst thou find one⁶⁶⁶¹ miserable,
And not enforced oft-times to part from truth,
If it may stand him more in stead ⁶⁶⁶² to lie,
Say and unsay, feign, flatter, or abjure?⁶⁶⁶³
But thou art placed above me, thou art Lord.
From thee I can, and must, submit, endure
Check⁶⁶⁶⁴ or reproof, and glad to scape so quit.⁶⁶⁶⁵
Hard are the ways of truth, and rough to walk,
Smooth on the tongue discoursed,⁶⁶⁶⁶ pleasing to th’ ear,
And tunable⁶⁶⁶⁷ as sylvan⁶⁶⁶⁸ pipe⁶⁶⁶⁹ or song.
What wonder, then, if I delight to hear
Her dictates⁶⁶⁷⁰ from thy mouth? Most men admire⁶⁶⁷¹
Virtue who follow not her lore. Permit me
To hear thee when I come (since no man comes),
And talk at least, though I despair t’ attain.
Thy Father, who is holy, wise, and pure,
Suffers the hypocrite or atheous priest
To tread His sacred courts,⁶⁶⁷² and minister⁶⁶⁷³
About His altar, handling holy things,
Praying or vowing, and vouchsafed His voice
To Balaam,⁶⁶⁷⁴ reprobate,⁶⁶⁷⁵ a prophet yet⁶⁶⁷⁶

Inspired. Disdain⁶⁶⁷⁷ not such access to me.”

To whom our Savior, with unaltered brow:

“Thy coming hither, though I know thy scope,⁶⁶⁷⁸

I bid not, or forbid. Do as thou find’st

Permission from above. Thou canst not more.”

He added not, and Satan, bowing low

His gray dissimulation,⁶⁶⁷⁹ disappeared,

Into thin air diffused. For now began

Night with her sullen wing to double-shade

The desert. Fowls in their clay⁶⁶⁸⁰ nests were couched,⁶⁶⁸¹

And now wild beasts came forth, the woods to roam.

BOOK II

Meanwhile the new-baptized, who yet remained
At Jordan with the Baptist, and had seen
Him whom they heard so late⁶⁶⁸² expressly⁶⁶⁸³ called
Jesus Messiah, Son of God declared,
And on that high authority had believed,
And with him talked, and with him lodged⁶⁶⁸⁴ —I mean
Andrew⁶⁶⁸⁵ and Simon,⁶⁶⁸⁶ famous after ⁶⁶⁸⁷ known,
With others, though in Holy Writ not named—
Now missing him, their joy so lately found,
So lately found and so abruptly gone,
Began to doubt, and doubted many days,
And as the days increased, increased their doubt.
Sometimes they thought he might be only shown⁶⁶⁸⁸
And for a time caught up⁶⁶⁸⁹ to God, as once
Moses was in the mount and missing long,
And the great Thisbite,⁶⁶⁹⁰ who on fiery wheels
Rode up to Heav'n, yet once again to come.

Therefore, as those young prophets then with care
Sought lost Elijah, so in each place these
Nigh to Bethabara⁶⁶⁹¹ —in Jericho⁶⁶⁹²
The city of palms, Aenon,⁶⁶⁹³ and Salem⁶⁶⁹⁴ old,
Machaerus,⁶⁶⁹⁵ and each town or city walled
On this side the broad lake Genezaret,⁶⁶⁹⁶
Or in Peraea⁶⁶⁹⁷ —but returned in vain.
Then on the bank of Jordan, by a creek,
Where winds with reeds and osiers⁶⁶⁹⁸ whispering play,
Plain fishermen (no greater, men them call),
Close in a cottage low together got,

Their unexpected loss and complaints⁶⁶⁹⁹ outbreathed:

*“Alas, from what high hope to what relapse
Unlooked for are we fall’n! Our eyes beheld
Messiah certainly now come, so long
Expected of our fathers. We have heard
His words, his wisdom full of grace and truth.
‘Now, now, for sure, deliverance is at hand!
The kingdom shall to Israel be restored!’
Thus we rejoiced, but soon our joy is turned
Into perplexity and new amaze.
For whither is he gone? What accident
Hath rapt⁶⁷⁰⁰ him from us? Will he now retire⁶⁷⁰¹
After appearance, and again prolong
Our expectation? God of Israel,
Send Thy Messiah forth. The time is come.
Behold the kings of the earth, how they oppress
Thy chosen, to what height their pow’r unjust
They have exalted, and behind them cast
All fear of Thee. Arise, and vindicate⁶⁷⁰²
Thy glory, free Thy people from their yoke!*

*“But let us wait. Thus far He hath performed,⁶⁷⁰³
Sent His anointed,⁶⁷⁰⁴ and to us revealed him
By His great prophet pointed at and shown
In public, and with him we have conversed.
Let us be glad of this, and all our fears
Lay on His providence.⁶⁷⁰⁵ He will not fail,
Nor will withdraw him⁶⁷⁰⁶ now, nor will recall—
Mock us with his blest sight, then snatch him hence.
Soon we shall see our hope, our joy, return.”*

*Thus they out of their complaints new hope resume
To find whom at the first they found unsought.
But to his mother Mary, when she saw
Others returned from baptism, not her son,
Nor left at Jordan tidings of him none,
Within her breast though calm, her breast though pure,
Motherly cares and fears got head,⁶⁷⁰⁷ and raised*

Some troubled thoughts, which she in sighs thus clad:

*“Oh what avails me now, that honor high,
To have conceived of God, or that salute,⁶⁷⁰⁸
‘Hail, highly favored, among women blest’?
While I to sorrows am no less advanced,⁶⁷⁰⁹
And fears as eminent⁶⁷¹⁰ above the lot
Of other women, by the birth I bore—
In such a season born, when scarce a shed
Could be obtained to shelter him or me
From the bleak⁶⁷¹¹ air. A stable was our warmth,
A manger his, yet soon enforced to fly
Thence into Egypt, till the murd’rous king ⁶⁷¹²
Were dead, who sought his life and, missing,⁶⁷¹³ filled
With infant blood the streets of Bethlehem.
From Egypt home returned, in Nazareth
Hath been our dwelling many years, his life
Private, unactive, calm, contemplative,
Little suspicious to any king. But now,
Full grown to man, acknowledged, as I hear,
By John the Baptist, and in public shown,
Son owned⁶⁷¹⁴ from Heav’n by his Father’s voice,
I looked for some great change. To honor? No,
But trouble, as old Simeon⁶⁷¹⁵ plain foretold,
That to the fall and rising he should be
Of many in Israel, and to a sign
Spoken against—that through my very soul
A sword shall pierce, this my favored lot,
My exaltation to afflictions high!
Afflicted I may be, it seems, and blest!
I will not argue that, nor will repine.⁶⁷¹⁶*

*“But where delays he now? Some great intent
Conceals him. When twelve years he scarce had seen,
I lost him, but so found as well I saw
He could not lose himself, but went about
His Father’s business. What he meant I mused,⁶⁷¹⁷
Since understand: much more his absence now*

Thus long to some great purpose he obscures.⁶⁷¹⁸
But I to wait with patience am inured,
My heart hath been a storehouse long of things
And sayings laid up, portending strange events.”

Thus Mary, pondering oft, and oft to mind
Recalling what remarkably⁶⁷¹⁹ had passed
Since first her salutation⁶⁷²⁰ heard, with thoughts
Meekly composed awaited the fulfilling,⁶⁷²¹
The while her son, tracing⁶⁷²² the desert wild,
Sole,⁶⁷²³ but with holiest meditations fed,
Into himself descended, and at once
All his great work to come before him set—
How to begin, how to accomplish best
His end⁶⁷²⁴ of being on earth, and mission high.
For Satan, with sly preface⁶⁷²⁵ to return,
Had left him vacant,⁶⁷²⁶ and with speed was gone
Up to the middle region of thick air,
Where all his Potentates in council sat.
There, without sign of boast, or sign of joy,
Solicitous and blank,⁶⁷²⁷ he thus began:

“Princes, Heav’n’s ancient Sons, Ethereal Thrones—
Daemonian Spirits now, from the element
Each of his reign allotted, rightlier called,
Powers of fire, air, water, and earth beneath
(So may we hold our place and these mild seats
Without new trouble!)—such an enemy
Is ris’n to invade us, who no less
Threat’ns than our expulsion down to Hell.
I, as I undertook, and with the vote
Consenting in full frequency⁶⁷²⁸ was empowered,
Have found him, viewed him, tasted⁶⁷²⁹ him, but find
Far other labor to be undergone
Than when I dealt with Adam, first of men,
Though Adam by his wife’s allurements⁶⁷³⁰ fell,
However to this man inferior far—
If he be man by mother’s side, at least,

With more than human gifts from Heav'n adorned,
Perfections absolute, graces divine,
And amplitude of mind to greatest deeds.
Therefore I am returned, lest confidence
Of my success with Eve in Paradise
Deceive ye to persuasion over-sure
Of like⁶⁷³¹ succeeding here. I summon all
Rather to be in readiness with hand
Or counsel to assist, lest I, who erst
Thought none my equal, now be overmatched."

So spoke the old serpent, doubting, and from all
With clamor was assured their utmost aid
At his command, when from amidst them rose
Belial, the dissolutes Spirit that fell,
The sensualest, and after Asmodai⁶⁷³²
The fleshliest incubus,⁶⁷³³ and thus advised:

"Set women in his eye and in his walk,
Among daughters of men the fairest found.
Many are in each region passing ⁶⁷³⁴ fair
As the noon sky, more like to goddesses
Than mortal creatures, graceful and discreet,⁶⁷³⁵
Expert in amorous arts, enchanting tongues
Persuasive, virgin majesty with mild
And sweet allayed,⁶⁷³⁶ yet terrible⁶⁷³⁷ to approach,
Skilled to retire, and in retiring draw
Hearts after them tangled in amorous nets.
Such object hath the power to soft'n and tame
Severest temper,⁶⁷³⁸ smooth the rugged'st brow,
Enerve⁶⁷³⁹ and with voluptuous hope dissolve,⁶⁷⁴⁰
Draw out with credulous desire, and lead
At will the manliest, resolute breast,
As the magnetic⁶⁷⁴¹ hardest iron draws.
Women, when nothing else, beguiled the heart
Of wisest Solomon, and made him build
And made him bow to the gods of his wives."

To whom quick answer Satan thus returned:

*“Belial, in much uneven⁶⁷⁴² scale thou weigh’st
All others by thyself. Because of old
Thou thyself doat’st on⁶⁷⁴³ womankind, admiring
Their shape, their color,⁶⁷⁴⁴ and attractive grace,
None are, thou think’st, but taken with such toys.⁶⁷⁴⁵
Before the Flood, thou with thy lusty crew,
False titled sons of God, roaming the earth,
Cast wanton eyes on the daughters of men,
And coupled with them, and begot a race.
Have we not seen, or by relation⁶⁷⁴⁶ heard,
In courts and regal chambers how thou lurk’st,
In wood or grove, by mossy fountain-side,
In valley or green meadow, to waylay
Some beauty rare? Callisto,⁶⁷⁴⁷ Clymene,⁶⁷⁴⁸
Daphne,⁶⁷⁴⁹ or Semele,⁶⁷⁵⁰ Antiopa,⁶⁷⁵¹
Or Amymone,⁶⁷⁵² Syrinx⁶⁷⁵³ —many more
Too long. Then lay’st thy scapes⁶⁷⁵⁴ on names adored,
Apollo, Neptune, Jupiter, or Pan,
Satyr, or Faun, or Silvan!⁶⁷⁵⁵ But these haunts⁶⁷⁵⁶
Delight not all. Among the sons of men
How many have with a smile made small account
Of beauty and her lures, easily scorned
All her assaults, on worthier things intent?*

*“Remember that Pellean⁶⁷⁵⁷ conqueror,
A youth, how all the beauties of the East
He slightly⁶⁷⁵⁸ viewed, and slightly overpassed.*

*“How he surnamed of Africa⁶⁷⁵⁹ dismissed,⁶⁷⁶⁰
In his prime youth, the fair Iberian maid.⁶⁷⁶¹*

*“For Solomon he lived at ease, and full
Of honor, wealth, high fare,⁶⁷⁶² aimed not beyond
Higher design⁶⁷⁶³ than to enjoy his state,⁶⁷⁶⁴
Thence to the bait of women lay exposed.*

*“But he whom we attempt is wiser far
Than Solomon, of more exalted mind,
Made and set wholly on the accomplishment
Of greatest things. What woman will you find,*

Though of this age the wonder and the fame,
On whom his leisure⁶⁷⁶⁵ will vouchsafe an eye
Of fond⁶⁷⁶⁶ desire? Or should she, confident
As sitting queen adored on beauty's throne,
Descend with all her winning charms begirt ⁶⁷⁶⁷
To enamor, as the zone⁶⁷⁶⁸ of Venus once
Wrought that effect on Jove (so fables tell), ⁶⁷⁶⁹
How would one look from his majestic brow⁶⁷⁷⁰
Discount'nance⁶⁷⁷¹ her despised, and put to rout
All her array, her female pride deject, ⁶⁷⁷²
Or turn to reverent awe? For beauty stands
In th' admiration only of weak minds
Led captive. Cease to admire, and all her plumes⁶⁷⁷³
Fall flat and shrink into a trivial toy, ⁶⁷⁷⁴
At every sudden slighting⁶⁷⁷⁵ quite abashed. ⁶⁷⁷⁶

“Therefore with manlier objects we must try
His constancy—with such as have more show
Of worth, of honor, glory, and popular praise
(Rocks whereon greatest men have ofttest wrecked),
Or that which only seems to satisfy
Lawful desires of nature, not beyond.
And now I know he hungers, ⁶⁷⁷⁷ where no food
Is to be found, in the wide wilderness.
The rest commit to me. I shall let pass
No advantage, and his strength as oft assay.”

He ceased, and heard their grant⁶⁷⁷⁸ in loud acclaim,
Then forthwith to him takes a chosen band
Of Spirits likest to himself in guile,
To be at hand and at his beck⁶⁷⁷⁹ appear
If cause were⁶⁷⁸⁰ to unfold some active⁶⁷⁸¹ scene
Of various persons, each to know his part,
Then to the desert takes with these his flight,
Where still, from shade to shade, the Son of God,
After forty days' fasting, had remained,
Now hung'ring first, ⁶⁷⁸² and to himself thus said:
“Where will this end? Four times ten days I have passed,

Wand'ring this woody maze, and human food
Nor tasted, nor had appetite. That fast
To virtue I impute⁶⁷⁸³ not, or count part
Of what I suffer here. If Nature need not,
Or God support Nature without repast,
Though needing, what praise is it to endure?
But now I feel I hunger, which declares
Nature hath need of what she asks. Yet God
Can satisfy that need some other way,
Though hunger still remain. So⁶⁷⁸⁴ it remain
Without this body's wasting, I content me,
And from the sting of famine⁶⁷⁸⁵ fear no harm,
Nor mind it, fed with better thoughts, that feed
Me hung'ring more to do my Father's will."

It was the hour of night, when thus the Son
Communed⁶⁷⁸⁶ in silent walk, then laid him down
Under the hospitable covert nigh
Of trees thick interwoven. There he slept,
And dreamed, as appetite is wont to dream,
Of meats and drinks, Nature's refreshment sweet.
Him thought he by the brook of Cherith⁶⁷⁸⁷ stood,
And saw the ravens with their horny beaks
Food to Elijah bringing, even and morn,
Though ravenous, taught t' abstain from what they brought.
He saw the prophet also, how he fled
Into the desert, and how there he slept
Under a juniper, then how, awaked,
He found his supper on the coals prepared,
And by the Angel was bid rise and eat,
And ate the second time after repose,
The strength whereof sufficed him forty days.
Sometimes that with Elijah he partook,⁶⁷⁸⁸
Or as a guest with Daniel at his pulse.⁶⁷⁸⁹

Thus wore out night; and now the herald lark
Left his ground-nest, high tow'ring to descry
The morn's approach, and greet her with his song.

As lightly from his grassy couch up rose
Our Savior, and found all was but a dream:
Fasting he went to sleep, and fasting waked.
Up to a hill anon⁶⁷⁹⁰ his steps he reared,⁶⁷⁹¹
From whose high top to ken⁶⁷⁹² the prospect⁶⁷⁹³ round,
If cottage were in view, sheep-cote,⁶⁷⁹⁴ or herd.
But cottage, herd, or sheep-cote none he saw,
Only in a bottom⁶⁷⁹⁵ saw a pleasant grove,
With chant⁶⁷⁹⁶ of tuneful birds resounding loud.
Thither he bent his way, determined there
To rest at noon, and entered soon the shade
High-roofed, and walks beneath, and alleys⁶⁷⁹⁷ brown,
That opened⁶⁷⁹⁸ in the midst a⁶⁷⁹⁹ woody scene.
Nature's own work it seemed (Nature taught⁶⁸⁰⁰ art),
And, to a superstitious eye, the haunt
Of wood-gods and wood-nymphs. He viewed it round—
When suddenly a man before him stood,
Not rustic as before, but seemlier ⁶⁸⁰¹ clad,
As one in city or court or palace bred,
And with fair speech these words to him addressed:

“With granted leave officious⁶⁸⁰² I return,
But much more wonder that the Son of God
In this wild solitude so long should bide,⁶⁸⁰³
Of all things destitute and, well I know,
Not without hunger. Others of some note,
As story tells, have trod this wilderness:
The fugitive bond-woman,⁶⁸⁰⁴ with her son,
Outcast Nebaioth,⁶⁸⁰⁵ yet found here relief
By a providing Angel. All the race
Of Israel here had⁶⁸⁰⁶ famished, had not God
Rained from Heav'n manna. And that prophet bold,
Native of Thebez,⁶⁸⁰⁷ wand'ring here, was fed
Twice by a voice inviting him to eat.
Of thee those forty days none hath regard,
Forty and more deserted here indeed.”

To whom thus Jesus:

“What conclud’st thou hence?

They all had need. I, as thou see’st, have none.”

“How hast thou hunger then?” Satan replied.

“Tell me, if food were now before thee set,

Would’st thou not eat?”

“Thereafter as⁶⁸⁰⁸ I like⁶⁸⁰⁹

The giver,” answered Jesus.

“Why should that

Cause thy refusal?” said the subtle fiend.

“Hast thou not right to all created things?

Owe not all creatures, by just right, to thee

Duty and service, nor to stay till bid,

But tender⁶⁸¹⁰ all their power?⁶⁸¹¹ Nor mention I

Meats by the law unclean, or offered first

To idols—those young Daniel⁶⁸¹² could refuse.

Nor proffered by an enemy—though who

Would scruple⁶⁸¹³ that, with want⁶⁸¹⁴ oppressed? Behold!

Nature ashamed (or, better to express,

Troubled) that thou shouldst hunger, hath purveyed⁶⁸¹⁵

From all the elements her choicest store,

To treat thee as beseems, and as her Lord

With honor. Only deign to sit and eat.”

He spoke no dream, for as his words had end

Our Savior, lifting up his eyes, beheld

In ample space under the broadest shade

A table richly spread in regal mode,

With dishes piled and meats of noblest sort

And savor,⁶⁸¹⁶ beasts of chase, or fowl of game,

In pastry built,⁶⁸¹⁷ or from the spit, or boiled,

Grisamber⁶⁸¹⁸ steamed—all fish, from sea or shore,

Freshet⁶⁸¹⁹ or purling⁶⁸²⁰ brook, of shell or fin,

And exquisitest name,⁶⁸²¹ for which was drained

Pontus,⁶⁸²² and Lucrine Bay,⁶⁸²³ and Afric coast.

Alas! how simple,⁶⁸²⁴ to these cates⁶⁸²⁵ compared,

Was that crude apple that diverted⁶⁸²⁶ Eve!

And at a stately⁶⁸²⁷ sideboard,⁶⁸²⁸ by the wine

That fragrant smell diffused,⁶⁸²⁹ in order stood
Tall stripling⁶⁸³⁰ youths rich-clad, of fairer hue
Than Ganymede⁶⁸³¹ or Hylas.⁶⁸³² Distant more,
Under the trees now⁶⁸³³ tripped,⁶⁸³⁴ now solemn stood⁶⁸³⁵
Nymphs of Diana's train, and Naiades
With fruits and flowers from Amalthea's horn,⁶⁸³⁶
And ladies of the Hesperides,⁶⁸³⁷ that seemed
Fairer than feigned⁶⁸³⁸ of old, or fabled since
Of fairy damsels met in forest wide
By knights of Logres,⁶⁸³⁹ or of Lyonesse,⁶⁸⁴⁰
Lancelot, or Pelléas, or Pellenore.⁶⁸⁴¹
And all the while harmonious airs were heard
Of chiming⁶⁸⁴² strings or charming pipes, and winds
Of gentlest gale⁶⁸⁴³ Arabian odors fanned
From their soft wings, and Flora's⁶⁸⁴⁴ earliest smells.
Such was the splendor. And the Tempter now
His invitation earnestly renewed:

“What doubts⁶⁸⁴⁵ the Son of God to sit and eat?
These are not fruits forbidd'n. No interdict⁶⁸⁴⁶
Defends⁶⁸⁴⁷ the touching of these viands⁶⁸⁴⁸ pure.
Their taste no knowledge works (at least of evil)
But life preserves, destroys life's enemy,
Hunger, with sweet restorative delight.
All these are Spirits of air, and woods, and springs,
Thy gentle⁶⁸⁴⁹ ministers,⁶⁸⁵⁰ who come to pay
Thee homage, and acknowledge thee their Lord.
What doubt'st thou, Son of God? Sit down and eat.”

To whom thus Jesus temperately⁶⁸⁵¹ replied:
“Said'st thou not that to all things I had right?
And who withholds my pow'r that right to use?
Shall I receive by gift what of my own,
When and where likes me best, I can command?
I can at will, doubt not, as soon as thou,
Command a table in this wilderness,
And call swift flights of Angels ministrant,
Arrayed in glory, on my cup t' attend.

Why should'st thou, then, obtrude⁶⁸⁵² this diligence⁶⁸⁵³
In vain, where no acceptance it can find?
And with my hunger what hast thou to do?
Thy pompous⁶⁸⁵⁴ delicacies⁶⁸⁵⁵ I contemn,⁶⁸⁵⁶
And count thy specious⁶⁸⁵⁷ gifts no gifts, but guiles.”

To whom thus answered Satan, malcontent:⁶⁸⁵⁸
“That I have also power to give thou see'st.
If of that pow'r I bring thee voluntary
What I might have bestowed on whom I pleased,
And, rather,⁶⁸⁵⁹ opportunely⁶⁸⁶⁰ in this place
Chose to impart to thy apparent⁶⁸⁶¹ need,
Why should'st thou not accept it? But I see
What I can do or offer is suspect.
Of these things others quickly will dispose,
Whose pains have earned the far-fet⁶⁸⁶² spoil.”

With that

Both table and provision vanished quite,⁶⁸⁶³
With sound of harpies' wings and talons heard.
Only the importune⁶⁸⁶⁴ Tempter still remained,
And with these words his temptation pursued:
“By hunger, that each other creature tames,
Thou art not to be harmed, therefore not moved.
Thy temperance,⁶⁸⁶⁵ invincible besides,
For no allurement yields to appetite,
And all thy heart is set on high designs,
High actions. But wherewith to be achieved?
Great acts require great means of enterprise.⁶⁸⁶⁶
Thou art unknown, unfriended, low of birth,
A carpenter thy father known, thyself
Bred up in poverty and straits⁶⁸⁶⁷ at home,
Lost in a desert here and hunger-bit.
Which way, or from what hope, dost thou aspire
To greatness? Whence authority deriv'st?⁶⁸⁶⁸
What followers, what retinue⁶⁸⁶⁹ canst thou gain,
Or⁶⁸⁷⁰ at thy heels the dizzy⁶⁸⁷¹ multitude,
Longer than thou canst feed them on⁶⁸⁷² thy cost?

Money brings honor, friends, conquest, and realms.
What raised Antipater [6873](#) the Edomite, [6874](#)
And his son Herod, placed on Judah's throne
(Thy throne), but gold, that got him puissant friends?
Therefore, if at great things thou would'st arrive,
Get riches first, get wealth, and treasure heap [6875](#) —
Not difficult, if thou hearken to me.
Riches are mine, fortune is in my hand.
They whom I favor thrive in wealth amain, [6876](#)
While virtue, valor, wisdom, sit in want.”

To whom thus Jesus patiently replied:
“Yet wealth without these three [6877](#) is impotent
To gain dominion, or to keep it, gained. [6878](#)
Witness those ancient empires of the earth,
In height of all their flowing wealth dissolved,
But men endued with these [6879](#) have oft attained,
In lowest poverty, to highest deeds:
Gideon, [6880](#) and Jephtha, [6881](#) and the shepherd lad [6882](#)
Whose offspring on the throne of Judah sat
So many ages, and shall yet regain
That seat, and reign in Israel without end.
Among the heathen (for throughout the world
To me is not unknown what hath been done,
Worthy of memorial) canst thou not remember
Quintius, [6883](#) Fabricius, [6884](#) Curius, [6885](#) Regulus? [6886](#)
For I esteem those names of men so poor
Who could do mighty things, and could contemn
Riches, though offered from the hand of kings.
And what in me seems wanting [6887](#) but that I
May also, in this poverty, as soon
Accomplish what they did, perhaps, and more?
Extol not riches, then, the toil [6888](#) of fools,
The wise man's cumbrance, if not snare, more apt
To slacken virtue and abate [6889](#) her edge [6890](#)
Than prompt her to do aught [6891](#) may merit praise.
What if with like [6892](#) aversion I reject

Riches and realms! Yet not for that⁶⁸⁹³ a crown,
Golden in show, is but a wreath of thorns—
Brings dangers, troubles, cares, and sleepless nights
To him who wears the regal diadem,⁶⁸⁹⁴
When on his shoulders each⁶⁸⁹⁵ man's burden lies.
For therein stands⁶⁸⁹⁶ the office of a king,
His honor, virtue, merit, and chief praise
That for the public all this weight he bears.

“Yet he who reigns within himself, and rules⁶⁸⁹⁷
Passions, desires, and fears, is more a king—
Which every wise and virtuous man attains.
And who attains not, ill aspires to rule
Cities of men, or headstrong multitudes,
Subject⁶⁸⁹⁸ himself to anarchy within,
Or lawless passions in him, which he serves.
But to guide nations in the way of truth
By saving⁶⁸⁹⁹ doctrine, and from error lead
To know and, knowing, worship God aright,
Is yet more kingly. This attracts the soul,
Governs the inner man, the nobler part;
That other o'er the body only reigns,
And oft by force, which to a generous⁶⁹⁰⁰ mind
So reigning can be no sincere delight.

“Besides, to give a kingdom hath been thought
Greater and nobler done, and to lay down⁶⁹⁰¹
Far more magnanimous,⁶⁹⁰² than to assume.⁶⁹⁰³
Riches are needless, then, both for themselves
And for thy reason why they should be sought,
To gain a scepter, ofttest better missed.”⁶⁹⁰⁴

BOOK III

*So spoke the Son of God, and Satan stood
A while as mute, confounded⁶⁹⁰⁵ what to say,
What to reply, confuted⁶⁹⁰⁶ and convinced⁶⁹⁰⁷
Of his weak arguing and fallacious⁶⁹⁰⁸ drift.⁶⁹⁰⁹
At length, collecting⁶⁹¹⁰ all his serpent wiles,
With soothing words renewed, him⁶⁹¹¹ thus accosts:*

*“I see thou know’st what is of use to know,
What best to say canst say, to do canst do.
Thy actions to thy words accord, thy words
To thy large heart give utterance due: thy heart
Contains of good, wise, just, the perfect shape.
Should kings and nations from thy mouth consult⁶⁹¹²
Thy counsel would be as the oracle
Urim and Thummim,⁶⁹¹³ those oraculous gems
On Aaron’s breast, or tongue of seers⁶⁹¹⁴ old
Infallible. Or wert thou sought to deeds
That might require the array⁶⁹¹⁵ of war, thy skill
Of conduct would be such that all the world
Could not sustain thy prowess, or subsist⁶⁹¹⁶
In battle, though against thy few in arms.⁶⁹¹⁷*

*“These godlike virtues wherefore dost thou hide?
Affecting⁶⁹¹⁸ private life, or more obscure
In savage wilderness, wherefore deprive
All earth her wonder at thy acts, thyself
The fame and glory—glory, the reward
That sole excites to high attempts the flame
Of most erected⁶⁹¹⁹ spirits, most tempered⁶⁹²⁰ pure
Ethereal, who all pleasures else despise,*

*All treasures and all gain esteem as dross,
And dignities and powers, all but the highest?
Thy years are ripe, and over-ripe. The son
Of Macedonian Philip⁶⁹²¹ had ere these
Won Asia, and the throne of Cyrus⁶⁹²² held
At his dispose. Young Scipio had brought down
The Carthaginian pride;⁶⁹²³ young Pompey quelled
The Pontic king,⁶⁹²⁴ and in triumph had rode.
Yet years, and to ripe years judgment mature,
Quench not the thirst of glory, but augment.
Great Julius,⁶⁹²⁵ whom now all the world admires,
The more he grew in years, the more inflamed
With glory, wept that he had lived so long
Inglorious. But thou yet art not too late.”*

*To whom our Savior calmly thus replied:
“Thou neither dost persuade me to seek wealth
For empire’s sake, nor empire to affect ⁶⁹²⁶
For glory’s sake, by all thy argument.
For what is glory but the blaze⁶⁹²⁷ of fame,
The people’s praise—if always praise unmixed?
And what ⁶⁹²⁸ the people but a herd confused,
A miscellaneous rabble,⁶⁹²⁹ who extol
Things vulgar and, well weighed,⁶⁹³⁰ scarce worth the praise?
They praise and they admire they know not what,
And know not whom, but as one leads the other.
And what delight to be by such extolled,
To live upon their tongues, and be their talk?
Of whom to be dispraised were no small praise—
His lot who dares be singularly⁶⁹³¹ good.
Th’ intelligent among them and the wise
Are few, and glory scarce of few is raised.⁶⁹³²
This is true glory and renown—when God,
Looking on the earth, with approbation marks
The just man, and divulges⁶⁹³³ him through Heav’n
To all His Angels, who with true applause
Recount his praises. Thus He did to Job,*

*When to extend his fame through Heav'n and earth
(As thou to thy reproach may'st well remember)
He asked thee, 'Hast thou seen my servant Job?'
Famous he was in Heav'n; on earth less known,
Where glory is false glory, attributed
To things not glorious, men not worthy of fame.*

*"They err who count it glorious to subdue
By conquest far and wide, to overrun
Large countries, and in field great battles win,
Great cities by assault. What do these worthies
But rob and spoil, burn, slaughter, and enslave
Peaceable nations, neighboring or remote?
Made captive, yet deserving freedom more
Than those their conquerors, who leave behind
Nothing but ruin wheresoe'er they rove,
And all the flourishing works of peace destroy,
Then swell with pride, and must be titled gods,
Great benefactors of mankind, deliverers,
Worshipped with temple, priest, and sacrifice!
One is the son of Jove,⁶⁹³⁴ of Mars⁶⁹³⁵ the other,
Till conqueror Death discover ⁶⁹³⁶ them scarce men,
Rolling in brutish vices, and deformed,⁶⁹³⁷
Violent or shameful Death their due reward.*

*"But if there be in glory aught of good,
It may by means far different be attained,
Without ambition, war, or violence—
By deeds of peace, by wisdom eminent,
By patience, temperance. I mention still
Him whom thy wrongs with saintly patience borne,
Made famous in a land and times obscure:
Who names not now with honor patient Job?
Poor Socrates (who next more memorable?)
By what he taught and suffered for so doing,
For truth's sake suffering death unjust, lives now
Equal in fame to proudest conquerors.
Yet if for fame and glory aught be done,
Aught suffered—if young African⁶⁹³⁸ for fame*

*His wasted country freed from Punic⁶⁹³⁹ rage—
The deed becomes unpraised, the man at least,
And loses, though but verbal, his reward.
Shall I seek glory, then, as vain men seek,
Oft not deserved? I seek not mine, but His
Who sent me, and thereby witness⁶⁹⁴⁰ whence I am.”⁶⁹⁴¹*

*To whom the Tempter, murmuring, thus replied:
“Think not so slight of glory, therein least
Resembling thy great Father. He seeks glory,
And for His glory all things made, all things
Orders and governs, nor content in Heav’n,
By all His Angels glorified, requires
Glory from men, from all men, good or bad,
Wise or unwise, no difference, no exemption.
Above all sacrifice, or hallowed gift,
Glory He requires, and glory He receives,
Promiscuous⁶⁹⁴² from all nations, Jew, or Greek,
Or barbarous, nor exception hath declared.
From us, His foes pronounced, glory He exacts.”*

*To whom our Savior fervently replied:
“And reason,⁶⁹⁴³ since His Word all things produced,
Though chiefly not for glory as prime end,
But to show forth His goodness, and impart
His good communicable to every soul
Freely. Of whom what could He less expect
Than glory and benediction⁶⁹⁴⁴ —that is, thanks—
The slightest, easiest, readiest recompense
From them who could return Him nothing else?
And not returning that, would likeliest render
Contempt instead, dishonor, obloquy?
Hard recompense, unsuitable return
For so much good, so much beneficence!*

*“But why should man seek glory, who of his own
Hath nothing, and to whom nothing belongs
But condemnation, ignominy, and shame?
Who for so many benefits received
Turned recreant⁶⁹⁴⁵ to God, ingrate and false,*

*And so of all true good himself despoiled,⁶⁹⁴⁶
Yet sacrilegious, to himself would take
That which to God alone of right belongs?
Yet so much bounty⁶⁹⁴⁷ is in God, such grace,
That who advances His glory, not their own,
Them He Himself to glory will advance.”*

*So spoke the Son of God, and here again.
Satan had not to answer, but stood struck
With guilt of his own sin—for he himself,
Insatiable of glory, had lost all.
Yet of another plea bethought him soon:*

*“Of glory, as thou wilt,” said he, “so deem,
Worth or not worth the seeking. Let it pass.
But to a kingdom thou art born—ordained
To sit upon thy father David’s throne,
By mother’s side thy father, though thy right
Be now in powerful hands that will not part
Easily from possession won with arms.
Judaea now, and all the promised land
Reduced a province under Roman yoke,
Obeys Tiberius,⁶⁹⁴⁸ nor is always ruled
With temperate sway. Oft have they violated
The Temple, oft the Law, with foul affronts,
Abominations rather, as did once
Antiochus.⁶⁹⁴⁹ And think’st thou to regain
Thy right by sitting still, or thus retiring?
So did not Machabeus.⁶⁹⁵⁰ He indeed
Retired unto the desert, but with arms,
And o’er a mighty king so oft prevailed
That by strong hand his family obtained,
Though priests, the crown, and David’s throne usurped,
With Modin and her suburbs once content.*

*“If kingdom move thee not, let move thee zeal
And duty. Zeal and duty are not slow,
But on occasion’s ⁶⁹⁵¹forelock watchful wait.
They themselves, rather, are occasion best,
Zeal of thy Father’s house, duty to free*

*Thy country from her heathen servitude.
So shalt thou best fulfill, best verify,
The prophets old, who sung thy endless reign—
The happier reign the sooner it begins.
Reign then. What canst thou better do the while?”*

*To whom our Savior answer thus returned:
“All things are best fulfilled in their due time,
And time there is for all things, truth hath said.
If of my reign prophetic writ hath told
That it shall never end, so when begin
The Father in His purpose hath decreed,
He in whose hand all times and seasons roll.
What if He hath decreed that I shall first
Be tried in humble state, and things adverse,
By tribulations, injuries, insults,
Contempts, and scorns, and snares, and violence,
Suffering, abstaining, quietly expecting
Without distrust or doubt, that He may know
What I can suffer, how obey? Who best
Can suffer, best can do, best reign who first
Well hath obeyed—just trial ere I merit
My exaltation without change or end.*

*“But what concerns it thee when I begin
My everlasting kingdom? Why art thou
Solicitous? What moves thy inquisition?
Know’st thou not that my rising is thy fall,
And my promotion will be thy destruction?”*

*To whom the Tempter, inly racked,[6952](#) replied:
“Let that come when it comes. All hope is lost
Of my reception into grace. What worse?
For where no hope is left, is left no fear.
If there be worse, the expectation more
Of worse torments me than the feeling can.
I would be at the worst. Worst is my port,
My harbor, and my ultimate repose,
The end I would attain, my final good.
My error was my error, and my crime*

*My crime, whatever for itself condemned,
And will alike be punished whether thou
Reign or reign not—though to that gentle brow
Willingly I could fly, and hope thy reign,
From that placid⁶⁹⁵³ aspect and meek regard,
Rather than aggravate my evil state
Would stand between me and thy Father's ire
(Whose ire I dread more than the fire of Hell),
A shelter and a kind of shading cool
Interposition,⁶⁹⁵⁴ as a summer's cloud.*

*“If I, then, to the worst that can be haste,
Why move thy feet so slow to what is best?
Happiest, both to thyself and all the world
That thou, who worthiest art, should'st be their king!
Perhaps thou linger'st in deep thoughts detained
Of the enterprise so hazardous and high!
No wonder, for though in thee be united
What of perfection can in man be found,
Or human nature can receive, consider
Thy life hath yet been private, most part spent
At home, scarce viewed the Galilean towns,
And once a year Jerusalem, few days'
Short sojourn—and what thence could'st thou observe?
The world thou hast not seen, much less her glory,
Empires, and monarchs, and their radiant courts,
Best school of best experience, quickest in sight
In all things that to greatest actions lead.
The wisest, unexperienced, will be ever
Timorous, and loath, with novice modesty
(As he who, seeking asses, found a kingdom),⁶⁹⁵⁵
Irresolute, unhardy, unadvent'rous.
But I will bring thee where thou soon shalt quit⁶⁹⁵⁶
Those rudiments,⁶⁹⁵⁷ and see before thine eyes
The monarchies of th' earth, their pomp and state,
Sufficient introduction to inform
Thee, of thyself so apt, in regal arts
And regal mysteries, that thou may'st know*

How best their opposition to withstand.”

*With that (such power was giv’n him then), he took
The Son of God up to a mountain high.*

*It was a mountain at whose verdant feet
A spacious plain, outstretched in circuit wide,
Lay pleasant. From his⁶⁹⁵⁸ side two rivers⁶⁹⁵⁹ flowed,
The one winding, th’ other straight, and left between
Fair champaign,⁶⁹⁶⁰ with less⁶⁹⁶¹ rivers interveined,
Then meeting joined their tribute to the sea.*

*Fertile of corn⁶⁹⁶² the glebe,⁶⁹⁶³ of oil, and wine;
With herds the pasture thronged, with flocks the hills;
Huge cities and high-tower’d, that well might seem
The seats of mightiest monarchs; and so large
The prospect ⁶⁹⁶⁴ was that here and there was room
For barren desert, fountainless⁶⁹⁶⁵ and dry.*

*To this high mountain-top the Tempter brought
Our Savior, and new train of words began:*

*“Well have we speeded,⁶⁹⁶⁶ and o’er hill and dale,
Forest, and field and flood, temples and towers,
Cut shorter many a league. Here thou behold’st
Assyria, and her empire’s ancient bounds,
Araxes⁶⁹⁶⁷ and the Caspian lake. Thence on
As far as Indus east, Euphrates west,
And oft beyond. To south the Persian Bay,
And, inaccessible,⁶⁹⁶⁸ th’ Arabian drought.⁶⁹⁶⁹
Here Nineveh,⁶⁹⁷⁰ of length within her walls
Several days’ journey, built by Ninus ⁶⁹⁷¹ old,
Of that first golden monarchy the seat,
And seat of Salmanassar,⁶⁹⁷² whose success⁶⁹⁷³
Israel in long captivity still mourns.*

*There Babylon,⁶⁹⁷⁴ the wonder of all tongues,
As⁶⁹⁷⁵ ancient, but rebuilt by him⁶⁹⁷⁶ who twice
Judah and all thy father David’s house
Led captive, and Jerusalem laid waste,
Till Cyrus⁶⁹⁷⁷ set them free. Persepolis,⁶⁹⁷⁸
His city, there thou see’st, and Bactra⁶⁹⁷⁹ there.*

Ecbatana⁶⁹⁸⁰ her structure vast there shows,
And Hecatompylos⁶⁹⁸¹ her hundred gates.
There Susa⁶⁹⁸² by Choaspes, ⁶⁹⁸³amber stream,
The drink of none but kings. Of later fame,
Built by Emathian⁶⁹⁸⁴ or by Parthian⁶⁹⁸⁵ hands,
The great Seleucia, ⁶⁹⁸⁶Nisibis, ⁶⁹⁸⁷and there
Artaxata, ⁶⁹⁸⁸Teredon, ⁶⁹⁸⁹Ctesiphon, ⁶⁹⁹⁰
Turning with easy eye, thou may'st behold.

“All these the Parthian (now some ages past
By great Arsaces⁶⁹⁹¹ led, who founded first
That empire) under his dominion holds,
From the luxurious⁶⁹⁹² kings of Antioch⁶⁹⁹³ won.
And just in time thou com'st to have a view
Of his great power, for now the Parthian king
In Ctesiphon hath gathered all his host
Against the Scythian, ⁶⁹⁹⁴whose incursions wild
Have wasted Sogdiana. ⁶⁹⁹⁵To her aid
He marches now in haste. See, though from far,
His thousands, in what martial equipage
They issue forth, steel bows and shafts their arms,
Of equal dread ⁶⁹⁹⁶in flight or in pursuit—
All horsemen, in which fight they most excel.
See how in warlike muster they appear,
In rhombs, ⁶⁹⁹⁷and wedges, ⁶⁹⁹⁸and half-moons⁶⁹⁹⁹ and wings.”

He⁷⁰⁰⁰ looked, and saw what numbers numberless
The city gates outpoured, light-armed troops
In coats of mail and military pride. ⁷⁰⁰¹
In mail their horses clad, yet fleet⁷⁰⁰² and strong,
Prancing their riders bore, the flower and choice
Of many provinces from bound⁷⁰⁰³ to bound,
From Arachosia, ⁷⁰⁰⁴from Candaor⁷⁰⁰⁵ east,
And Margiana, ⁷⁰⁰⁶to the Hyrcanian⁷⁰⁰⁷ cliffs
Of Caucasus, and dark Iberian⁷⁰⁰⁸ dales—
From Atropatia, ⁷⁰⁰⁹and the neighboring plains
Of Adiabeen, ⁷⁰¹⁰Media, ⁷⁰¹¹and the south

Of Susiana⁷⁰¹² to Balsara's⁷⁰¹³ hav'n.⁷⁰¹⁴
He saw them in their forms of battle ranged,
How quick they wheeled, and flying behind them shot
Sharp sleet of arrowy showers against the face
Of their pursuers, and overcame by flight.
The field all iron cast a gleaming brown,
Nor wanted⁷⁰¹⁵ clouds of foot,⁷⁰¹⁶ nor on each horn⁷⁰¹⁷
Cuirassiers⁷⁰¹⁸ all in steel for standing fight,
Chariots, or elephants endorsed⁷⁰¹⁹ with towers
Of archers, nor of laboring pioneers⁷⁰²⁰
A multitude, with spades and axes armed,
To lay hills plain,⁷⁰²¹ fell woods, or valleys fill,
Or where plain was, raise hill, or overlay
With bridges rivers proud, as with a yoke.
Mules after these, camels and dromedaries,⁷⁰²²
And wagons fraught⁷⁰²³ with utensils of war.
Such forces met not, nor so wide a camp,
When Agrican⁷⁰²⁴ with all his northern powers
Besieged Albracca,⁷⁰²⁵ as romances tell,
The city of Gallaphrone, from thence to win
The fairest of her sex, Angelica,
His daughter, sought by many prowest ⁷⁰²⁶knights,
Both paynim⁷⁰²⁷ and the peers⁷⁰²⁸ of Charlemagne.
Such and so numerous was their chivalry,
At sight whereof the fiend yet more presumed,⁷⁰²⁹
And to our Savior thus his words renewed:

“That thou may'st know I seek not to engage⁷⁰³⁰
Thy virtue, and not every way secure⁷⁰³¹
On no slight ⁷⁰³²grounds thy safety, hear and mark⁷⁰³³
To what end I have brought thee hither, and show
All this fair sight. Thy kingdom, though foretold
By prophet or by Angel, unless thou
Endeavor, as thy father⁷⁰³⁴ David did,
Thou never shalt obtain. Prediction still
In all things, and all men, supposes means;
Without means used, what it predicts revokes.

But say thou wert possessed of David's throne
By free consent of all, none opposite,
Samaritan⁷⁰³⁵ or Jew, how could'st thou hope
Long to enjoy it quiet and secure
Between two such enclosing enemies,
Roman and Parthian? Therefore one of these
Thou must make sure thy own. The Parthian first,
By my advice, as nearer, and of late
Found able by invasion to annoy⁷⁰³⁶
Thy country, and captive lead away her kings,
Antigonus,⁷⁰³⁷ and old Hyracanus—bound,
Maugre⁷⁰³⁸ the Roman. It shall be my task
To render thee the Parthian at dispose,
Choose which thou wilt, by conquest or by league.⁷⁰³⁹
By him thou shalt regain, without him not,
That which alone can truly reinstall thee
In David's royal seat, his true successor—
Deliverance of thy brethren, those Ten Tribes
Whose offspring in his territory yet serve
In Habor,⁷⁰⁴⁰ and among the Medes⁷⁰⁴¹ dispersed:
Ten sons of Jacob, two of Joseph,⁷⁰⁴² lost
Thus long from Israel, serving as of old
Their fathers in the land of Egypt served,
This offer sets before thee to deliver.
These if from servitude thou shalt restore
To their inheritance, then, nor till then,
Thou on the throne of David in full glory,
From Egypt to Euphrates and beyond,
Shalt reign, and Rome or Caesar not need fear.”

To whom our Savior answered thus, unmoved:
“Much ostentation vain of fleshly arm
And fragile arms, much instrument of war,
Long in preparing, soon to nothing brought,
Before mine eyes thou hast set, and in my ear
Vented much policy,⁷⁰⁴³ and projects deep
Of enemies, of aids, battles, and leagues,

Plausible⁷⁰⁴⁴ to the world, to me worth naught.
Means I must use, thou say'st. Prediction else
Will unpredict, and fail me of the throne!
My time, I told thee (and that time for thee
Were better farthest off), is not yet come.
When that comes, think not thou to find me slack⁷⁰⁴⁵
On my part aught endeavoring, or to need
Thy politic⁷⁰⁴⁶ maxims, or that cumbersome
Luggage of war there shown me, argument⁷⁰⁴⁷
Of human weakness rather than of strength.
My brethren, as thou call'st them, those Ten Tribes,
I must deliver, if I mean to reign
David's true heir, and his full scepter sway⁷⁰⁴⁸
To just extent over all Israel's sons!
But whence to thee this zeal? Where was it then
For Israel, or for David, or his throne,
When thou stood'st up⁷⁰⁴⁹ his tempter ⁷⁰⁵⁰ to the pride
Of numbering⁷⁰⁵¹ Israel, which cost the lives
Of threescore and ten thousand Israelites
By three days' pestilence? Such was thy zeal
To Israel then, the same that now to me.

“As for those captive tribes, themselves were they
Who wrought their own captivity, fell off
From God to worship calves, the deities
Of Egypt, Baal next and Ashtaroth,
And all th' idolatries of heathen round,
Besides their other worse than heathenish crimes.
Nor in the land of their captivity
Humbled themselves, or penitent besought
The God of their forefathers, but so died
Impenitent, and left a race behind
Like to themselves, distinguishable scarce
From gentiles but ⁷⁰⁵² by circumcision vain,⁷⁰⁵³
And God with idols in their worship joined.
Should I of these the liberty regard⁷⁰⁵⁴
Who, freed, as to their ancient patrimony

Unhumbled, unrepentant, unreformed,
Headlong⁷⁰⁵⁵ would follow,⁷⁰⁵⁶ and to their gods perhaps
Of Bethel and of Dan? No, let them serve
Their enemies who serve idols with God.
Yet He at length, time to Himself best known,
Remembering Abraham, by some wondrous call
May bring them back, repentant and sincere,
And at their passing cleave th' Assyrian flood,
While to their native land with joy they haste,
As the Red Sea and Jordan once He cleft
When to the promised land their fathers passed.
To His due time and providence I leave them."

So spoke Israel's true king, and to the fiend
Made answer meet,⁷⁰⁵⁷ that made void all his wiles.
So fares it when with truth falsehood contends.

BOOK IV

*Perplexed and troubled at his bad success
The Tempter stood, nor had what to reply,
Discovered in his fraud, thrown from his hope
So oft, and the persuasive rhetoric
That sleeked [7058](#) his tongue, and won so much on Eve,
So little [7059](#) here—nay lost! But Eve was Eve.
This far his over-match, who self-deceived
And rash, beforehand had no better weighed
The strength he was to cope with, or his own.
But as a man who had been matchless held
In cunning, over-reached where least he thought,
To salve [7060](#) his credit, and for very spite,
Still will be tempting him who foils [7061](#) him still,
And never cease, though to his shame the more—
Or as a swarm of flies in vintage-time,
About the wine-press where sweet must [7062](#) is poured,
Beat off, returns as oft with humming sound—
Or surging waves against a solid rock,
Though all to shivers [7063](#) dashed, th' assault renew
(Vain battery! [7064](#)) and in froth or bubbles end—
So Satan, whom repulse upon repulse
Met ever, and to shameful silence brought,
Yet gives not o'er, though desperate [7065](#) of success,
And his vain importunity pursues.*

*He brought our Savior to the western side
Of that high mountain, whence he might behold
Another plain, [7066](#) long, but in breadth not wide,
Washed by the southern sea, and on the north
To equal length backed with a ridge of hills*

That screened the fruits of th' earth and seats of men
From cold Septentrion⁷⁰⁶⁷ blasts, thence in the midst
Divided by a river, off whose banks
On each side an imperial city⁷⁰⁶⁸ stood,
With towers and temples proudly elevate
On seven small hills, with palaces adorned,
Porches⁷⁰⁶⁹ and theaters,⁷⁰⁷⁰ baths, aqueducts,
Statues and trophies,⁷⁰⁷¹ and triumphal arcs,⁷⁰⁷²
Gardens and groves, presented to his eyes
Above the height of mountains interposed
(By what strange parallax, or optic skill
Of vision, multiplied through air, or glass
Of telescope, were curious⁷⁰⁷³ to enquire).
And now the Tempter thus his silence broke:

“The city which thou see'st no other deem
Than great and glorious Rome, queen of the earth
So far renowned, and with the spoils enriched
Of nations. There the capitol ⁷⁰⁷⁴ thou see'st,
Above the rest lifting his stately⁷⁰⁷⁵ head
On the Tarpeian rock,⁷⁰⁷⁶ her citadel
Impregnable, and there Mount Palatine,
Th' imperial palace, compass⁷⁰⁷⁷ huge, and high
The structure, skill of noblest architects,
With gilded battlements, conspicuous⁷⁰⁷⁸ far,
Turrets and terraces, and glittering spires.
Many a fair edifice besides, more like
Houses of gods (so well I have disposed ⁷⁰⁷⁹
My airy microscope⁷⁰⁸⁰) thou may'st behold,
Outside and inside both, pillars and roofs
Carved work, the hand of famed artificers⁷⁰⁸¹
In cedar, marble, ivory, or gold.

“Thence to the gates cast round thine eye, and see
What conflux⁷⁰⁸² issuing forth, or entering in:
Praetors,⁷⁰⁸³ proconsuls⁷⁰⁸⁴ to their provinces
Hasting, or on return, in robes of state,
Lictors⁷⁰⁸⁵ and rods, the ensigns⁷⁰⁸⁶ of their power;

Legions and cohorts,⁷⁰⁸⁷ turms⁷⁰⁸⁸ of horse and wings,
Or embassies from regions far remote,
In various habits,⁷⁰⁸⁹ on the Appian road,⁷⁰⁹⁰
Or on the Emilian,⁷⁰⁹¹ some from farthest south,
Syene,⁷⁰⁹² and where the shadow both way falls,
Meroë,⁷⁰⁹³ Nilotic isle, and more to west
The realm of Bocchus⁷⁰⁹⁴ to the Blackmoor sea.⁷⁰⁹⁵
From th' Asian kings (and Parthian among these),
From India and the golden Chersoness,⁷⁰⁹⁶
And utmost Indian isle, Taprobane,⁷⁰⁹⁷
Dusk faces with white silken turbants⁷⁰⁹⁸ wreathed.
From Gallia,⁷⁰⁹⁹ Gades,⁷¹⁰⁰ and the British west,
Germans, and Scythians, and Sarmatians⁷¹⁰¹ north
Beyond Danubius to the Tauric pool.⁷¹⁰²
All nations now to Rome obedience pay,
To Rome's great Emperor, whose wide domain,
In ample territory, wealth and power,
Civility⁷¹⁰³ of manners, arts and arms,
And long renown, thou justly may'st prefer
Before the Parthian. These two thrones except,
The rest are barbarous, and scarce worth the sight,
Shared among petty kings too far removed.⁷¹⁰⁴
These having shown thee, I have shown thee all
The kingdoms of the world, and all their glory.

“This Emperor⁷¹⁰⁵ hath no son, and now is old,
Old and lascivious, and from Rome retired
To Capri,⁷¹⁰⁶ an island small but strong
On the Campanian⁷¹⁰⁷ shore, with purpose there
His horrid lusts in private to enjoy,
Committing to a wicked favorite ⁷¹⁰⁸
All public cares, and yet of him suspicious—
Hated of all, and hating. With what ease,
Endued with regal virtues as thou art,
Appearing, and beginning noble deeds,
Might'st thou expel this monster from his throne,
Now made a sty, and in his place ascending,

A victor-people free⁷¹⁰⁹ from servile yoke!

“And with my help thou may’st. To me the power
Is giv’n, and by that right I give it thee.

Aim, therefore, at no less than all the world.

Aim at the highest: without the highest attained

Will be for thee no sitting, or not long,

On David’s throne, be prophesied what will.”

To whom the Son of God, unmoved, replied:

“Nor doth this grandeur and majestic show

Of luxury, though called magnificence,

More than of arms, before, allure mine eye,

Much less my mind, though thou should’st add to tell

Their sumptuous gluttonies, and gorgeous⁷¹¹⁰ feasts

On citron⁷¹¹¹ tables or Atlantic stone⁷¹¹²

(For I have also heard, perhaps have read),

Their wines of Setia, Cales, and Falerne,⁷¹¹³

Chios and Crete,⁷¹¹⁴ and how they quaff in gold,

Crystal, and myrrhine cups embossed with gems

And studs⁷¹¹⁵ of pearl—to me should’st tell, who thirst

And hunger still. Then embassies thou show’st

From nations far and nigh! What honor that?

But tedious waste of time, to sit and hear

So many hollow compliments and lies,

Outlandish⁷¹¹⁶ flatteries. Then proceed’st to talk

Of the Emperor, how easily subdued,

How gloriously. I shall, thou say’st, expel

A brutish monster. What if I withal

Expel a Devil who first made him such?

Let his tormentor, conscience, find him out.

For him I was not sent, nor yet to free

That people, victor once, now vile and base,

Deservedly made vassal—who, once just,

Frugal, and mild, and temperate, conquered well,

But govern ill the nations under yoke,

Peeling⁷¹¹⁷ their provinces, exhausted all

By lust and rapine—first ambitious grown

Of triumph, that insulting⁷¹¹⁸ vanity,
Then cruel, by their sports to blood inured
Of fighting beasts, and men to beasts exposed,
Luxurious⁷¹¹⁹ by⁷¹²⁰ their wealth, and greedier still,
And from⁷¹²¹ the daily scene ⁷¹²²effeminate.⁷¹²³
What wise and valiant man would seek to free
These, thus degenerate, by themselves enslaved,
Or could of inward slaves make outward free?

“Know, therefore, when my season comes to sit
On David’s throne, it shall be like a tree
Spreading and overshadowing all the earth,
Or as a stone that shall to pieces dash
All monarchies besides ⁷¹²⁴throughout the world,
And of my kingdom there shall be no end.
Means there shall be to this, but what the means
Is not for thee to know, nor me to tell.”

To whom the Tempter, impudent,⁷¹²⁵ replied:
“I see all offers made by me how slight
Thou valu’st, because offered and reject’st.
Nothing will please the difficult and nice,⁷¹²⁶
Or nothing more than still ⁷¹²⁷to contradict.
On th’ other side, know also thou that I
On what I offer set as high esteem,
Nor what I part with mean to give for naught.
All these, which in a moment thou behold’st,
The kingdoms of the world, to thee I give
(For, giv’n to me, I give to whom I please),
No trifle; yet with this reserve, not else—
On this condition, if thou wilt fall down
And worship me as thy superior Lord
(Easily done), and hold them all of me.
For what can less so great a gift deserve?”

Whom thus our Savior answered with disdain:
“I never liked thy talk, thy offers less,
Now both abhor, since thou hast dared to utter
Th’ abominable terms, impious condition.

But I endure⁷¹²⁸ the time, till which expired
Thou hast permission⁷¹²⁹ on me. It is written,
The first of all commandments, ‘Thou shalt worship
The Lord thy God, and only Him shalt serve.’ ⁷¹³⁰
And dar’st thou to the Son of God propound⁷¹³¹
To worship thee, accursed? Now more accursed
For this attempt, bolder than that on Eve,
And more blasphemous, which expect to rue.
The kingdoms of the world to thee were giv’n!
Permitted, rather, and by thee usurped.
Other donation⁷¹³² none thou canst produce.
If given, by whom but by the King of kings,
God over all supreme? If giv’n to thee,
By thee how fairly is the giver now
Repaid? But gratitude in thee is lost
Long since. Wert thou so void of fear or shame
As offer them to me, the Son of God—
To me my own, on such abhorrèd pact,
That I fall down and worship thee as God?
Get thee behind me! Plain thou now appear’st
That Evil One, Satan, forever damned.”

To whom the fiend, with fear abashed, replied:
“Be not so sore offended, Son of God—
Though Sons of God both Angels are and men—
If I, to try⁷¹³³ whether in higher sort ⁷¹³⁴
Than these thou bear’st that title, have proposed
What both from men and Angels I receive,
Tetrachs⁷¹³⁵ of fire, air, flood, and on the earth
Nations besides, from all the quartered winds—⁷¹³⁶
God of this world invoked,⁷¹³⁷ and world beneath.
Who then thou art, whose coming is foretold
To me so fatal, me it most concerns.
The trial ⁷¹³⁸ hath endamaged thee no way—
Rather more honor left, and more esteem—
Me naught advantaged, missing what I aimed.
Therefore let pass, as they are transitory,

*The kingdoms of this world. I shall no more
Advise thee. Gain them as thou canst, or not.*

*“And thou thyself seem’st otherwise inclined
Than to a worldly crown, addicted [7139](#) more
To contemplation and profound dispute,
As by that early action may be judged,
When slipping from thy mother’s eye, thou went’st
Alone into the Temple. There wast found
Among the gravest [7140](#) rabbis disputant
On points and questions fitting Moses’ chair, [7141](#)
Teaching, not taught. [7142](#) The childhood shows the man,
As morning shows the day. Be famous, then,
By wisdom. As thy empire must extend,
So let extend thy mind o’er all the world
In knowledge, all things in it comprehend.
All knowledge is not couched [7143](#) in Moses’ law,
The Pentateuch, [7144](#) or what the prophets wrote.
The gentiles [7145](#) also know, and write, and teach
To admiration, [7146](#) led by Nature’s light,
And with the gentiles much thou must converse,
Ruling them by persuasion, as thou mean’st.
Without their learning, how wilt thou with them,
Or they with thee, hold conversation meet? [7147](#)
How wilt thou reason with them, how refute
Their idolisms, traditions, paradoxes?
Error by his own arms [7148](#) is best evinced. [7149](#)*

*“Look once more, ere we leave this specular [7150](#) mount,
Westward, much nearer by south-west. Behold
Where on th’ Aegean shore a city stands,
Built nobly, pure the air and light the soil—
Athens, the eye of Greece, mother of arts
And eloquence, native to famous wits
Or hospitable, [7151](#) in her sweet recess, [7152](#)
City or suburban, studious walks and shades.
See there the olive-grove of Academe, [7153](#)
Plato’s retirement, [7154](#) where the Attic bird [7155](#)*

Trills her thick-warbled notes the summer long.
There flow'ry hill, Hymettus,⁷¹⁵⁶ with the sound
Of bees' industrious murmur, oft invites
To studious musing; there Ilissus⁷¹⁵⁷ rolls
His whispering stream. Within the walls then view
The schools of ancient sages—his⁷¹⁵⁸ who bred⁷¹⁵⁹
Great Alexander to subdue the world,
Lyceum⁷¹⁶⁰ there, and painted Stoa⁷¹⁶¹ next.
There thou shalt hear and learn the secret power
Of harmony, in tones and numbers⁷¹⁶² hit⁷¹⁶³
By voice or hand, and various-measured verse,
Aeolian⁷¹⁶⁴ charms⁷¹⁶⁵ and Dorian⁷¹⁶⁶ lyric odes,
And his who gave them breath, but higher sung,
Blind Melesigenes,⁷¹⁶⁷ thence Homer called,
Whose poem Phoebus⁷¹⁶⁸ challenged⁷¹⁶⁹ for his own.
Thence what the lofty grave tragedians taught
In chorus or iambic,⁷¹⁷⁰ teachers best
Of moral prudence,⁷¹⁷¹ with delight received
In brief sententious⁷¹⁷² precepts, while they treat
Of fate, and chance, and change in human life,
High actions and high passions best describing.
Thence to the famous orators repair,⁷¹⁷³
Those ancient whose resistless eloquence
Wielded⁷¹⁷⁴ at will that fierce democracy,
Shook the Arsenal,⁷¹⁷⁵ and fulminated⁷¹⁷⁶ over Greece
To Macedon⁷¹⁷⁷ and Artaxerxes'⁷¹⁷⁸ throne.
To sage philosophy next lend thine ear,
From Heav'n descended to the low-roofed house
Of Socrates—see there his tenement,⁷¹⁷⁹
Whom well inspired the oracle pronounced
Wisest of men, from whose mouth issued forth
Mellifluous⁷¹⁸⁰ streams, that watered all the schools
Of Academics old and new, with those
Surnamed⁷¹⁸¹ Peripatetics,⁷¹⁸² and the sect
Epicurean,⁷¹⁸³ and the Stoic severe.

*“These here revolve⁷¹⁸⁴ or, as thou lik’st, at home,
Till time mature thee to a kingdom’s weight.
These rules will render thee a king complete
Within thyself, much more with empire joined.”*

*To whom our Savior sagely thus replied:
“Think not but that I know these things, or think
I know them not. Not therefore am I short⁷¹⁸⁵
Of knowing what I ought. He who receives
Light from above, from the Fountain of Light,
No other doctrine needs, though⁷¹⁸⁶ granted⁷¹⁸⁷ true.
But these are false, or little else but dreams,
Conjectures, fancies, built on nothing firm.
The first and wisest⁷¹⁸⁸ of them all professed
To know this only, that he nothing knew.
The next⁷¹⁸⁹ to fabling fell and smooth conceits.
A third sort⁷¹⁹⁰ doubted all things, though plain sense.
Others in virtue placed felicity,
But virtue joined with riches and long life.
In corporal pleasure he,⁷¹⁹¹ and careless ease.
The Stoic last, in philosophic pride
(By him called virtue) and his virtuous man,
Wise, perfect in himself, and all possessing
Equal to God, oft shames not to prefer,
As fearing God nor man, contemning⁷¹⁹² all
Wealth, pleasure, pain or torment, death and life—
Which, when he lists,⁷¹⁹³ he leaves, or boasts he can,
For all his tedious talk is but vain boast,
Or subtle shifts,⁷¹⁹⁴ conviction to evade.*

*“Alas! what can they teach, and not mislead,
Ignorant of themselves, of God much more,
And how the world began, and how man fell,
Degraded by himself, on grace depending?
Much of the soul they talk, but all awry,
And in themselves seek virtue, and to themselves
All glory arrogate,⁷¹⁹⁵ to God give none,
Rather accuse Him under usual names,*

Fortune and Fate, as one regardless quite
Of mortal things. Who, therefore, seeks in these
True wisdom finds her not, or by delusion
Far worse, her false resemblance only meets,
An empty cloud. However many books,
Wise men have said, are wearisome. Who⁷¹⁹⁶ reads
Incessantly, and to his reading brings not
A spirit and judgment equal or superior
(And what he brings what needs he elsewhere seek?),
Uncertain and unsettled still remains,
Deep-versed in books and shallow in himself,
Crude or intoxicate, collecting toys
And trifles for⁷¹⁹⁷ choice⁷¹⁹⁸ matters, worth a sponge,⁷¹⁹⁹
As⁷²⁰⁰ children gathering pebbles on the shore.
Or if I would delight my private hours
With music or with poem, where so soon
As in our native language⁷²⁰¹ can I find
That solace? All our Law and story strewn⁷²⁰²
With hymns, our Psalms with artful terms inscribed,
Our Hebrew songs and harps, in Babylon
That pleased so well our victor's ear, declare
That rather Greece from us these arts derived—
Ill imitated while they loudest sing
The vices of their deities, and their own,
In fable, hymn, or song, so personating⁷²⁰³
Their gods ridiculous, and themselves past shame.
Remove their swelling epithets, thick-laid
As varnish⁷²⁰⁴ on a harlot's cheek, the rest,
Thin-sown with aught of profit or delight,
Will far be found unworthy to compare
With Sion's songs, to all true tastes excelling,
Where God is praised aright and godlike men,
The Holiest of Holies and His Saints.
Such are from God inspired, not such from thee,⁷²⁰⁵
Unless where⁷²⁰⁶ moral virtue is expressed
By light of Nature, not in all quite lost.

*Their orators thou then extoll'st as those
The top of eloquence—statists⁷²⁰⁷ indeed,
And lovers of their country, as may seem.
But herein to our prophets far beneath,
As men divinely taught, and better teaching
The solid rules of civil government,
In their majestic, unaffected style,
Than all the oratory of Greece and Rome.
In them is plainest taught, and easiest learnt,
What makes a nation happy, and keeps it so,
What ruins kingdoms, and lays cities flat.
These only, with our Law, best form a king.”*

*So spoke the Son of God. But Satan, now
Quite at a loss (for all his darts were spent),⁷²⁰⁸
Thus to our Savior, with stern brow, replied:*

*“Since neither wealth nor honor, arms nor arts,
Kingdom nor empire, pleases thee, nor aught
By me proposed in life contemplative
Or active, tended on by glory or fame,
What dost thou in this world? The wilderness
For thee is fittest place! I found thee there,
And thither will return thee. Yet remember
What I foretell thee. Soon thou shalt have cause
To wish thou never had'st rejected, thus
Nicely⁷²⁰⁹ or cautiously, my offered aid,
Which would have set thee in short time with ease
On David's throne, or throne of all the world,
Now at full age, fulness of time, thy season,
When prophecies of thee are best fulfilled.
Now, contrary, if I read aught in Heav'n,
Or Heav'n write aught of Fate, by what the stars
Voluminous,⁷²¹⁰ or single characters
In their conjunction met, give me to spell,⁷²¹¹
Sorrows and labors, opposition, hate,
Attends thee, scorns, reproaches, injuries,
Violence and stripes⁷²¹² and, lastly, cruel death.*

A kingdom they portend⁷²¹³ thee, but what kingdom,
Real or allegoric, I discern⁷²¹⁴ not,
Nor when. Eternal sure—as without end,
Without beginning, for no date prefixed
Directs⁷²¹⁵ me in the starry rubric⁷²¹⁶ set.”

So saying, he took (for still he knew his power
Not yet expired), and to the wilderness
Brought back the Son of God, and left him there,
Feigning to disappear. Darkness now rose,
As daylight sunk, and brought in louring⁷²¹⁷ night,
Her shadowy offspring, unsubstantial both,
Privation mere⁷²¹⁸ of light and absent day.
Our Savior, meek,⁷²¹⁹ and with untroubled mind
After his airy jaunt,⁷²²⁰ though hurried sore,⁷²²¹
Hungry and cold betook him to his rest,
Wherever, under some concourse⁷²²² of shades
Whose branching arms thick intertwined might shield
From dews and damps of night his sheltered head,
But sheltered, slept in vain, for at his head
The Tempter watched, and soon with ugly dreams
Disturbed his sleep. And either Tropic⁷²²³ now
'Gan thunder, and both ends of Heav'n. The clouds
From many a horrid rift abortive⁷²²⁴ poured
Fierce rain with lightning mixed, water with fire,
In ruin⁷²²⁵ reconciled,⁷²²⁶ nor slept the winds
Within their stony caves, but rushed abroad
From the four hinges of the world and fell
On the vexed⁷²²⁷ wilderness, whose tallest pines,
Though rooted deep as high,⁷²²⁸ and sturdiest oaks,
Bowed their stiff necks, loaden with stormy blasts,
Or torn up sheer.⁷²²⁹ Ill wast thou shrouded⁷²³⁰ then,
O patient Son of God, yet only stood'st
Unshaken! Nor yet stayed⁷²³¹ the terror there.
Infernal ghosts and hellish furies round
Environed thee: some howled, some yelled, some shrieked,
Some bent at thee their fiery darts, while thou

Sat'st unappalled ⁷²³² in calm and sinless peace.
Thus passed the night so foul, till morning fair
Came forth with pilgrim steps, in amice⁷²³³ gray,
Who with her radiant finger stilled the roar
Of thunder, chased the clouds, and laid ⁷²³⁴ the winds
And grisly⁷²³⁵ specters, which the fiend had raised
To tempt⁷²³⁶ the Son of God with terrors dire.

And now the sun with more effectual⁷²³⁷ beams
Had cheered the face of earth, and dried the wet
From drooping plant, or dropping tree. The birds,
Who all things now behold more fresh and green,
After a night of storm so ruinous,
Cleared up⁷²³⁸ their choicest notes in bush and spray,⁷²³⁹
To gratulate⁷²⁴⁰ the sweet return of morn.

Nor yet, amidst this joy and brightest morn,
Was absent, after all his mischief done,
The Prince of darkness—glad would also seem
Of this fair change, and to our Savior came,
Yet with no new device⁷²⁴¹ (they all were spent),
Rather by this his last affront ⁷²⁴² resolved,⁷²⁴³
Desperate of better course, to vent his rage
And mad despite⁷²⁴⁴ to be so oft repelled.

Him walking on a sunny hill he found,
Backed on the north and west by a thick wood.
Out of the wood he starts in wonted⁷²⁴⁵ shape,
And in a careless⁷²⁴⁶ mood thus to him said:

“Fair morning yet betides⁷²⁴⁷ thee, Son of God,
After a dismal night. I heard the wrack,⁷²⁴⁸
As earth and sky would mingle, but myself
Was distant, and these flaws,⁷²⁴⁹ though mortals fear them
As dangerous to the pillared frame of Heav'n,
Or to the earth's dark basis underneath,
Are to the main⁷²⁵⁰ as inconsiderable
And harmless, if not wholesome, as a sneeze
To man's lesser universe,⁷²⁵¹ and soon are gone.

Yet, as being oft-times noxious⁷²⁵² where they light
On man, beast, plant, wasteful and turbulent,
Like turbulencies in the affairs of men
(Over whose heads they roar, and seem to point),⁷²⁵³
They oft fore-signify and threaten ill.

“This tempest at this desert most was bent,⁷²⁵⁴
Of men at thee, for only thou here dwell’st.
Did I not tell thee, if thou didst reject
The perfect season⁷²⁵⁵ offered with my aid
To win thy destined seat, but wilt prolong
All to the push⁷²⁵⁶ of Fate, pursue thy way
Of gaining David’s throne no man knows when
(For both the when and how is nowhere told):
Thou shalt be what thou art ordained, no doubt,
For Angels have proclaimed it, but concealing
The time and means. Each act is rightliest done
Not when it must, but when it may be best.
If thou observe not this, be sure to find
What I foretold thee, many a hard assay⁷²⁵⁷
Of dangers, and adversities, and pains,
Ere thou of Israel’s scepter get fast hold,
Whereof this ominous⁷²⁵⁸ night that closed thee round,
So many terrors, voices, prodigies,⁷²⁵⁹
May warn thee, as a sure foregoing sign.”
So talked he, while the Son of God went on,
And stayed not, but in brief him answered thus:

“Me worse than wet thou find’st not. Other harm
Those terrors which thou speak’st of did me none.
I never feared they could, though noising loud
And threat’ning nigh. What they can do as signs
Betokening or ill-boding I condemn
As false portents, not sent from God, but thee,
Who knowing I shall reign past thy preventing,
Obtrud’st thy offered aid, that I, accepting,
At least might seem to hold all power of thee,
Ambitious Spirit, and would’st be thought my God,

*And storm'st, [7260](#) refused, thinking to terrify
Me to thy will! Desist (thou art discerned,
And toil'st in vain), nor me in vain molest."*

*To whom the fiend, now swoll'n with rage, replied:
"Then hear, O Son of David, virgin-born!
For Son of God to me is yet in doubt.
Of the Messiah I have heard foretold
By all the prophets; of thy birth, at length
Announced by Gabriel, with the first I knew,
And of th' Angelic song in Bethlehem field
On thy birth-night, that sung thee Savior born.*

*"From that time seldom have I ceased to eye
Thy infancy, thy childhood, and thy youth,
Thy manhood last, though yet in private bred,
Till at the ford of Jordan, whither all
Flocked to the Baptist, I among the rest
(Though not to be baptized), by voice from Heav'n
Heard thee pronounced the Son of God beloved.
Thenceforth I thought thee worth my nearer view
And narrower scrutiny, that I might learn
In what degree [7261](#) or meaning thou art called
The Son of God, which bears no single sense.
The Son of God I also am, or was,
And if I was, I am. Relation stands:
All men are Sons of God. Yet thee I thought
In some respect far higher so declared.*

*"Therefore I watched thy footsteps from that hour,
And followed thee still on to this waste wild,
Where by all best conjectures I collect
Thou art to be my fatal enemy.
Good reason, then, if I beforehand seek
To understand my adversary, who
And what he is, his wisdom, power, intent,
By parle [7262](#) or composition, [7263](#) truce or league,
To win him, or win from him what I can.*

*"And opportunity I here have had
To try thee, sift [7264](#) thee, and confess have found thee*

*Proof against all temptation, as a rock
Of adamant and as a center, firm
To th' utmost of mere man both wise and good,
Not more, for honors, riches, kingdoms, glory,
Have been before contemned, [7265](#) and may again.
Therefore, to know what more thou art than man,
Worth naming the Son of God by voice from Heav'n,
Another method I must now begin."*

*So saying, he caught him up and, without wing
Of hippogrif, [7266](#) bore through the air sublime, [7267](#)
Over the wilderness and o'er the plain,
Till underneath them fair Jerusalem,
The Holy City, lifted high her towers,
And higher yet the glorious Temple reared
Her pile, [7268](#) far off appearing like a mount
Of alabaster, topped with golden spires.
There on the highest pinnacle, he set
The Son of God, and added thus in scorn:*

*"There stand, if thou wilt stand. To stand upright
Will ask [7269](#) thee skill. I to thy Father's house
Have brought thee, and highest placed: highest is best.
Now show thy progeny! [7270](#) If not to stand,
Cast thyself down—safely, if Son of God,
For it is written, 'He will give command
Concerning thee to His Angels; in their hands
They shall uplift thee, lest at any time
Thou chance to dash [7271](#) thy foot against a stone. '" [7272](#)*

*To whom thus Jesus: "Also it is written,
'Tempt not the Lord thy God. '" He said, and stood,
But Satan, smitten with amazement, fell.
As when Earth's son, Antaeus [7273](#) (to compare
Small things with greatest), in Irassa [7274](#) strove
With Jove's Alcides [7275](#) and, oft foiled, [7276](#) still rose,
Receiving from his mother Earth new strength,
Fresh from his fall, and fiercer grapple joined,
Throttled at length in th' air, expired and fell,*

So after many a foil, the Tempter proud,
Renewing fresh assaults, amidst his pride
Fell whence he stood to see [7277](#) his victor fall.
And as that Theban monster [7278](#) that proposed
Her riddle and, him who solved it not, devoured,
That [7279](#) once found out and solved, for grief and spite
Cast herself headlong from the Ismenian [7280](#) steep,
So strook [7281](#) with dread and anguish fell the fiend,
And to his crew, that sat consulting, brought
Joyless triumphals [7282](#) of his hoped success,
Ruin, and desperation, and dismay,
Who durst so proudly tempt the Son of God.

So Satan fell, and straight a fiery globe [7283](#)
Of Angels on full sail of wing flew nigh,
Who on their plumey vans [7284](#) received him [7285](#) soft
From his uneasy [7286](#) station, [7287](#) and upbore,
As on a floating couch, through the blithe [7288](#) air,
Then, in a flow'ry valley, set him down
On a green bank, and set before him spread
A table of celestial food, divine
Ambrosial fruits fetched from the Tree of Life,
And from the fount of life ambrosial drink,
That soon refreshed him, wearied, and repaired [7289](#)
What hunger, if aught hunger, had impaired, [7290](#)
Or thirst. And, as he fed, Angelic choirs
Sung Heavenly anthems [7291](#) of his victory
Over temptation and the Tempter proud:

“True Image of the Father, whether throned
In the bosom of bliss, and light of light
Conceiving, or remote from Heav'n, enshrined
In fleshly tabernacle [7292](#) and human form,
Wand'ring the wilderness—whatever place,
Habit, or state, or motion, still expressing
The Son of God, with Godlike force endued [7293](#)
Against th' attempter of thy Father's throne
And thief of Paradise! Him long of old

Thou didst debel,⁷²⁹⁴ and down from Heav'n cast
With all his army. Now thou hast avenged
Supplanted⁷²⁹⁵ Adam and, by vanquishing
Temptation, hast regained lost Paradise,
And frustrated the conquest fraudulent.
He never more henceforth will dare set foot
In Paradise to tempt. His snares are broke.
For though that seat of earthly bliss be failed,
A fairer Paradise is founded now
For Adam and his chosen sons, whom thou,
A Savior, art come down to reinstall,
Where they shall dwell secure, when time shall be,
Of Tempter and temptation without fear.

“But thou, Infernal Serpent! shalt not long
Rule in the clouds. Like an autumnal star,
Or lightning, thou shalt fall from Heav'n, trod down
Under his feet. For proof, ere this thou feel'st
Thy wound (yet not thy last and deadliest wound)
By this repulse received, and hold'st in Hell
No triumph. In all her gates⁷²⁹⁶ Abaddon⁷²⁹⁷ rues
Thy bold attempt. Hereafter learn with awe
To dread the Son of God. He, all unarmed,
Shall chase thee, with the terror of his voice,
From thy demoniac holds, possession foul—
Thee and thy legions. Yelling they shall fly,
And beg to hide them in a herd of swine,
Lest he command them down into the deep,
Bound, and to torment⁷²⁹⁸ sent before their time.

“Hail, Son of the Most High, heir of both worlds,
Queller⁷²⁹⁹ of Satan! On thy glorious work
Now enter, and begin to save mankind.”

Thus they the Son of God, our Savior meek,
Sung victor and, from Heav'nly feast refreshed,
Brought on his way with joy. He, unobserved,
Home to his mother's house private⁷³⁰⁰ returned.

SAMSON AGONISTES⁷³⁰¹

date uncertain: everything from 1646 to 1670 has been proposed

OF THAT SORT OF DRAMATIC POEM WHICH IS CALLED TRAGEDY

Tragedy, as it was anciently composed, hath been ever held the gravest,⁷³⁰² moralest, and most profitable of all other poems—therefore said by Aristotle to be of power by raising pity and fear, or terror, to purge the mind of those and such like passions. That is, to temper⁷³⁰³ and reduce⁷³⁰⁴ them to just,⁷³⁰⁵ with a kind of delight, stirred up by reading or seeing those passions well imitated.

Nor is Nature wanting⁷³⁰⁶ in her own effects⁷³⁰⁷ to make good his assertion, for so, in physic,⁷³⁰⁸ things of melancholic hue and quality are used against melancholy, sour against sour, salt to remove salt humors.⁷³⁰⁹ Hence philosophers and other gravest writers, as Cicero, Plutarch and others, frequently cite out of ⁷³¹⁰ tragic poets, both to adorn and illustrate their discourse. The Apostle Paul himself thought it not unworthy to insert a verse of Euripides⁷³¹¹ into the text of Holy Scripture (I Cor. 15:33), and Paraeus,⁷³¹² commenting on the Revelation, divides the whole book as a tragedy, into acts distinguished each by a chorus of Heavenly harpings and song between.⁷³¹³

Heretofore men in highest dignity have labored not a little to be thought able to compose a tragedy. Of that honour Dionysius the elder was no less

ambitious, then⁷³¹⁴ before of his attaining to the Tyranny.⁷³¹⁵ Augustus Caesar also had begun his Ajax, but unable to please his own judgment with what he had begun, left it unfinished. Seneca the philosopher is by some thought the author of those tragedies (at least the best of them) that go under that name. Gregory Nazianzen,⁷³¹⁶ a Father of the Church, thought it not unbe-seeming the sanctity of his person to write a tragedy, which he entitled, *Christ Suffering*.

This is mentioned to vindicate tragedy from the small esteem, or rather infamy, which in the account of many it undergoes at this day, with other common interludes⁷³¹⁷—happening through the poets’ error of intermixing comic stuff with tragic sadness⁷³¹⁸ and gravity, or introducing trivial and vulgar persons, which by all judicious⁷³¹⁹ hath been counted absurd, and brought in without discretion, corruptly to gratify the people. And though ancient tragedy use no prologue (yet using sometimes, in case of self defense or explanation, that which Martial calls an “epistle”), in behalf of this tragedy coming forth after the ancient manner, much different from what among us passes for best, thus much beforehand may be “epistled.”

The chorus is here introduced after the Greek manner, not ancient only but modern, and still in use among the Italians. In the modelling therefore of this poem, with good reason, the ancients and Italians are rather followed, as of much more authority and fame. The measure⁷³²⁰ of verse used in the chorus is of all sorts, called by the Greeks monostrophic, or rather apolelymenon,⁷³²¹ without regard had to strophe, antistrophe or epode (which were a kind of stanza framed only for the music, then⁷³²² used with the chorus that sung; not essential to the poem, and therefore not material)⁷³²³ or being divided into stanzas or pauses, they may be call’d allaeostropha.⁷³²⁴ Division into act and scene, referring chiefly to the stage (to which this work never was intended), is here omitted.

It suffices if the whole drama be found⁷³²⁵ not produced⁷³²⁶ beyond the fifth act, of the style and uniformity, and that⁷³²⁷ commonly called the plot, whether intricate or explicit, which is nothing indeed but such economy⁷³²⁸ or disposition⁷³²⁹ of the fable⁷³³⁰ as may stand best with verisimilitude and decorum. They only will best judge who are not unacquainted with Aeschulus, Sophocles, and Euripides, the three tragic poets unequalled yet by any, and the best rule to all who endeavor to write tragedy. The

circumscription⁷³³¹ of time wherein the whole drama begins and ends is, according to ancient rule and best example, within the space of 24 hours.

THE ARGUMENT

Samson (made captive, blind, and now in the prison at Gaza, there to labor as in a common work-house), on a festival day, in the general cessation from labor, comes forth into the open air, to a place nigh,⁷³³² somewhat retired,⁷³³³ there to sit a while and bemoan his condition. Where he happens at length to be visited by certain friends and equals of his tribe, which make⁷³³⁴ the chorus, who seek to comfort him what⁷³³⁵ they can, then⁷³³⁶ by his old father, Manoa, who endeavors the like, and withal⁷³³⁷ tells him his purpose to procure his liberty by ransom, [and] lastly, that this feast was proclaimed by the Philistines as a day of thanksgiving for their deliverance from the hands of Samson, which yet more troubles him.

Manoa then departs to prosecute⁷³³⁸ his endeavor ⁷³³⁹ with the Philistian lords for Samson's redemption, who in the meanwhile is visited by other persons, and lastly by a public officer to require his coming to the feast, before⁷³⁴⁰ the lords and people, to play⁷³⁴¹ or show his strength in their presence. He at first refuses, dismissing the public officer with absolute denial to come. At length, persuaded inwardly that this was from God, he yields to go along with him, who came now, the second time, with great threatenings, to fetch him.

The chorus yet remaining on the place, Manoa returns full of joyful hope to procure, ere long, his son's deliverance, in the midst of which discourse an Hebrew comes in haste, confusedly at first, and afterward more distinctly, relating the catastrophe: what Samson had done to the Philistines, and by accident to himself, wherewith the tragedy ends.

THE PERSONS

Samson.

Harapha of Gath.

Manoa, the father of Samson.

Public officer.

Messenger.

Dalila, his wife.

Chorus of Danites. [7342](#)

The scene: before the prison in Gaza.

SAM. A little onward lend thy guiding hand
To these dark steps, a little further on,
For yonder bank [7343](#) hath choice of sun or shade.
There I am wont [7344](#) to sit, when any chance
Relieves me from my task of servile [7345](#) toil,
Daily in the common prison else enjoined [7346](#) me,
Where I, a prisoner chained, scarce freely draw [7347](#)
The air—imprisoned also, close and damp,
Unwholesome [7348](#) draught. [7349](#) But here I feel amends, [7350](#)
The breath of Heav'n fresh-blowing, pure and sweet,
With day-spring born. Here leave me to respire. [7351](#)
This day a solemn feast the people hold
To Dagon [7352](#) their sea-Idol, and forbid
Laborious [7353](#) works. Unwillingly this rest
Their superstition [7354](#) yields me. Hence with leave [7355](#)
Retiring from the popular [7356](#) noise, I seek
This unfrequented [7357](#) place to find some ease,
Ease to the body some, none to the mind
From restless thoughts, that like a deadly swarm
Of hornets armed, no sooner found alone
But rush upon me thronging, [7358](#) and present [7359](#)
Times past, what once I was, and what am now.

O wherefore was my birth from Heav'n foretold
Twice, by an Angel, who at last in sight
Of both my parents all in flames ascended
From off the altar, where an off 'ring burned,
As in a fiery column charioting
His godlike presence, and from some great act
Or benefit revealed to Abraham's race?
Why was my breeding [7360](#) ordered and prescribed
As of a person separate [7361](#) to God,
Designed for great exploits, if I must die

Betrayed, captived, and both my eyes put out,
Made of my enemies the scorn and gaze?
To grind⁷³⁶² in brazen⁷³⁶³ fetters⁷³⁶⁴ under task⁷³⁶⁵
With this Heav'n-gifted strength? O glorious strength
Put to the labor of a beast, debased
Lower than bondslave! Promise was that I
Should Israel from Philistian yoke deliver.
Ask for this great deliverer now, and find him
Eyeless in Gaza at the mill⁷³⁶⁶ with slaves,
Himself in bonds under Philistian yoke.

Yet stay, let me not rashly call in doubt
Divine prediction. What if all foretold
Had been fulfilled but⁷³⁶⁷ through mine own default,⁷³⁶⁸
Whom have I to complain of but myself?
Who this high gift of strength, committed to me,
In what part lodged, how easily bereft ⁷³⁶⁹ me,
Under the seal of silence could not keep
But weakly to a woman must reveal it,
O'ercome with importunity and tears.
O impotence of mind, in body strong!
But what is strength without a double share
Of wisdom, vast, unwieldy,⁷³⁷⁰ burdensome,
Proudly secure,⁷³⁷¹ yet liable to fall
By weakest subtleties, not made to rule
But to subserve⁷³⁷² where wisdom bears⁷³⁷³ command.
God, when He gave me strength, to show withal
How slight the gift was, hung it in my hair.

But peace! I must not quarrel with the will
Of highest dispensation,⁷³⁷⁴ which herein
Happ'ly⁷³⁷⁵ had ends⁷³⁷⁶ above my reach to know.
Suffices that to me strength is my bane,⁷³⁷⁷
And proves the source of all my miseries,
So many, and so huge, that each apart
Would ask⁷³⁷⁸ a life to wail—but of all,
O loss of sight, of thee I most complain!
Blind among enemies, O worse than chains,

Dungeon, or beggary, or decrepit age!
Light, the prime work of God, to me is extinct,
And all her various objects of delight
Annulled,⁷³⁷⁹ which might in part my grief have eased,
Inferior to the vilest now become
Of man or worm. The vilest here excel me,
They creep, yet see, I dark in light exposed
To daily fraud, contempt, abuse and wrong,
Within doors, or without, still⁷³⁸⁰ as a fool,
In power of others, never in my own.
Scarce half I seem to live, dead more than half.
O dark, dark, dark, dark, dark, amid the blaze of noon,
Irrecoverably dark, total eclipse
Without all ⁷³⁸¹ hope of day!

O first created beam, and thou great Word,
“Let there be light, and light was over all,”⁷³⁸²
Why am I thus bereaved thy prime⁷³⁸³ decree?
The sun to me is dark
And silent as the moon
When she deserts the night,
Hid in her vacant⁷³⁸⁴ interlunar cave.⁷³⁸⁵
Since light so necessary is to life,
And almost life itself, if it be true
That light is in the soul,
She all in every part, why was the sight
To such a tender ball as th’ eye confined?⁷³⁸⁶
So obvious⁷³⁸⁷ and so easy to be quenched,⁷³⁸⁸
And not, as feeling, through all parts diffused
That she might look at will⁷³⁸⁹ through every pore?
Then had I not been thus exiled from light,
As in the land of darkness, yet in light,
To live a life half dead, a living death,
And buried, but O yet more miserable!
Myself my sepulcher,⁷³⁹⁰ a moving grave,
Buried, yet not exempt
By privilege of death and burial

From worst of other evils, pains and wrongs,
But made hereby obnoxious⁷³⁹¹ more
To all the miseries of life,
Life in captivity
Among inhuman foes.

But who are these? For with joint ⁷³⁹² pace⁷³⁹³ I hear
The tread of many feet steering this way—
Perhaps my enemies who come to stare
At my affliction, and perhaps to insult,
Their daily practice to afflict me more.
CHOR. This, this is he. Softly a while,
Let us not break in upon him.
O change beyond report, thought, or belief!
See how he lies at random, carelessly diffused,⁷³⁹⁴
With languished⁷³⁹⁵ head unpropped,
As one past hope, abandoned
And by himself given over,
In slavish habit,⁷³⁹⁶ ill-fitted weeds⁷³⁹⁷
O'er worn and soiled.

Or do my eyes misrepresent? Can this be he,
That heroic, that renowned,
Irresistible Samson? Whom unarmed
No strength of man or fiercest wild beast could withstand?
Who tore the lion, as the lion tears the kid?
Ran on embattled⁷³⁹⁸ armies clad in iron,
And weaponless himself
Made arms ridiculous, useless the forgery⁷³⁹⁹
Of brazen⁷⁴⁰⁰ shield and spear, the hammered cuirass,⁷⁴⁰¹
Chalybean⁷⁴⁰² tempered steel, and frock⁷⁴⁰³ of mail
Adamantean proof?
But safest he who stood aloof,
When insupportably⁷⁴⁰⁴ his foot advanced
In scorn of their proud arms and warlike tools,
Spurned⁷⁴⁰⁵ them to death—by troops! The bold Ascalonite⁷⁴⁰⁶
Fled from his lion ramp,⁷⁴⁰⁷ old warriors turned⁷⁴⁰⁸
Their plated⁷⁴⁰⁹ backs under his heel

Or, grov'ling, soiled ⁷⁴¹⁰ their crested helmets in the dust.
Then with what ⁷⁴¹¹ trivial ⁷⁴¹² weapon came to hand—
The jaw of a dead ass, his sword of bone—
A thousand fore-skins ⁷⁴¹³ fell, the flower of Palestine,
In Ramath-lechi, ⁷⁴¹⁴ famous to this day.
Then by main ⁷⁴¹⁵ force pulled up, and on his shoulders bore
The Gates of Azza ⁷⁴¹⁶ —post ⁷⁴¹⁷ and massy bar—⁷⁴¹⁸
Up to the hill by Hebron, ⁷⁴¹⁹ seat of giants old, ⁷⁴²⁰
No journey of a sabbath day, ⁷⁴²¹ and ⁷⁴²² loaded so:
Like ⁷⁴²³ whom ⁷⁴²⁴ the gentiles feign ⁷⁴²⁵ to bear up Heav'n. ⁷⁴²⁶

Which shall I first bewail,
Thy bondage or lost sight,
Prison within prison
Inseparably dark?
Thou art become (O worst imprisonment!)
The dungeon of thyself! Thy soul
(Which men enjoying sight oft without cause complain)
Imprisoned now indeed,
In real darkness of the body dwells,
Shut up from outward light
T' incorporate ⁷⁴²⁷ with gloomy night,
For inward light alas
Puts forth no visual beam.

O mirror of our fickle ⁷⁴²⁸ state,
Since man ⁷⁴²⁹ on earth unparalleled!
The rarer ⁷⁴³⁰ thy example stands
By how much from the top of wondrous glory,
Strongest of mortal men,
To lowest pitch of abject fortune thou art fall'n.
For him I reckon not in high estate
Whom long descent of birth
Or the sphere of fortune raises,
But thee whose strength, while virtue was her mate,
Might have subdued the earth,
Universally crowned with highest praises.
SAM. I hear the sound of words; their sense the air

Dissolves unjointed⁷⁴³¹ ere it reach my ear.

CHOR. He speaks: let us draw nigh.

Matchless in might,
The glory late of Israel, now the grief!
We come thy friends and neighbours not unknown
From Eshtaol and Zora's fruitful vale⁷⁴³²
To visit or bewail thee or, if better,
Counsel or consolation we may bring,
Salve to thy sores. Apt words have power to suage
The tumors⁷⁴³³ of a troubled mind,
And are as balm to festered wounds.

SAM. Your coming, friends, revives me, for I learn
Now of my own experience, not by talk,
How counterfeit a coin they are who friends
Bear in their superscription⁷⁴³⁴ (of the most, ⁷⁴³⁵
I would be understood): in prosperous days
They swarm, but in adverse withdraw their head,
Not to be found, though sought. Ye see, O friends,
How many evils have enclosed me round.
Yet that which was the worst now least afflicts me,
Blindness, for had I sight, confused with shame,
How could I once look up, or heave⁷⁴³⁶ the head,
Who like a foolish pilot have shipwrecked
My vessel, trusted to me from above,
Gloriously rigged, and for a word, a tear
—Fool!—have divulged the secret gift of God
To a deceitful woman? Tell me, friends,
Am I not sung and proverbied for a fool
In every street? Do they not say how well
Are come upon him his deserts? Yet why?
Immeasurable strength they might behold
In me, of wisdom nothing more than mean.⁷⁴³⁷
This with the other should, at least, have paired;⁷⁴³⁸
These two, proportioned ill, drove me transverse.⁷⁴³⁹
CHOR. Tax⁷⁴⁴⁰ not divine disposal.⁷⁴⁴¹ Wisest men
Have erred, and by bad women been deceived,

And shall again, pretend they ne're so wise.
 Deject not then so overmuch thyself,
 Who hast of sorrow thy full load besides.
 Yet truth to say, I oft have heard men wonder
 Why thou should'st wed Philistian women rather
 Than of thine own tribe—fairer, or as fair,
 At least of thy own nation, and as noble.
 SAM. The first I saw at Timna,⁷⁴⁴² and she pleased
 Me (not my parents), that⁷⁴⁴³ I sought to wed,
 The daughter of an infidel. They⁷⁴⁴⁴ knew not
 That what I motioned⁷⁴⁴⁵ was of God; I knew
 From intimate⁷⁴⁴⁶ impulse,⁷⁴⁴⁷ and therefore urged⁷⁴⁴⁸
 The marriage on, that by occasion⁷⁴⁴⁹ hence⁷⁴⁵⁰
 I might begin Israel's deliverance,
 The work to which I was divinely called.
 She proving false, the next I took to wife
 (O that I never had! fond⁷⁴⁵¹ wish, too late)
 Was in the Vale of Sorec, Dalila,⁷⁴⁵²
 That specious⁷⁴⁵³ monster, my accomplished⁷⁴⁵⁴ snare.
 I thought it lawful, from⁷⁴⁵⁵ my former act
 And the same end, still watching to oppress
 Israel's oppressors. Of what now I suffer
 She was not the prime cause, but I myself
 Who, vanquished with a peal⁷⁴⁵⁶ of words (O weakness!),
 Gave up⁷⁴⁵⁷ my fort of silence to a woman.
 CHOR. In seeking just occasion to provoke⁷⁴⁵⁸
 The Philistine, thy country's enemy,
 Thou never wast remiss:⁷⁴⁵⁹ I bear thee witness.
 Yet Israel still serves,⁷⁴⁶⁰ with all his sons.
 SAM. That fault I take not on me, but transfer
 On Israel's governors and heads of tribes,
 Who seeing those great acts which God had done
 Singly⁷⁴⁶¹ by me against their conquerors
 Acknowledged not, or not at all considered
 Deliverance offered. I on th' other side
 Used⁷⁴⁶² no ambition⁷⁴⁶³ to commend⁷⁴⁶⁴ my deeds:

The deeds themselves, though mute, spoke loud the doer.
But they⁷⁴⁶⁵ persisted deaf, and would not seem
To count them things worth notice, till at length
Their lords the Philistines with gathered⁷⁴⁶⁶ powers
Entered Judea, seeking me, who then
Safe to the rock of Etham⁷⁴⁶⁷ was retired,
Not flying,⁷⁴⁶⁸ but fore-casting⁷⁴⁶⁹ in what place
To set upon them, what advantaged⁷⁴⁷⁰ best.
Meanwhile the men of Judah, to prevent
The harass of their land, beset ⁷⁴⁷¹ me round.
I willingly (on some⁷⁴⁷² conditions) came
Into their hands, and they as gladly yield me
To the uncircumcised, a welcome prey,⁷⁴⁷³
Bound with two cords⁷⁴⁷⁴ —but cords to me were threads
Touched with the flame. On their whole host I flew,
Unarmed, and with a trivial⁷⁴⁷⁵ weapon felled
Their choicest youth; they only lived who fled.
Had Judah that day joined, or one whole tribe,
They had by this possessed the towers of Gath,⁷⁴⁷⁶
And lorded over them whom now they serve.
But what more oft, in nations grown corrupt
And by their vices brought to servitude,
Than to love bondage more than liberty,
Bondage with ease than⁷⁴⁷⁷ strenuous liberty,
And to despise, or envy, or suspect
Whom God hath of his special favor raised
As their deliverer? If he aught begin,
How frequent to desert him, and at last
To heap ingratitude on worthiest deeds?
CHOR. Thy words to my remembrance bring
How Succoth and the fort of Penuel⁷⁴⁷⁸
Their great deliverer contemned,
The matchless Gideon, in pursuit
Of Madian and her vanquished kings.
And how ungrateful Ephraim⁷⁴⁷⁹
Had dealt with Jephtha,⁷⁴⁸⁰ who by argument

Not worse than by his shield and spear,
Defended Israel from the Ammonite,⁷⁴⁸¹
Had not his prowess quelled their pride
In that sore battle when so many died,
Without reprieve adjudged to death
For want of well-pronouncing “shibboleth.”⁷⁴⁸²
SAM. Of such examples add me to the roll.
Me easily indeed mine may neglect,⁷⁴⁸³
But God’s proposed deliverance not so.
CHOR. Just are the ways of God,
And justifiable to men,
Unless there be who think not God at all.⁷⁴⁸⁴
If any be, they walk obscure,⁷⁴⁸⁵
For of such doctrine never was there school,
But the heart of the fool,
And no man therein doctor⁷⁴⁸⁶ but himself.

Yet more there be who doubt⁷⁴⁸⁷ His ways not just,
As to His own edicts found contradicting,
Then give the reins to wand’ring⁷⁴⁸⁸ thought,
Regardless of His glory’s diminution,
Till by their own perplexities involved⁷⁴⁸⁹
They ravel⁷⁴⁹⁰ more, still less resolved,
But never find self-satisfying solution.

As if they would confine th’ interminable,⁷⁴⁹¹
And tie Him to His own prescript,⁷⁴⁹²
Who made our Laws to bind us, not Himself,
And hath full right t’ exempt
Whom so it pleases Him by choice
From national obstruction,⁷⁴⁹³ without taint
Of sin, or legal debt,
For with His own Laws He can best dispense.

He would not else (who never wanted⁷⁴⁹⁴ means,
Nor in respect of th’ enemy just cause
To set His people free)
Have prompted this heroic Nazarite,⁷⁴⁹⁵
Against his vow of strictest purity,

To seek in marriage that fallacious⁷⁴⁹⁶ bride,
Unclean, unchaste.

Down⁷⁴⁹⁷ reason, then—at least, vain reasonings down,
Though reason here aver⁷⁴⁹⁸
That moral verdict quits⁷⁴⁹⁹ her⁷⁵⁰⁰ of unclean:
Unchaste was subsequent, her stain not his.

But see, here comes thy reverend sire
With careful⁷⁵⁰¹ step, locks white as down,
Old Manoa. Advise⁷⁵⁰²
Forthwith how thou ought'st to receive him.
SAM. Aye me, another inward grief awaked:
With mention of that name, renews th' assault.
MAN. Brethren and men of Dan, for such ye seem,
Though in this uncouth⁷⁵⁰³ place: if old respect,
As I suppose, towards your once gloried friend,
My son now captive, hither hath informed⁷⁵⁰⁴
Your younger feet, while mine, cast⁷⁵⁰⁵ back with age,
Came lagging after, say if he be here.

CHOR. As signal⁷⁵⁰⁶ now, in low dejected state,
As erst in highest, behold him where he lies.

MAN. O miserable change! Is this the man,
That invincible Samson, far renowned,
The dread of Israel's foes, who with a strength
Equivalent to Angels walked their streets,
None offering fight? who single combatant
Duelled their armies, ranked in proud array,
Himself an army, now unequal match
To save himself against a coward, armed,
At one spear's length? O ever failing trust
In mortal strength! and oh what not in man
Deceivable and vain! Nay, what thing good
Prayed for, but often proves our woe, our bane?⁷⁵⁰⁷
I prayed for children, and thought barrenness
In wedlock a reproach. I gained a son,
And such a son as all men hailed me happy.
Who would be now a father in my stead?

O wherefore did God grant me my request,
And as a blessing with such pomp⁷⁵⁰⁸ adorned?
Why are His gifts desirable,⁷⁵⁰⁹ to tempt
Our earnest prayers, then giv'n with solemn hand
As graces, draw a scorpion's tail behind?
For this did th' Angel twice descend? For this
Ordained thy nurture holy, as of a plant
Select and sacred, glorious for a while,
The miracle of men, then in an hour
Ensnared, assaulted, overcome, led bound,
Thy foes' derision, captive, poor, and blind,
Into a dungeon thrust, to work with slaves?
Alas, methinks whom God hath chosen once
To worthiest deeds, if he through frailty err
He⁷⁵¹⁰ should not so oerwhelm, and as a thrall⁷⁵¹¹
Subject him to so foul indignities,
Be it but for honor's sake, of former deeds.
SAM. Appoint⁷⁵¹² not Heav'nly disposition, father.
Nothing of all these evils hath befall'n me
But justly. I myself have brought them on,
Sole author I, sole cause. If aught seem vile,
As⁷⁵¹³ vile hath been my folly, who have profaned
The mystery of God giv'n me under pledge
Of vow, and have betrayed it to a woman,
A Canaanite, my faithless enemy.
This well I knew, nor was at all surprised,
But warned by oft experience. Did not she
Of Timna⁷⁵¹⁴ first betray me, and reveal
The secret wrested from me in her height
Of nuptial love professed, carrying it straight
To them who had corrupted her, my spies
And rivals? In this other was there found
More faith? who also in her prime of love,
Spousal embraces, vitiated⁷⁵¹⁵ with gold,
Though offered only, by the scent⁷⁵¹⁶ conceived
Her spurious⁷⁵¹⁷ first-born, treason against me?

Thrice she assayed, with flattering prayers and sighs,
And amorous reproaches, to win from me
My capital⁷⁵¹⁸ secret, in what part my strength
Lay stored, in what part summed, that she might know.
Thrice I deluded⁷⁵¹⁹ her, and turned to sport⁷⁵²⁰
Her importunity, each time perceiving
How openly and with what impudence
She purposed to betray me, and (which was worse
Than undissembled hate) with what contempt
She sought to make me traitor to myself.
Yet the fourth time, when must'ring all her wiles,
With blandished⁷⁵²¹ parleys, ⁷⁵²²feminine assaults,
Tongue-batteries, ⁷⁵²³she surceased not day nor night
To storm⁷⁵²⁴ me, over-watched⁷⁵²⁵ and wearied out.
At times when men seek most repose and rest
I yielded, and unlocked her all my heart,
Who with a grain of manhood well resolved⁷⁵²⁶
Might easily have shook off all her snares.
But foul effeminacy⁷⁵²⁷ held me yoked
Her bondslave. O indignity, O blot
To honor and religion! Servile mind
Rewarded well with servile punishment!
The base degree to which I now am fall'n,
These rags, this grinding, ⁷⁵²⁸is not yet so base
As was my former servitude, ignoble,
Unmanly, ignominious, infamous,
True slavery, and that blindness worse than this,
That saw not how degenerately I served.
MAN. I cannot praise thy marriage choices, son—
Rather approved them not. But thou didst plead
Divine impulsions⁷⁵²⁹ prompting how thou might'st
Find some occasion to infest⁷⁵³⁰ our foes.
I state not that. This I am sure: our foes
Found soon occasion thereby to make thee
Their captive, and their triumph. Thou the sooner
Temptation found'st, or over-potent charms

To violate the sacred trust of silence
Deposited within thee, which t' have kept
Tacit [7531](#) was in thy power. True: and thou bear'st
Enough, and more, the burden of that fault.
Bitterly hast thou paid, and still art paying
That rigid [7532](#) score. [7533](#) A worse thing yet remains.
This day the Philistines a popular feast
Here celebrate in Gaza, and proclaim
Great pomp, and sacrifice, and praises loud
To Dagon, as their god who hath delivered
Thee, Samson, bound and blind into their hands,
Them out of thine, who slew'st them many a slain.
So Dagon shall be magnified, and God,
Besides whom is no God, compared with idols,
Disglorified, blasphemed, and had in scorn
By th' idolatrous rout [7534](#) amidst their wine,
Which to have come to pass by means of thee,
Samson, of all thy sufferings think the heaviest,
Of all reproach the most with shame that ever
Could have befall'n thee and thy father's house. [7535](#)
SAM. Father, I do acknowledge and confess
That I this honor, I this pomp have brought
To Dagon, and advanced his praises high
Among the heathen round [7536](#) —to God have brought
Dishonor, obloquy, [7537](#) and op't [7538](#) the mouths
Of idolists, and atheists, have brought scandal
To Israel, diffidence [7539](#) of God, and doubt
In feeble hearts, propense [7540](#) enough before
To waver, or fall off and join with idols.
Which is my chief affliction, shame and sorrow,
The anguish of my soul, that suffers not
Mine eye to harbor [7541](#) sleep, or thoughts to rest.
This only hope relieves me, that the strife
With me hath end: all the contest is now
'Twixt God and Dagon. Dagon hath presumed
(Me overthrown) to enter lists [7542](#) with God,

His deity comparing and preferring
Before the God of Abraham. He, [7543](#) be sure,
Will not connive, [7544](#) or linger, thus provoked,
But will arise and His great name assert.
Dagon must stoop, [7545](#) and shall ere long receive
Such a discomfit [7546](#) as shall quite despoil [7547](#) him
Of all these boasted trophies won on me,
And with confusion blank [7548](#) his worshippers.
MAN. With cause [7549](#) this hope relieves thee, and these words
I as a prophecy receive, for God—
Nothing more certain—will not long defer
To vindicate the glory of His name
Against all competition, nor will long
Endure it, doubtful [7550](#) whether God be Lord
Or Dagon. But for thee what shall be done?
Thou must not in the meanwhile here forgot
Lie, in this miserable, loathsome plight
Neglected. I already have made way [7551](#)
To some Philistian lords, with whom to treat [7552](#)
About thy ransom. Well they may by this [7553](#)
Have satisfied their utmost of revenge
By pains and slaveries worse than death inflicted
On thee, who now no more canst do them harm.
SAM. Spare [7554](#) that proposal, father, spare the trouble
Of that solicitation. Let me here,
As I deserve, pay on my punishment,
And expiate, if possible, my crime,
Shameful garrulity. To have revealed
Secrets of men, the secrets of a friend,
How heinous had the fact been, how deserving
Contempt, and scorn of all, to be excluded
All friendship, and avoided as a blab,
The mark of fool set on his front? [7555](#) But I
God's counsel have not kept, His holy secret
Presumptuously have published, [7556](#) impiously,
Weakly at least, and shamefully, a sin

That gentiles in their parables⁷⁵⁵⁷ condemn⁷⁵⁵⁸
To their abyss and horrid pains confined.⁷⁵⁵⁹
MAN. Be penitent and for thy fault contrite,
But act not in thy own affliction, son.
Repent the sin, but if the punishment
Thou canst avoid, self-preservation bids,
Or th' execution leave to high disposal,⁷⁵⁶⁰
And let another hand, not thine, exact
Thy penal forfeit⁷⁵⁶¹ from thyself. Perhaps
God will relent, and quit⁷⁵⁶² thee all His debt,
Who evermore approves and more accepts
(Best pleased with humble and filial submission)
Him who imploring mercy sues⁷⁵⁶³ for life,
Than who, self-rigorous, chooses death as due,
Which argues over-just, and self-displeased
For self-offence, more than for God offended.
Reject not then what offered means⁷⁵⁶⁴ (who knows
But God hath set before us) to return thee
Home to thy country and His sacred house,
Where thou may'st bring thy off 'rings, to avert
His further ire with prayers and vows renewed.
SAM. His pardon I implore. But as for life,
To what end should I seek it? When in strength
All mortals I excelled, and great in hopes
With youthful courage and magnanimous⁷⁵⁶⁵ thoughts
Of birth from Heav'n foretold and high exploits,
Full of divine instinct,⁷⁵⁶⁶ after some proof
Of acts indeed heroic, far beyond
The sons of Anac,⁷⁵⁶⁷ famous now and blazed,⁷⁵⁶⁸
Fearless of danger, like a petty god
I walked about, admired of all and dreaded
On hostile ground, none daring my affront.⁷⁵⁶⁹
Then swoll'n with pride into the snare I fell
Of fair fallacious⁷⁵⁷⁰ looks, venereal trains,⁷⁵⁷¹
Softn'd with pleasure and voluptuous life,
At length to lay my head and hallowed pledge⁷⁵⁷²

Of all my strength in the lascivious lap
Of a deceitful concubine, who shore me
Like a tame wether, all my precious fleece,
Then turned me out ridiculous, despoiled,
Shav'n, and disarmed among my enemies.

CHOR. Desire of wine and all delicious drinks,
Which many a famous warrior overturns,
Thou could'st repress, nor did the dancing ruby⁷⁵⁷³
Sparkling, out-poured, the flavor, or the smell,
Or taste that cheers the heart of gods and men,
Allure thee from⁷⁵⁷⁴ the cool crystalline stream.

SAM. Wherever fountain or fresh current flowed
Against the eastern ray, translucent, pure
With touch aetherial of Heav'n's fiery rod,⁷⁵⁷⁵
I drank, from the clear milky⁷⁵⁷⁶ juice⁷⁵⁷⁷ allaying
Thirst, and refreshed, nor envied them the grape
Whose heads that turbulent liquor fills with fumes.

CHOR. O madness, to think use of strongest wines
And strongest drinks our chief support of health,
When God with these forbidd'n made choice to rear
His mighty champion, strong above compare,
Whose drink was only from the liquid brook.

SAM. But what availed this temperance, not complete
Against another object more enticing?
What boots it at one gate to make defence
And at another to let in the foe,
Effeminately vanquished? By which means,
Now blind, disheart'ned, shamed, dishonored, quelled,⁷⁵⁷⁸
To what can I be useful? wherein serve
My nation, and the work from Heav'n imposed,
But to sit idle on the household hearth,
A burdenous drone? to visitants a gaze,⁷⁵⁷⁹
Or pitied object, these redundant⁷⁵⁸⁰ locks
Robustious⁷⁵⁸¹ to no purpose clust'ring down,
Vain monument of strength, till length of years
And sedentary numbness craze⁷⁵⁸² my limbs

To a contemptible old age obscure.
Here rather let me drudge and earn my bread,
Till vermin or the draff [7583](#) of servile food
Consume me, and oft-invoked death
Hast'n the welcome end of all my pains.
MAN. Wilt thou then serve the Philistines with that gift
Which was expressly giv'n thee to annoy [7584](#) them?
Better at home lie bed-rid, not only idle—
Inglorious, unemployed, [7585](#) with age out-worn.
But God who caused a fountain at thy prayer
From the dry ground to spring, thy thirst to allay
After the brunt [7586](#) of battle, [7587](#) can as easy
Cause light again within thy eyes to spring,
Wherewith to serve Him better than thou hast.
And I persuade me so. Why else this strength
Miraculous yet remaining in those locks?
His might continues in thee, not for naught,
Nor shall His wondrous gifts be frustrate thus.
SAM. All otherwise to me my thoughts portend, [7588](#)
That these dark orbs no more shall treat [7589](#) with light,
Nor th' other light of life continue long,
But yield to double darkness nigh at hand.
So much I feel my genial [7590](#) spirits droop,
My hopes all flat. Nature within me seems
In all her functions weary of herself,
My race of glory run, and race of shame,
And I shall shortly be with them that rest.
MAN. Believe not these suggestions, which proceed
From anguish of the mind and humors [7591](#) black,
That mingle with thy fancy. [7592](#) I however
Must not omit a father's timely care
To prosecute [7593](#) the means of thy deliverance,
By ransom or how else. Meanwhile be calm,
And healing words from these thy friends admit. [7594](#)
SAM. O that torment [7595](#) should not be confined [7596](#)
To the body's wounds and sores,

With maladies innumerable
In heart, head, breast, and reins,⁷⁵⁹⁷
But must secret passage find
To th' inmost mind,
There exercise⁷⁵⁹⁸ all his fierce accidents,⁷⁵⁹⁹
And on her purest spirits prey,
As on entrails, joints, and limbs,
With answerable⁷⁶⁰⁰ pains, but more intense,
Though void of corporal sense.⁷⁶⁰¹

My griefs not only pain me
As a ling'ring disease,
But finding no redress, ferment⁷⁶⁰² and rage,
Nor less than wounds immedicable⁷⁶⁰³
Rankle,⁷⁶⁰⁴ and fester, and gangrene⁷⁶⁰⁵
To black mortification.⁷⁶⁰⁶
Thoughts (my tormentors) armed with deadly stings
Mangle my apprehensive⁷⁶⁰⁷ tenderest parts,
Exasperate,⁷⁶⁰⁸ exulcerate, and raise
Dire inflammation which no cooling herb
Or med'cinal liquor can assuage,⁷⁶⁰⁹
Nor breath of vernal air from snowy Alp.
Sleep hath forsook and giv'n me o'er
To death's benumbing opium as my only cure.
Thence faintings, swoonings of despair,
And sense of Heav'n's desertion.

I was His nursling once, and choice delight,
His destined⁷⁶¹⁰ from the womb,
Promised by Heav'nly message twice descending.
Under His special⁷⁶¹¹ eye
Abstemious⁷⁶¹² I grew up and thrived amain.⁷⁶¹³
He led me on to mightiest deeds
(Above the nerve⁷⁶¹⁴ of mortal arm)
Against th' uncircumcised, our enemies,
But now hath cast me off as⁷⁶¹⁵ never known,
And to those cruel enemies,
Whom I by His appointment⁷⁶¹⁶ had provoked,⁷⁶¹⁷

Left me all helpless with th' irreparable loss
Of sight, reserved alive to be repeated⁷⁶¹⁸
The subject of their cruelty, or scorn.
Nor am I in the list⁷⁶¹⁹ of them that hope.
Hopeless are all my evils, all remediless.
This one prayer yet remains, might I be heard:
No long petition, speedy death,
The close of all my miseries, and the balm.
CHOR. Many are the sayings of the wise,
In ancient and in modern books enrolled,⁷⁶²⁰
Extolling patience as the truest fortitude,⁷⁶²¹
And to the bearing well of all calamities,
All chances incident to man's frail life,
Consolatories writ
With studied ⁷⁶²² argument, and much persuasion⁷⁶²³ sought,⁷⁶²⁴
Lenient⁷⁶²⁵ of grief and anxious thought.
But with th' afflicted in his pangs their sound
Little prevails, or rather seems a tune
Harsh, and of dissonant mood from his complaint,
Unless he feel within
Some source of consolation from above,
Secret refreshings, that repair⁷⁶²⁶ his strength,
And fainting spirits uphold.
God of our fathers, what is man!
That Thou towards him with hand so various,⁷⁶²⁷
Or might I say contrarious,
Temper'st Thy providence through his short course⁷⁶²⁸
Not evenly, as thou rul'st
The Angelic orders and inferior creatures mute,
Irrational and brute.
Nor do I name of men the common rout,⁷⁶²⁹
That wand'ring loose⁷⁶³⁰ about
Grow up and perish, as⁷⁶³¹ the summer fly,
Heads without name no more remembered!
But such as Thou hast solemnly⁷⁶³² elected,⁷⁶³³
With gifts and graces eminently adorned

To some great work, Thy glory
And people's safety,⁷⁶³⁴ which in part they effect.
Yet toward these thus dignified,⁷⁶³⁵ Thou oft
Amidst their height of noon
Changest Thy countenance and Thy hand, with no regard
Of highest favors past
From Thee on them, or them to Thee of service.

Nor only dost degrade them, or remit⁷⁶³⁶
To life obscured, which were a fair dismissal,
But throw'st them lower than Thou did'st exalt them high,
Unseemly falls,⁷⁶³⁷ in human eye,
Too grievous for the trespass or omission—
Oft leav'st them to the hostile sword
Of heathen and profane,⁷⁶³⁸ their carcasses
To dogs and fowls a prey, or else captived,
Or to the unjust tribunals, under change of times,
And condemnation of the ungrateful multitude.
If these they scape, perhaps in poverty
With sickness and disease Thou bow'st them down,
Painful diseases and deformed,
In crude⁷⁶³⁹ old age,
Though not disordinate,⁷⁶⁴⁰ yet causeless suff 'ring
The punishment of dissolute days. In fine,⁷⁶⁴¹
Just or unjust alike seem miserable,
For oft alike both come to evil end.

So⁷⁶⁴² deal not, with this once Thy glorious champion,
The image of Thy strength, and mighty minister.⁷⁶⁴³
What do I beg? How hast Thou dealt⁷⁶⁴⁴ already?
Behold him in this state calamitous, and turn
His labors—for Thou canst—to peaceful end.

But who is this, what thing of sea or land?
Female of sex it seems,
That so bedecked, ornate, and gay,
Comes this way sailing
Like a stately ship
Of Tarsus,⁷⁶⁴⁵ bound for th' Isles

Of Javan⁷⁶⁴⁶ or Gadier,⁷⁶⁴⁷
With all her bravery⁷⁶⁴⁸ on, and tackle⁷⁶⁴⁹ trim,⁷⁶⁵⁰
Sails filled, and streamers⁷⁶⁵¹ waving
(Courted by all the winds that hold them play),⁷⁶⁵²
An amber scent of odorous perfume
Her harbinger,⁷⁶⁵³ a damsel train⁷⁶⁵⁴ behind.
Some rich Philistian matron she may seem,
And now at nearer view, no other, certain,
Than Dalila, thy wife.
SAM. My wife, my traitress, let her not come near me.
CHOR. Yet on she moves, now stands and eyes thee fixed,⁷⁶⁵⁵
About t' have spoke, but now, with head declined
Like a fair flower surcharged⁷⁶⁵⁶ with dew, she weeps
And words addressed⁷⁶⁵⁷ seem into tears dissolved,
Wetting the borders of her silken veil.
But now again she makes address⁷⁶⁵⁸ to speak.
DAL. With doubtful feet and wavering resolution
I came, still dreading thy displeasure, Samson,
Which to have merited, without excuse,
I cannot but acknowledge. Yet if tears
May expiate (though the fact more evil drew⁷⁶⁵⁹
In the perverse⁷⁶⁶⁰ event than I foresaw)
My penance hath not slack'ned, though my pardon
No way assured. But conjugal affection
Prevailing over fear and timorous doubt,
Hath led me on, desirous to behold
Once more thy face, and know of thy estate.⁷⁶⁶¹
If aught in my ability may serve
To lighten what thou suffer'st, and appease
Thy mind with what amends is in my power,
Though late, yet in some part to recompense
My rash but more unfortunate misdeed.
SAM. Out, out hyena! These are thy wonted⁷⁶⁶² arts,
And arts of every woman false like thee,
To break all faith, all vows, deceive, betray,
Then as⁷⁶⁶³ repentant to submit, beseech

And reconciliation move⁷⁶⁶⁴ with feigned remorse,
Confess, and promise wonders in her change,
Not truly penitent, but chief ⁷⁶⁶⁵ to try⁷⁶⁶⁶
Her husband, how far urged⁷⁶⁶⁷ his patience bears,
His virtue or weakness which way t' assail,
Then with more cautious and instructed⁷⁶⁶⁸ skill
Again transgresses, and again submits,
That⁷⁶⁶⁹ wisest and best men full oft beguiled
With goodness, principled⁷⁶⁷⁰ not to reject
The penitent, but ever to forgive,
Are drawn to wear out miserable days,
Entangled with a pois'nous bosom⁷⁶⁷¹ snake,
If not by quick destruction soon cut off,
As I by thee, to ages an example.
DAL. Yet hear me Samson. Not that I endeavor
To lessen or extenuate my offence,
But that on th' other side if it be weighed
By itself, with aggravations⁷⁶⁷² not surcharged,⁷⁶⁷³
Or else with just allowance counterpoised,⁷⁶⁷⁴
I may, if possible, thy pardon find
The easier towards me, or thy hatred less.
First granting, as I do, it was a weakness
In me, but incident⁷⁶⁷⁵ to all our sex,
Curiosity, inquisitive, importune⁷⁶⁷⁶
Of secrets, then with like infirmity
To publish⁷⁶⁷⁷ them, both common female faults.
Was it not weakness also to make known,
For⁷⁶⁷⁸ importunity (that is, for naught),
Wherein consisted all thy strength and safety?
To what I did thou showd'st me first the way.
But I to enemies revealed, and should not.
Nor should'st thou have trusted that to woman's frailty:
Ere I to thee, thou to thyself wast cruel.
Let weakness then with weakness come to parle,⁷⁶⁷⁹
So near related, or the same of kind,
Thine forgive mine, that men may censure thine

The gentler, if severely thou exact not
More strength from me than in thyself was found.
And what if love, which thou interpret'st⁷⁶⁸⁰ hate,
The jealousy of love, powerful of sway
In human hearts, nor less in mine towards thee,
Caused what I did? I saw thee mutable⁷⁶⁸¹
Of fancy,⁷⁶⁸² feared lest one day thou would'st leave me
As her at Timna,⁷⁶⁸³ sought by all means therefore
How to endear, and hold thee to me firmest.
No better way I saw than by importuning
To learn thy secrets, get into my power
Thy key of strength and safety. Thou wilt say,
Why then revealed? I was assured by those
Who tempted me that nothing was designed⁷⁶⁸⁴
Against thee but safe custody, and hold.⁷⁶⁸⁵
That made for me.⁷⁶⁸⁶ I knew that liberty
Would draw thee forth to perilous enterprises,
While I at home sat full of cares and fears,
Wailing thy absence in my widowed bed.
Here⁷⁶⁸⁷ I should still enjoy thee day and night,
Mine and love's prisoner, not the Philistines',
Whole⁷⁶⁸⁸ to myself, unhazarded⁷⁶⁸⁹ abroad,
Fearless⁷⁶⁹⁰ at home of partners⁷⁶⁹¹ in my love.
These reasons in love's law have passed for good,
Though fond⁷⁶⁹² and reasonless to some, perhaps.
And love hath oft, well meaning, wrought much woe,
Yet always pity or pardon hath obtained.
Be not unlike all others, not austere⁷⁶⁹³
As thou art strong, inflexible as steel.
If thou in strength all mortals dost exceed,
In uncompassionate anger do not so.
SAM. How cunningly the sorceress displays
Her own transgressions, to upbraid me mine!
That malice, not repentance, brought thee hither,
By this appears. I gave, thou say'st, th' example,
I led the way. Bitter reproach, but true.

I to myself was false ere thou to me.
Such pardon therefore as I give my folly,
Take to thy wicked deed, which when thou see'st
Impartial, self-severe, inexorable,
Thou wilt renounce thy seeking, and much rather
Confess it feigned. Weakness is thy excuse,
And I believe it—weakness to resist
Philistian gold! If weakness may excuse,
What murderer, what traitor, parricide,
Incestuous, sacrilegious, but may plead it?
All wickedness is weakness: that plea therefore
With God or man will gain thee no remission.
But love constrain'd⁷⁶⁹⁴ thee! Call it furious⁷⁶⁹⁵ rage⁷⁶⁹⁶
To satisfy thy lust. Love seeks to have love.
My love how could'st thou hope, who took'st the way
To raise in me inexpiable⁷⁶⁹⁷ hate,
Knowing⁷⁶⁹⁸ as needs I must, by thee betrayed?
In vain thou striv'st to cover shame with shame,
Or by evasions thy crime uncover'st more.
DAL. Since thou determin'st⁷⁶⁹⁹ weakness for no plea
In man or woman, though to thy own condemning,
Hear what assaults I had, what snares besides,
What sieges girt me round, ere I consented,
Which might have awed the best resolved of men,
The constantest t' have yielded without blame.
It was not gold, as to my charge thou lay'st,
That wrought⁷⁷⁰⁰ with me. Thou know'st the magistrates⁷⁷⁰¹
And princes of my country came in person,
Solicited, commanded, threatened, urged,
Adjured⁷⁷⁰² by all the bonds of civil duty
And of religion, pressed⁷⁷⁰³ how just it was,
How honorable, how glorious to entrap
A common⁷⁷⁰⁴ enemy, who had destroyed
Such numbers of our nation. And the priest
Was not behind,⁷⁷⁰⁵ but ever at my ear,
Preaching how meritorious with the gods

It would be to ensnare an irreligious
Dishonorer of Dagon. What had I
T' oppose against such powerful arguments?
Only my love of thee held long debate,
And combated in silence all these reasons
With hard contest.⁷⁷⁰⁶ At length that grounded⁷⁷⁰⁷ maxim,
So rife⁷⁷⁰⁸ and celebrated in the mouths
Of wisest men, that to the public good
Private respects⁷⁷⁰⁹ must yield, with grave authority
Took full possession of me, and prevailed,
Virtue, as I thought—truth—duty so enjoining.⁷⁷¹⁰
SAM. I thought where all thy circling wiles would end!
In feigned religion, smooth hypocrisy.
But had thy love, still odiously⁷⁷¹¹ pretended,
Been, as it ought, sincere, it would have taught thee
Far other reasonings, brought forth other deeds.
I before⁷⁷¹² all the daughters of my tribe
And of my nation chose thee from among
My enemies, loved thee, as too well thou knew'st—
Too well—unbosomed all my secrets to thee,
Not out of levity,⁷⁷¹³ but over-pow' red
By thy request, who⁷⁷¹⁴ could deny thee nothing,
Yet now am judged an enemy. Why then
Didst thou at first receive me for thy husband,
Then, as since then, thy country's foe professed?⁷⁷¹⁵
Being once a wife, for me thou wast to leave
Parents and country, nor was I their⁷⁷¹⁶ subject,⁷⁷¹⁷
Nor under their protection, but my own,
Thou mine,⁷⁷¹⁸ not theirs. If aught against my life
Thy country sought of thee, it sought unjustly,
Against the law of Nature, law of nations,
No more thy country, but an impious crew
Of men conspiring to uphold their state
By worse than hostile deeds, violating the ends
For which our country is a name so dear,
Not therefore to be obeyed. But zeal moved thee!

To please thy gods thou didst it—gods unable
To acquit⁷⁷¹⁹ themselves and prosecute their foes.
But by ungodly deeds, the contradiction
Of their own deity, gods cannot be—
Less therefore to be pleased, obeyed, or feared.
These false pretexts and varnished colors failing,
Bare in thy guilt how foul must thou appear!
DAL. In argument with men a woman ever
Goes by the worse,⁷⁷²⁰ whatever be her cause.
SAM. For want of words no doubt, or lack of breath!
Witness when I was worried with⁷⁷²¹ thy peals.⁷⁷²²
DAL. I was a fool, too rash, and quite mistaken
In what I thought would have succeeded best.
Let me obtain forgiveness of thee, Samson!
Afford⁷⁷²³ me place⁷⁷²⁴ to show what recompense
Towards thee I intend for what I have misdone,
Misguided. Only what remains past cure
Bear not too sensibly,⁷⁷²⁵ nor still insist
T' afflict thyself in vain. Though sight be lost,
Life yet hath many solaces, enjoyed
Where other senses want⁷⁷²⁶ not their delights,
At home in leisure and domestic ease,
Exempt from many a care and chance⁷⁷²⁷ to which
Eye-sight exposes, daily, men abroad.⁷⁷²⁸
I to the lords will intercede, not doubting
Their favorable ear,⁷⁷²⁹ that I may fetch thee
From forth this loathsome prison-house, t' abide
With me, where my redoubled love and care,
With nursing diligence (to me glad office),⁷⁷³⁰
May ever tend about thee to⁷⁷³¹ old age
With all things grateful⁷⁷³² cheered, and so supplied
That what by me thou hast lost thou least shalt miss.
SAM. No, no, of my condition take no care!
It fits not.⁷⁷³³ Thou and I long since are twain,⁷⁷³⁴
Nor think me so unwary or accurst
To bring my feet again into the snare

Where once I have been caught. I know thy trains,⁷⁷³⁵
Though dearly to my cost! Thy ginns,⁷⁷³⁶ and toils.⁷⁷³⁷
Thy fair enchanted cup, and warbling charms
No more on me have power, their force is nulled.⁷⁷³⁸
So much of adders' wisdom⁷⁷³⁹ I have learned
To fence my ear against thy sorceries.
If in my flower of youth and strength, when all men
Loved, honored, feared me, thou alone could hate me,
Thy husband, slight⁷⁷⁴⁰ me, sell⁷⁷⁴¹ me, and forego⁷⁷⁴² me,
How would'st thou use me now, blind, and thereby
Deceiveable, in most things as a child
Helpless, thence easily contemned,⁷⁷⁴³ and scorned,
And last⁷⁷⁴⁴ neglected? How would'st thou insult⁷⁷⁴⁵
When I must live uxorious⁷⁷⁴⁶ to thy will
In perfect⁷⁷⁴⁷ thralldom?⁷⁷⁴⁸ How again betray me,
Bearing my words and doings to the lords
To gloss⁷⁷⁴⁹ upon, and censuring,⁷⁷⁵⁰ frown or smile?
This jail I count⁷⁷⁵¹ the house of liberty
To thine, whose doors my feet shall never enter!
DAL. Let me approach, at least, and touch thy hand.
SAM. Not for thy life, lest fierce remembrance wake
My sudden rage to tear thee joint by joint.
At distance I forgive thee, go with that.
Bewail thy falsehood, and the pious works
It hath brought forth to make thee memorable
Among illustrious women, faithful wives.
Cherish thy hast'ned widowhood with the gold
Of matrimonial treason. So farewell.
DAL. I see thou art implacable,⁷⁷⁵² more deaf
To prayers than winds and seas. Yet winds to seas
Are reconciled at length, and sea to shore.
Thy anger, unappeasable, still rages,
Eternal tempest never to be calmed.
Why do I humble thus myself, and suing⁷⁷⁵³
For peace, reap nothing but repulse and hate—
Bid go,⁷⁷⁵⁴ with evil omen and the brand

Of infamy upon my name denounced?
To mix with thy concernments⁷⁷⁵⁵ I desist
Henceforth, nor too much disapprove my own.
Fame if not double-faced is double-mouthed,
And with contrary blast proclaims most deeds.
On both his wings, one black, th' other white,
Bears greatest names in his wild airy flight.
My name perhaps among the circumcised⁷⁷⁵⁶
In Dan, in Judah, and the bordering tribes,
To all posterity may stand defamed,
With malediction mentioned, and the blot
Of falsehood most unconjugal traduced.⁷⁷⁵⁷
But in my country, where I most desire,
In Ecron, Gaza, Asdod, and in Gath
I shall be named among the famousest
Of women, sung at solemn festivals,
Living and dead recorded,⁷⁷⁵⁸ who to save
Her country from a fierce destroyer chose
Above⁷⁷⁵⁹ the faith of wedlock-bands⁷⁷⁶⁰—my tomb
With odors⁷⁷⁶¹ visited and annual flowers.
Not less renowned than in Mount Ephraim
Jael, who with inhospitable guile
Smote Sisera sleeping through the temples nailed.⁷⁷⁶²
Nor shall I count it heinous⁷⁷⁶³ to enjoy
The public marks of honor and reward
Conferred upon me, for the piety
Which to my country I was judged t' have shown.
At this whoever envies or repines⁷⁷⁶⁴
I leave him to his lot, and like my own.
CHOR. She's gone, a manifest⁷⁷⁶⁵ serpent by her sting
Discovered in the end, till now concealed.
SAM. So let her go. God sent her to debase me
And aggravate my folly, who committed 1000
To such a viper his most sacred trust
Of secrecy, my safety, and my life.
CHOR. Yet beauty, though injurious, hath strange power,

After offence returning, to regain
Love once possessed, nor can be easily
Repulsed, without much inward passion felt
And secret sting of amorous remorse.
SAM. Love-quarrels oft in pleasing concord end.
Not wedlock-treachery, endangering life.
CHOR. It is not virtue, wisdom, valor, wit, 1010
Strength, comeliness of shape, or amplest merit
That woman's love can win or long inherit, [7766](#)
But what it is, hard is to say,
Harder to hit [7767](#)
(Which way soever men refer [7768](#) it),
Much like thy riddle, Samson, [7769](#) in one day
Or seven, though one should musing sit.
If any of these or all, the Timnian bride
Had not so soon preferred
Thy paranymp, [7770](#) worthless to thee compared, 1020
Successor in thy bed,
Nor both [7771](#) so loosely disallied
Their nuptials, nor this last so treacherously
Had shorn the fatal [7772](#) harvest of thy head.
Is it for that [7773](#) such outward ornament
Was lavished on their sex, that inward gifts
Were left for haste unfinished, judgment scant, [7774](#)
Capacity not raised [7775](#) to apprehend
Or value what is best
In choice, but ofttest to affect [7776](#) the wrong? 1030
Or was too much of self-love mixed,
Of constancy no root [7777](#) infixed, [7778](#)
That either they love nothing, or not long?
What e'er it be, to wisest men and best
Seeming at first all Heav'nly under virgin veil,
Soft, modest, meek, demure, [7779](#)
Once joined the contrary she proves, a thorn
Intestine, far within defensive [7780](#) arms
A cleaving [7781](#) mischief, in [7782](#) his way to virtue

Adverse and turbulent,⁷⁷⁸³ or by her charms 1040

Draws him awry,⁷⁷⁸⁴ enslaved

With dotage,⁷⁷⁸⁵ and his sense depraved⁷⁷⁸⁶

To folly and shameful deeds which ruin ends.

What pilot so expert but needs must wreck,

Embarked with such a steer-mate at the helm?

Favored of Heav'n who finds

One⁷⁷⁸⁷ virtuous (rarely found),

That in domestic good combines.⁷⁷⁸⁸

Happy that house! His way to peace is smooth.

But virtue which breaks through all opposition, 1050

And all temptation can remove

Most shines and most is acceptable above.

Therefore God's universal Law

Gave to the man despotic⁷⁷⁸⁹ power

Over his female in due⁷⁷⁹⁰ awe,⁷⁷⁹¹

Nor from that right to part⁷⁷⁹² an hour,

Smile she⁷⁷⁹³ or lour.⁷⁷⁹⁴

So shall he least confusion draw

On his whole life, not swayed

By female usurpation, nor dismayed. 1060

But had we best retire, I see a storm?

SAM. Fair days have oft contracted⁷⁷⁹⁵ wind and rain.

CHOR. But this another kind of tempest brings.

SAM. Be less abstruse,⁷⁷⁹⁶ my riddling days are past.

CHOR. Look now for no enchanting voice, nor fear

The bait of honeyed words. A rougher tongue

Draws hitherward. I know him by his stride,

The giant Harapha⁷⁷⁹⁷ of Gath, his look

Haughty as is his pile⁷⁷⁹⁸ high-built and proud.

Comes he in peace? What wind hath blown him hither 1070

I less conjecture⁷⁷⁹⁹ than when first I saw

The sumptuous⁷⁸⁰⁰ Dalila floating this way.

His habit⁷⁸⁰¹ carries peace, his brow defiance.

SAM. Or⁷⁸⁰² peace or not, alike to me he comes.

CHOR. His fraught⁷⁸⁰³ we soon shall know. He now arrives.

HAR. I come not, Samson, to condole thy chance,⁷⁸⁰⁴
As these perhaps, yet wish it had not been,
Though for no friendly intent. I am of Gath.
Men call me Harapha, of stock renowned
As Og⁷⁸⁰⁵ or Anak⁷⁸⁰⁶ and the Emims⁷⁸⁰⁷ old 1080
That Kiriathaim⁷⁸⁰⁸ held: thou knowst me now,
If thou at all art known. Much I have heard
Of thy prodigious⁷⁸⁰⁹ might and feats performed,
Incredible to me, in this displeased,
That I was never present on the place
Of those encounters, where we might have tried⁷⁸¹⁰
Each other's force in camp⁷⁸¹¹ or listed field:⁷⁸¹²
And now am come to see of whom such noise
Hath walked about, and each limb to survey,
If thy appearance answer loud report.⁷⁸¹³ 1090
SAM. The way to know were not to see but taste.
HAR. Dost thou already single⁷⁸¹⁴ me? I thought
Gyves⁷⁸¹⁵ and the mill had tamed thee. O that fortune
Had brought me to the field where thou art famed
T' have wrought such wonders with an ass's jaw!
I should have forced thee soon wish other arms,
Or left thy carcass where the ass lay thrown.
So had the glory of prowess been recovered
To Palestine, won by a Philistine
From⁷⁸¹⁶ the unforeskinned race,⁷⁸¹⁷ of whom thou bear'st 1100
The highest name for valiant acts. That honor
Certain t' have won by mortal⁷⁸¹⁸ duel from thee,
I lose, prevented by thy eyes put out.
SAM. Boast not of what thou would'st have done, but do
What then thou would'st. Thou see'st it in thy hand.
HAR. To combat with a blind man I disdain.
And thou hast need much washing to be⁷⁸¹⁹ touched.
SAM. Such usage as your honorable lords
Afford me, assassinated⁷⁸²⁰ and betrayed,
Who durst not with their whole united powers 1110
In fight withstand me single and unarmed,

Nor in the house with chamber⁷⁸²¹ ambushes
Close-banded⁷⁸²² durst attack me—no, not sleeping—
Till they had hired a woman with their gold,
Breaking her marriage faith to circumvent⁷⁸²³ me.
Therefore without feigned shifts⁷⁸²⁴ let be assigned
Some narrow place enclosed, where sight may give thee
(Or rather flight) no great advantage on me.
Then put on all thy gorgeous⁷⁸²⁵ arms,⁷⁸²⁶ thy helmet
And brigandine⁷⁸²⁷ of brass, thy broad habergeon,⁷⁸²⁸ 1120
Vant-brass⁷⁸²⁹ and greves,⁷⁸³⁰ and gauntlet,⁷⁸³¹ add thy spear,
A weaver's beam,⁷⁸³² and seven-times-folded⁷⁸³³ shield.
I only with an oaken staff will meet thee,
And raise such out-cries on thy clattered⁷⁸³⁴ iron
Which long shall not with-hold me from thy head,
That in a little time, while breath remains thee,
Thou oft shalt wish thyself at Gath to boast
Again in safety what thou would'st have done
To Samson, but shalt never see Gath more.
HAR. Thou durst not thus disparage glorious arms, 1130
Which greatest heroes have in battle worn,
Their ornament and safety, had not spells
And black enchantments, some magician's art
Armed thee or charmed thee strong, which thou from Heav'n
Feign'd'st at thy birth was giv'n thee in thy hair,
Where strength can least abide, though all thy hairs
Were bristles ranged like those that ridge the back
Of chafed⁷⁸³⁵ wild boars or ruffled⁷⁸³⁶ porcupines.
SAM. I know no spells, use no forbidden arts.
My trust is in the living God who gave me 1140
At my nativity this strength, diffused
No less through all my sinews, joints and bones,
Than thine, while⁷⁸³⁷ I preserved these locks unshorn,
The pledge of my unviolated vow.
For proof hereof, if Dagon be thy god,
Go to his temple, invoke⁷⁸³⁸ his aid
With solemnest devotion, spread before him

How highly it concerns his glory now
To frustrate and dissolve these magic spells,
Which I to be the power of Israel's God 1150
Avow, and challenge Dagon to the test,
Offering to combat thee, his champion bold,
With th' utmost of his godhead seconded:⁷⁸³⁹
Then thou shalt see, or rather to thy sorrow
Soon feel, whose God is strongest, thine or mine.
HAR. Presume not on thy God, what e'er He be.
Thee He regards⁷⁸⁴⁰ not, owns⁷⁸⁴¹ not, hath cut off
Quite from his⁷⁸⁴² people and delivered up
Into thy enemies' hand, permitted them
To put out both thine eyes, and fettered send thee 1160
Into the common prison, there to grind⁷⁸⁴³
Among the slaves and asses, thy comrades,
As good for nothing else, no better service
With those thy boist'rous⁷⁸⁴⁴ locks. No worthy match
For valor to assail, nor by the sword
Of noble warrior, so to stain his honor,
But by the barber's razor best subdued.⁷⁸⁴⁵
SAM. All these indignities, for such they are
From thine,⁷⁸⁴⁶ these evils I deserve and more,
Acknowledge them from God inflicted on me 1170
Justly, yet despair not of His final pardon
Whose ear is ever open, and His eye
Gracious⁷⁸⁴⁷ to re-admit the suppliant.
In confidence whereof I once again
Defy⁷⁸⁴⁸ thee to the trial of mortal fight,
By combat to decide whose god is God,
Thine or whom I with Israel's sons adore.
HAR. Fair honor that thou dost thy God, in trusting
He will accept thee to defend his cause—
A murderer, a revoler,⁷⁸⁴⁹ and a robber. 1180
SAM. Tongue-doughty⁷⁸⁵⁰ giant, how dost thou prove me these?
HAR. Is not thy nation subject to our lords?
Their magistrates confessed it, when they took thee

As a league⁷⁸⁵¹ breaker and delivered, bound,
Into our hands—for hadst thou not committed
Notorious⁷⁸⁵² murder on those thirty men
At Askalon, who never did thee harm,
Then like a robber strip'dst them of their robes?⁷⁸⁵³
The Philistines, when thou hadst broke the league,
Went up with armed powers, thee only seeking, 1190
To others did no violence nor spoil.⁷⁸⁵⁴
SAM. Among the daughters of the Philistines
I chose a wife, which argued⁷⁸⁵⁵ me no foe,
And in your city held my nuptial feast.
But your ill-meaning politician⁷⁸⁵⁶ lords,
Under pretence of bridal friends and guests,
Appointed to await me thirty spies,
Who threat'ning cruel death constrained⁷⁸⁵⁷ the bride
To wring from me and tell to them my secret
That solved the riddle which I had proposed. 1200
When I perceived all set on enmity,
As⁷⁸⁵⁸ on my enemies, wherever chanced,
I used⁷⁸⁵⁹ hostility, and took their spoil
To pay my underminers⁷⁸⁶⁰ in their coin.
My nation was subjected to your lords.
It was the force of conquest; force with force
Is well ejected when the conquered can.
But I a private⁷⁸⁶¹ person, whom my country
As a league⁷⁸⁶² -breaker gave up, ⁷⁸⁶³ bound, presumed⁷⁸⁶⁴
Single⁷⁸⁶⁵ rebellion and did hostile acts? 1210
I was no private but a person raised
With strength sufficient, and command from Heav'n,
To free my country. If their servile minds
Me their deliverer sent would not receive,
But to their masters gave me up for nought,
Th' unworthier they. Whence to this day they serve.
I was to do my part from Heav'n assigned,
And had performed it if my known⁷⁸⁶⁶ offense
Had not disabled me⁷⁸⁶⁷ —not all your force.

These shifts⁷⁸⁶⁸ refuted, answer thy appellant⁷⁸⁶⁹ 1220
(Though by his blindness maimed for high attempts)
Who now defies⁷⁸⁷⁰ thee thrice⁷⁸⁷¹ to single fight,
As a petty⁷⁸⁷² enterprise⁷⁸⁷³ of small⁷⁸⁷⁴ enforce.⁷⁸⁷⁵
HAR. With thee, a man condemned, a slave enrolled,
Due by the law to capital punishment?
To fight with thee no man of arms will deign.
SAM. Cam'st thou for this, vain boaster, to survey⁷⁸⁷⁶ me,
To descant⁷⁸⁷⁷ on my strength, and give thy verdict?
Come nearer, part not hence so slight informed—
But take good heed my hand survey not thee. 1230
HAR. O Baal-zebub!⁷⁸⁷⁸ Can my ears, unused,⁷⁸⁷⁹
Hear these dishonors and not render⁷⁸⁸⁰ death?
SAM. No man withholds thee, nothing from thy hand
Fear I incurable: bring up thy van!⁷⁸⁸¹
My heels are fettered, but my fist is free.
HAR. This insolence⁷⁸⁸² other kind of answer fits.⁷⁸⁸³
SAM. Go, baffled⁷⁸⁸⁴ coward, lest I run upon thee,
Though in these chains—bulk⁷⁸⁸⁵ without spirit vast!—⁷⁸⁸⁶
And with one buffet⁷⁸⁸⁷ lay thy structure⁷⁸⁸⁸ low,
Or swing thee in the air, then dash thee down 1240
To th' hazard⁷⁸⁸⁹ of thy brains and shattered sides.
HAR. By Astaroth, ere long thou shalt lament
These braveries,⁷⁸⁹⁰ in irons loaden on thee.
CHOR. His giantship is gone, somewhat crestfall'n,
Stalking⁷⁸⁹¹ with less unconscionable⁷⁸⁹² strides
And lower looks, but in a sultry⁷⁸⁹³ chafe.⁷⁸⁹⁴
SAM. I dread him not, nor all his giant-brood,
Though fame⁷⁸⁹⁵ divulge⁷⁸⁹⁶ him father of five sons,
All of gigantic size, Goliath chief.⁷⁸⁹⁷
CHOR. He will directly to the lords, I fear,
And with malicious counsel stir them up
Some way or other yet further to afflict thee.
SAM. He must allege some cause, and offered fight
Will not dare mention, lest a question rise
Whether he durst accept the offer or not,

And that he durst not plain enough appeared.
Much more affliction than already felt
They cannot well impose, nor I sustain,
If they intend advantage⁷⁸⁹⁸ of my labors,
The work of many hands, which earns my keeping 1260
With no small profit daily to my owners.

But come what will, my deadliest foe will prove
My speediest friend, by death to rid me hence:
The worst that he can give, to me the best.
Yet so it may fall out, because their end
Is hate, not help to me, it may—with mine—⁷⁸⁹⁹
Draw their own ruin who attempt the deed.

CHOR. Oh how comely⁷⁹⁰⁰ it is, and how reviving
To the spirits of just men long oppressed,
When God into the hands of their deliverer 1270
Puts invincible might

To quell⁷⁹⁰¹ the mighty of the earth, th' oppressor,
The brute and boist'rous⁷⁹⁰² force of violent men,
Hardy⁷⁹⁰³ and industrious⁷⁹⁰⁴ to support
Tyrannic power, but raging⁷⁹⁰⁵ to pursue
The righteous and all such as honor truth!
He⁷⁹⁰⁶ all their ammunition⁷⁹⁰⁷

And feats of war defeats
With plain heroic magnitude of mind
And celestial vigor armed,
Their armories and magazines contemns,⁷⁹⁰⁸
Renders them useless, while
With wingèd expedition,⁷⁹⁰⁹
Swift as the lightning glance,⁷⁹¹⁰ he executes⁷⁹¹¹
His errand on the wicked, who surprised
Lose their defence, distracted⁷⁹¹² and amazed.⁷⁹¹³

But patience is more oft the exercise⁷⁹¹⁴
Of Saints, the trial of their fortitude,⁷⁹¹⁵
Making them each his own deliverer,
And victor over all⁷⁹¹⁶
That tyranny or fortune can inflict.

Either of these is in thy lot,
Samson, with might endued⁷⁹¹⁷
Above the sons of men. But sight bereaved⁷⁹¹⁸
May chance to number thee with those
Whom patience finally must crown.
This idol's day hath been to thee no day of rest, Laboring thy mind
More than the working day thy hands.
And yet perhaps more trouble is behind.⁷⁹¹⁹
For I descry this way
Some other tending.⁷⁹²⁰ In his hand
A scepter or quaint⁷⁹²¹ staff he bears,
Comes on amain,⁷⁹²² speed in his look.
By his habit I discern him now
A public officer, and now at hand.
His message will be short and voluble.⁷⁹²³
OFF. Hebrews, the pris'ner Samson here I seek.
CHOR. His manacles remark⁷⁹²⁴ him. There he sits.
OFF. Samson, to thee our lords thus bid me say:
This day to Dagon is a solemn feast,
With sacrifices, triumph, pomp,⁷⁹²⁵ and games.
Thy strength they know surpassing human rate,⁷⁹²⁶
And now some public proof⁷⁹²⁷ thereof require
To honor this great feast and great assembly.
Rise therefore with all speed and come along,
Where I will see thee heartn'd⁷⁹²⁸ and fresh clad
To appear as fits before th' illustrious lords.
SAM. Thou know'st I am an Hebrew. Therefore tell them
Our Law forbids at their religious rites
My presence. For that cause I cannot come.
OFF. This answer, be assured, will not content them.
SAM. Have they not sword-players, and every sort
Of gymnic artists, wrestlers, riders, runners,
Jugglers and dancers, antics,⁷⁹²⁹ mummers,⁷⁹³⁰ mimics,⁷⁹³¹
But they must pick me out, with shackles tired
And over-labored at their public mill,
To make⁷⁹³² them sport⁷⁹³³ with blind activity?

Do they not seek occasion of new quarrels
On my refusal to distress⁷⁹³⁴ me more, 1330
Or make a game of my calamities?
Return the way thou cam'st. I will not come.
OFF. Regard⁷⁹³⁵ thyself: this will offend them highly.
SAM. Myself? My conscience and internal peace!
Can they think me so broken, so debased
With corporal servitude, that my mind ever
Will condescend to such absurd commands?
Although their drudge,⁷⁹³⁶ to be their fool or jester,
And in my midst of sorrow and heart-grief
To show them feats, and play⁷⁹³⁷ before their god, 1340
The worst of all indignities, yet on me
Joined⁷⁹³⁸ with extreme contempt? I will not come.
OFF. My message was imposed on me with speed,
Brooks no delay: is this thy resolution?⁷⁹³⁹
SAM. So take it, with what speed thy message needs.
OFF. I am sorry⁷⁹⁴⁰ what this stoutness⁷⁹⁴¹ will produce.
SAM. Perhaps thou shalt have cause to sorrow indeed.
CHOR. Consider, Samson. Matters now are strained
Up to the height, whether to hold or break.
He's gone, and who knows how he may report 1350
Thy words by adding fuel to the flame?
Expect another message more imperious,
More lordly thund'ring than thou well wilt bear.
SAM. Shall I abuse this consecrated gift
Of strength, again returning with my hair
After my great transgression? So requite⁷⁹⁴²
Favor⁷⁹⁴³ renewed, and add a greater sin
By prostituting holy things to idols?
A Nazarite⁷⁹⁴⁴ in place abominable
Vaunting⁷⁹⁴⁵ my strength in honor to their Dagon? 1360
Besides, how vile, contemptible, ridiculous,
What act more execrably unclean, profane?
CHOR. Yet with this strength thou serv'st the Philistines,
Idolatrous, uncircumcised, unclean.

SAM. Not in their idol-worship, but by labor
Honest and lawful to deserve my food
Of those who have me in their civil⁷⁹⁴⁶ power.
CHOR. Where the heart joins not, outward acts defile not.
SAM. Where outward force constrains,⁷⁹⁴⁷ the sentence⁷⁹⁴⁸ holds.
But who constrains me to the temple of Dagon,
Not dragging? The Philistian lords command!
Commands are no constraints. If I obey them,
I do it freely, venturing to displease
God for the fear of man, and man prefer,
Set God behind—which in His jealousy⁷⁹⁴⁹
Shall never, unrepented, find forgiveness.
Yet that He may dispense⁷⁹⁵⁰ with me or thee,
Present in temples at idolatrous rites
For some important cause, thou need'st not doubt.
CHOR. How thou wilt here come off surmounts my reach. 1380
SAM. Be of good courage. I begin to feel
Some rousing⁷⁹⁵¹ motions in me which dispose⁷⁹⁵²
To something extraordinary my thoughts.
I with this messenger will go along—
Nothing to do, be sure, that may dishonor
Our Law, or stain my vow of Nazarite.
If there be aught of presage⁷⁹⁵³ in the mind,
This day will be remarkable in my life
By some great act, or of my days the last.
CHOR. In time thou hast resolved: the man returns. 1390
OFF. Samson, this second message from our lords
To thee I am bid say. Art thou our slave,
Our captive, at the public mill our drudge,
And dar'st thou at our sending and command
Dispute thy coming? Come without delay,
Or we shall find⁷⁹⁵⁴ such engines⁷⁹⁵⁵ to assail⁷⁹⁵⁶
And hamper⁷⁹⁵⁷ thee, as thou shalt come of force,
Though thou wert firmlier fast'ned than a rock.
SAM. I could be well content to try⁷⁹⁵⁸ their art,⁷⁹⁵⁹
Which to no few of them would prove pernicious.⁷⁹⁶⁰ 1400

Yet knowing their advantages too many,
Because they shall⁷⁹⁶¹ not trail⁷⁹⁶² me through their streets
Like a wild beast, I am content to go.
Masters' commands come with a power resistless
To such as owe them absolute subjection,
And for a life who will not change his purpose?
(So mutable are all the ways of men)
Yet this be sure, in nothing to comply
Scandalous or forbidden in our Law.
OFF. I praise thy resolution. Doff ⁷⁹⁶³ these links:⁷⁹⁶⁴ 1410
By this compliance thou wilt win the lords
To favor, and perhaps to set thee free.
SAM. Brethren, farewell. Your company along
I will not wish, lest it perhaps offend them
To see me girt⁷⁹⁶⁵ with friends. And how the sight
Of me as of a common enemy,
So dreaded once, may now exasperate⁷⁹⁶⁶ them
I know not. Lords are lordliest in their wine,
And the well-feasted priest then soonest fired
With zeal, if aught religion seem concerned. 1420
No less the people on their holy-days
Impetuous,⁷⁹⁶⁷ insolent,⁷⁹⁶⁸ unquenchable.
Happ'n what may, of me expect to hear
Nothing dishonorable, impure, unworthy
Our God, our Law, my nation, or myself.
The last of me or no, I cannot warrant.⁷⁹⁶⁹
CHOR. Go, and the Holy One
Of Israel be thy guide
To what may serve
His glory best, and spread His name
Great among the heathen round—⁷⁹⁷⁰ 1430
Send thee the Angel of thy birth, to stand
Fast by thy side, who from thy father's field
Rode up in flames after his message told
Of thy conception, and be now a shield
Of fire—that Spirit that first rushed on thee

In the camp of Dan
Be efficacious in thee, now at need.
For never was from Heav'n imparted
Measure⁷⁹⁷¹ of strength so great to mortal seed,
As in thy wond'rous actions hath been seen. 1440

But wherefore comes old Manoa in such haste,
With youthful steps? Much livelier than erewhile
He seems: supposing here to find his son,
Or of him bringing to us some glad news?
MAN. Peace with you, brethren. My inducement⁷⁹⁷² hither
Was not at present here to find my son,
By order of the lords new parted hence
To come and play⁷⁹⁷³ before them at their feast.
I heard all as I came, the city rings
And numbers thither flock. I had no will,⁷⁹⁷⁴ 1450
Lest I should see him forced to things unseemly.
But that which moved my coming, now, was chiefly
To give ye part⁷⁹⁷⁵ with me what hope I have
With good success to work his liberty.

CHOR. That hope would much rejoice us to partake⁷⁹⁷⁶
With thee. Say reverend Sire, we thirst to hear.

MAN. I have attempted⁷⁹⁷⁷ one by one the lords,
Either at home, or through the high street passing,
With supplication prone and father's tears,
T' accept of ransom for my son, their pris'ner. 1460
Some much averse⁷⁹⁷⁸ I found, and wondrous harsh,
Contemptuous, proud, set on revenge and spite;
That part most reverenc'd Dagon and his priests.
Others more moderate seeming, but their aim
Private reward, for which both god and state
They easily would set to sale. A third
More generous⁷⁹⁷⁹ far and civil,⁷⁹⁸⁰ who confessed
They had enough revenged, having reduced
Their foe to misery beneath their fears.
The rest⁷⁹⁸¹ was⁷⁹⁸² magnanimity⁷⁹⁸³ to remit,⁷⁹⁸⁴ 1470
If some convenient⁷⁹⁸⁵ ransom were proposed.

What noise or shout was that? It tore the sky.
CHOR. Doubtless the people shouting, to behold
Their once great dread, captive and blind before them,
Or at some proof of strength before them shown.
MAN. His ransom, if my whole inheritance⁷⁹⁸⁶
May compass⁷⁹⁸⁷ it, shall willingly be paid
And numbered down.⁷⁹⁸⁸ Much rather I shall choose
To live the poorest in my tribe, than richest,
And he in that calamitous⁷⁹⁸⁹ prison left. 1480
No, I am fixed⁷⁹⁹⁰ not to part hence without him.
For his redemption all my patrimony,
If need be, I am ready to forego
And quit: not wanting⁷⁹⁹¹ him, I shall want nothing.
CHOR. Fathers are wont⁷⁹⁹² to lay up⁷⁹⁹³ for their sons:
Thou for thy son art bent to lay out all.
Sons wont to nurse their parents in old age:
Thou in old age car'st how to nurse thy son,
Made older than thy age, through eye-sight lost.
MAN. It shall be my delight to tend his eyes, 1490
And view him sitting in the house, enobled⁷⁹⁹⁴
With all those high exploits by him achieved,
And on his shoulders waving down those locks,
That of a nation armed⁷⁹⁹⁵ the strength contained.
And I persuade me God had not permitted
His strength again to grow up, with his hair
Garrisoned⁷⁹⁹⁶ round about him like a camp⁷⁹⁹⁷
Of faithful soldiery, were not His purpose
To use him further yet in some great service,
Not to sit idle with so great a gift 1500
Useless, and thence ridiculous⁷⁹⁹⁸ about him.
And since his strength with eye-sight was not lost,
God will restore him eye-sight to his strength.
CHOR. Thy hopes are not ill founded nor seem vain⁷⁹⁹⁹
Of His delivery,⁸⁰⁰⁰ and thy joy thereon
Conceived,⁸⁰⁰¹ agreeable⁸⁰⁰² to a father's love,
In both which we, as next,⁸⁰⁰³ participate.

MAN. I know your friendly minds and—O what noise!

Mercy of Heav'n, what hideous noise was that!

Horribly loud, unlike the former shout. 1510

CHOR. Noise call you it? or universal groan,

As if the whole inhabitation⁸⁰⁰⁴ perished.

Blood, death, and deathful deeds are in that noise,

Ruin, destruction at the utmost point.

MAN. Of ruin indeed methought I heard the noise.

Oh it continues, they have slain my son!

CHOR. Thy son is rather slaying them: that outcry

From slaughter of one foe could not ascend.

MAN. Some dismal⁸⁰⁰⁵ accident⁸⁰⁰⁶ it needs must be.

What shall we do, stay here or run and see? 1520

CHOR. Best keep together here, lest running thither

We unawares run into danger's mouth.

This evil on the Philistines is fall'n:

From whom could else a general cry be heard?

The sufferers then will scarce molest us here;

From other hands we need not much to fear.

What if his eye-sight (for to Israel's God

Nothing is hard) by miracle restored,

He now be dealing dole⁸⁰⁰⁷ among his foes,

And over heaps of slaughtered walk his way?

MAN. That were a joy presumptuous to be thought.

CHOR. Yet God hath wrought things as incredible

For His people of old. What hinders now?

MAN. He can, I know, but doubt to think He will,

Yet hope would fain subscribe,⁸⁰⁰⁸ and tempts belief.

A little stay⁸⁰⁰⁹ will bring some notice hither.

CHOR. Of good or bad so great, of bad the sooner,

For evil news rides post,⁸⁰¹⁰ while good news baits.⁸⁰¹¹

And to our wish I see one hither speeding,

An Hebrew, as I guess, and of our tribe.

MESS. O whither shall I run, or which way fly⁸⁰¹²

The sight of this so horrid spectacle

Which erst my eyes beheld and yet behold,

For dire⁸⁰¹³ imagination still pursues me?
But providence or instinct of nature seems,
Or reason (though disturbed, and scarce consulted)
To have guided me aright, I know not how,
To thee first, reverend Manoa, and to these
My countrymen, whom here I knew remaining,
As at some distance from the place of horror,
So in the sad event too much concerned.
MAN. The accident⁸⁰¹⁴ was loud, and here before thee,
With rueful cry, yet what it was we hear not.
No preface needs: thou see'st we long to know.
MESS. It would burst forth, but I recover breath
And sense distract,⁸⁰¹⁵ to know well what I utter.
MAN. Tell us the sum,⁸⁰¹⁶ the circumstance⁸⁰¹⁷ defer.
MESS. Gaza yet stands, but all her sons are fall'n,
All in a moment overwhelmed and fall'n.
MAN. Sad, but thou know'st to Israelites not saddest, 1560
The desolation of a hostile city.
MESS. Feed on that first, there may in grief be surfeit.⁸⁰¹⁸
MAN. Relate by whom.
MESS. By Samson.
MAN. That still lessens
The sorrow, and converts it nigh to joy.
MESS. Ah Manoa, I refrain too suddenly⁸⁰¹⁹
To utter what will come at last too soon,⁸⁰²⁰
Lest evil tidings with too rude eruption⁸⁰²¹
Hitting thy aged ear should pierce too deep.
MAN. Suspense in news is torture: speak them out.
MESS. Then take the worst in brief: Samson is dead. 1570
MAN. The worst indeed. O all my hope's defeated
To free him hence! But death who sets all free
Hath paid his ransom now and full discharge.
What windy⁸⁰²² joy this day had I conceived,
Hopeful of his delivery, which now proves
Abortive as the first-born bloom of spring
Nipped with the lagging rear of winter's frost.

Yet ere I give the reins to grief, say first,
How died he? Death to life is crown or shame.
All by him fell, thou say'st. By whom fell he? 1580
What glorious hand gave Samson his death's wound?
MESS. Unwounded of his enemies he fell.
MAN. Wearied with slaughter, then, or how? Explain.
MESS. By his own hands.
MAN. Self-violence? What cause
Brought him so soon at variance⁸⁰²³ with himself,
Among his foes?
MESS. Inevitable cause
At once both to destroy and be destroyed.
The edifice where all were met to see him
Upon their heads and on his own he pulled.
MAN. O lastly⁸⁰²⁴ over-strong against thyself! 1590
A dreadful way thou took'st to thy revenge.
More than enough we know, but while things yet
Are in confusion, give us, if thou canst,
Eye-witness of what first or last was done,
Relation⁸⁰²⁵ more particular and distinct.
MESS. Occasions⁸⁰²⁶ drew me early to this city,
And as the gates I entered with sun-rise,
The morning trumpets festival proclaimed
Through each high street.⁸⁰²⁷ Little I had dispatched⁸⁰²⁸
When all abroad⁸⁰²⁹ was rumored that this day 1600
Samson should be brought forth to show the people
Proof of his mighty strength in feats and games.
I sorrowed at his captive state, but minded⁸⁰³⁰
Not to be absent at that spectacle.
The building was a spacious theater⁸⁰³¹
Half round on two main pillars vaulted high,
With seats where all the lords and each degree
Of sort⁸⁰³² might sit in order to behold.
The other side was open, where the throng
On banks⁸⁰³³ and scaffolds under sky might stand.
I among these aloof ⁸⁰³⁴ obscurely⁸⁰³⁵ stood.

The feast and noon grew high, and sacrifice
Had filled their hearts with mirth, high cheer, and wine,
When to their sports⁸⁰³⁶ they turned. Immediately
Was Samson as a public servant brought,
In their state livery⁸⁰³⁷ clad. Before him pipes⁸⁰³⁸
And timbrels,⁸⁰³⁹ on each side went armed guards,
Both horse and foot before him, and behind
Archers, and slingers, cataphracts⁸⁰⁴⁰ and spears.
At sight of him the people with a shout
Rifted⁸⁰⁴¹ the air, clamoring⁸⁰⁴² their god with praise,
Who had made their dreadful⁸⁰⁴³ enemy their thrall.⁸⁰⁴⁴
He patient but undaunted where they led him
Came to the place, and what was set before him
Which without help of eye, might be assayed,
To heave, pull, draw, or break, he still performed
All with incredible, stupendous force,
None daring to appear antagonist.⁸⁰⁴⁵
At length for intermission sake they led him
Between the pillars. He his guide requested
(For so from such as nearer stood we heard)
As over-tired to let him lean a while
With both his arms on those two massy pillars
That to the archèd roof gave main support.
He⁸⁰⁴⁶ unsuspecting led him, which when Samson
Felt in his arms, with head a while inclined⁸⁰⁴⁷
And eyes fast fixed he stood, as one who prayed,
Or some great matter in his mind revolved.
At last with head erect thus cried aloud,
“Hitherto, lords, what your commands imposed
I have performed, as reason was, obeying,
Not without wonder or delight beheld.
Now of my own accord such other trial⁸⁰⁴⁸
I mean to show you of my strength, yet greater,
As with amaze shall strike all who behold.”
This uttered, straining all his nerves⁸⁰⁴⁹ he bowed.
As with the force of winds and waters pent⁸⁰⁵⁰

When mountains tremble, those two massy pillars
With horrible convulsion⁸⁰⁵¹ to and fro
He tugged, he shook, till down they came and drew
The whole roof after them, with burst of thunder
Upon the heads of all who sat beneath,
Lords, ladies, captains, councillors, or priests,
Their choice nobility and flower, not only
Of this but each Philistian city round,
Met from all parts to solemnize this feast.
Samson with these immixed,⁸⁰⁵² inevitably
Pulled down the same destruction on himself.
The vulgar⁸⁰⁵³ only scaped, who stood without.⁸⁰⁵⁴
CHOR. O dearly-bought revenge, yet glorious! 1660
Living or dying thou hast fulfilled
The work for which thou wast foretold
To Israel, and now ly'st victorious
Among thy slain, self-killed
Not willingly, but tangled in the fold⁸⁰⁵⁵
Of dire necessity, whose law in death conjoined
Thee with thy slaughtered foes, in number more
Than all thy life had slain before.
SEMICHOR. While their hearts were jocund⁸⁰⁵⁶ and sublime,⁸⁰⁵⁷
Drunk with idolatry, drunk with wine 1670
And fat regorged⁸⁰⁵⁸ of bulls and goats,
Chanting their idol, and preferring⁸⁰⁵⁹
Before our living Dread who dwells
In Silo⁸⁰⁶⁰ His bright sanctuary:
Among them He a Spirit of frenzy⁸⁰⁶¹ sent,
Who⁸⁰⁶² hurt⁸⁰⁶³ their minds,
And urged them on with mad desire
To call in haste for their destroyer.
They only set on sport⁸⁰⁶⁴ and play
Unweetingly⁸⁰⁶⁵ importuned
Their own destruction to come speedy upon them.
So fond⁸⁰⁶⁶ are mortal men
Fallen into⁸⁰⁶⁷ wrath divine,

As their own ruin on themselves t' invite,
Insensate left, or to sense reprobate,⁸⁰⁶⁸
And with blindness internal struck.
SEMICHOR. But he though blind of sight,
Despised and thought extinguished quite,
With inward eyes illuminated,
His fiery virtue⁸⁰⁶⁹ roused 1690
From under ashes into sudden flame,
And as an ev'ning dragon⁸⁰⁷⁰ came,
Assailant on the perchèd roosts
And nests, in order ranged
Of tame villatic⁸⁰⁷¹ fowl, but as an eagle
His cloudless thunder bolted⁸⁰⁷² on their heads.
So virtue giv'n for lost,
Depressed,⁸⁰⁷³ and overthrown (as seemed),
Like that self-begotten bird⁸⁰⁷⁴
In th' Arabian woods embossed,⁸⁰⁷⁵ 1700
That no second knows nor third,
And lay erewhile a holocaust,⁸⁰⁷⁶
From out her ashy womb now teemed—⁸⁰⁷⁷
Revives, reflourishes, then⁸⁰⁷⁸ vigorous most
When most unactive deemed.
And though her body die, her fame survives
(A secular⁸⁰⁷⁹ bird) ages of lives.
MAN. Come, come, no time for lamentation now,
Nor much more cause. Samson hath quit⁸⁰⁸⁰ himself
Like Samson, and heroically hath finished
A life heroic, on his enemies
Fully revenged, hath left them years of mourning,
And lamentation to the sons of Caphtor⁸⁰⁸¹
Through all Philistian bounds.⁸⁰⁸² To Israel
Honor hath left, and freedom. Let but them
Find courage to lay hold⁸⁰⁸³ on this occasion—
To himself and father's house⁸⁰⁸⁴ eternal fame.
And which is best and happiest yet, all this
With God not parted from him, as was feared,

But favoring and assisting to the end. 1720
Nothing is here for tears, nothing to wail
Or knock the breast, no weakness, no contempt,
Dispraise, or blame, nothing but well and fair,
And what may quiet us in a death so noble.

Let us go find the body where it lies
Soaked in his enemies' blood, and from the stream
With lavers⁸⁰⁸⁵ pure, and cleansing herbs, wash off
The clotted gore.⁸⁰⁸⁶ I with what speed the while
(Gaza is not in plight⁸⁰⁸⁷ to say us nay)
Will send for all my kindred, all my friends 1730
To fetch him hence and solemnly attend
With silent obsequy⁸⁰⁸⁸ and funeral train⁸⁰⁸⁹
Home to his father's house. There will I build him
A monument, and plant it round with shade
Of laurel ever green, and branching palm,
With all his trophies hung, and acts enrolled⁸⁰⁹⁰
In copious legend⁸⁰⁹¹ or sweet lyric song.
Thither shall all the valiant youth resort,⁸⁰⁹²
And from his memory inflame their breasts
To matchless valor, and adventures high. 1740
The virgins also shall on feastful days
Visit his tomb with flowers, only bewailing
His lot unfortunate in nuptial choice,
From whence captivity and loss of eyes.
CHOR. All is best, though we oft doubt,
What th' unsearchable⁸⁰⁹³ dispose⁸⁰⁹⁴
Of highest wisdom brings about,
And ever best found in the close.
Oft He seems to hide His face,
But unexpectedly returns—1750
And to His faithful champion hath in place
Bore witness gloriously. Whence Gaza mourns
And all that band⁸⁰⁹⁵ them to resist
His uncontrollable⁸⁰⁹⁶ intent,⁸⁰⁹⁷
His servants He with new acquist⁸⁰⁹⁸

Of true experience from this great event
With peace and consolation hath dismissed, [8099](#)
And calm of mind, all passion spent.

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING

This cannot be more than a brief, more or less representative glimpse of what Carrithers and Hardy (below, at p. 15) call “the prodigious landscape of relevant scholarship.” All of the listed books contain useful citations to a much wider portion of the landscape.

EDITIONS OF MILTON

Bush, Douglas, ed. *The Complete Poetical Works of John Milton*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1965 [poetically the most sensitive edition].

Flannagan, Roy, ed. *The Riverside Milton*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1998 [the most capacious edition—1,213 pages, many double-columned—bristling with information: early biographies; poems English and Latin; much prose].

Shawcross, John T., ed. *The Complete English Poetry of John Milton*. New York: Doubleday Anchor, 1963 [handy, inexpensive, far-ranging].

HISTORICAL BACKGROUND

Fallon, Robert Thomas. *Milton in Government*. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1993.

Hill, Christopher. *The Century of Revolution, 1603–1714*. London: Nelson, 1961. 2nd ed., Sphere paperback, 1972.

———. *Milton and the English Revolution*. New York: Viking, 1977.

———. *The Experience of Defeat: Milton and Some Contemporaries*. New York: Viking, 1984.

———. *The English Bible and the Seventeenth-Century Revolution*. London: Allan Lane, 1993. Penguin, 1994.

LANGUAGE

The Oxford English Dictionary on Historical Principles. 10 vols. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1933.

LITERARY CRITICISM

COLLECTIONS

Barker, Arthur E., ed. *Milton: Modern Essays in Criticism.* Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1965.

Danielson, Dennis, ed. *The Cambridge Companion to Milton.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1989.

Patrides, C. A., and Joseph Wittreich. *The Apocalypse in English Renaissance Thought and Literature.* Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1984.

INDIVIDUAL STUDIES

Carrithers, Gale H., and James D. Hardy Jr. *Milton and the Hermeneutic Journey.* Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1994.

Ferry, Anne D. *Milton's Epic Voice: The Narrator in Paradise Lost.* Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1963.

Lewis, C. S. "A Note on *Comus*." In C. S. Lewis, *Studies in Medieval and Renaissance Literature.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1966.

———. *A Preface to Paradise Lost.* Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1942. Rev. ed., 1960.

Marotti, Arthur F. *Manuscript, Print, and the English Renaissance Lyric.* Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1995.

Martz, Louis I. *Poet of Exile: A Study of Milton's Poetry.* New Haven: Yale University Press, 1980.

Nicolson, Marjorie Hope. *John Milton: A Reader's Guide to His Poetry.* New York: Farrar, 1963.

Rumrich, John Peter. *Matter of Glory: A New Preface to Paradise Lost.* Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press, 1987.

Steadman, John M. *The Wall of Paradise: Essays on Milton's Poetics.* Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1985.

Stein, Arnold. *The Art of Presence: The Poet and Paradise Lost*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1977.

ASK YOUR BOOKSELLER FOR THESE BANTAM CLASSICS

BEOWULF AND OTHER ENGLISH POEMS, 978-0-553-21347-8
THE BHAGAVAD-GITA: KRISHNA'S COUNSEL IN TIME OF WAR, 978-0-553-21365-2
THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE and THE CONSTITUTION OF THE UNITED STATES, 978-0-553-21482-6
THE FEDERALIST PAPERS, 978-0-553-21340-9
FOUR GREAT AMERICAN CLASSICS (THE SCARLET LETTER; THE ADVENTURES OF HUCKLEBERRY FINN; THE RED BADGE OF COURAGE; BILLY BUDD, SAILOR), 978-0-553-21362-1
GREEK DRAMA, 978-0-553-21221-1
JO'S BOYS, Louisa May Alcott, 978-0-553-21449-9
LITTLE WOMEN, Louisa May Alcott, 978-0-553-21275-4
WINESBURG, OHIO, Sherwood Anderson, 978-0-553-21439-0
THE COMPLETE PLAYS, Aristophanes, 978-0-553-21343-0
EMMA, Jane Austen, 978-0-553-21273-0
MANSFIELD PARK, Jane Austen, 978-0-553-21276-1
NORTHANGER ABBEY, Jane Austen, 978-0-553-21197-9
PERSUASION, Jane Austen, 978-0-553-21137-5
PRIDE AND PREJUDICE, Jane Austen, 978-0-553-21310-2
SENSE AND SENSIBILITY, Jane Austen, 978-0-553-21334-8
PETER PAN, J. M. Barrie, 978-0-553-21178-8
BRADBURY CLASSIC STORIES, Ray Bradbury, 978-0-553-28637-3
THE MARTIAN CHRONICLES, Ray Bradbury, 978-0-553-27822-4
JANE EYRE, Charlotte Brontë, 978-0-553-21140-5
VILLETTE, Charlotte Brontë, 978-0-553-21243-3
WUTHERING HEIGHTS, Emily Brontë, 978-0-553-21258-7
THE SECRET GARDEN, Frances Hodgson Burnett, 978-0-553-21201-3
ALICE'S ADVENTURES IN WONDERLAND and
THROUGH THE LOOKING-GLASS, Lewis Carroll, 978-0-553-21345-4
MY ÁNTONIA, Willa Cather, 978-0-553-21418-5
O PIONEERS!, Willa Cather, 978-0-553-21358-4
THE CANTERBURY TALES, Geoffrey Chaucer, 978-0-553-21082-8

STORIES, Anton Chekhov, 978-0-553-38100-9
THE AWAKENING, Kate Chopin, 978-0-553-21330-0
THE WOMAN IN WHITE, Wilkie Collins, 978-0-553-21263-1
HEART OF DARKNESS and THE SECRET SHARER, Joseph Conrad, 978-0-553-21214-3
LORD JIM, Joseph Conrad, 978-0-553-21361-4
THE DEERSLAYER, James Fenimore Cooper, 978-0-553-21085-9
THE LAST OF THE MOHICANS, James Fenimore Cooper, 978-0-553-21329-4
MAGGIE: A GIRL OF THE STREETS AND OTHER SHORT FICTION, Stephen Crane, 978-0-553-21355-3
THE RED BADGE OF COURAGE, Stephen Crane, 978-0-553-21011-8
THE INFERNO, Dante, 978-0-553-21339-3
PARADISO, Dante, 978-0-553-21204-4
PURGATORIO, Dante, 978-0-553-21344-7
THE ORIGIN OF SPECIES, Charles Darwin, 978-0-553-21463-5
MOLL FLANDERS, Daniel Defoe, 978-0-553-21328-7
ROBINSON CRUSOE, Daniel Defoe, 978-0-553-21373-7
BLEAK HOUSE, Charles Dickens, 978-0-553-21223-5
A CHRISTMAS CAROL, Charles Dickens, 978-0-553-21244-0
DAVID COPPERFIELD, Charles Dickens, 978-0-553-21189-4
GREAT EXPECTATIONS, Charles Dickens, 978-0-553-21342-3
HARD TIMES, Charles Dickens, 978-0-553-21016-3
OLIVER TWIST, Charles Dickens, 978-0-553-21102-3
THE PICKWICK PAPERS, Charles Dickens, 978-0-553-21123-8
A TALE OF TWO CITIES, Charles Dickens, 978-0-553-21176-4
THREE SOLDIERS, John Dos Passos, 978-0-553-21456-7
THE BROTHERS KARAMAZOV, Fyodor Dostoevsky, 978-0-553-21216-7
CRIME AND PUNISHMENT, Fyodor Dostoevsky, 978-0-553-21175-7
THE ETERNAL HUSBAND AND OTHER STORIES, Fyodor Dostoevsky, 978-0-553-21444-4
THE IDIOT, Fyodor Dostoevsky, 978-0-553-21352-2
NOTES FROM UNDERGROUND, Fyodor Dostoevsky, 978-0-553-21144-3
SHERLOCK HOLMES VOL I, Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, 978-0-553-21241-9
SHERLOCK HOLMES VOL II, Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, 978-0-553-21242-6
SISTER CARRIE, Theodore Dreiser, 978-0-553-21374-4
THE SOULS OF BLACK FOLK, W. E. B. Du Bois, 978-0-553-21336-2
THE COUNT OF MONTE CRISTO, Alexandre Dumas, 978-0-553-21350-8

THE THREE MUSKETEERS, Alexandre Dumas, 978-0-553-21337-9
MIDDLEMARCH, George Eliot, 978-0-553-21180-1
SILAS MARNER, George Eliot, 978-0-553-21229-7
SELECTED ESSAYS, LECTURES, AND POEMS, Ralph Waldo Emerson, 978-0-553-21388-1
TEN PLAYS BY EURIPIDES, Euripides, 978-0-553-21363-8
APRIL MORNING, Howard Fast, 978-0-553-27322-9
MADAME BOVARY, Gustave Flaubert, 978-0-553-21341-6
HOWARDS END, E. M. Forster, 978-0-553-21208-2
A ROOM WITH A VIEW, E. M. Forster, 978-0-553-21323-2
THE DIARY OF A YOUNG GIRL, Anne Frank, 978-0-553-57712-9
ANNE FRANK'S TALES FROM THE SECRET ANNEX, Anne Frank, 978-0-553-58638-1
THE AUTOBIOGRAPHY AND OTHER WRITINGS, Benjamin Franklin, 978-0-553-21075-0
THE YELLOW WALLPAPER AND OTHER WRITINGS, Charlotte Perkins Gilman, 978-0-553-21375-1
FAUST: FIRST PART, Johann Wolfgang von Goethe, 978-0-553-21348-5
THE WIND IN THE WILLOWS, Kenneth Grahame, 978-0-553-21368-3
THE COMPLETE FAIRY TALES OF THE BROTHERS GRIMM, translated by Jack Zipes, 978-0-553-38216-7
ROOTS, Alex Haley, 978-0-440-17464-6
FAR FROM THE MADDING CROWD, Thomas Hardy, 978-0-553-21331-7
JUDE THE OBSCURE, Thomas Hardy, 978-0-553-21191-7
THE MAYOR OF CASTERBRIDGE, Thomas Hardy, 978-0-553-21024-8
THE RETURN OF THE NATIVE, Thomas Hardy, 978-0-553-21269-3
TESS OF THE D'URBERVILLES, Thomas Hardy, 978-0-553-21168-9
THE HOUSE OF THE SEVEN GABLES, Nathaniel Hawthorne, 978-0-553-21270-9
THE SCARLET LETTER, Nathaniel Hawthorne, 978-0-553-21009-5
THE FAIRY TALES OF HERMANN HESSE, Hermann Hesse, 978-0-553-37776-7
SIDDHARTHA, Hermann Hesse, 978-0-553-20884-9
THE ODYSSEY OF HOMER, Homer, 978-0-553-21399-7
THE HUNCHBACK OF NOTRE DAME, Victor Hugo, 978-0-553-21370-6
FOUR GREAT PLAYS: A DOLL'S HOUSE, GHOSTS, AN ENEMY OF THE PEOPLE, and THE WILD DUCK, Henrik Ibsen, 978-0-553-21280-8
THE PORTRAIT OF A LADY, Henry James, 978-0-553-21127-6

THE TURN OF THE SCREW AND OTHER SHORT FICTION, Henry James, 978-0-553-21059-0
A COUNTRY DOCTOR, Sarah Orne Jewett, 978-0-553-21498-7
DUBLINERS, James Joyce, 978-0-553-21380-5
A PORTRAIT OF THE ARTIST AS A YOUNG MAN, James Joyce, 978-0-553-21404-8
THE METAMORPHOSIS, Franz Kafka, 978-0-553-21369-0
THE STORY OF MY LIFE, Helen Keller, 978-0-553-21387-4
CAPTAINS COURAGEOUS, Rudyard Kipling, 978-0-553-21190-0
THE JUNGLE BOOK, Rudyard Kipling, 978-0-553-21199-3
KIM, Rudyard Kipling, 978-0-553-21332-4
LADY CHATTERLEY'S LOVER, D. H. Lawrence, 978-0-553-21262-4
SONS AND LOVERS, D. H. Lawrence, 978-0-553-21192-4
WOMEN IN LOVE, D. H. Lawrence, 978-0-553-21454-3
THE PHANTOM OF THE OPERA, Gaston Leroux, 978-0-553-21376-8
BABBITT, Sinclair Lewis, 978-0-553-21486-4
MAIN STREET, Sinclair Lewis, 978-0-553-21451-2
THE CALL OF THE WILD and WHITE FANG, Jack London, 978-0-553-21233-4
THE SEA WOLF, Jack London, 978-0-553-21225-9
TO BUILD A FIRE AND OTHER STORIES, Jack London, 978-0-553-21335-5
THE PRINCE, Niccolò Machiavelli, 978-0-553-21278-5
DEATH IN VENICE AND OTHER STORIES, Thomas Mann, 978-0-553-21333-1
THE COMMUNIST MANIFESTO, Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels, 978-0-553-21406-2
OF HUMAN BONDAGE, W. Somerset Maugham, 978-0-553-21392-8
THE BALLAD OF THE SAD CAFÉ AND OTHER STORIES, Carson McCullers, 978-0-553-27254-3
THE HEART IS A LONELY HUNTER, Carson McCullers, 978-0-553-26963-5
THE MEMBER OF THE WEDDING, Carson McCullers, 978-0-553-25051-0
BILLY BUDD, SAILOR AND OTHER STORIES, Herman Melville, 978-0-553-21274-7
MOBY-DICK, Herman Melville, 978-0-553-21311-9
ON LIBERTY and UTILITARIANISM, John Stuart Mill, 978-0-553-21414-7
THE ANNOTATED MILTON, John Milton, 978-0-553-58110-2
THE SCARLET PIMPERNEL, Baroness Emmuska Orczy, 978-0-553-21402-4
COMMON SENSE, Thomas Paine, 978-0-553-21465-9
THE DIALOGUES OF PLATO, Plato, 978-0-553-21371-3

THE TELL-TALE HEART AND OTHER WRITINGS, Edgar Allan Poe, 978-0-553-21228-0

CYRANO DE BERGERAC, Edmond Rostand, 978-0-553-21360-7

IVANHOE, Sir Walter Scott, 978-0-553-21326-3

THE COMPLETE WORKS OF SHAKESPEARE (29 vols.), William Shakespeare

PYGMALION and MAJOR BARBARA, George Bernard Shaw, 978-0-553-21408-6

FRANKENSTEIN, Mary Shelley, 978-0-553-21247-1

THE JUNGLE, Upton Sinclair, 978-0-553-21245-7

THE WEALTH OF NATIONS, Adam Smith, 978-0-553-58597-1

ONE DAY IN THE LIFE OF IVAN DENISOVICH, Alexander Solzhenitsyn, 978-0-553-24777-0

THE COMPLETE PLAYS OF SOPHOCLES, Sophocles, 978-0-553-21354-6

DR. JEKYLL AND MR. HYDE, Robert Louis Stevenson, 978-0-553-21277-8

KIDNAPPED, Robert Louis Stevenson, 978-0-553-21260-0

TREASURE ISLAND, Robert Louis Stevenson, 978-0-553-21249-5

DRACULA, Bram Stoker, 978-0-553-21271-6

UNCLE TOM'S CABIN, Harriet Beecher Stowe, 978-0-553-21218-1

GULLIVER'S TRAVELS AND OTHER WRITINGS, Jonathan Swift, 978-0-553-21232-7

VANITY FAIR, William Makepeace Thackeray, 978-0-553-21462-8

WALDEN AND OTHER WRITINGS, Henry David Thoreau, 978-0-553-21246-4

DEMOCRACY IN AMERICA, Alexis de Tocqueville, 978-0-553-21464-2

ANNA KARENINA, Leo Tolstoy, 978-0-553-21346-1

THE DEATH OF IVAN ILYICH, Leo Tolstoy, 978-0-553-21035-4

THE ADVENTURES OF HUCKLEBERRY FINN, Mark Twain, 978-0-553-21079-8

THE ADVENTURES OF TOM SAWYER, Mark Twain, 978-0-553-21128-3

THE COMPLETE SHORT STORIES OF MARK TWAIN, Mark Twain, 978-0-553-21195-5

A CONNECTICUT YANKEE IN KING ARTHUR'S COURT, Mark Twain, 978-0-553-21143-6

LIFE ON THE MISSISSIPPI, Mark Twain, 978-0-553-21349-2

THE PRINCE AND THE PAUPER, Mark Twain, 978-0-553-21256-3

PUDD'NHEAD WILSON, Mark Twain, 978-0-553-21158-0

20,000 LEAGUES UNDER THE SEA, Jules Verne, 978-0-553-21252-5

AROUND THE WORLD IN EIGHTY DAYS, Jules Verne, 978-0-553-21356-0

FROM THE EARTH TO THE MOON, Jules Verne, 978-0-553-21420-8

THE AENEID OF VIRGIL, Virgil, 978-0-553-21041-5

CANDIDE, Voltaire, 978-0-553-21166-5
THE INVISIBLE MAN, H. G. Wells, 978-0-553-21353-9
THE ISLAND OF DR. MOREAU, H. G. Wells, 978-0-553-21432-1
THE TIME MACHINE, H. G. Wells, 978-0-553-21351-5
THE WAR OF THE WORLDS, H. G. Wells, 978-0-553-21338-6
THE AGE OF INNOCENCE, Edith Wharton, 978-0-553-21450-5
THE CUSTOM OF THE COUNTRY, Edith Wharton, 978-0-553-21393-5
ETHAN FROME AND OTHER SHORT FICTION, Edith Wharton, 978-0-553-21255-6
THE HOUSE OF MIRTH, Edith Wharton, 978-0-553-21320-1
SUMMER, Edith Wharton, 978-0-553-21422-2
LEAVES OF GRASS, Walt Whitman, 978-0-553-21116-0
THE PICTURE OF DORIAN GRAY AND OTHER WRITINGS, Oscar Wilde, 978-0-553-21254-9
THE SWISS FAMILY ROBINSON, Johann David Wyss, 978-0-553-21403-1
EARLY AFRICAN-AMERICAN CLASSICS, edited by Anthony Appiah, 978-0-553-21379-9
FIFTY GREAT SHORT STORIES, edited by Milton Crane, 978-0-553-27745-6
FIFTY GREAT AMERICAN SHORT STORIES, edited by Milton Crane, 978-0-553-27294-9
SHORT SHORTS, edited by Irving Howe, 978-0-553-27440-0
GREAT AMERICAN SHORT STORIES, edited by Wallace & Mary Stegner, 978-0-440-33060-8
AMERICAN SHORT STORY MASTERPIECES, edited by Raymond Carver & Tom Jenks, 978-0-440-20423-7
SHORT STORY MASTERPIECES, edited by Robert Penn Warren, 978-0-440-37864-8
THE VOICE THAT IS GREAT WITHIN US, edited by Hayden Carruth, 978-0-553-26263-6
THE BLACK POETS, edited by Dudley Randal, 978-0-553-27563-6
THREE CENTURIES OF AMERICAN POETRY, edited by Allen Mandelbaum, (Trade) 978-0-553-37518-3, (Hardcover) 978-0-553-10250-5

JOHN MILTON was born on December 9, 1608. A brilliant scholar, he received his B.A. and M.A. from Christ's College, Cambridge, and began writing poetry. Instead of entering the ministry, he retired to his father's country house and for the next five years read day and night, devouring most of the existing written works in English, Greek, Latin, and Italian. During this period he wrote the masque *Comus* (1634) and "Lycidas" (1637), an elegy memorializing a college classmate. In 1638 he went on a tour of Europe, spending most of his time in Italy. He returned home prematurely because of the religious unrest in England and began writing tracts that branded him a radical. In 1642 he married Mary Powell, a seventeen-year-old girl. Within six weeks, she returned to her parents' home, and Milton wrote a series of angry pamphlets advocating divorce on the grounds of incompatibility. Eventually, she returned and bore him four children, three of whom survived. By 1651 Milton's poor eyesight failed completely, leaving him blind. After his wife's death, he remarried, only to have his second wife die some months after childbirth. His third marriage, to Elizabeth Minshull, was a longer and happier one. At the Restoration, Milton narrowly escaped execution because of his politics, but was left impoverished. Now he returned to writing poetry and created the masterpieces for which he will be forever remembered, beginning with *Paradise Lost* (1667). He followed this epic with *Paradise Regained* and *Samson Agonistes* (jointly published in 1671). Milton died in 1674. Along with Chaucer and Shakespeare, Milton is one of the true giants of our language.

THE ANNOTATED MILTON
A Bantam Book

PUBLISHING HISTORY

Bantam Classic edition published September 1999
Bantam Classic reissue / December 2008

Published by
Bantam Dell
A Division of Random House, Inc.
New York, New York

All rights reserved
Translation copyright © 1999 by Burton Raffel

Bantam Books and the rooster colophon are registered trademarks of
Random House, Inc.

eISBN: 978-0-553-90582-3

www.bantamdell.com

v1.0

FOOTNOTES

¹ celestial

[Return to text.](#)

² hardness

[Return to text.](#)

³ Italian: Galileo

[Return to text.](#)

⁴ practical scientist, learned man

[Return to text.](#)

⁵ discover, make known

[Return to text.](#)

⁶ spotted, patchy

[Return to text.](#)

⁷ admiral's ship, flagship

[Return to text.](#)

⁸ straight slender stick

[Return to text.](#)

⁹ difficult, troublesome

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰ soil

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹¹ beat/shone strongly

[Return to text.](#)

¹² covered, roofed

[Return to text.](#)

¹³ talked idly, lied about

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴ steeply, perpendicularly

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵ fortifications placed on top of walls

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶ directly overhead

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷ unpolished, rough

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸ streams

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹ reeds, pipes, flutes

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰ pastoral

[Return to text.](#)

²¹ extended across

[Return to text.](#)

²² pulled around him

[Return to text.](#)

²³ Terah = Abraham's father

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴ Egyptian

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵ i.e., the sea saw the strength of the Almighty's hand

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶ cowardly

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷ army

[Return to text.](#)

²⁸ defeat

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹ always, forever

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰ who

[Return to text.](#)

³¹ streams, brooks

[Return to text.](#)

³² proclaim

[Return to text.](#)

³³ widely, at large

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴ destroy, kill, overcome

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵ brightly colored

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶ greatness, power, dignity

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷ cruel, terrible, savage [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸ the Hebrew people

[Return to text.](#)

³⁹ the Red Sea

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰ brown-skinned

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹ desolate

[Return to text.](#)

⁴² the Amorites, pre-Israelite dwellers in Canaan

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³ Amorite king, and an exceedingly large man

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁴ excessively bold, daring

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁵ Jacob

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶ to sing, celebrate in song

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷ blossomed

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁸ withered

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹ color vermilion

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰ the north wind (Aquilo = “eagle”)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹ winter’s

[Return to text.](#)

⁵² rough, coarse, violent

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³ Orythia, daughter of the king of Athens

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴ affected injuriously

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁵ i.e., unless he too wedded some fair one

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶ notorious

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷ maturity, old age

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁸ frisky, sportive

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹ carriage, chariot

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰ dwelling

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹ shamed, disgraced

[Return to text.](#)

⁶² unknowing, unwitting

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³ once

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴ Zephyr, the west wind, also loved Hyacinth, and in revenge caused a quoit (iron ring thrown at a peg in the ground) thrown by Apollo to swerve, hit, and kill Hyacinth

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵ Eurotas = Laconian river; strand = bank, shore

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶ shallowly dug? or an in-ground grave rather than a properly elevated tomb structure?

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷ explain, clarify

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸ verses, poem

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹ creature, being

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰ benefit, behalf

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹ appropriate, proper

[Return to text.](#)

⁷² Astraea (“starry maiden”), goddess of justice and the last god to leave the earth

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³ clothing

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴ travel quickly

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵ dirty, repulsive

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶ pain, grief

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷ i.e., in the preceding part, which is a pun-filled “Prolusion”

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸ obvious, bare, plain

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹ suspicion

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰ boxes, chests

[Return to text.](#)

⁸¹ thoroughly, all over

[Return to text.](#)

⁸² Zeus and Hera’s daughter; cupbearer to the gods

[Return to text.](#)

⁸³ layers

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁴ old woman, grandmother

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁵ see Homer's *Odyssey* 8:499ff.

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁶ within the boundary

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁷ an academic pun: predicament = (1) term used in Aristotelian rhetoric, (2) Milton's difficulty with his "wand'ring muse"

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁸ place

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁹ unlucky, disastrous, dreadful

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁰ chance, luck

[Return to text.](#)

⁹¹ prophetess, fortune-teller, witch

[Return to text.](#)

⁹² apart

[Return to text.](#)

⁹³ outdistance, surpass

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁴ attribute, quality, nature

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁵ one George Rivers (or his brother, Nizell) played the part of Relation

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁶ outermost

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁷ on the border of England and Scotland

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁸ the Don, in Yorkshire

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁹ *trente* = "thirty," in French, and the Trent takes its name therefrom

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁰ see the story of the river nymph Sabrina in *Comus*, lines 824ff.

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰¹ the river runs past Newcastle, proverbial for its coal

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰² i.e., is supposedly named for a Scythian chief who drowned in that river

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰³ the Thames, which runs past various royal castles

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁴ crime, fault, penalty

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁵ unbearable, intolerable

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁶ was accustomed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁷ residence/offices of a sovereign

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁸ style, talent

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁹ effect, accomplish

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁰ style, tone

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹ the horses pulling the sun god's chariot

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹² impression, stamp

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹³ the three Magi/wise men

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁴ come before [*pre*= before, *venir*= come]

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁵ poorly, shabbily

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁶ rough, coarse, inelegant

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁷ feeding trough in stable/barn

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁸ reverential wonder

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁹ laid aside, taken away, taken off

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁰ brilliant, fine

[Return to text.](#)

¹²¹ adornment

[Return to text.](#)

¹²² joyful, lively, lustful

[Return to text.](#)

¹²³ forehead, face

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁴ corrupted, foul, filthy, stained [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁵ abashed, ashamed

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁶ forerunner (advance person)

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁷ with hook/scythelike protrusions? a hook-shaped chariot?

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁸ respectful, reverential

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁹ hushed, silent

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁰ rage, roar

[Return to text.](#)

¹³¹ the morning star, *not* (in this usage) Satan

[Return to text.](#)

¹³² place

[Return to text.](#)

¹³³ as if

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁴ moment, instant

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁵ simple, humble

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁶ gripped, seized, charmed (the “stringèd noise” took “all their souls in blissful rapture”)

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁷ cadence

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁸ the moon

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁹ prepared, dressed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁰ inexpressible

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴¹ rolling, tossing, tumbling

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴² full of moral blemishes/defects

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴³ suffering, mourning

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁴ houses, tents

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁵ similar

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁶ delicate, gauzy texture

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁷ meeting of a deliberative council [trisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁸ fearful, awe-inspiring

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁹ narrower, tighter

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁰ wrathful, indignant

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵¹ lashes, brandishes, whips

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵² prognosticate

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵³ slope

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁴ prompts, animates

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁵ silver-leafed?

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁶ local spirit (pagan)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁷ Roman household and hearth gods

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁸ Roman priests

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁹ odd, strange

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁰ separate

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶¹ spiritual/divine being

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶² mountain/Phoenician sun god

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶³ followers of Baal

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁴ Phoenician moon goddess

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁵ encircled

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁶ Ammon, Egyptian god with the head of a ram

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁷ withers

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁸ Phoenician Adonis

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁹ deity associated with Baal

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁰ into which babies were thrown, as sacrifices to Moloch

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷¹ animal-like/shaped

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷² Egyptian earth goddess, horned like a cow

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷³ Egyptian sun god, Isis' son

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁴ son of Orus, dog/ jackal-headed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁵ chief of the Egyptian gods, portrayed as a black bull

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁶ see line 220, below

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁷ percussion instrument, tambourinelike

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁸ songs of praise/gladness

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁹ robed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁰ eyes

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸¹ hundred-headed fire-breathing giant, a serpent below the waist

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸² coils

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸³ eastern

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁴ separate, individual

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁵ fairies

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁶ labyrinth (as in a fairy ring?)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁷ long and wearisome (used in a jocund rather than literal sense)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁸ youngest-born/produced

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁹ i.e., wearing gleaming body armor

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁰ ready to be useful [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹¹ once, formerly, some time ago

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹² to sing in counterpoint

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹³ fasten upon, clutch, take hold of

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁴ gravest, most severe

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁵ peril, danger, risk

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁶ creature, being

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁷ temporary dwelling, place, abode

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁸ put up with, endure

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁹ Phoebus Apollo, god of (among other things) poetry

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁰ Marco Girolamo Vida's *Christiad*; he was a native of Cremona

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰¹ proper to

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰² subdued

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰³ Ezekiel

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁴ Jerusalem (Shalem = ancient Semitic god)

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁵ anxiously thoughtful

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁶ absorption

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁷ mood? seizure?

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁸ treasures

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁹ i.e., as in prayer

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁰ mass of stone

[Return to text.](#)

²¹¹ mark, engrave

[Return to text.](#)

²¹² lamenting

[Return to text.](#)

²¹³ vivid, fresh, brightly gay

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁴ letters of the alphabet

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁵ i.e., infections being carried by some germlike agent, the poet's tears of sorrow, like a sort of sickly semen, spawn "a race of mourners" on that which carries water down on men, namely, a cloud

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁶ forerunner (literally)

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁷ attiring, arraying

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁸ valley, hollow

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁹ Sonnets 2–6, written in Italian, are not here included

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁰ arranged by compositional order rather than chronologically; dates of composition are, as usual, indicated with the title of each poem

[Return to text.](#)

²²¹ twig, shoot

[Return to text.](#)

²²² gracious, favorably inclined

[Return to text.](#)

²²³ song

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁴ soon/soon enough (opportunately)

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁵ barbarous, ignorant

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁶ the cuckoo, linked to sexual jealousy/betrayal

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁷ retinue, attendants

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁸ ingenious, cunning, tricky

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁹ speed, impetus

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁰ are invested with

[Return to text.](#)

²³¹ yet? always?

[Return to text.](#)

²³² equal, proportionate

[Return to text.](#)

²³³ destiny

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁴ low

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁵ [trisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁶ luck, fortuitous circumstance

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁷ In October 1642, during the early days of England's civil war, the royalist army almost reached London; Milton's house lay just outside the city walls

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁸ Milton himself

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁹ repay

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁰ noble, honorable, gentlemanly

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴¹ dwelling

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴² Alexander the Great: Emathia was a Macedonian province

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴³ Pindar, Greek poet

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁴ music: in Athenian Greece, the chorus referred to in the next footnote would have been sung

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁵ Euripides: a chorus from the play is said to have persuaded the Spartans not to sack Athens, in 404B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁶ the lady is unknown

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁷ “I will rise now, and go about the city in the streets, and in the broad ways I will seek him” (Song of Solomon 3:2)

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁸ conspicuously

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁹ “And Jesus...said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things. But one good thing is needful, and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her” (Luke 10:41–42); see also Ruth 1:8–18

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁰ are arrogant, presumptuous

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵¹ gnaw, wear away at

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵² compassion, pity

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵³ concern

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁴ follows, waits upon

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁵ Lady Margaret, daughter of the Earl of Marlborough

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁶ Marlborough died four days after King Charles dissolved his third Parliament, in 1629

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁷ Philip of Macedon's defeat of Thebes and Athens in 338 B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁸ Chaeroneá marked the end of Greek independence; Isocrates committed suicide four days after hearing the news

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁹ recount, tell

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁰ block of wood attached to the feet of men or horses, to impede movement

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶¹ by the writing of two tracts on divorce, one of which was entitled *Tetrachordon*: see Sonnet 12, below

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶² surrounds, besieges, besets

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶³ rustics, boors

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁴ Apollo and Diana, twin children of Latona and Jupiter; peasants who refused water to Latona were turned into frogs by Jupiter

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁵ yet

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁶ Milton's 1645 book on divorce was shaped by the "four chief places in Scripture which treat of Marriage"

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁷ read, studied

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁸ line

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁹ in the time that

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁰ James Gordon, Lord Aboyne, Scots royalist

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷¹ Alexander MacDonnell, known also as MacColkitto and MacGillespie, general in the royalist army of James Graham, Earl Montrose

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷² see footnote 50, above

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷³ see footnote 50, above

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁴ Roman rhetorician

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁵ first professor of Greek at Cambridge, and tutor to Prince (later King) Edward

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁶ Henry Lawes, 1596–1662, master musician, who composed the music for *Comus*

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁷ rhythmical

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁸ measure out, extend

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁹ proper, right, correct

[Return to text.](#)

²⁸⁰ Midas having judged Pan a better flutist than Apollo, Apollo gave him donkey ears

[Return to text.](#)

²⁸¹ perpetrating

[Return to text.](#)

²⁸² melody, tune

[Return to text.](#)

²⁸³ musician of Florence, Dante's friend, who appears, and sings, in *Purgatorio* 2:76ff.

[Return to text.](#)

²⁸⁴ Catherine, wife of George Thomason, London bookseller and publisher; died in 1646

[Return to text.](#)

²⁸⁵ melodies

[Return to text.](#)

²⁸⁶ Sir Thomas Fairfax, commander in chief of the Parliamentary army

[Return to text.](#)

²⁸⁷ Scotland

[Return to text.](#)

²⁸⁸ a covenant of friendship made in 1643 between Parliament and the Scots was broken a month later by a Scottish invasion

[Return to text.](#)

²⁸⁹ to engraft new feathers onto damaged wings

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁰ the covenant with Parliament, being unserpentlike, broke Scotland's "serpent wings," but invading England and breaking that covenant restored her native serpentlike qualities

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹¹ plunder, pillage, robbery

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹² slander, defamations, calumnies

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹³ coarse

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁴ battle of 1648

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁵ soaked

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁶ battle of 1650

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁷ battle of 1651 [bisyllabic, as if written "WOOS ter"]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁸ mouth, appetite

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁹ Sir Henry Vane (the Younger), statesman and councilor

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁰ i.e., the togas worn by the senators of Rome

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰¹ Pyrrhus, king of Epirus, invaded Rome in the third century B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰² Hannibal of Carthage, in Africa, also invaded Rome in the third century B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰³ purpose, intent

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁴ pun on “Holland”

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁵ gibe at the spelling and pronunciation of Dutch

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁶ equipment

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁷ the Vaudois, Swiss Protestants, attacked and killed by Catholic partisans in 1655

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁸ [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁹ sheep pen: here, of course, metaphorical

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁰ the Pope

[Return to text.](#)

³¹¹ flee

[Return to text.](#)

³¹² the papacy

[Return to text.](#)

³¹³ used up, exhausted

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁴ before

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁵ in biblical times, “talent” also meant a monetary unit: see Matthew 25:14ff, the parable of the talents

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁶ devoted, bound

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁷ bring/show to God [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁸ as per the parable of the talents

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁹ scold, rebuke

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁰ hurry

[Return to text.](#)

³²¹ Edward Lawrence, member of Parliament; his father, Henry Lawrence, was president of Cromwell's Council of State

[Return to text.](#)

³²² roads, lanes, paths

[Return to text.](#)

³²³ boggy, slushy, muddy

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁴ gloomy, dark, dismal, dull

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁵ a day that

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁶ winter, with its ice

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁷ which is gaining on us/coming closer and closer

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁸ the west wind

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁹ "Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin": Matthew 6:28

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁰ dainty, elegant

[Return to text.](#)

³³¹ Italian

[Return to text.](#)

³³² afford? spare time for? leave off, forbear?

[Return to text.](#)

³³³ introduce, or delay

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁴ Cyriack Skinner, 1627–1700, Milton's student, friend, helper, and more than likely his amanuensis

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁵ Sir Edward Coke, 1552–1634, chief justice of the King's Bench and a legendary figure in the law to this day

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁶ goddess of justice

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁷ petty, insignificant

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁸ as a judge handing down (“pronouncing”) decisions

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁹ notably *The Institutes of the Law of England*

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁰ i.e., other lawyers, members of the bar

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴¹ twist, stretch, alter

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴² soak, drown

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴³ moves

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁴ Sweden

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁵ speedily, in good time

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁶ sober, sound, practical

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁷ deprived

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁸ useless, inactive; unemployed

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁹ lessen, reduce

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁰ the smallest of small amounts

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵¹ overworked/employed/worked/used

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵² probably, but not certainly, Milton’s second wife, Katherine Woodcock, to whom he was married in 1656, and who died in 1658, not long after giving birth to a daughter

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵³ Admetus, her husband, had his life extended in return for her voluntarily dying in his stead; Hercules, Jove's son, successfully wrestled with Death, and then brought her back to life

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁴ stain, blemish

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁵ see Leviticus 12:5

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁶ limitation, reserve

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁷ clothed, dressed

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁸ bent, leaned

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁹ the Muses were the daughters of Memory

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁰ slow-striving

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶¹ prosody

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶² invaluable, priceless

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶³ inspired by Apollo, god of poetry, who lived in the city of Delphi

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁴ (1) heavy, (2) profound: see footnote 46, below

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁵ (1) mold, cast, copy (as in printing), (2) effect, influence

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁶ depriving, stripping

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁷ (1) stone, such as is used in tombs and gravestones, or rigid/cold/white like marble, (2) the marbled pattern or paper used in ornamenting/binding books

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁸ imagining

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁹ buried (metaphorical: “absorbed”)

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁰ splendor, magnificence

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷¹ deliveryman

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷² temporary idleness

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷³ also a renter of horses: the proverbial phrase “Hobson’s choice” stems from his insisting that a would-be customer either accepted whatever horse was nearest to the door or else got no horse at all

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁴ belt or band (leather or cloth) around a horse’s body, securing saddle/pack/etc.; possibly also a pun on Hobson’s own girt(h) and Death having broken *him*

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁵ roads

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁶ muddy ditch

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁷ trickster, con man

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁸ entire

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁹ to dodge = to give (someone) the slip, to avoid, to baffle

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁰ inn in London, located on a main thoroughfare

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸¹ habitual path, route

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸² Death = the “kind...chamberlain,” or inn servant

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸³ a candle—but Death extinguishes a person’s light

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁴ remained?

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁵ decompose, die

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁶ the indestructible stuff of which stars and other heavenly bodies are formed

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁷ just as the stars revolve, so too did Hobson, back and forth, back and forth, back and forth....

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁸ stopped

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁹ measures, assigns values to

[Return to text.](#)

³⁹⁰ any mechanical contrivance/machine

[Return to text.](#)

³⁹¹ primary cause, which was movement

[Return to text.](#)

³⁹² at once—but also “straight” in the sense of no longer revolving

[Return to text.](#)

³⁹³ one sense of the word “breathe,” as in “to take breath,” is “to rest”

[Return to text.](#)

³⁹⁴ “term” = when college is in session, “vacation” = when college is not in session

[Return to text.](#)

³⁹⁵ “drive the time away” as in “killing time”—but he was literally a “driver” (coachman)

[Return to text.](#)

³⁹⁶ (1) brought to life, (2) made to go faster

[Return to text.](#)

³⁹⁷ “fetch and carry” = common phraseology

[Return to text.](#)

³⁹⁸ abolished, done away with—but also “put down” in the ground, buried

[Return to text.](#)

³⁹⁹ i.e., six men will be required/used to carry him to his grave

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁰ boredom, sorrow

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰¹ involving unconcern with time

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰² load = burden

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰³ so that

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁴ as if

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁵ a form of torture

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁶ transformed, like so many classical figures, into a star/constellation?

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁷ the “date” of a document is the “time” assigned to it (by the calendar)

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁸ i.e., as regular as the moon

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁹ “wain” = wagon; “wane” = decrease

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁰ written on his tomb, or as his funereal inscription generally, just as letters too have their “superscriptions,” or inside addresses

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹¹ hold/enclose the corpse of

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹² dead in childbirth, together with her child, in 1631, at age twenty-three

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹³ Thomas, Viscount of Rock-Savage

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁴ on her mother’s side, heir of Lord Darcy, Earl of Rivers

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁵ counted, reckoned up

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁶ dwell

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁷ proper, fit

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁸ Hymen

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁹ she had been married at sixteen; at twenty-three she died

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁰ cypress = a funereal wood, its branches and twigs a symbol of mourning

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²¹ born in 1629

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²² goddess of childbirth

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²³ childbirth labor

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁴ one of the three Fates, who cut the thread of life

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁵ the child was dead before delivery

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁶ a cutting from a plant/flower

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁷ retinue?

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁸ careless

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁹ youth, rustic, lover

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁰ pluck, cut

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³¹ springtime, like springtime

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³² predictive, warning

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³³ the mountain where the Muses dwelled

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁴ twigs/sprays used as wreaths

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁵ roads

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁶ the River Cam, for which Cambridge is named

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁷ Rachel

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁸ the child she bore was Benjamin

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁹ happiness (in heaven)

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁴⁰ (in Italian) lively, cheerful, gay, merry

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁴¹ monstrous dog, guardian of the entrance to Hades

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁴² Styx = underground river across which Charon ferried the souls of the dead into Hades

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁴³ unknown

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁴⁴ small, solitary chamber

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁴⁵ projecting cliff edges

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁴⁶ according to Homer, a people who live at the outer edge of the world and thus are in perpetual darkness

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁴⁷ named, called

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁴⁸ the three Graces are Agalia, Thalia, and Euphrosyne [four syllables, the second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁴⁹ exhales

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁵⁰ jolly, lively, unresisting

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁵¹ merry, gay

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁵² affable, graceful

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁵³ fanciful turns of speech, conceits

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁵⁴ sportive/cunning/amorous tricks

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁵⁵ nod of the head, signaling either assent or command

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁵⁶ goddess of youth [bisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁵⁷ frolic, diversion

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁵⁸ uncensored

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁵⁹ slow, listless

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁰ speckled

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶¹ “rear” as in “rear guard”: the image is military

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶² as in “haystack”

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶³ brave, fierce, vigorous

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁴ “struts his dames before” = struts in front of his lady folk

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁵ light gray

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁶ in plain view, openly

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁷ elevated, distinguished, of high rank

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁸ display of high dignity/rank/wealth

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁹ elaborate costumes/uniforms

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁰ equipped, ordered

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷¹ sharpens

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷² appraises

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷³ reddish brown

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁴ farmland ploughed and harrowed but left uncultivated for a period
(usually a year)

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁵ spotted, variegated

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁶ indented parapets at the tops of walls

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁷ i.e., some beautiful woman

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁸ dwells

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁹ center of attraction

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁸⁰ Corydon and Thyrsis = prototypical names for characters in Greek
pastorals

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁸¹ leafy edible plants

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁸² food

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁸³ deft, dexterous

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁸⁴ prepares

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁸⁵ abode, cottage

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁸⁶ tie up

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁸⁷ bundles made after reaping (usually of grains)

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁸⁸ i.e., before harvest time (autumn)

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁸⁹ conduct, guide, show the way

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁰ browned by exposure

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹¹ conical heaps of hay, in the fields/pastures

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹² meadow

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹³ free from care/doubt/worry

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁴ highland

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁵ small villages or groups of houses, having no church

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁶ merry, joyful, light-hearted

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁷ primitive three-stringed fiddle

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁸ a principal fairy

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁹ cakes, sweetmeats, dainties

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰⁰ threshing tool: a wooden handle to which is tied a free-swinging clublike swingle (or “swipple”)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰¹ grain

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰² beneficent goblin

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰³ stuffed with food

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰⁴ morning call

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰⁵ garments

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰⁶ public spectacle/festivity

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰⁷ sufficient/abundant supply

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰⁸ god of marriage

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰⁹ orange-red/yellow

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁰ wax candle

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹¹ splendor, magnificence

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹² Ben Jonson, 1572–1637, poet, dramatist, critic; friend/colleague of Shakespeare

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹³ comedy (in which the actors wore low-heeled slippers, or “socks”)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁴ imagination

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁵ corrosive

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁶ the Lydian (ancient Greek) mode (musical scale) was soft, often melancholy; air = melodies

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁷ gentle

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁸ round

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁹ see footnote 36 to line 27, above

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁰ attention, care

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²¹ whirling, intoxicated

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²² skill, craft

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²³ legendary poet/musician

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁴ raise, lift

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁵ Elysian Fields/Elysium = legendary island of the blessed

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁶ melodies

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁷ lord of the underworld

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁸ Orpheus had won her right to live again, provided he not look back at her as she followed him up into the world of the living. He finally did look back, at her urgent request, and she disappeared forever [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁹ The reference is to Marlowe's "Passionate Shepherd" see also lines 37–40, above

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁰ (in Italian) thoughtful, serious, grave

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³¹ help, assist

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³² resolved, determined

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³³ whims

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁴ foolish, credulous, idiotic

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁵ showy

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁶ minute particle (of dust)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁷ hirelings, mercenaries, tools, creatures

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁸ son of Hypnos (Sleep), and god of dreams

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁹ reach, light upon

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁰ a handsome Ethiopian prince; his sister's name is Himera—but the allusion remains obscure

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴¹ suit

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴² Cassiopeia, queen of Ethiopia, boasted that Andromeda, her daughter, was more beautiful than the Nereids, who responded by turning Andromeda into a constellation ["Ethiope" = bisyllable—i.e., first syllable stressed, second syllable elided]

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴³ virgin daughter of Saturn (Chronos) and goddess of the hearth

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁴ in Crete? where Jove (Zeus) lived—and plotted against Saturn (Chronos)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁵ priestess of a pagan deity

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁶ sober, grave, serious, reserved

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁷ color

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁸ sable-colored: black

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁹ mantlelike vestment, worn over the shoulders

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁵⁰ fine linen fabric; unlike most linens, cypress lawn is black

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁵¹ comely

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁵² usual, habitual, customary

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁵³ to communicate/hold intercourse with

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁵⁴ transported, carried away, enraptured

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁵⁵ steadfast, firm, grave, serious

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁵⁶ heavy

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁵⁷ glance, look

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁵⁸ i.e., her eyes

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁵⁹ with equal firmness

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁰ lean

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶¹ fasting (abstinence from food)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶² always

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶³ withdrawn

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁴ well-ordered

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁵ “the Cherub Contemplation” (line 54, below)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁶ Ezekiel’s vision of a heavenly chariot: see Ezekiel 10:1–2 and 9–22

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁷ [five syllables, first, third, and fifth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁸ summon (with a whisper)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁹ unless

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁰ the nightingale

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷¹ mood, manner

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷² moon goddess

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷³ curbs, restrains

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁴ yoke = wooden device for coupling more than one horse or other dray animal to one vehicle

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁵ singer (the nightingale)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁶ solicit, entreat

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁷ not by lawn cutting but by sheep nibbling

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁸ a piece/patch of ground, usually small

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁹ deep mournful tone

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁸⁰ quiet

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁸¹ remote, secluded

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁸² darkness

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁸³ the night watchman/town crier

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁸⁴ incantation

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁸⁵ the constellation Ursa Major (“Great Bear”), which never sets

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁸⁶ Hermes Trismegistus (“thrice great Hermes”), third-century Neoplatonist

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁸⁷ Plato's spirit is assumed, here, to now reside in a planetary sphere: Plato argued that great men's souls do in fact so ascend after their bodies die

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁸⁸ explain

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁸⁹ dwelling

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁰ corner, outlying/remote region

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹¹ a being intermediate between god and man: an inferior deity

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹² accord, agreement

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹³ brilliant, showy

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁴ scepter = ornamental rod/wand

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁵ rich purple cloth

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁶ of which Oedipus was king

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁷ i.e., Agamemnon, Orestes, Electra, Iphigenia

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁸ high thick-soled boots worn in tragedies, as opposed to the "sock" (low slipper) worn in comedies

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁹ mythical Greek poet, said to have been taught by Orpheus

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁰ Geoffrey Chaucer, "Squire's Tale" (in *Canterbury Tales*): the first two parts were finished, but we have only the first two lines of part three

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰¹ [three syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰² tournaments

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰³ not ironic, but a reference to Spenser, one of Milton's favorite poets, who (in Book IV, canto 2, of *The Fairie Queene*) added allegory to the tale Chaucer left unfinished

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁴ path

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁵ sober

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁶ decked, adorned

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁷ pleated, curled

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁸ Cephalus, husband of Procris, trapped in an ultimately fatal human-deity triangle when Eos ("dawn") fell in love with him

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁹ god of forests

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁰ harsh, violent, rugged

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹¹ lifted, raised

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹² frequently visited place

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹³ shelter, covering

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁴ unhallowed, polluted, alien

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁵ glaringly bright

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁶ company? harmony?

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁷ tutelary god/spirit

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁸ proper

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁹ bounds [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁰ arched, vaulted

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²¹ “massily” [adverb]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²² ornamented with scenes (“stories”) from history, legend, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²³ made, ordered, arrayed

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁴ resounding, sounding forth

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁵ ponder

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁶ show

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁷ catch sight of

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁸ Leto, a Titan, mother of twins, Apollo and Artemis, whose father is Zeus

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁹ the Great Mother [trisyllabic, first and third syllables accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁰ i.e., give her any further competitive advantage

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³¹ gentlemanly, noble, high-born, aristocratic

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³² shepherds, rustics

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³³ Arcadia: region of Greece which Virgil’s *Eclogues* made the traditional locale of the pastoral ideal

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁴ river, stream

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁵ river that fell in love with the nymph Arethusa and, after Diana transformed her into a fountain, flowed under the sea to reach her

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁶ buskin halfboot

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁷ generous, noble, honorable

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁸ choice of

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁹ skillful, dainty, pretty, elegant

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁰ profuse, extravagant, sportive, fanciful

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴¹ noxious, harmful

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴² blighting, infectious

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴³ from

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁴ crossing, traversing (the sky)

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁵ Saturn

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁶ ulcerative, decaying

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁷ go

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁸ hunting horn

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁹ count

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁰ rows

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵¹ potent, powerful

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵² vital shears = shears of life

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵³ unbreakable

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁴ the Fates, daughters of Necessity

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁵ fickle, changeable

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁶ (1) below, (2) of humble rank

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁷ rhythmical, regular

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁸ coarse

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁹ unpurified

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁰ try, attempt

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶¹ direct one's attention

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶² stock

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶³ clothing

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁴ glossy, variegated

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁵ i.e., providing shelter against the malign influence of evil stars

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁶ the River Ladon runs through Arcadia and joins the Alpheus

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁷ Arcadian mountain, birthplace of Pan, associated with the worship of Zeus

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁸ Arcadian mountain

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁹ gray/grayish white

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁰ Arcadian mountain range, where Hercules hunted and killed a fierce wild boar

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷¹ Arcadian mountain, associated with Pan

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷² nymph beloved by Pan

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷³ written to celebrate the Earl of Bridgewater's election as Lord President of Wales. As performed at Lord Bridgewater's Ludlow castle, 29 September 1634, the lady was played by Bridgewater's daughter and the brothers by her brothers. Thyrsis/attendant spirit was played by the composer of the masque's music (and music tutor to the family), Henry Lawes.

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁴ cattle pen

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁵ Pluto, lord of the underworld, as Jove was lord of that above ground

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁶ custom, practice

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁷ i.e., the mainsea, the ocean

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁸ much, great

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁹ temperate

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁰ power

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸¹ intricate, entangled

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸² Bacchus

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸³ free

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁴ with

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁵ menacing, inauspicious

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁶ brilliant, precious

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁷ foolish

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁸ lynx

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁹ fair, pleasing, proper

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁰ goddess of the rainbow

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹¹ garments

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹² male servant, attendant, rustic, shepherd

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹³ reed flute

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁴ magical, enchanting

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁵ band, crowd, herd

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁶ having the heads of

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁷ commands

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁸ to shut up sheep in a fold (pen, enclosure)

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁹ (1) temper, abate, mitigate, (2) lay down

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁰ sloping, slanting

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰¹ threads, cords

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰² sprinkling down

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰³ proverbs, maxims

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁴ channels, inlets

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁵ herd, flock, multitude

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁶ morris dance: traditional English country dance, especially associated with May Day celebrations

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁷ lively, skilled

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁸ lively, spruce

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁹ rippling

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁰ festivals, holidays

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹¹ Thracian goddess of orgies

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹² except

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹³ black

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁴ Hecate [trisyllabic], ghost-world goddess

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁵ blabbering

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁶ spy

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁷ fussy, overly refined

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁸ announce

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁹ i.e., they dance

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁰ shelter, hiding place

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²¹ thickets

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²² overtaken by darkness

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²³ tricks, traps, snares

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁴ elastic, impressionable

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁵ dim

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁶ appearances, form

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁷ crafty, clever, skillful

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁸ flattering, coaxing, specious

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁹ prosperity

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁰ maintains in connection with

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³¹ (1) completely, (2) becomingly

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³² merry

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³³ sportive

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁴ rustics, farmhands

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁵ frisky, unregulated

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁶ in error

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁷ uncivilized/coarse behavior

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁸ drinkers

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁹ devotee

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁰ pilgrim

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴¹ clothing, garments, dress

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴² wagon

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴³ abundant

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁴ complete

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁵ unbroken, absolute

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁶ supporting

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁷ glittering, gleaming

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁸ river in western Asia Minor, flowing into the Aegean

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁹ beloved by Echo, and punished for rejecting her

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁰ speech

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵¹ resounding

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵² drop in pitch

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵³ [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁴ water nymphs [trisyllabic, first and third syllables accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁵ powerful, mighty

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁶ multiheaded, voracious monster

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁷ deadly whirlpool, located opposite Scylla

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁸ felt intimately/in the heart

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁹ god of shepherds, flocks, and their fertility; half human, half goat

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁰ god of wildernesses

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶¹ expedient device

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶² ushering = escorting

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶³ hit/come upon, guess

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁴ to be important, to signify/matter

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁵ daughter of Zeus and Hera, cupbearer of the gods [bisyllabic, first accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁶ straps, ropes, harness

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁷ wearied, overworked

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁸ tender/cutter of hedges

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁹ covering, as by a mantle/cloak

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁰ bearing, carriage

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷¹ airy, joyful, bright, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷² dell, hollow, cleft between hills

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷³ shallow hollow or pit

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁴ bushy

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁵ brook

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁶ escort

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁷ residing

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁸ sheltered

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁹ straw bed

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁰ poor, humble, inferior

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸¹ dutiful, faithful

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸² guaranteed, attested

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸³ adapt, regulate

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁴ are in the habit/practice of

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁵ blessing

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁶ (1) wax wick/candle, (2) a light

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁷ reed

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁸ small door

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁹ Arcadia (site of proverbial pastoral simplicity)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁰ Tyre = ancient Phoenician city

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹¹ Callisto, raped and impregnated by Jupiter, is turned by Juno into Ursa Minor: the Pole Star is in its tail

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹² shut into their folds/enclosures/pens

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹³ interlaced twigs, sprigs, and the like

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁴ sheds, stalls

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁵ flute

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁶ made of oat stems/straw

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁷ that which forms/encloses a fingerhole

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁸ narrow, enclosed, confined

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁹ ridge

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁰ large pillow

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰¹ filled

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰² overexcited/intense

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰³ reckon, resolve

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁴ form, shape

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁵ i.e., I do not plan to look for her in that spirit

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁶ embraces, hides

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁷ fixed, steadfast

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁸ unsuitable

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁹ peril, danger, risk

[Return to text.](#)

⁸¹⁰ [five syllables, first, third, and fifth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁸¹¹ preens

[Return to text.](#)

⁸¹² quotidian activities

[Return to text.](#)

⁸¹³ confused

[Return to text.](#)

⁸¹⁴ of the earth

[Return to text.](#)

⁸¹⁵ blinded, clouded

[Return to text.](#)

⁸¹⁶ likes, seeks

[Return to text.](#)

⁸¹⁷ single-person solitary dwelling

[Return to text.](#)

⁸¹⁸ place of frequent resort

[Return to text.](#)

⁸¹⁹ garments

[Return to text.](#)

⁸²⁰ prayer beads

[Return to text.](#)

⁸²¹ unchastity

[Return to text.](#)

⁸²² assault

[Return to text.](#)

⁸²³ body

[Return to text.](#)

⁸²⁴ unacknowledged? unaccompanied?

[Return to text.](#)

⁸²⁵ conclude

[Return to text.](#)

⁸²⁶ balance

[Return to text.](#)

⁸²⁷ govern

[Return to text.](#)

⁸²⁸ indirect, oblique

[Return to text.](#)

⁸²⁹ travel, tread

[Return to text.](#)

⁸³⁰ having no shelter

[Return to text.](#)

⁸³¹ open uncultivated ground

[Return to text.](#)

⁸³² grotto = cave, excavation

[Return to text.](#)

⁸³³ covered

[Return to text.](#)

⁸³⁴ bristling, frightful

[Return to text.](#)

⁸³⁵ not disconcerted/deceived

[Return to text.](#)

⁸³⁶ marshy, moorlike

[Return to text.](#)

⁸³⁷ swampland, marsh

[Return to text.](#)

⁸³⁸ unexorcised

[Return to text.](#)

⁸³⁹ dark, swarthy

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁴⁰ from underground

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁴¹ weapons

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁴² tawny-spotted/streaked

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁴³ leopard, panther

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁴⁴ arrow

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁴⁵ to frustrate, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁴⁶ absolute, sheer

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁴⁷ dressed in livery (distinctive uniform of servants)

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁴⁸ serve, wait upon

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁴⁹ unrestrained, profuse

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁵⁰ admits

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁵¹ [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁵² incorporates

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁵³ degrade, make bestial

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁵⁴ cemetery

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁵⁵ as if

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁵⁶ sacred, holy, religious

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁵⁷ unsheathe a sword

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁵⁸ i.e., swords

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁵⁹ melodies, tunes

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁶⁰ pushing, hurrying

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁶¹ mother

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁶² irregular

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁶³ caused to be abandoned

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁶⁴ nearest, closest

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁶⁵ open expanse of upland

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁶⁶ concern, fear

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁶⁷ fanciful, incredible

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁶⁸ [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁶⁹ monsters with lion heads, goat bodies, and serpent tails

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁷⁰ split

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁷¹ poisonous, life-destroying

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁷² whispered charms/spells

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁷³ undoing

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁷⁴ coinage, stamp

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁷⁵ engraved, written

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁷⁶ pastures, fields

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁷⁷ crowd

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁷⁸ domesticated

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁷⁹ [trisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁸⁰ most remote (farthest in)

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁸¹ unwitting

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁸² waving

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁸³ conclusion, end

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁸⁴ familiar

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁸⁵ forestall

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁸⁶ a sentence [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁸⁷ enslaved

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁸⁸ evil

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁸⁹ [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁹⁰ the underworld, Hades

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁹¹ monsters, part woman, part bird

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁹² many-headed snakes

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁹³ hobgoblins

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁹⁴ booty

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁹⁵ prowess

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁹⁶ profit, advantage

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁹⁷ “as to tell us this story/narrative”

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁹⁸ tricks, stratagems

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁹⁹ value, merit

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁰⁰ strong, powerful, magically endowed

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁰¹ pouch

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁰² herbs, medicinal plants

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁰³ picked, chose

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁰⁴ studded

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁰⁵ a fabled and fabulous plant

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁰⁶ fabulous plant given to Odysseus by the god Hermes [bisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁰⁷ the shepherd lad

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁰⁸ supreme

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁰⁹ blasting influence, curse

[Return to text.](#)

⁹¹⁰ [five syllables, first, third, and fifth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁹¹¹ entanglements

[Return to text.](#)

⁹¹² retired, came away

[Return to text.](#)

⁹¹³ sweet, pleasing

[Return to text.](#)

⁹¹⁴ withdraw, vanish

[Return to text.](#)

⁹¹⁵ retreat, recoil, slip away

[Return to text.](#)

⁹¹⁶ quickly, at once

[Return to text.](#)

⁹¹⁷ stimulating, invigorating

[Return to text.](#)

⁹¹⁸ sweet drink

[Return to text.](#)

⁹¹⁹ boundaries, limits

[Return to text.](#)

⁹²⁰ grief-banishing drug

[Return to text.](#)

⁹²¹ wife of Thon = Polydamna

[Return to text.](#)

⁹²² terms, promises

[Return to text.](#)

⁹²³ not privileged, not freed from

[Return to text.](#)

⁹²⁴ [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁹²⁵ those who

[Return to text.](#)

⁹²⁶ quickly

[Return to text.](#)

⁹²⁷ looks, faces

[Return to text.](#)

⁹²⁸ masked, disguised

[Return to text.](#)

⁹²⁹ pompous, formal, solemn

[Return to text.](#)

⁹³⁰ Diogenes, Cynic philosopher who lived in a tub

[Return to text.](#)

⁹³¹ offspring

[Return to text.](#)

⁹³² stored

[Return to text.](#)

⁹³³ furnish

[Return to text.](#)

⁹³⁴ sulk

[Return to text.](#)

⁹³⁵ peas, beans, lentils, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

⁹³⁶ coarse wool

[Return to text.](#)

⁹³⁷ miser

[Return to text.](#)

⁹³⁸ Nature

[Return to text.](#)

⁹³⁹ overburdened

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁴⁰ feathers [the line, having ten syllables, *can* be scanned as iambic pentameter—but not easily]

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁴¹ overfreighted, overloaded

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁴² duped

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁴³ boasted of, praised

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁴⁴ in general use, passing/flowing from hand to hand

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁴⁵ show

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁴⁶ plain, simple, unpolished

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁴⁷ [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁴⁸ vile, wretched, worthless

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁴⁹ color

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁵⁰ work busily at

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁵¹ embroidery

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁵² to separate, to card

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁵³ judicious

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁵⁴ except

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁵⁵ magician, trickster, buffoon

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁵⁶ as he has

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁵⁷ thrusting forward, intruding

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁵⁸ decked, dressed

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁵⁹ sift, examine

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁶⁰ vice's

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁶¹ blame, burden

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁶² wished

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁶³ provider

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁶⁴ suitable, seemly

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁶⁵ [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁶⁶ [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁶⁷ showy, dazzling

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁶⁸ holy secret

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁶⁹ the practice of swordplay

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁷⁰ sinews

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁷¹ i.e., Jove consigns the rebels against him to “the chains” of Hell

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁷² test, afflict

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁷³ i.e., creation

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁷⁴ sediments, dregs

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁷⁵ at once

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁷⁶ disjoining, parting, separating

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁷⁷ stop

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁷⁸ character in Spenser’s *Fairie Queene*

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁷⁹ truest, most genuine

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁸⁰ played his pipe/flute

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁸¹ check, restraint

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁸² governs

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁸³ river flowing out of Wales, ending in Bristol Channel

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁸⁴ once upon a time

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁸⁵ son of Brutus, legendary founder of Britain

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁸⁶ Brutus

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁸⁷ river

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁸⁸ depths

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁸⁹ sea god, father of the Nereids

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁹⁰ limp, loose

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁹¹ spiritual cleansers

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁹² vestibule

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁹³ elf, goblin

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁹⁴ breaths of malignant air, curses, infections

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁹⁵ sing joyously

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁹⁶ songs

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁹⁷ encircling

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁹⁸ surrounding, hemming in

[Return to text.](#)

⁹⁹⁹ exorcising

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁰⁰ [four syllables, second and fourth accented] Oceanus' wife, mother of rivers, is Tethys; Neptune = Poseidon, god of the sea and of earthquakes; Nereus is father of the Nereids, one of whom is Thetis; the "Carpathian wizard" is Proteus, a shape-shifter; Triton is son of Poseidon and Amphitrite, human from the waist up, fish below; Glaucus is a fisherman who became immortal and a sea god; Leucothea is a Greek sea goddess; Parthenope is a Siren, as is Ligéa.

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁰¹ blown, sounded

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁰² [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁰³ beaches, shores

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁰⁴ [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁰⁵ sly, artful

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁰⁶ raise, lift

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁰⁷ toss one's head

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁰⁸ [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁰⁹ shackle, chain, fetter, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰¹⁰ constrained, pressed tightly

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰¹¹ duty

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰¹² healing effect

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰¹³ viscous resinlike secretions

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰¹⁴ sticky

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰¹⁵ serve

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰¹⁶ Neptune's wife [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰¹⁷ Trojan prince, father of Aeneas

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰¹⁸ small, minor

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰¹⁹ small streams, brooks

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰²⁰ headwaters

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰²¹ transparent pale green precious stone

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰²² thicket

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰²³ come, congregate

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰²⁴ quick, abrupt lowering of head or body

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰²⁵ customs, behavior

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰²⁶ prepare, invent

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰²⁷ affectedly elegant or dainty

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰²⁸ tree nymphs [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰²⁹ open ground, grassy pasture

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰³⁰ tests, trials

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰³¹ rippling

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰³² trim, dapper, neat

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰³³ so that

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰³⁴ walkways, passages

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰³⁵ aromatic balsam

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰³⁶ goddess of the rainbow

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰³⁷ cause to blossom/bloom

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰³⁸ embroidered, trimmed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰³⁹ wonderfully handsome youth: one day while he was hunting, he was seen by Aphrodite/Venus, who fell in love with him—and when he was killed by a wild boar, from his blood grew the rose, and from her tears, the anemone

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁴⁰ growing

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁴¹ Aphrodite/Venus

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁴² raised

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁴³ Cupid falls in love with Psyche, a mortal; she disobeys him and is deserted by him; thereafter she goes through trial after trial and, eventually, reclaims and is married to him [bisyllabic; the first letter is silent]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁴⁴ [adverb]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁴⁵ pleasantly

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁴⁶ sky

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁴⁷ ends

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁴⁸ the music of the spheres

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁴⁹ weak, infirm

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁵⁰ the poem was intended to be “set on a clock case”

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁵¹ see footnote 40 immediately below

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁵² the leaden weight that animates the clock’s works

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁵³ (1) womb, (2) stomach, belly

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁵⁴ scum, rubbish, dregs

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁵⁵ indivisible?

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁵⁶ left behind [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁵⁷ sixth order in the nine ranks of the celestial hierarchy

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁵⁸ heraldic pomp (“herald” = officer who makes state pronouncements and delivers state messages)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁵⁹ erewhile, once

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁶⁰ [adjective, modifying “sin”]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁶¹ spelled in Milton’s manuscript “sease,” this word could be either “seize” or “cease”

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁶² judgment, sentence

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁶³ “And I [God] will establish my covenant between me and thee [Abraham] and thy seed after thee in their generations, for an everlasting covenant” (Genesis 17:7)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁶⁴ [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁶⁵ always

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁶⁶ not discordant

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁶⁷ concord, harmony [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁶⁸ primal, original

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁶⁹ (1) fellowship, (2) company of musicians

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁷⁰ a generic shepherd’s name—announcing, as it were, that the genre of the poem is the classic pastoral

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁷¹ lyric ode sung by a single voice; in the pastoral tradition, an interior monologue or soliloquy

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁷² Edward King, a fellow student at Cambridge

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁷³ by occasion = the poem, written because of this fatal occasion....

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁷⁴ (1) symbolic of poetry, (2) symbolic of fame: the laurel, an evergreen, is sacred to Apollo, god of poetry

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁷⁵ sacred to Venus

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁷⁶ sacred to Bacchus, the god of wine

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁷⁷ dry, withered

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁷⁸ unripe

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁷⁹ constrained

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁸⁰ inexperienced, unskilled

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁸¹ ripening

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁸² obligation, necessity

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁸³ roll to and fro

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁸⁴ withering, shriveling

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁸⁵ recompense, reward, honor

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁸⁶ the Muses

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁸⁷ a bit

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁸⁸ disdainful

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁸⁹ so may = in the future, when Milton dies, he too may be thus mourned
by “some gentle muse”

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁹⁰ noble, excellent, honorable

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁹¹ fortunate, successful

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁹² approve of, regard with kindness

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁹³ ordained, predetermined, fated

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁹⁴ holding funereal ashes

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁹⁵ black burial sheet

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁹⁶ brook, stream

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁹⁷ meadows, glades

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁹⁸ their flocks

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁰⁹⁹ what time = when, at the time when

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁰⁰ a brownish beetle known as a cockchafer or dorfly/dorhawk

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁰¹ blows (strictly, “hums” or “buzzes”)

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁰² summertime/ hot-weather heat

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁰³ fattening? feeding? watering?

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁰⁴ Hesperus (Venus)

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁰⁵ “wheel” because heavenly objects were thought to be located in “spheres”

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁰⁶ tuned, in harmony with

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁰⁷ oat stems/straws

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁰⁸ woodland gods/demons, part human, part beast

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁰⁹ a tutor at Cambridge?

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹⁰ straggling

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹¹ poems, songs

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹² plant-disease of an ulcerous sort

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹³ worm or crawling larva, an intestinal parasite thought to infect sheep, cattle, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹⁴ recently weaned

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹⁵ blossoms

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹⁶ slopes, hills, mountains, cliffs, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹⁷ Celtic minstrel-poets

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹⁸ the island of Anglesey, in the Irish Sea

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹¹⁹ the River Dee

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹²⁰ magic

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹²¹ Calliope [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹²² i.e., she who bore Orpheus

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹²³ was mother to

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹²⁴ (1) performing magic, (2) entrancing, charming

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹²⁵ all of

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹²⁶ mob, throng, crowd, rabble, etc., all female, though it is unclear whether they were (1) Thracian women jealous of Eurydice or (2) Maenads angry that Orpheus did not properly honor their god, Dionysus

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹²⁷ his head had been cut off; in some versions of the story, the severed head continued to sing

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹²⁸ profits, avails

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹²⁹ simple, plain

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹³⁰ frolic

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹³¹ generic shepherdess name

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹³² see footnote 20, immediately above

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹³³ positive, determined, unobstructed, pure

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹³⁴ stimulate, incite

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹³⁵ reward

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹³⁶ find it

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹³⁷ Atropus (“irresistible”)

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹³⁸ Phoebus Apollo, god of poetry

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹³⁹ glittering

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁴⁰ metal hammered into very thin sheets and used to set off some gem or glittering stone

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁴¹ talk

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁴² ultimately

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁴³ recompense, reward

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁴⁴ the nymph Arethusa fled from a sea god, Alpheus; Diana turned her into a fountain, but he—a river—flowed under the sea and was thus united with her

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁴⁵ river, stream

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁴⁶ river running through Mantua, home of Virgil

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁴⁷ pastoral song

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁴⁸ Triton, a merman, son of Poseidon and Amphitrite, a Nereid

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁴⁹ cruel, terrible, wicked

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁵⁰ rough, stormy, strong

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁵¹ winds represented as great birds

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁵² pointed, hooked

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁵³ god of the winds [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁵⁴ water nymph [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁵⁵ during, subject to

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁵⁶ “Eclipses are misfortunes.... *Funk & Wagnalls Standard Dictionary of Folklore, Mythology, and Legend*, ed. Maria Leach (New York: Harper, 1972), p. 337

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁵⁷ secret, foul, evil

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁵⁸ River Cam, which flows through Cambridge (and from which, of course, the town takes its name)

[Return to text.](#)

1159 cap

[Return to text.](#)

1160 made of reedlike plants

[Return to text.](#)

1161 worked

[Return to text.](#)

1162 the hyacinth

[Return to text.](#)

1163 robbed

[Return to text.](#)

1164 child

[Return to text.](#)

1165 St. Peter, wearing a bishop's miter (headdress) and carrying the keys to Heaven's gates

[Return to text.](#)

1166 violently

[Return to text.](#)

1167 enough

[Return to text.](#)

1168 invited

[Return to text.](#)

1169 the prosody is helped if "they are" is contracted: did Milton perhaps intend it to be sounded as spoken?

[Return to text.](#)

1170 successful, prosperous

[Return to text.](#)

1171 like

[Return to text.](#)

1172 trifling, showy

[Return to text.](#)

1173 feeble

[Return to text.](#)

1174 corrupt, foul, festering, virulent

[Return to text.](#)

1175 vapor

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁷⁶ breathe

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁷⁷ plague, pestilence, moral corruption

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁷⁸ savage, cruel

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁷⁹ secret

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁸⁰ at a rapid pace, swiftly, right away

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁸¹ as Roy Flannagan has said, “perhaps the most famous crux in English literature”

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁸² see note 33 to line 85, above

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁸³ revered, authoritative

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁸⁴ uncertain: perhaps Theocritus, pastoral poet, who may have been born in Sicily

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁸⁵ valleys

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁸⁶ as in “bluebells,” “harebells,” etc.

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁸⁷ small flowers

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁸⁸ are customary

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁸⁹ playful, sportive

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁹⁰ new, green

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁹¹ a hollow among hills

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁹² the Dog Star, Sirius

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁹³ frugally, abstemiously

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁹⁴ clever, lovely, dainty

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁹⁵ the colored center of flowers

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁹⁶ spring, springlike

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁹⁷ early

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁹⁸ flecked

[Return to text.](#)

¹¹⁹⁹ sober, steadfast, constant, mournful

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁰⁰ crowned with laurel

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁰¹ wood frame to hold flowers; funeral carriage

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁰² introduce, put forward

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁰³ islands off the Scottish coast

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁰⁴ engulfing, submerging

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁰⁵ the sea was thought to be full of monsters

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁰⁶ tear-strewn

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁰⁷ i.e., we pray for you to be returned, but our prayers (“vows”) are denied

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁰⁸ the Roman name for Land’s End, in Cornwall; perhaps a reference to some Cornish giant—or perhaps (since Milton first wrote and then crossed out “Corineus”) inserted strictly for prosodic reasons

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁰⁹ Mount St. Michael’s, near Land’s End in Cornwall, and across the English Channel from Mont-St.-Michel, in France

[Return to text.](#)

¹²¹⁰ in Spain

[Return to text.](#)

¹²¹¹ a fortress (“hold”) near Cape Finisterre, in Spain

[Return to text.](#)

¹²¹² pity, compassion

[Return to text.](#)

¹²¹³ carry, transport

[Return to text.](#)

¹²¹⁴ i.e., the sun

[Return to text.](#)

¹²¹⁵ soon, in a little while

[Return to text.](#)

¹²¹⁶ to restore, renew, mend

[Return to text.](#)

¹²¹⁷ dresses

[Return to text.](#)

¹²¹⁸ precious metal, here clearly “gold”

[Return to text.](#)

¹²¹⁹ muddy, damp

[Return to text.](#)

¹²²⁰ bathes, washes

[Return to text.](#)

¹²²¹ inexpressible

[Return to text.](#)

¹²²² grand, sacred, formal

[Return to text.](#)

¹²²³ companies, groups, bands

[Return to text.](#)

¹²²⁴ fellowships

[Return to text.](#)

¹²²⁵ go

[Return to text.](#)

¹²²⁶ guardian spirit

[Return to text.](#)

1227 ample

[Return to text.](#)

1228 reparation, compensation

[Return to text.](#)

1229 unpolished, rough

[Return to text.](#)

1230 streams

[Return to text.](#)

1231 reeds, pipes, flutes

[Return to text.](#)

1232 pastoral

[Return to text.](#)

1233 extended across

[Return to text.](#)

1234 pulled around him

[Return to text.](#)

1235 prosody

[Return to text.](#)

1236 the Latin *urget*, which Horace uses here, means “presses down on”

[Return to text.](#)

1237 simple

[Return to text.](#)

1238 elegance, style

[Return to text.](#)

1239 unaccustomed

[Return to text.](#)

1240 to be surprised, astonished, to marvel at

[Return to text.](#)

1241 too readily believed

[Return to text.](#)

1242 at leisure, unoccupied

[Return to text.](#)

1243 luckless

[Return to text.](#)

1244 untested

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁴⁵ votive offering

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁴⁶ [noun: the Latin is *tabula sacer votiva*]: David Ferry's 1997 translation renders these lines "The votive tablet on the temple wall / Is witness that in tribute to the god / I have hung up my sea-soaked garment there."

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁴⁷ i.e., dedicated/given them to the god

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁴⁸ clothing

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁴⁹ (1) episcopacy had been formally abolished in 1643 (bishops having been members of the House of Lords); (2) in addition, the chief prelate had been the much-hated Archbishop William Laud—whose name, in British English, is virtually a homonym of "lord"

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁵⁰ resolute, inflexible

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁵¹ in 1645 the House of Commons banned either public or private use of the *Book of Common Prayer*

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁵² i.e., holding more than one clerical post at a time, as Anglicans had, was a practice being indulged in by Presbyterian clergymen as well

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁵³ swear an oath (to)

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁵⁴ presbyterian synod (unit of administration)

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁵⁵ Adam Stewart, member of Parliament and propagandist for orthodox Presbyterianism; he affixed only his initials to the pamphlets he published

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁵⁶ Samuel Rutherford, a Scot, author of *Plea for Presbytery* (1642)

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁵⁷ Thomas Edwards, author of *Gangraena: a catalogue and discovery of many of the errors, heresies, blasphemies, and pernicious practices of the sectaries of this time* (1646)

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁵⁸ Robert Baillie, a Scot who attacked the Independents

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁵⁹ the Council of Trent, 1545–63, attempted but failed to effect Church reforms

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁶⁰ leather accouterments worn, at prayer, by Jews: here, a symbol of open hypocrisy

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁶¹ already cropped: William Prynne (a barrister), the onetime Puritan pamphleteer and then member of the House of Commons, had been thus punished in 1634 (and punished again, for the same offense, in 1637, at which time his cheeks were branded) for criticizing the bishops

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁶² Psalms 80–88, rather dully translated in 1648—that is, five years earlier than Psalms 1–8—are here omitted; they make no significant contribution either to Milton’s English poetry or to the study thereof

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁶³ grain husks, separated out by threshing or winnowing

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁶⁴ winnowed, threshed

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁶⁵ endure, withstand

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁶⁶ put up with, endure

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁶⁷ [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁶⁸ heathen, pagans

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁶⁹ [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁷⁰ ponder

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁷¹ stand erect

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁷² meetings, assemblies

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁷³ deride, mock

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁷⁴ rigorous, unsparing

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁷⁵ fierce, terrible, dire

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁷⁶ merciless

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁷⁷ anger, wrath

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁷⁸ afflict

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁷⁹ ruled, governed

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁸⁰ crushed

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁸¹ (1) fully, (2) finally, at last

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁸² disinclined

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁸³ be conversant with

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁸⁴ in the way = thereby

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁸⁵ dry

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁸⁶ support, reliance

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁸⁷ King David

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁸⁸ his rebellious son

[Return to text.](#)

¹²⁸⁹ life

[Return to text.](#)

1290 quickly

[Return to text.](#)

1291 mob, rabble, herd

[Return to text.](#)

1292 set, arrange

[Return to text.](#)

1293 tents

[Return to text.](#)

1294 struck

[Return to text.](#)

1295 righteous deeds, conformity to the requirements of divine law

[Return to text.](#)

1296 sore need, difficulties

[Return to text.](#)

1297 liberate, deliver from bondage

[Return to text.](#)

1298 free

[Return to text.](#)

1299 tolerated, endured

[Return to text.](#)

1300 what time = when

[Return to text.](#)

1301 terrified, filled with reverential fear

[Return to text.](#)

1302 faithful, rightful, correct, appropriate [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

1303 kind, crowd

[Return to text.](#)

1304 excessive quantity

[Return to text.](#)

1305 supplies, stocks

[Return to text.](#)

1306 clog

[Return to text.](#)

1307 lands

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁰⁸ grains

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁰⁹ devotional/contemplative exercise

[Return to text.](#)

¹³¹⁰ i.e., “give weight to my meditations”

[Return to text.](#)

¹³¹¹ deliberate judgment

[Return to text.](#)

¹³¹² arrange

[Return to text.](#)

¹³¹³ tarrying, expectation

[Return to text.](#)

¹³¹⁴ endure

[Return to text.](#)

¹³¹⁵ wickedness

[Return to text.](#)

¹³¹⁶ deceitful, treacherous

[Return to text.](#)

¹³¹⁷ in Thy fear = in fear of You

[Return to text.](#)

¹³¹⁸ humbly

[Return to text.](#)

¹³¹⁹ watch, notice, inspect

[Return to text.](#)

¹³²⁰ sin

[Return to text.](#)

¹³²¹ in front of (the place)

[Return to text.](#)

¹³²² i.e., he who has a....

[Return to text.](#)

¹³²³ unreliable, vacillating

[Return to text.](#)

¹³²⁴ true

[Return to text.](#)

¹³²⁵ destroyed, crushed

[Return to text.](#)

¹³²⁶ continually, always

[Return to text.](#)

¹³²⁷ rebuke, find fault with

[Return to text.](#)

¹³²⁸ set right, repair

[Return to text.](#)

¹³²⁹ bed

[Return to text.](#)

¹³³⁰ wastes, burns away

[Return to text.](#)

¹³³¹ grown

[Return to text.](#)

¹³³² watch, notice

[Return to text.](#)

¹³³³ wickedness

[Return to text.](#)

¹³³⁴ petition, entreaty

[Return to text.](#)

¹³³⁵ acknowledge

[Return to text.](#)

¹³³⁶ nonplussed, prostrated

[Return to text.](#)

¹³³⁷ struck, destroyed, confounded, frustrated

[Return to text.](#)

¹³³⁸ disconcerted

[Return to text.](#)

¹³³⁹ belonging to the tribe of Benjamin, one of the twelve tribes of ancient Israel

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁴⁰ King David, the Psalmist

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁴¹ worked, done

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁴² given in return

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁴³ nothing—i.e., without any fee or ransom

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁴⁴ crush

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁴⁵ deposit, place

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁴⁶ anger, wrath

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁴⁷ press forward, drive, pursue

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁴⁸ keep watch

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁴⁹ fury

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁵⁰ appease, soften, mitigate

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁵¹ i.e., on earth

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁵² pledge, promise

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁵³ creation

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁵⁴ wrongly (“do” = “act”)

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁵⁵ set up, place

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁵⁶ securely

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁵⁷ separates, distinguishes

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁵⁸ kidneys

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁵⁹ ultimately, in the end

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁶⁰ strict, rigorous, unsparing

[Return to text.](#)

1361 desist, abstain

[Return to text.](#)

1362 sharpens

[Return to text.](#)

1363 remains

[Return to text.](#)

1364 pursue (maliciously), hunt, harass, oppress

[Return to text.](#)

1365 he who (*not* God)

[Return to text.](#)

1366 pompous

[Return to text.](#)

1367 dug

[Return to text.](#)

1368 appropriate, fitting

[Return to text.](#)

1369 path

[Return to text.](#)

1370 track, way of life

[Return to text.](#)

1371 head

[Return to text.](#)

1372 precipitous, headlong

[Return to text.](#)

1373 stir up, incite, stimulate

[Return to text.](#)

1374 molded

[Return to text.](#)

1375 cut short, check

[Return to text.](#)

1376 weaken

[Return to text.](#)

1377 called into being

[Return to text.](#)

1378 by

[Return to text.](#)

1379 (1) high rank, power, (2) pomp, dignity

[Return to text.](#)

1380 i.e., are met

[Return to text.](#)

1381 scarcity

[Return to text.](#)

1382 metric

[Return to text.](#)

1383 iambic pentameter

[Return to text.](#)

1384 substance, content

[Return to text.](#)

1385 differently

[Return to text.](#)

1386 prosody

[Return to text.](#)

1387 proper, appropriate

[Return to text.](#)

1388 common, ordinary, uneducated

[Return to text.](#)

1389 considered

[Return to text.](#)

1390 most appropriately

[Return to text.](#)

1391 time

[Return to text.](#)

1392 about

[Return to text.](#)

1393 ancient Israel

[Return to text.](#)

1394 deadly, fatal

[Return to text.](#)

1395 Christ

[Return to text.](#)

1396 Horeb = Sinai, in Exodus and Deuteronomy

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁹⁷ Moses, who was thought to have been the author of Genesis

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁹⁸ the Jews

[Return to text.](#)

¹³⁹⁹ site of the Temple, in Jerusalem

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁰⁰ Siloam, near Jerusalem

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁰¹ fast by = close, very near

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁰² the temple

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁰³ (1) perilous, rash, risky, (2) enterprising

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁰⁴ Mount Parnassus, sacred to Apollo and to the Muses

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁰⁵ not specified: the basic nature of the Godhead?

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁰⁶ in preference to, rather than

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁰⁷ (1) hatching eggs by sitting on them, (2) meditating

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁰⁸ ignorant, obscure, blind

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁰⁹ great, original

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴¹⁰ move away

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴¹¹ on account of

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴¹² celestial

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴¹³ horrible, frightful, terrific

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴¹⁴ conflagration, burning

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴¹⁵ final damnation

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴¹⁶ unbreakable

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴¹⁷ (1) punishing, (2) severe

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴¹⁸ detestable, abominable

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴¹⁹ army, band, gang, mob

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴²⁰ abyss

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴²¹ brought to nought, shamed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴²² sentence, judgment (punishment)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴²³ kept, retained, preserved

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴²⁴ (1) full of active evil, (2) full of pain and suffering

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴²⁵ attested to, were evidence of

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴²⁶ hardened to evil, unyielding

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴²⁷ power of vision

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴²⁸ disastrous, dreadful, calamitous

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴²⁹ barren

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴³⁰ (1) desolate, (2) fantastic

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴³¹ reveal, show

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴³² presses forward

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴³³ never used up

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴³⁴ lot, destiny, fate

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴³⁵ rolling, tumbling

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴³⁶ Beëlzebub

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴³⁷ blessèd, fortunate

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴³⁸ countless numbers

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴³⁹ covenant

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁴⁰ strife

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁴¹ [five syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁴² hostile

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁴³ uncertain, undetermined

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁴⁴ cultivation

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁴⁵ to petition, beg

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁴⁶ favor, pardon, mercy

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁴⁷ humbly petitioning, bent

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁴⁸ because of

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁴⁹ fear

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁵⁰ recently

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁵¹ feared for

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁵² heavenly, pure fire

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁵³ care for/prediction of the future

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁵⁴ raised, moved forward

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁵⁵ boasting, bragging

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁵⁶ comrade, of equal rank

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁵⁷ sixth of the nine angelic orders

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁵⁸ first of the nine angelic orders

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁵⁹ guidance, leadership

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁶⁰ eternal, everlasting

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁶¹ test, trial

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁶² regret

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁶³ entities, beings

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁶⁴ unconquerable

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁶⁵ perforce, of necessity

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁶⁶ whole

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁶⁷ permit, allow

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁶⁸ strengthen

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁶⁹ satisfy

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁷⁰ slaves, bondsmen

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁷¹ anything

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁷² always

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁷³ interfere with, interrupt

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁷⁴ purposes, directions

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁷⁵ intended, designed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁷⁶ discharge

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁷⁷ caused to subside, laid to rest

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁷⁸ billows, waves

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁷⁹ waste

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁸⁰ satiated, gluttoned

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁸¹ bluish leaden-colored

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁸² direct our course, move toward

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁸³ lodge, take shelter, be contained

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁸⁴ mortified, troubled

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁸⁵ attack, hurt, damage

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁸⁶ companion, associate

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁸⁷ water

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁸⁸ rod = 5 / yards

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁸⁹ Titans: Briareos, in the next line, is one

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁹⁰ giants: Typhon, in the next line, is one

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁹¹ biblical city in Cilicia (Asia Minor), north of Cyprus

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁹² had

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁹³ (1) sea monster often analogized and linked to Satan, (2) whale

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁹⁴ perhaps, by chance

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁹⁵ foaming water, the sea

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁹⁶ “foundered” can mean “sunk” here, it may mean “stuck, mired”

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁹⁷ concluding, considering, thinking that it (i.e., Leviathan)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁹⁸ skin, outer surface

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁴⁹⁹ on the sheltered side, the side away from the wind

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁰⁰ covers, clothes

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁰¹ lifted, raised

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁰² discomfiture, ruin, perplexity

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁰³ immediately, at once

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁰⁴ spread out

[Return to text.](#)

1505 lying his weight upon

[Return to text.](#)

1506 descends, settles

[Return to text.](#)

1507 so, the like

[Return to text.](#)

1508 form, appearance

[Return to text.](#)

1509 Sicilian promontory, near Mount Etna (an active volcano, then and now)

[Return to text.](#)

1510 (1) vaporized, (2) transmuted

[Return to text.](#)

1511 lowland

[Return to text.](#)

1512 wrapped, enfolded

[Return to text.](#)

1513 infernal, hellish

[Return to text.](#)

1514 (1) literally, the River Styx, but metaphorically death, (2) by analogy, this particular burning lake

[Return to text.](#)

1515 still being

[Return to text.](#)

1516 consent, toleration

[Return to text.](#)

1517 heavenly

[Return to text.](#)

1518 residence

[Return to text.](#)

1519 regulate, control

[Return to text.](#)

1520 command

[Return to text.](#)

1521 deepest

[Return to text.](#)

1522 just barely

[Return to text.](#)

1523 stunned, bewildered

[Return to text.](#)

1524 unmindful: this is not Lethe, which induces forgetting (oblivion), as Milton makes clear, later, in Book 2, lines 606–10

[Return to text.](#)

1525 abode

[Return to text.](#)

1526 defeated, overthrown, balked, frustrated

[Return to text.](#)

1527 a guarantee, security

[Return to text.](#)

1528 stunned

[Return to text.](#)

1529 overwhelmed

[Return to text.](#)

1530 wicked, fatal

[Return to text.](#)

1531 celestial

[Return to text.](#)

1532 hardness

[Return to text.](#)

1533 Italian: Galileo

[Return to text.](#)

1534 practical scientist, learned man

[Return to text.](#)

1535 discover, make known

[Return to text.](#)

1536 spotted, patchy

[Return to text.](#)

1537 admiral's ship, flagship

[Return to text.](#)

1538 straight slender stick

[Return to text.](#)

1539 difficult, troublesome

[Return to text.](#)

1540 soil

[Return to text.](#)

1541 beat/shone strongly

[Return to text.](#)

1542 covered, roofed

[Return to text.](#)

1543 nevertheless

[Return to text.](#)

1544 burning, glowing

[Return to text.](#)

1545 in a trance, overpowered

[Return to text.](#)

1546 monastery south of Florence

[Return to text.](#)

1547 Etruscan

[Return to text.](#)

1548 give shelter

[Return to text.](#)

1549 rushlike/reedlike plants

[Return to text.](#)

1550 the constellation of Orion is associated with winter storms

[Return to text.](#)

1551 troubled, agitated

[Return to text.](#)

1552 Egyptian pharaoh who oppressed the captive Israelites

[Return to text.](#)

1553 Egyptian (Memphis = city in ancient Egypt)

[Return to text.](#)

1554 knights, horsemen

[Return to text.](#)

1555 treacherous

[Return to text.](#)

1556 temporary residents

[Return to text.](#)

1557 where the captive Israelites lived, in Egypt

[Return to text.](#)

1558 brought low, cast down

[Return to text.](#)

1559 stupefaction

[Return to text.](#)

1560 revolting, immense

[Return to text.](#)

1561 rulers

[Return to text.](#)

1562 insensibility, mental prostration

[Return to text.](#)

1563 power, force, strength

[Return to text.](#)

1564 banners, flags

[Return to text.](#)

1565 soon

[Return to text.](#)

1566 impale, pierce through

[Return to text.](#)

1567 abyss

[Return to text.](#)

1568 briskly, quickly

[Return to text.](#)

1569 accustomed

[Return to text.](#)

1570 Moses

[Return to text.](#)

1571 black

[Return to text.](#)

1572 floating/whirling through the air

[Return to text.](#)

1573 vault

[Return to text.](#)

1574 descend, settle

[Return to text.](#)

1575 solid

[Return to text.](#)

1576 burning stone, sulfur

[Return to text.](#)

1577 Goths and Vikings

[Return to text.](#)

1578 Danube

[Return to text.](#)

1579 down from

[Return to text.](#)

1580 at once

[Return to text.](#)

1581 surpassing

[Return to text.](#)

1582 at first, originally

[Return to text.](#)

1583 God's record of the righteous

[Return to text.](#)

1584 toleration, consent

[Return to text.](#)

1585 testing

[Return to text.](#)

1586 showy

[Return to text.](#)

1587 bed

[Return to text.](#)

1588 shore

[Return to text.](#)

1589 of mixed and disorderly composition

[Return to text.](#)

1590 at a distance

[Return to text.](#)

1591 most, the bulk

[Return to text.](#)

1592 place

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁹³ to face (defiantly)? await?

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁹⁴ desecrated, violated

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁹⁵ to insult, defy

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁹⁶ percussion instrument, tambourinelike

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁹⁷ savage, cruel, fierce, harsh

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁹⁸ a Semitic people who lived in Jordan; they were related to the Israelites but often at war with them

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁵⁹⁹ now Amman

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁰⁰ in Bashan region; included in the sixth province of Solomon's kingdom

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁰¹ modern Bashan

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁰² river flowing into the Dead Sea

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁰³ shameless, daring

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁰⁴ Moloch's

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁰⁵ scandalous, disgraceful

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁰⁶ Gehinnom, valley SW of Jerusalem

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁰⁷ high place in the valley of Hinnom, where children were sacrificed to Moloch

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁰⁸ place of future torment, hell

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁰⁹ symbol, model

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶¹⁰ the Moabites' god

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶¹¹ filthy

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶¹² object of fear/reverence

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶¹³ like the Ammonites, the Moabites were located in Jordan and related to the Israelites, with whom they often warred

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶¹⁴ see Deuteronomy 3:12

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶¹⁵ a mountain in the Moabite region: see Isaiah 15:2

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶¹⁶ linked to Nebo (see footnote 219, above)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶¹⁷ Hesebon = Moabite city

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶¹⁸ see Isaiah 15:5

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶¹⁹ Sehon = king of the Amorites, the pre-Israelite people of Canaan

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶²⁰ Moabite town

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶²¹ Moabite city

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶²² the Dead Sea

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶²³ Peor = Baal-Peor, Canaanite god associated with sexual orgies on Mt. Peor, in the Moabite region

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶²⁴ Israelite campsite near Jericho

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶²⁵ i.e., Egypt

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶²⁶ lewd, lascivious

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶²⁷ the Mount of Olives: see also line 403, above, and the footnote thereto

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶²⁸ hard by = close to

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶²⁹ king of Judea, 637–608 B.C., a religious reformer

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶³⁰ a major Mesopotamian river

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶³¹ the River Esor

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶³² plural of “Baal,” in Hebrew

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶³³ plural of “Ashtoreth,” in Hebrew

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶³⁴ uncombined, unmixed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶³⁵ based

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶³⁶ cumbersome: clumsy, unwieldy

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶³⁷ expanded

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶³⁸ ill will, hatred

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶³⁹ unfilled, uncrowded

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁴⁰ vile, wretched [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁴¹ see line 422, above

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁴² Sidon, Syrian city of the Phoenicians; now in Lebanon

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁴³ hill in Jerusalem, site of the Temple

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁴⁴ displeasing

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁴⁵ excessively fond of one's wife

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁴⁶ Solomon

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁴⁷ or Tammuz, Babylonian-Sumerian god (known elsewhere as Adonis, Osiris, etc.), carried off to the underworld but redeemed by Ishtar, chief Babylonian-Sumerian goddess, because life on earth had withered in his absence

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁴⁸ the river, which originates in Lebanon

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁴⁹ antechamber/entranceway to the temple

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁵⁰ prophet of the Babylonian exile of the Israelites, sixth century B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁵¹ the southern of the two kingdoms into which Israel was divided, after Solomon's death; the northern kingdom retained the name Israel

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁵² captured by the Philistines

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁵³ placed in Dagon's temple, overnight the ark toppled Dagon's statue, knocking off the head and both hands

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁵⁴ threshold-edge

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁵⁵ (1) still, at that time, (2) nevertheless

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁵⁶ Ashdod, major Philistine city

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁵⁷ a major Philistine city

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁵⁸ a major Philistine city

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁵⁹ Ekron: a major Philistine city

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁶⁰ a major Philistine city

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁶¹ Syrian god

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁶² river in Damascus [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁶³ river near Damascus

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁶⁴ clear, pellucid, translucent, shining

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁶⁵ rivers

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁶⁶ Naaman, cured by Elisha, ninth century B.C. prophet of Israel, disciple of and successor to Elijah

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁶⁷ Ahaz, king of Judah, eighth century B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁶⁸ i.e., Rimmon's

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁶⁹ stupid, foolish

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁷⁰ induced

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁷¹ i.e., Ahaz

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁷² Osiris was husband to Isis; Horus (Orus) was their son

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁷³ tricked, deceived, imposed upon

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁷⁴ produced, made up

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁷⁵ linked to Apis, the sacred bull of Egypt

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁷⁶ Horeb: the mountain where God gave Moses the Ten Commandments; the Israelites waiting below demanded an idol to worship and Aaron, taking

their gold jewelry, melted it and made them a golden calf

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁷⁷ Jeroboam, king of Judah, 930–910 B.C., made not one but two golden calves for his people to worship

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁷⁸ holy site, north of Jerusalem

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁷⁹ holy site in far northern Palestine

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁸⁰ “They made a calf in Horeb, and worshiped the molten [golden] image,/Thus they changed their glory [i.e., God] into the similitude of an ox that eateth grass.” Psalm 106:19–20

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁸¹ by extension, the Israelites

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁸² made equal

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁸³ “For I [the Lord] will pass through the land of Egypt this night, and will smite all the firstborn in the land of Egypt, both man and beast, and against all the gods of Egypt I will execute judgment.” Exodus 12:12

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁸⁴ “wickedness”

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁸⁵ monstrous, flagrant

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁸⁶ see I Samuel 2:12–17

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁸⁷ (1) lecherous, unchaste, outrageous, (2) given to luxury

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁸⁸ debauchery, dissipation, extravagance, loose living, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁸⁹ wrongful treatment, violation of another’s rights

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁹⁰ intemperance, excess, violent/disorderly behavior

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁹¹ a common Puritan insult, borrowed from the Hebrew *bene Belial*, “sons of Belial”

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁹² inflated

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁹³ a city in the Jordan plain, destroyed by God because of its wickedness

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁹⁴ see Judges 19:22–30

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁹⁵ cast out

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁹⁶ married woman (though in fact the woman was a concubine)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁹⁷ i.e., homosexual rape of a man

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁹⁸ primary

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁶⁹⁹ widely

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁰⁰ celebrated, famous

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁰¹ Javan = Ion: his issue were the Ionian (western Asia Minor) Greeks

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁰² admitted, acknowledged

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁰³ Uranus’ oldest son, Saturn’s older brother

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁰⁴ Saturn, overthrown by Jove

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁰⁵ Uranus’ daughter, Cronus’ wife

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁰⁶ like measure = equal treatment

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁰⁷ Mount Ida (in Crete)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁰⁸ mountain in Thessaly: the gods' home

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁰⁹ true heaven is the highest; the middle air is for demons—and for the Greek gods, according to Milton; in the lower air is the earth (and Hades underneath it)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷¹⁰ or = whether

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷¹¹ the oracle of Apollo at Delphi

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷¹² the oracle of Zeus at Dodona

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷¹³ boundaries, limits

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷¹⁴ Doric land = southern Greece

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷¹⁵ the Adriatic Sea

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷¹⁶ western, Italian

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷¹⁷ i.e., Britain and Ireland

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷¹⁸ dejected

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷¹⁹ hidden

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷²⁰ Satan

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷²¹ a similar

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷²² uncertain, unsettled

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷²³ appearance

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷²⁴ accustomed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷²⁵ appearance

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷²⁶ immediately

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷²⁷ a form of trumpet, shrill-sounding

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷²⁸ raised

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷²⁹ banner, flag

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷³⁰ in Judaism, the very personification of impurity, an archdemon

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷³¹ flagpole

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷³² presented, put forward

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷³³ vault, hollow

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷³⁴ realm

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷³⁵ brilliant, sparkling, radiant, lustrous

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷³⁶ helmets

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷³⁷ pressed close together

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷³⁸ quickly

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷³⁹ close-packed battle array, sixteen-man-deep square, perfected by the Romans

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁴⁰ mode, scale

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁴¹ wooden flutes, not held transversely, as is the flute properly so called

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁴² composure, state of mind

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁴³ lacking

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁴⁴ mollify, appease

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁴⁵ assuage: soften, pacify

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁴⁶ bristling, frightful

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁴⁷ battle line

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁴⁸ fearfully/exceedingly long

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁴⁹ weapons

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁵⁰ semblance, external appearance

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁵¹ arranged

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁵² lay on, give

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁵³ rows

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁵⁴ passing across, side to side (in ranks) rather than front to back (in files)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁵⁵ proper

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁵⁶ counts up

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁵⁷ swells, expands

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁵⁸ (1) actual, concrete, (2) joined in one group/body

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁵⁹ mentioned (for purposes of comparison)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁶⁰ be entitled to, be deserving of

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁶¹ i.e., any more than

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁶² pygmies: the battle is in Homer's *Iliad*, III:1–5; Milton returns to it in lines 780–81, below

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁶³ in Chalcidice, where the giants warred with the gods

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁶⁴ part of the Oedipus story: see Aeschylus, *The Seven Against Thebes*

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁶⁵ Troy

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁶⁶ auxiliary

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁶⁷ echoes, rings

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁶⁸ King Arthur

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁶⁹ surrounded by

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁷⁰ of Brittany

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁷¹ knightly combat (pronounced “justed”)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁷² castle near Nice, where Charlemagne fought

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁷³ Rinaldo's castle: see Ariosto, *Orlando Furioso*

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁷⁴ Damascus, where Moslem and Christian knights jousting, in *Orlando Furioso*

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁷⁵ Morocco (city): see footnote 396, below

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁷⁶ on the southern coast of the Black Sea

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁷⁷ Bizerta, in Tunisia, like Morocco a famous site of knightly tournaments

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁷⁸ in *La Chanson de Roland*, it is Roland rather than Charlemagne who dies at Roncevaux, not far from Fontarabbia

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁷⁹ with (merely)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁸⁰ revered, feared

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁸¹ ominous, ill-boding

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁸² sprinkles, lets fall on, pours out, drops

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁸³ confuses, makes uncertain

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁸⁴ furrowed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁸⁵ deliberate, prudent

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁸⁶ dropped

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁸⁷ partners, colleagues

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁸⁸ fate, destiny

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁸⁹ punished

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁹⁰ blast/scorch/sear with fire/heat

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁹¹ noble, majestic, imposing

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁹² blighted, withered

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁹³ tried, attempted

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁹⁴ in spite of = with contempt for

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁹⁵ except

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁹⁶ outcome

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁹⁷ dreadful, terrible

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁹⁸ predicting

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁷⁹⁹ rebuff, being forced/driven back

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁰⁰ powerful

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁰¹ armies

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁰² judgment, opinion, direction

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁰³ at full = completely

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁰⁴ worked

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁰⁵ “His strength”

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁰⁶ act, business

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁰⁷ secret, confidential

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁰⁸ plan, scheme

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁰⁹ brought about, accomplished

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸¹⁰ discover

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸¹¹ common, prevalent

[Return to text.](#)

1812 rumor

[Return to text.](#)

1813 special, select [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

1814 attention, consideration

[Return to text.](#)

1815 breaking/bursting forth

[Return to text.](#)

1816 hide, wrap

[Return to text.](#)

1817 i.e., from scabbards strapped to their thighs

[Return to text.](#)

1818 (1) very much, (2) proudly, arrogantly

[Return to text.](#)

1819 clutched and held firmly

[Return to text.](#)

1820 reverberating, sonorous

[Return to text.](#)

1821 ugly, horrible

[Return to text.](#)

1822 “the whole rest”

[Return to text.](#)

1823 a scale/crust (of hardened sulfur, combined with volcanic flow)

[Return to text.](#)

1824 current science taught that metals formed by mercury combining with sulfur

[Return to text.](#)

1825 soldiers with shovels and axes

[Return to text.](#)

1826 run in front of, precede

[Return to text.](#)

1827 dig trenches in

[Return to text.](#)

1828 to throw up, with shovels or spades

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸²⁹ defensive mound, usually of earth

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸³⁰ upright, elevated

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸³¹ aught...else = anyone else

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸³² blessed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸³³ (of the earth)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸³⁴ plundered, robbed

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸³⁵ veins (of ore)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸³⁶ be surprised/amazed/astonished

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸³⁷ curse

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸³⁸ (1) brag of, (2) glory in

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸³⁹ Egyptian

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁴⁰ condemned, depraved, rejected by God

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁴¹ i.e., Memphian kings et al.

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁴² near

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁴³ pits

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁴⁴ drawn

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁴⁵ skill

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁴⁶ melted

[Return to text.](#)

1847 dense

[Return to text.](#)

1848 separating

[Return to text.](#)

1849 skimmed

[Return to text.](#)

1850 golden dregs

[Return to text.](#)

1851 as soon = quickly

[Return to text.](#)

1852 versatile

[Return to text.](#)

1853 unknown

[Return to text.](#)

1854 soon

[Return to text.](#)

1855 structure, building

[Return to text.](#)

1856 sweet, pleasing

[Return to text.](#)

1857 harmonious music

[Return to text.](#)

1858 pillars, columns

[Return to text.](#)

1859 a form of Greek architecture

[Return to text.](#)

1860 support beams of various types

[Return to text.](#)

1861 lack

[Return to text.](#)

1862 ornamental molding

[Return to text.](#)

1863 decoration applied between the architrave and the cornice

[Return to text.](#)

1864 bossy sculptures = bas-relief sculptures

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁶⁵ adorned, carved

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁶⁶ ancient Memphis, near modern Cairo

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁶⁷ Belus or Serapis = Baal or Osiris

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁶⁸ enthrone, establish

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁶⁹ lofty/large building/structure

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁷⁰ (1) located, established, (2) firm, stable

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁷¹ (1) brass, (2) hardened in their effrontery

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁷² reveal

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁷³ suspended, hung

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁷⁴ intricate, delicate, skillful, expert, ingenious

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁷⁵ firepots

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁷⁶ swift, hurrying

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁷⁷ Italian

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁷⁸ Mulciber = Hephaestus/Vulcan

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁷⁹ talked idly, lied about

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁸⁰ steeply, perpendicularly

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁸¹ fortifications placed on top of walls

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁸⁸² directly overhead

[Return to text.](#)

1883 tell, recount

[Return to text.](#)

1884 mob, rabble

[Return to text.](#)

1885 machines, devices

[Return to text.](#)

1886 hardworking, skillful, ingenious

[Return to text.](#)

1887 solemnly impressive/majestic

[Return to text.](#)

1888 multitude

[Return to text.](#)

1889 i.e., all the spirits/demons

[Return to text.](#)

1890 precisely formed

[Return to text.](#)

1891 position, post, rank

[Return to text.](#)

1892 soon, quickly

[Return to text.](#)

1893 escorted

[Return to text.](#)

1894 approaches

[Return to text.](#)

1895 were in the habit, accustomed to

[Return to text.](#)

1896 Sultan's

[Return to text.](#)

1897 pagan

[Return to text.](#)

1898 encounter, charge

[Return to text.](#)

1899 outskirts

[Return to text.](#)

1900 walk and speak

[Return to text.](#)

1901 closed in, compacted

[Return to text.](#)

1902 the Himalayas

[Return to text.](#)

1903 merrymaking

[Return to text.](#)

1904 tardy, late-coming

[Return to text.](#)

1905 person in charge

[Return to text.](#)

1906 revolves, turns, rolls, moves

[Return to text.](#)

1907 way, onward movement

[Return to text.](#)

1908 joyful

[Return to text.](#)

1909 i.e., the watching peasant

[Return to text.](#)

1910 at large = at liberty, free

[Return to text.](#)

1911 sovereign establishment

[Return to text.](#)

1912 assembly

[Return to text.](#)

1913 crowded

[Return to text.](#)

1914 is

[Return to text.](#)

1915 put forward

[Return to text.](#)

1916 occupy

[Return to text.](#)

1917 abyss

[Return to text.](#)

1918 Persian Gulf city of great wealth

[Return to text.](#)

1919 India

[Return to text.](#)

1920 showy, magnificent

[Return to text.](#)

1921 unsatisfiable

[Return to text.](#)

1922 (1) failure, misfortune, (2) result, sequel (to the first attempt)

[Return to text.](#)

1923 abyss

[Return to text.](#)

1924 (1) strength, energy, (2) mental acuity

[Return to text.](#)

1925 the seventh of the nine angelic orders

[Return to text.](#)

1926 “Although just right [fair law] at first created me....

[Return to text.](#)

1927 regained

[Return to text.](#)

1928 luckier, more fortunate

[Return to text.](#)

1929 goes along with, depends on

[Return to text.](#)

1930 rank, worth, honor, excellence

[Return to text.](#)

1931 defensive structure, rampart

[Return to text.](#)

1932 political parties, intrigue, strife

[Return to text.](#)

1933 after

[Return to text.](#)

1934 (1) hope, (2) confidence, confident expectation

[Return to text.](#)

1935 cared

[Return to text.](#)

1936 opinion, judgment

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹³⁷ injurious, abusive, disgraceful

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹³⁸ engine = mechanical device: God's chariot?

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹³⁹ the deepest region of Hades

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁴⁰ unknown, unfamiliar

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁴¹ drug, potion

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁴² in book 1, line 266, an "oblivious pool"

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁴³ intrinsic—i.e., that which inheres in Spirits/Angels, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁴⁴ actively opposed (i.e., unnatural)

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁴⁵ the hindmost portion of their army

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁴⁶ attacking, assaulting

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁴⁷ result, outcome

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁴⁸ horrible, disgusting

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁴⁹ [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁵⁰ harass, oppress

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁵¹ slaves, serfs

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁵² kindle, inflame

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁵³ essence, being

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁵⁴ proclaimed, threatened

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁵⁵ as God had dropped manna to the Israelites, in the desert, when they fled from Egypt

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁵⁶ complicate, confuse

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁵⁷ frustrate, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁵⁸ (1) companions, (2) high lords

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁵⁹ prognostication

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁶⁰ result

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁶¹ feats, deeds, actions

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁶² being brought to an end, death

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁶³ goal, purpose

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁶⁴ object

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁶⁵ dark, secret

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁶⁶ “if we could”

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁶⁷ overthrow, defeat

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁶⁸ celestial

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁶⁹ distinctive nature/shape

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁷⁰ evil, harm

[Return to text.](#)

¹⁹⁷¹ low, inferior, degraded

[Return to text.](#)

1972 absolute, lifeless, spiritless

[Return to text.](#)

1973 employ, exercise

[Return to text.](#)

1974 undo, release

[Return to text.](#)

1975 (1) intelligent existence, (2) superior intelligent existence

[Return to text.](#)

1976 possibly, probably

[Return to text.](#)

1977 ordained

[Return to text.](#)

1978 set apart

[Return to text.](#)

1979 in full force of numbers

[Return to text.](#)

1980 interrupted

[Return to text.](#)

1981 overhanging, near

[Return to text.](#)

1982 afflicting, shaking

[Return to text.](#)

1983 without reprieve/delay

[Return to text.](#)

1984 struggling, fighting

[Return to text.](#)

1985 therefore

[Return to text.](#)

1986 occur, come to pass, result

[Return to text.](#)

1987 dishonor, disgrace

[Return to text.](#)

1988 sentence, judgment, destiny

[Return to text.](#)

1989 discharge, withdraw, cancel

[Return to text.](#)

1990 distant

[Return to text.](#)

1991 remember, notice

[Return to text.](#)

1992 unwholesome

[Return to text.](#)

1993 habituated, accustomed

[Return to text.](#)

1994 adapted

[Return to text.](#)

1995 announce, proclaim

[Return to text.](#)

1996 submission, obedience, homage

[Return to text.](#)

1997 for/by

[Return to text.](#)

1998 from

[Return to text.](#)

1999 unfavorable

[Return to text.](#)

2000 showing, displaying, exhibiting

[Return to text.](#)

2001 lacks

[Return to text.](#)

2002 lack

[Return to text.](#)

2003 component parts

[Return to text.](#)

2004 perception, awareness, feeling [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

2005 arrange, adjust

[Return to text.](#)

2006 exhausted after watching all night

[Return to text.](#)

2007 sailing vessel (usually small)

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁰⁸ small boat, schooner-rigged, often with two masts

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁰⁹ opinion, judgment

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰¹⁰ battlefield

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰¹¹ worked

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰¹² create, begin the building of

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰¹³ lower

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰¹⁴ statecraft, stratagem

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰¹⁵ course, lapse

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰¹⁶ ambitious rivalry

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰¹⁷ opposed, hostile

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰¹⁸ face

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰¹⁹ the Titan Atlas, on whose shoulders the entire world rested

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰²⁰ (1) the state of hearing, (2) reception

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰²¹ pronounced, judged

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰²² [five syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰²³ chain or strap fastened to the bit of a horse, in order to restrain it

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰²⁴ kept, stored

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰²⁵ golden scepter

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰²⁶ settled, fixed, resolved

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰²⁷ overthrown, defeated, repulsed

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰²⁸ conferred, granted, allowed, permitted

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰²⁹ whip-strokes/lashes

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰³⁰ exchange, give back

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰³¹ resistance, opposition

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰³² harvest, gain from

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰³³ opportunity

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰³⁴ be lacking

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰³⁵ speed, promptness

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰³⁶ bold/daring task

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰³⁷ report, talk

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰³⁸ [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰³⁹ form

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁴⁰ endowed

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁴¹ (1) judge, (2) sole and absolute ruler

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁴² the world of man

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁴³ attack, assault

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁴⁴ ruin, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁴⁵ direct (like cattle)

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁴⁶ (1) inexperienced, (2) undersized

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁴⁷ i.e., the first man, Adam

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁴⁸ overthrow, defeat

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁴⁹ Adam and Eve combined, metaphorically the root of all mankind

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁵⁰ high-ranking powers, beings of rank/status/importance

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁵¹ assembly

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁵² suitable, timely

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁵³ safe

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁵⁴ precious, lustrous

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁵⁵ test

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁵⁶ touchable, tangible, perceptible

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁵⁷ darkness

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁵⁸ unknown

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁵⁹ abyss

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁶⁰ (metaphorical)

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁶¹ sentries [Milton's spelling = prosodically necessary]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁶² vote, collective decision

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁶³ cautious, doubtful, uncertain

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁶⁴ stunned, paralyzed

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁶⁵ worthy, select

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁶⁶ first in rank/degree

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁶⁷ bold

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁶⁸ calm, collected

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁶⁹ descendants

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁷⁰ celestial

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁷¹ hesitancy

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁷² the high vault of hell

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁷³ excessive, cruel

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁷⁴ walls in, surrounds, imprisons

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁷⁵ material of impregnable hardness

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁷⁶ shut

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁷⁷ exit

[Return to text.](#)

²⁰⁷⁸ emptiness, vacuum

[Return to text.](#)

2079 vast, deep

[Return to text.](#)

2080 immaterial

[Return to text.](#)

2081 miscarrying, bringing to nothing

[Return to text.](#)

2082 great depth, abyss

[Return to text.](#)

2083 weight, importance

[Return to text.](#)

2084 sovereignty, pomp

[Return to text.](#)

2085 consider assiduously, apply oneself to thinking about

[Return to text.](#)

2086 [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2087 remedy

[Return to text.](#)

2088 incantation, spell

[Return to text.](#)

2089 relieve, delay, suspend

[Return to text.](#)

2090 reduce/diminish

[Return to text.](#)

2091 wretched, difficult, troublesome

[Return to text.](#)

2092 abode

[Return to text.](#)

2093 omit

[Return to text.](#)

2094 border (-lands)

[Return to text.](#)

2095 participate in, share

[Return to text.](#)

2096 by

[Return to text.](#)

2097 restored, roused, stirred up, animated, stimulated

[Return to text.](#)

2098 esteem, reputation

[Return to text.](#)

2099 profoundly respectful

[Return to text.](#)

2100 plausible but false [by A.D. 1651 the modern meaning]

[Return to text.](#)

2101 incites, sets in motion

[Return to text.](#)

2102 secret, hidden

[Return to text.](#)

2103 somber, wicked

[Return to text.](#)

2104 frowning, sullen

[Return to text.](#)

2105 atmospheric agency (the weather)

[Return to text.](#)

2106 spreads out, stretches forth

[Return to text.](#)

2107 bear witness to

[Return to text.](#)

2108 settled, secure, steadfast, unwavering

[Return to text.](#)

2109 harmony, agreement, peace

[Return to text.](#)

2110 alone

[Return to text.](#)

2111 possessed of, protected by

[Return to text.](#)

2112 undertake, impose

[Return to text.](#)

2113 reconciliation, agreement

[Return to text.](#)

2114 enough

[Return to text.](#)

²¹¹⁵ infernal, hellish

[Return to text.](#)

²¹¹⁶ overlord

[Return to text.](#)

²¹¹⁷ having a spherical form (or, in this case, a spherical arrangement/order)

[Return to text.](#)

²¹¹⁸ heraldic devices

[Return to text.](#)

²¹¹⁹ bristling

[Return to text.](#)

²¹²⁰ pronounce, announce

[Return to text.](#)

²¹²¹ kingly, magnificent

[Return to text.](#)

²¹²² resonant, sonorous

[Return to text.](#)

²¹²³ trumpet made of a composite brass-based metal, shining like gold

[Return to text.](#)

²¹²⁴ sent back, reflected

[Return to text.](#)

²¹²⁵ drawn up in ranks

[Return to text.](#)

²¹²⁶ anxious, in doubt, troubled

[Return to text.](#)

²¹²⁷ high up

[Return to text.](#)

²¹²⁸ compete, strive earnestly

[Return to text.](#)

²¹²⁹ i.e., the games held at Olympia, in Elis

[Return to text.](#)

²¹³⁰ second most important site of Greek games, held at Pythia, in Delphi, and in honor of Apollo

[Return to text.](#)

²¹³¹ practice checking/managing/controlling

[Return to text.](#)

2132 avoid

[Return to text.](#)

2133 column making a turn, in a chariot race

[Return to text.](#)

2134 facing

[Return to text.](#)

2135 vanguard

[Return to text.](#)

2136 spur/urge forward their horses

[Return to text.](#)

2137 lower (into fighting position)

[Return to text.](#)

2138 densest

[Return to text.](#)

2139 come together, grapple

[Return to text.](#)

2140 sky

[Return to text.](#)

2141 Typhon/Typhoeus, a hundred-serpent-headed giant with a great voice, who fought against and was killed by Jove as soon as he was born

[Return to text.](#)

2142 fierce, savage, cruel, terrible

[Return to text.](#)

2143 tear

[Return to text.](#)

2144 Hercules

[Return to text.](#)

2145 a kingdom on the large Greek island of Euboea, ruled by Eurytus, whose daughter, Iolé, was beloved by Hercules; Hercules was married and neither the girl's father nor Hercules' wife was pleased

[Return to text.](#)

2146 sent to him by his wife, Deianeira, who believed (erroneously) it would win her back his love

[Return to text.](#)

2147 Thessaly, in NE Greece

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁴⁸ the innocent messenger who had brought him the poisoned robe

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁴⁹ mountain in south Thessaly

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁵⁰ the southern Aegean

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁵¹ withdrawn, retired [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁵² unlucky

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁵³ judgment

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁵⁴ enslave

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁵⁵ they complained that, at Fate's hands, free virtue was put in bondage to force or chance

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁵⁶ prejudiced, biased

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁵⁷ riveted the attention of

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁵⁸ seized

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁵⁹ communication of thought by speech

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁶⁰ "eloquence charms the soul, but....

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁶¹ secluded

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁶² unyielding, hardened in evil, insensible to moral influence

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁶³ dense, compact

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁶⁴ confident, daring

[Return to text.](#)

2165 reconnoiter

[Return to text.](#)

2166 extensively [adverb]

[Return to text.](#)

2167 swift, rapid

[Return to text.](#)

2168 full of active evil

[Return to text.](#)

2169 river

[Return to text.](#)

2170 [trissyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2171 for

[Return to text.](#)

2172 sorrowful

[Return to text.](#)

2173 [trissyllabic, first—with “ph” pronounced as “f”—and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2174 swift-flowing [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

2175 blaze up

[Return to text.](#)

2176 with rage = violently

[Return to text.](#)

2177 [bisyllabic, first accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2178 like error, the river follows “a devious or wandering course” labyrinth
= a maze

[Return to text.](#)

2179 at once

[Return to text.](#)

2180 river

[Return to text.](#)

2181 mass, form

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁸² large structure, building

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁸³ abyss

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁸⁴ deep

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁸⁵ Egyptian lake, bordered by quicksand

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁸⁶ Damietta/Tamiathis: city at the mouth of the Nile

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁸⁷ mountain range bordering on Egypt

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁸⁸ to dry/shrivel/wither with cold

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁸⁹ intensely cold, frostlike

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁹⁰ brings about, works, achieves

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁹¹ dragged

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁹² turnings of celestial bodies, times

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁹³ i.e., going from

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁹⁴ wither, perish

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁹⁵ suffer, languish

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁹⁶ for periods

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁹⁷ resists, stands in the way, opposes

[Return to text.](#)

²¹⁹⁸ one of three Gorgons; there are writhing serpents all over her head;
those who look at her are turned to stone

[Return to text.](#)

2199 flees

[Return to text.](#)

2200 creature, living being

[Return to text.](#)

2201 condemned to remain in a pool filled with water that moves away
whenever he attempts to drink

[Return to text.](#)

2202 [first syllable accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2203 [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2204 for evil only good = good only for evil

[Return to text.](#)

2205 abnormal, unnatural

[Return to text.](#)

2206 pretended, invented

[Return to text.](#)

2207 see line 611, above

[Return to text.](#)

2208 many-headed serpent; the heads immediately grow back if cut off

[Return to text.](#)

2209 fire-breathing monster with a lion's head, a goat's body, and a serpent's
tail

[Return to text.](#)

2210 purpose, intention

[Return to text.](#)

2211 brings to bear (as one "puts on" speed)

[Return to text.](#)

2212 conducts

[Return to text.](#)

2213 moves rapidly along

[Return to text.](#)

2214 comes exceedingly close

[Return to text.](#)

2215 vault of hell

[Return to text.](#)

²²¹⁶ caught sight of

[Return to text.](#)

²²¹⁷ by means of

[Return to text.](#)

²²¹⁸ equatorial

[Return to text.](#)

²²¹⁹ i.e., close to the wind, with sail tacks hauled close

[Return to text.](#)

²²²⁰ Bengal

[Return to text.](#)

²²²¹ Ternate and Tidore = Moluccan (spice) islands

[Return to text.](#)

²²²² winds that blow steadily in one direction are “trade winds”—i.e., useful for trading vessels

[Return to text.](#)

²²²³ moving water, “tide” (metaphorical)

[Return to text.](#)

²²²⁴ Indian Ocean, near northeastern Africa

[Return to text.](#)

²²²⁵ Cape of Good Hope, at the southern tip of Africa

[Return to text.](#)

²²²⁶ steer, direct their course

[Return to text.](#)

²²²⁷ making headway

[Return to text.](#)

²²²⁸ the South Pole

[Return to text.](#)

²²²⁹ hell’s boundaries

[Return to text.](#)

²²³⁰ leaves of a folding door, gates

[Return to text.](#)

²²³¹ enclosed

[Return to text.](#)

²²³² alarming

[Return to text.](#)

2233 pack

[Return to text.](#)

2234 outburst of sound

[Return to text.](#)

2235 wanted to

[Return to text.](#)

2236 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

2237 grieved, distressed, agitated

[Return to text.](#)

2238 six-headed monster, each head having triple rows of teeth

[Return to text.](#)

2239 the extreme south of Italy

[Return to text.](#)

2240 rough

[Return to text.](#)

2241 Sicilian

[Return to text.](#)

2242 is (“comes after”)

[Return to text.](#)

2243 Hecate [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2244 extreme north of Scandinavia, associated with storm-causing witches and wizards

[Return to text.](#)

2245 *labores lunæ* (Latin) = the moon in eclipse

[Return to text.](#)

2246 because of

[Return to text.](#)

2247 part (of the body)

[Return to text.](#)

2248 “or might be called a substance: it seemed a shadow”

[Return to text.](#)

2249 spear

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁵⁰ i.e., as fast as Satan

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁵¹ wondered

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁵² took account of, heeded, was worried about

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁵³ fled from, avoided

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁵⁴ detestable

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁵⁵ fierce, cruel, savage

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁵⁶ misshapen

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁵⁷ (1) impudence, effrontery, (2) face

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁵⁸ across

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁵⁹ ugly demon

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁶⁰ sworn, conspiring

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁶¹ spend, use up, consume

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁶² count, consider

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁶³ unknown, unfamiliar, never experienced

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁶⁴ Ophiuchus = “serpent-bearer,” a vast northern constellation

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁶⁵ deadly

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁶⁶ filled

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁶⁷ the Caspian Sea, between Iran and Turkestan

[Return to text.](#)

2268 a space = a time, a while

[Return to text.](#)

2269 engage in

[Return to text.](#)

2270 i.e., Christ

[Return to text.](#)

2271 fast by = close, very near

[Return to text.](#)

2272 aim, direct

[Return to text.](#)

2273 fatal

[Return to text.](#)

2274 scourge, plague (“pestilence”)

[Return to text.](#)

2275 desisted

[Return to text.](#)

2276 these = these words

[Return to text.](#)

2277 puts forth, interrupts with

[Return to text.](#)

2278 quick, speedy

[Return to text.](#)

2279 refrains, abstains

[Return to text.](#)

2280 female porter, gatekeeper

[Return to text.](#)

2281 [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

2282 ominous, warning

[Return to text.](#)

2283 complete overthrow, disorderly retreat

[Return to text.](#)

2284 heaven

[Return to text.](#)

2285 highest point

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁸⁶ (1) melancholy, sorrowful, (2) reflective

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁸⁷ vast, enormous, powerful

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁸⁸ dismal, pitiable

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁸⁹ labor pangs

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁹⁰ repulsive, hateful

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁹¹ path

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁹² so that

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁹³ waving, flourishing

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁹⁴ paralyzed with fear

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁹⁵ copulating

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁹⁶ wish

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁹⁷ food, meal

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁹⁸ in opposition = placed opposite

[Return to text.](#)

²²⁹⁹ destruction, ruin, death

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁰⁰ nor

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁰¹ those bright arms = that bright armor

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁰² constituted, endowed

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁰³ violence, force

[Return to text.](#)

2304 lesson

[Return to text.](#)

2305 (1) love token, (2) hostage given to fortune

[Return to text.](#)

2306 amorous play

[Return to text.](#)

2307 claims

[Return to text.](#)

2308 unknown, strange

[Return to text.](#)

2309 alone

[Return to text.](#)

2310 bottomless

[Return to text.](#)

2311 outskirts

[Return to text.](#)

2312 place

[Return to text.](#)

2313 distant

[Return to text.](#)

2314 overstocked, overpopulated

[Return to text.](#)

2315 mighty, powerful

[Return to text.](#)

2316 actuate

[Return to text.](#)

2317 quarrels, tumults

[Return to text.](#)

2318 intended

[Return to text.](#)

2319 unresisting

[Return to text.](#)

2320 extreme scarcity of food, hunger

[Return to text.](#)

2321 throat, stomach

[Return to text.](#)

2322 said to

[Return to text.](#)

2323 right

[Return to text.](#)

2324 put forward

[Return to text.](#)

2325 spear

[Return to text.](#)

2326 underworld place of punishment for the sinful

[Return to text.](#)

2327 deep

[Return to text.](#)

2328 compassed round = surrounded

[Return to text.](#)

2329 luxuriously sensuous

[Return to text.](#)

2330 suits, becomes, fits

[Return to text.](#)

2331 as per lines 651–53, above, she has a serpentine tail

[Return to text.](#)

2332 lattice gate

[Return to text.](#)

2333 infernal, hellish

[Return to text.](#)

2334 notches cut in the key

[Return to text.](#)

2335 rapid, violent

[Return to text.](#)

2336 Hell

[Return to text.](#)

2337 surpassed

[Return to text.](#)

2338 surging, overflowing

[Return to text.](#)

2339 tumult, civil commotion

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁴⁰ embryonic, not yet created

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁴¹ Egyptian/Tunisian desert

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁴² city located near modern Tripoli [trisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁴³ enlisted, enrolled

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁴⁴ to add weight to (“*avoir du poids*” = to have weight)

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁴⁵ follow, side with, cleave/cling to

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁴⁶ heats up, adds discord/hostility/dissension to

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁴⁷ decree, order [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁴⁸ cautious

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁴⁹ estuary, arm of the sea

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁵⁰ assailed

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁵¹ crashing

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁵² Roman goddess of war

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁵³ contrivances, machines

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁵⁴ leveled, wound up

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁵⁵ destroy

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁵⁶ wings

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁵⁷ kicks off from

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁵⁸ daring, confident

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁵⁹ wings

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁶⁰ [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁶¹ blow

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁶² imbued, charged

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁶³ saltpeter, potassium nitrate

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁶⁴ infernal spirit (Satan)

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁶⁵ checked

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁶⁶ stretch of sandbanks off North Africa

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁶⁷ almost

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁶⁸ sent to the bottom, sunk

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁶⁹ not fully developed

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁷⁰ material coherence

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁷¹ behoves him now = now he needed

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁷² half lion, half eagle

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁷³ Scythian

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁷⁴ the gryphon's

[Return to text.](#)

²³⁷⁵ vigilant

[Return to text.](#)

2376 stolen

[Return to text.](#)

2377 intensity, strength

[Return to text.](#)

2378 steers

[Return to text.](#)

2379 partner

[Return to text.](#)

2380 Orcus = Pluto/Hades, Adès = Pluto/Hades

[Return to text.](#)

2381 ancestor of all the gods

[Return to text.](#)

2382 entangled in disorder

[Return to text.](#)

2383 changing, unstable

[Return to text.](#)

2384 have a border with

[Return to text.](#)

2385 reached

[Return to text.](#)

2386 depth [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

2387 “guide (if you would/please)”

[Return to text.](#)

2388 small, petty

[Return to text.](#)

2389 benefit

[Return to text.](#)

2390 loosed, freed [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

2391 unlawful seizure

[Return to text.](#)

2392 flag

[Return to text.](#)

2393 author of anarchy

[Return to text.](#)

2394 agitated

[Return to text.](#)

2395 insurrection

[Return to text.](#)

2396 fleeing bands

[Return to text.](#)

2397 mixed up

[Return to text.](#)

2398 can do

[Return to text.](#)

2399 thus

[Return to text.](#)

2400 internal, inner

[Return to text.](#)

2401 quarrels

[Return to text.](#)

2402 be successful

[Return to text.](#)

2403 clashing

[Return to text.](#)

2404 surrounded

[Return to text.](#)

2405 closed round, hemmed in

[Return to text.](#)

2406 ship of Jason and the Argonauts

[Return to text.](#)

2407 the left side of a ship, when looking forward

[Return to text.](#)

2408 Ulysses

[Return to text.](#)

2409 Satan

[Return to text.](#)

2410 having passed

[Return to text.](#)

2411 rapidly

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴¹² sphere, circle

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴¹³ wicked

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴¹⁴ emanation

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴¹⁵ rim, edge, border

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴¹⁶ to retire = begins to retire

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴¹⁷ sails, floats

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴¹⁸ vague, uncertain

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴¹⁹ mainmast ropes

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴²⁰ rigging

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴²¹ balances

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴²² not fixed, not settled

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴²³ fast by = close by

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴²⁴ filled

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴²⁵ hastens

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴²⁶ a flowing out, emanation

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴²⁷ uncreated

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴²⁸ “would you rather hear”

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴²⁹ cover

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴³⁰ infernal, hellish

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴³¹ visit

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴³² Orphean = belonging to Orpheus

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴³³ harplike musical instrument used to accompany poetry

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴³⁴ unusual, uncommon

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴³⁵ the sun

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴³⁶ pure, clear

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴³⁷ extinguished, killed

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴³⁸ a fluid that spreads over some part of the body

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴³⁹ i.e., veiled them (his eyes)

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁴⁰ struck, impressed, inspired

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁴¹ site of the Temple, in Jerusalem

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁴² equaled with = the same as

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁴³ legendary Thracian poet

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁴⁴ Homer

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁴⁵ blind seer of Thebes

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁴⁶ Thracian king and prophet

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁴⁷ “I feed”

[Return to text.](#)

2448 poetry

[Return to text.](#)

2449 the nightingale, which does not sleep at night

[Return to text.](#)

2450 in the dark [adverb]

[Return to text.](#)

2451 cover

[Return to text.](#)

2452 during = lasting, continuing

[Return to text.](#)

2453 blotted out, erased

[Return to text.](#)

2454 destroyed

[Return to text.](#)

2455 illuminate, shine light upon [three syllables, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2456 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

2457 supreme blessing/happiness

[Return to text.](#)

2458 [bisyllabic, first accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2459 as yet, still

[Return to text.](#)

2460 dark, dusky, murky

[Return to text.](#)

2461 high up

[Return to text.](#)

2462 enclosed

[Return to text.](#)

2463 substratum, support

[Return to text.](#)

2464 a place affording an open view

[Return to text.](#)

2465 carries away

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁶⁶ broken open

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁶⁷ having broken

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁶⁸ environs, neighborhoods, districts

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁶⁹ try, attempt

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁷⁰ specious, flattering

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁷¹ violate, break

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁷² (1) vow, promise, (2) surety

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁷³ stayed erect, endured

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁷⁴ plundered, robbed

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁷⁵ controlled

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁷⁶ unalterably

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁷⁷ founder, instigator, father, ancestor

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁷⁸ enslave

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁷⁹ Satan and his followers

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁸⁰ “while God spoke thus”

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁸¹ (1) not imaginary, (2) real, (3) amply

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁸² paramount, supreme

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁸³ authoritative decision

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁸⁴ encircled

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁸⁵ proclaim, celebrate

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁸⁶ surrounded

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁸⁷ Satan

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁸⁸ sentence, final fate

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁸⁹ conclusive

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁹⁰ conferred, bestowed

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁹¹ fallen

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁹² lost by misconduct

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁹³ particular, special

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁹⁴ chosen

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁹⁵ (1) in good time, (2) at an early time, speedily

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁹⁶ inflamed, angered

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁹⁷ [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁹⁸ proper, fitting, right

[Return to text.](#)

²⁴⁹⁹ arbitrator

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁰⁰ enlightenment, the brightness of Heaven

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁰¹ patient endurance/toleration

[Return to text.](#)

2502 sworn fidelity

[Return to text.](#)

2503 loving

[Return to text.](#)

2504 consecrated

[Return to text.](#)

2505 unyielding, strict, firm

[Return to text.](#)

2506 payment of a debt [legal/theological]

[Return to text.](#)

2507 love, spontaneous goodness, benevolence

[Return to text.](#)

2508 company

[Return to text.](#)

2509 protector, advocate

[Return to text.](#)

2510 mediator

[Return to text.](#)

2511 sentence, judgment

[Return to text.](#)

2512 not anticipated, not won by prayer

[Return to text.](#)

2513 fit, suitable, appropriate [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

2514 hold, reckon

[Return to text.](#)

2515 ultimately

[Return to text.](#)

2516 give vent to

[Return to text.](#)

2517 tribute, right

[Return to text.](#)

2518 boasted of

[Return to text.](#)

2519 bow, submit

[Return to text.](#)

2520 broad, spacious

[Return to text.](#)

2521 in spite of

[Return to text.](#)

2522 exhibit, display

[Return to text.](#)

2523 destroy

[Return to text.](#)

2524 overfill, surfeit

[Return to text.](#)

2525 complete

[Return to text.](#)

2526 wonder mixed with reverence

[Return to text.](#)

2527 to lead, result

[Return to text.](#)

2528 quickly, at once

[Return to text.](#)

2529 pleasure, delight

[Return to text.](#)

2530 ransom

[Return to text.](#)

2531 place

[Return to text.](#)

2532 transferred

[Return to text.](#)

2533 those among them

[Return to text.](#)

2534 expensively, at such a high price

[Return to text.](#)

2535 pleasurable possession

[Return to text.](#)

2536 renounced, given up

[Return to text.](#)

2537 embodied

[Return to text.](#)

2538 reward

[Return to text.](#)

2539 make subject, subdue, constrain, lower

[Return to text.](#)

2540 dwell

[Return to text.](#)

2541 summoned

[Return to text.](#)

2542 judgment

[Return to text.](#)

2543 outburst/volley of sound

[Return to text.](#)

2544 called to account

[Return to text.](#)

2545 accomplish

[Return to text.](#)

2546 wild cries, shouts

[Return to text.](#)

2547 cries of praise to God

[Return to text.](#)

2548 mythical flower that never fades

[Return to text.](#)

2549 [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

2550 floor [noun, and grammatical subject; the verb is “smiled,” at the end of the next line]

[Return to text.](#)

2551 harmony, music in parts

[Return to text.](#)

2552 harmoniousness

[Return to text.](#)

2553 except

[Return to text.](#)

2554 lower part of a robe

[Return to text.](#)

2555 still

[Return to text.](#)

2556 Christ

[Return to text.](#)

2557 eminent

[Return to text.](#)

2558 stamped

[Return to text.](#)

2559 splendid radiance

[Return to text.](#)

2560 full whole

[Return to text.](#)

2561 fourth of the nine orders of angels

[Return to text.](#)

2562 sixth of the nine orders of angels

[Return to text.](#)

2563 the fallen angels

[Return to text.](#)

2564 sentence, judge

[Return to text.](#)

2565 separate

[Return to text.](#)

2566 opaque

[Return to text.](#)

2567 curved surface

[Return to text.](#)

2568 fenced in

[Return to text.](#)

2569 (1) sudden incursion, raid, (2) a road in, entranceway

[Return to text.](#)

2570 harsh, severe, pitiless

[Return to text.](#)

2571 at large = unconfined, at liberty

[Return to text.](#)

2572 Himalayan mountain

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁷³ leaps, often on horseback [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁷⁴ leaving his usual surroundings, shifting

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁷⁵ springtime

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁷⁶ origins, sources

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁷⁷ on, along

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁷⁸ descends

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁷⁹ partly in China, partly in Tibet

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁸⁰ cane, bamboo

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁸¹ [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁸² plenty, abundance

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁸³ whether

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁸⁴ incomplete

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁸⁵ unnaturally

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁸⁶ hurry [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁸⁷ silvery

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁸⁸ transported

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁸⁹ Enoch and Elijah: see Genesis 5:24 and 2 Kings 2:11

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁹⁰ Shinar, in Babylonia

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁹¹ if they had

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁹² means, resources

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁹³ singly, one by one

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁹⁴ he = as per line 471, below: Empedocles

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁹⁵ considered, judged, thought

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁹⁶ foolishly credulous/sanguine

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁹⁷ he = as per line 473, below: Cleombrotus

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁹⁸ as described in Plato's *Phaedo*, which he had just read

[Return to text.](#)

²⁵⁹⁹ too long to tell of

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁰⁰ hermits

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁰¹ Carmelite

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁰² Dominican

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁰³ Franciscan

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁰⁴ frauds, trash

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁰⁵ where Christ was crucified

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁰⁶ clothes, habits

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁰⁷ Dominicans

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁰⁸ i.e., in Franciscan garments

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁰⁹ i.e., “or so they said,” proposed, prated

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶¹⁰ all as in Ptolemaic astronomy: the “trepidation” was the shaking of the spheres

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶¹¹ small door/gate

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶¹² await

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶¹³ [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶¹⁴ sideways, across

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶¹⁵ one league = ca. three miles

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶¹⁶ askew, out of the right course

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶¹⁷ remote

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶¹⁸ dispensations

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶¹⁹ [the pun is surely deliberate]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶²⁰ [noun, and subject of the verb “turned,” immediately following]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶²¹ sees

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶²² steps

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶²³ the decorated entrance of a building

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶²⁴ lustrous

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶²⁵ gateway

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶²⁶ i.e., making the distinctions of dark and light that indicate depth, color, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶²⁷ [both bisyllabic, first accented]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶²⁸ see Genesis 28

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶²⁹ mystically, allegorically

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶³⁰ i.e., this is Jacob's "ladder"

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶³¹ invisible

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶³² carried

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶³³ worsen

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶³⁴ commands, injunctions

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶³⁵ (1) choice regard = well-chosen/careful attention *or* (less likely) (2) choice regard = deliberately observed

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶³⁶ Paneas = "spring of Dan" a city near Mt. Hermon, in northern Palestine, at a spring of the River Jordan; now Banias

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶³⁷ source

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶³⁸ river

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶³⁹ Beersheba, in southern Palestine

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁴⁰ spy

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁴¹ reveals

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁴² (1) of good appearance, (2) large

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁴³ view

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁴⁴ constellation, the Scales

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁴⁵ Aries, the Ram

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁴⁶ nebula

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁴⁷ headlong

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁴⁸ [verb; rhymes with “finds, minds, binds,” etc.]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁴⁹ smooth as marble

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁵⁰ either

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁵¹ in which the Hesperides, daughters of Night and Darkness, guarded a tree that bore golden apples

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁵² stopped

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁵³ “away from the center,” which in this astronomy = the earth

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁵⁴ i.e., whether Ptolemaic or Copernican

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁵⁵ the sun

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁵⁶ at a distance from

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁵⁷ common

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁵⁸ dense

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁵⁹ the sun's

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁶⁰ proper, fitting

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁶¹ changing

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁶² powers, qualities

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁶³ luminous

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁶⁴ made of glass

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁶⁵ telescope: Milton had visited Galileo and looked through his telescope

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁶⁶ utterance

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁶⁷ stamped, impressed

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁶⁸ see Exodus 28:17–20

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁶⁹ i.e., the so-called philosopher's stone

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁷⁰ the god also known as Mercury, “volatile” because fond of trickery and furtiveness

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁷¹ sea god, a shape-shifter

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁷² glass vessel with a beak, used by alchemists for distilling operations

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁷³ mythical essence

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁷⁴ liquid, drinkable

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁷⁵ powerful

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁷⁶ master chemist (or alchemist)

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁷⁷ distant

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁷⁸ fluid

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁷⁹ reach

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁸⁰ Satan's

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁸¹ line (of sight)

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁸² identifiable distance

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁸³ see Revelation 19:17

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁸⁴ tiara, headdress

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁸⁵ luminous, shining brightly

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁸⁶ furnished

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁸⁷ commission, mandate, responsibility

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁸⁸ thought, reflection

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁸⁹ contrives

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁹⁰ youthful

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁹¹ fully grown, mature

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁹² spread, shed [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁶⁹³ a small, inferior crown

[Return to text.](#)

2694 feather

[Return to text.](#)

2695 not cut full, close-fitting

[Return to text.](#)

2696 respectable

[Return to text.](#)

2697 Satan

[Return to text.](#)

2698 addresses

[Return to text.](#)

2699 usually

[Return to text.](#)

2700 authoritative

[Return to text.](#)

2701 one who makes another's will known, a messenger

[Return to text.](#)

2702 message, business

[Return to text.](#)

2703 "unspeakable desire to see" = subject; the verb is "hath brought me," in line 666, below

[Return to text.](#)

2704 companies

[Return to text.](#)

2705 wonder, marveling

[Return to text.](#)

2706 proper

[Return to text.](#)

2707 sincerity, innocence, ignorance

[Return to text.](#)

2708 controller

[Return to text.](#)

2709 considered

[Return to text.](#)

2710 Uriel's

[Return to text.](#)

2711 integrity

[Return to text.](#)

2712 attains to, brings

[Return to text.](#)

2713 celestial

[Return to text.](#)

2714 home, residence

[Return to text.](#)

2715 pleasing

[Return to text.](#)

2716 collected into a form

[Return to text.](#)

2717 stopped in its tracks

[Return to text.](#)

2718 controlled

[Return to text.](#)

2719 cumbersome

[Return to text.](#)

2720 airy, impalpable

[Return to text.](#)

2721 the fifth essence, of which substance the heavenly bodies were thought to be composed

[Return to text.](#)

2722 infused, animated

[Return to text.](#)

2723 in a circle

[Return to text.](#)

2724 furnishes walls for [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

2725 puts forth, introduces

[Return to text.](#)

2726 the goddess of the moon, Diana, had three distinct shapes (“triform”), representing the moon’s three phases: Luna, Diana, and Hecate/Proserpine

[Return to text.](#)

2727 to give light to

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷²⁸ control, rule

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷²⁹ holds back, retards

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷³⁰ customary

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷³¹ (1) appropriate, (2) owed

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷³² the orbit of the sun around the earth; earth's great circle

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷³³ twists

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷³⁴ circular movement

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷³⁵ stopped

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷³⁶ Armenian mountain, near the Assyrian/Mesopotamian border; it is the source of the River Tigris

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷³⁷ expectation, looking forward to

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷³⁸ boundary markers

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷³⁹ shown, disclosed

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁴⁰ i.e., Satan's

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁴¹ orders

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁴² see Revelation 12:10–12

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁴³ so that

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁴⁴ while there was still time

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁴⁵ perhaps

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁴⁶ before he became

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁴⁷ (1) give vent to, (2) take revenge on

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁴⁸ Satan's

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁴⁹ moving, forming, advancing, sweeping upward

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁵⁰ a cannon

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁵¹ from

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁵² result, follow

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁵³ the sun's

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁵⁴ noontime

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁵⁵ many things/thoughts

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁵⁶ turning over in his mind

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁵⁷ the sun

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁵⁸ above thy sphere = (1) above your position/status, (2) literally, in Heaven above the sphere which you are in

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁵⁹ (1) height, (2) distinction

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁶⁰ He (God) reproached/scolded/censured

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁶¹ to give/yield

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁶² repayment

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁶³ (1) owed, (2) right, proper

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁶⁴ worked

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁶⁵ disdained [probably from the Italian *sdegnare*, “to disdain/despise/scorn”]

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁶⁶ submission, obedience

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁶⁷ get rid of, release

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁶⁸ (1) yet, (2) always

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁶⁹ remained

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁷⁰ unlimited, uncontrolled

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁷¹ sixth of the nine angelic orders

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁷² lowly

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁷³ might have been drawn

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁷⁴ side, cause

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁷⁵ (1) having weapons, (2) having protective qualities/characteristics

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁷⁶ to remain steadfast/firm

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁷⁷ honorable, generous

[Return to text.](#)

²⁷⁷⁸ gives, brings

[Return to text.](#)

2779 himself

[Return to text.](#)

2780 rightfully, properly

[Return to text.](#)

2781 regrets

[Return to text.](#)

2782 i.e., “O how miserable I am!” [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2783 flee

[Return to text.](#)

2784 whichever

[Return to text.](#)

2785 yield

[Return to text.](#)

2786 boasts

[Return to text.](#)

2787 at a high price

[Return to text.](#)

2788 face, put up with

[Return to text.](#)

2789 raised

[Return to text.](#)

2790 obtains, gains

[Return to text.](#)

2791 pretended

[Return to text.](#)

2792 withdraw, disavow, retract

[Return to text.](#)

2793 forced

[Return to text.](#)

2794 at high cost, great expense

[Return to text.](#)

2795 pain, suffering

[Return to text.](#)

2796 instead of us = replacing us

[Return to text.](#)

2797 man

[Return to text.](#)

2798 more than half of the empire

[Return to text.](#)

2799 pallor

[Return to text.](#)

2800 anger

[Return to text.](#)

2801 spoiled, disfigured

[Return to text.](#)

2802 ill tempers, ill humors, disorders, derangements

[Return to text.](#)

2803 innocent

[Return to text.](#)

2804 agitation

[Return to text.](#)

2805 mechanic-inventor

[Return to text.](#)

2806 i.e., “who”

[Return to text.](#)

2807 hidden, joined in concealment

[Return to text.](#)

2808 put into practice

[Return to text.](#)

2809 happen to

[Return to text.](#)

2810 conduct, behavior

[Return to text.](#)

2811 travels

[Return to text.](#)

2812 expanse of open land

[Return to text.](#)

2813 top

[Return to text.](#)

2814 access denied to him (Satan)

[Return to text.](#)

2815 impossible to overcome/surmount

[Return to text.](#)

2816 rustic

[Return to text.](#)

2817 rows

[Return to text.](#)

2818 place where action occurs

[Return to text.](#)

2819 noble, majestic

[Return to text.](#)

2820 common

[Return to text.](#)

2821 prospect large = extensive view

[Return to text.](#)

2822 Adam's

[Return to text.](#)

2823 lower

[Return to text.](#)

2824 handsome, large

[Return to text.](#)

2825 at the same time, simultaneously

[Return to text.](#)

2826 any smooth, lustrous surface

[Return to text.](#)

2827 imprinted, stamped

[Return to text.](#)

2828 rainbow

[Return to text.](#)

2829 of pure now purer = purer still

[Return to text.](#)

2830 springlike

[Return to text.](#)

2831 chase, expel

[Return to text.](#)

2832 a wind not much stronger than a breeze

[Return to text.](#)

2833 fragrant

[Return to text.](#)

2834 bestow, distribute

[Return to text.](#)

2835 natural

[Return to text.](#)

2836 loot, plunder, booty

[Return to text.](#)

2837 Cape of Good Hope, at the southern tip of Africa

[Return to text.](#)

2838 [trisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2839 Saba, in modern Yemen

[Return to text.](#)

2840 Arabia, called at the time, in Latin, *Arabia felix*, “happy/blessed Arabia”

[Return to text.](#)

2841 abate, let slacken

[Return to text.](#)

2842 onward movement

[Return to text.](#)

2843 one league = ca. three miles

[Return to text.](#)

2844 pleasing, agreeable

[Return to text.](#)

2845 experienced with pleasure

[Return to text.](#)

2846 slayer

[Return to text.](#)

2847 evil demon in Apocryphal book of the Bible, Tobit, who has seven times killed the husbands of Sarah, daughter of Tobit’s relative, with whom the demon is in love; he is finally driven off by fish smells

[Return to text.](#)

2848 vapor

[Return to text.](#)

2849 sent him, the demon, away from Media, where Tobit, his son, and his wife lived

[Return to text.](#)

2850 hurriedly

[Return to text.](#)

2851 by the Angel Raphael, sent by God

[Return to text.](#)

2852 wild, uncultivated

[Return to text.](#)

2853 thicket

[Return to text.](#)

2854 troubled, entangled

[Return to text.](#)

2855 easy

[Return to text.](#)

2856 completely

[Return to text.](#)

2857 made of interwoven branches

[Return to text.](#)

2858 stalls, pens

[Return to text.](#)

2859 reduce the store of money

[Return to text.](#)

2860 of the roof

[Return to text.](#)

2861 climbed

[Return to text.](#)

2862 the view it afforded him

[Return to text.](#)

2863 had been = would have been

[Return to text.](#)

2864 guarantee, promise

[Return to text.](#)

2865 lowest

[Return to text.](#)

2866 space

[Return to text.](#)

2867 contours

[Return to text.](#)

2868 Haran, city on the River Euphrates, in Mesopotamia

[Return to text.](#)

2869 city near Babylon, on the River Tigris

[Return to text.](#)

2870 city in Eden

[Return to text.](#)

2871 [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2872 tangled, heavily wooded

[Return to text.](#)

2873 swallowed up

[Return to text.](#)

2874 formed, fashioned (as a potter “throws” a pot)

[Return to text.](#)

2875 garden topsoil

[Return to text.](#)

2876 natural

[Return to text.](#)

2877 brook

[Return to text.](#)

2878 underground

[Return to text.](#)

2879 river

[Return to text.](#)

2880 in different directions [bisyllabic, first accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2881 skill

[Return to text.](#)

2882 rippling

[Return to text.](#)

2883 gleaming

[Return to text.](#)

2884 winding, labyrinthine

[Return to text.](#)

2885 wandering

[Return to text.](#)

2886 fussy, fastidious

[Return to text.](#)

2887 skillful, choice, exquisite

[Return to text.](#)

2888 gracious, bountiful, jolly

[Return to text.](#)

2889 i.e., darkened

[Return to text.](#)

2890 [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2891 legendary garden in which the Hesperides, daughters of Night and Darkness, guarded a tree that bore golden apples

[Return to text.](#)

2892 open expanse of treeless pastureland

[Return to text.](#)

2893 grass

[Return to text.](#)

2894 bearing palm trees

[Return to text.](#)

2895 a hollow among hills

[Return to text.](#)

2896 irrigated [probably trisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

2897 shady

[Return to text.](#)

2898 covering

[Return to text.](#)

2899 chorus

[Return to text.](#)

2900 bring into operation

[Return to text.](#)

2901 make tuneful/harmonious

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁰² joined

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁰³ Aglaia (brilliance), Euphrosyne (joy), Thalia (blossoming)

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁰⁴ female divinities presiding over seasonal changes

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁰⁵ in Sicily

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁰⁶ Dis = Pluto = Hades

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁰⁷ Nature/earth goddess, later Demeter; mother of Proserpine/Persephone

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁰⁸ like Proserpine, pursued by lustful gods

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹⁰⁹ river in Syria

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹¹⁰ the grove of Daphne contained an oracle dedicated to Apollo

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹¹¹ named after the spring at the oracle in Delphi, also dedicated to Apollo

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹¹² compete

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹¹³ the island of Nysa, in the River Triton in Tunisia

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹¹⁴ encircled, surrounded

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹¹⁵ Ammon

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹¹⁶ Zeus' nurse, mother of Bacchus by Ammon

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹¹⁷ red-faced (from wine)

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹¹⁸ Abyssinian/Ethiopian

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹¹⁹ offspring, children

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹²⁰ in Abyssinia

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹²¹ contours

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹²² River Nile

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹²³ source

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹²⁴ forehead

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹²⁵ exalted, lofty

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹²⁶ manifested, made plain/clear

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹²⁷ (1) curled, *or* (2) scented, *or* (3) dark-colored

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹²⁸ lock of hair in front

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹²⁹ loosened

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹³⁰ frisky, sportive

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹³¹ requested, demanded

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹³² authority, rule

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹³³ shy, modest

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹³⁴ mysterious parts = genitalia

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹³⁵ i.e., unchaste

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹³⁶ externals, displays

[Return to text.](#)

²⁹³⁷ patch

[Return to text.](#)

2938 grassy spot

[Return to text.](#)

2939 commend

[Return to text.](#)

2940 the west wind

[Return to text.](#)

2941 sweet as nectar [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

2942 obliging, yielding

[Return to text.](#)

2943 variegated

[Return to text.](#)

2944 discourse, speech

[Return to text.](#)

2945 lacked

[Return to text.](#)

2946 animals that are hunted [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

2947 playing

[Return to text.](#)

2948 bounded

[Return to text.](#)

2949 moving lightly up and down

[Return to text.](#)

2950 (1) lynx, (2) panther

[Return to text.](#)

2951 leopards

[Return to text.](#)

2952 capered, danced

[Return to text.](#)

2953 coiled, twisted

[Return to text.](#)

2954 flexible, pliant, supple

[Return to text.](#)

2955 trunk, nose

[Return to text.](#)

2956 close by

[Return to text.](#)

2957 sinuously

[Return to text.](#)

2958 intricate

[Return to text.](#)

2959 rope, twine, knots

[Return to text.](#)

2960 intertwined, braided

[Return to text.](#)

2961 tail, long dragging body

[Return to text.](#)

2962 destined, fated

[Return to text.](#)

2963 lay

[Return to text.](#)

2964 i.e., with eating the grass that grows on pastureland

[Return to text.](#)

2965 (1) digesting, as ruminants do, (2) reflecting

[Return to text.](#)

2966 slanting down

[Return to text.](#)

2967 steeply downward

[Return to text.](#)

2968 racelike, galloping speed

[Return to text.](#)

2969 the Azores, to the west

[Return to text.](#)

2970 with a scale having two weighing pans, when one (lighter) goes up the other (heavier) necessarily goes down made device

[Return to text.](#)

2971 place, position

[Return to text.](#)

2972 “hath poured on their shape”

[Return to text.](#)

2973 noble, excellent

[Return to text.](#)

2974 close

[Return to text.](#)

2975 firmly fixed, safe

[Return to text.](#)

2976 deliberate

[Return to text.](#)

2977 abandoned, lost, doomed

[Return to text.](#)

2978 I am myself

[Return to text.](#)

2979 alliance

[Return to text.](#)

2980 direct, honest

[Return to text.](#)

2981 perhaps

[Return to text.](#)

2982 hold, keep

[Return to text.](#)

2983 did wrong me

[Return to text.](#)

2984 soften

[Return to text.](#)

2985 common, community, patriotic

[Return to text.](#)

2986 frolicking

[Return to text.](#)

2987 condition, circumstances

[Return to text.](#)

2988 noted, observed

[Return to text.](#)

2989 as a lion

[Return to text.](#)

2990 rangeland

[Return to text.](#)

2991 lies

[Return to text.](#)

2992 uttering

[Return to text.](#)

2993 Satan

[Return to text.](#)

2994 all ear = eagerly attentive

[Return to text.](#)

2995 participant

[Return to text.](#)

2996 deserved

[Return to text.](#)

2997 mandate, order, instruction, admonition

[Return to text.](#)

2998 near, alongside

[Return to text.](#)

2999 rule, control, government

[Return to text.](#)

3000 purpose

[Return to text.](#)

3001 preeminent by so much odds = superior by such a high
percentage/amount

[Return to text.](#)

3002 similar

[Return to text.](#)

3003 companion

[Return to text.](#)

3004 shady cover (from the sun)

[Return to text.](#)

3005 unmoving, fixed

[Return to text.](#)

3006 i.e., to the pool

[Return to text.](#)

3007 inexperienced

[Return to text.](#)

3008 languished

[Return to text.](#)

3009 awaits

[Return to text.](#)

3010 at once

[Return to text.](#)

3011 plane tree (e.g., the sycamore)

[Return to text.](#)

3012 flee

[Return to text.](#)

3013 solid, true, real

[Return to text.](#)

3014 in order to

[Return to text.](#)

3015 inseparable, indivisible, special

[Return to text.](#)

3016 (1) comfort, pleasure, delight, (2) entertainment, recreation, amusement

[Return to text.](#)

3017 claim as

[Return to text.](#)

3018 universal, common

[Return to text.](#)

3019 impregnates

[Return to text.](#)

3020 complained

[Return to text.](#)

3021 wastes away

[Return to text.](#)

3022 endure

[Return to text.](#)

3023 rouse/stir up

[Return to text.](#)

3024 close, careful

[Return to text.](#)

3025 but only a chance

[Return to text.](#)

3026 follow

[Return to text.](#)

3027 vigilant/cautious observation

[Return to text.](#)

3028 wild, uncultivated land

[Return to text.](#)

3029 [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

3030 extreme/outermost west

[Return to text.](#)

3031 astronomical orientation: directly opposite

[Return to text.](#)

3032 visible

[Return to text.](#)

3033 practiced

[Return to text.](#)

3034 close

[Return to text.](#)

3035 evening, twilight

[Return to text.](#)

3036 crosses, traverses

[Return to text.](#)

3037 burning

[Return to text.](#)

3038 stamp, imprint on

[Return to text.](#)

3039 violently forceful

[Return to text.](#)

3040 destiny

[Return to text.](#)

3041 responsibility

[Return to text.](#)

3042 traced

[Return to text.](#)

3043 noted

[Return to text.](#)

3044 (1) course, (2) carriage: i.e., through the air, as spirits move

[Return to text.](#)

3045 foreign, inconsistent, repugnant

[Return to text.](#)

3046 darkened

[Return to text.](#)

3047 stir up, cause

[Return to text.](#)

3048 watch, guard

[Return to text.](#)

3049 meridian hour = noon

[Return to text.](#)

3050 disposed, thinking, intending

[Return to text.](#)

3051 responsibility: i.e., to his post

[Return to text.](#)

3052 daily: i.e., as it does every day

[Return to text.](#)

3053 or else

[Return to text.](#)

3054 rolling, revolving

[Return to text.](#)

3055 silent, quiet [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

3056 sober livery = grave/solemn/sedate uniform/style of dress

[Return to text.](#)

3057 “had clad all things in her sober livery”

[Return to text.](#)

3058 melodious song

[Return to text.](#)

3059 brightest of the early evening stars

[Return to text.](#)

3060 manifest, obvious

[Return to text.](#)

3061 think, remind

[Return to text.](#)

3062 similar

[Return to text.](#)

3063 one after another

[Return to text.](#)

3064 bends downward

[Return to text.](#)

3065 makes known

[Return to text.](#)

3066 observant attention

[Return to text.](#)

3067 move hither and thither

[Return to text.](#)

3068 prune

[Return to text.](#)

3069 passages, walks

[Return to text.](#)

3070 tilling, cultivating

[Return to text.](#)

3071 luxuriant

[Return to text.](#)

3072 blended song, of multiple origin

[Return to text.](#)

3073 bright

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁷⁴ pleasing

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁷⁵ see footnote 336, above

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁷⁶ universal, common

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁷⁷ perfect, fulfilled

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁷⁸ furnishing, supplying

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁷⁹ ready [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁸⁰ illuminate

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁸¹ (1) natural, (2) benevolent

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁸² variable, varying

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁸³ disposition, temperament (i.e., astrologically)

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁸⁴ rouse/stir up with heat

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁸⁵ qualities, powers

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁸⁶ the species

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁸⁷ better fit/suited

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁸⁸ powerful, mighty

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁸⁹ should you think

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁹⁰ lack

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁹¹ height, slope

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁹² rounding walk = walking round

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁹³ musical periods/groups of notes

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁹⁴ into watches

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁹⁵ proprietor

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁹⁶ covering

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁹⁷ adorned

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁹⁸ made, shaped

[Return to text.](#)

³⁰⁹⁹ embroidered

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁰⁰ i.e., inlaid with precious gems

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁰¹ though but feigned = even if only in fables

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁰² pastoral god of vegetation and agriculture, who had goat horns and legs

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁰³ intimate

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁰⁴ seclusion, withdrawal, retirement

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁰⁵ married

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁰⁶ wedding hymn

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁰⁷ what day = on the day

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁰⁸ (1) festive, kindly, (2) nuptial

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁰⁹ Pandora (“all gifts”), whose box of gifts, when opened, let loose all ills upon the world

[Return to text.](#)

³¹¹⁰ she was brought to Epimetheus (“afterthought”), brother of Prometheus (“fore-thought”)

[Return to text.](#)

³¹¹¹ Iapetus, a Titan

[Return to text.](#)

³¹¹² Jove’s messenger

[Return to text.](#)

³¹¹³ to be = in order to be

[Return to text.](#)

³¹¹⁴ Prometheus

[Return to text.](#)

³¹¹⁵ truly created by Jove

[Return to text.](#)

³¹¹⁶ hut, cottage, house

[Return to text.](#)

³¹¹⁷ venerated

[Return to text.](#)

³¹¹⁸ wonderfully pleasant

[Return to text.](#)

³¹¹⁹ lacks

[Return to text.](#)

³¹²⁰ unreaped

[Return to text.](#)

³¹²¹ joined hand in hand

[Return to text.](#)

³¹²² relieved/set free of

[Return to text.](#)

³¹²³ believe, suppose

[Return to text.](#)

³¹²⁴ property

[Return to text.](#)

³¹²⁵ held in common

[Return to text.](#)

³¹²⁶ wander

[Return to text.](#)

³¹²⁷ kinship

[Return to text.](#)

³¹²⁸ natural affections

[Return to text.](#)

³¹²⁹ describe, call

[Return to text.](#)

³¹³⁰ arrows

[Return to text.](#)

³¹³¹ steadfast, faithful, true

[Return to text.](#)

³¹³² enjoyment

[Return to text.](#)

³¹³³ unchaste, lascivious

[Return to text.](#)

³¹³⁴ renewed, replaced

[Return to text.](#)

³¹³⁵ the earth's shadow

[Return to text.](#)

³¹³⁶ arch (the sky)

[Return to text.](#)

³¹³⁷ Paradise's eastern gate

[Return to text.](#)

³¹³⁸ "Strength of God"

[Return to text.](#)

³¹³⁹ move, turn to

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁴⁰ like

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁴¹ the shield was worn on the left arm; the spear was held in the right

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁴² "Discovery of God"

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁴³ "Searcher of Secrets"

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁴⁴ secure of = protected/safe from

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁴⁵ from the time of

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁴⁶ who tells = one (Uriel) who tells

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁴⁷ headed, bound

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁴⁸ ranks/rows of armed angels

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁴⁹ Satan

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁵⁰ crouching

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁵¹ close at = near

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁵² trying

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁵³ desired, wished

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁵⁴ whether

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁵⁵ blowing, breathing

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁵⁶ infect, corrupt

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁵⁷ disordered, ill-humored, deranged

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁵⁸ hardening

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁵⁹ necessity

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁶⁰ leaps, bounds, jumps

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁶¹ caught unawares

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁶² nitrous powder = gunpowder

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁶³ piled up, heaped

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁶⁴ barrel, cask

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁶⁵ military warehouse

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁶⁶ blackened

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁶⁷ powder of a granular texture: i.e., gunpowder

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁶⁸ sent forth

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁶⁹ overwhelmed

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁷⁰ horrible, ghastly

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁷¹ address

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁷² quickly, without delay

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁷³ sentenced, condemned

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁷⁴ suitable companion

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁷⁵ i.e., in Heaven

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁷⁶ indicates

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁷⁷ rebel

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁷⁸ judgment

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁷⁹ sublime, majestic, impressive

[Return to text.](#)

³¹⁸⁰ mourned

[Return to text.](#)

3181 fight

[Return to text.](#)

3182 gnashing, rattling

[Return to text.](#)

3183 the strap/chain of a horse's bit

[Return to text.](#)

3184 strive or fly = fight or flee

[Return to text.](#)

3185 dread combined with wonder

[Return to text.](#)

3186 overcome

[Return to text.](#)

3187 front line

[Return to text.](#)

3188 quick

[Return to text.](#)

3189 royal, stately

[Return to text.](#)

3190 carriage, bearing

[Return to text.](#)

3191 pallid, gloomy

[Return to text.](#)

3192 depart

[Return to text.](#)

3193 scowls

[Return to text.](#)

3194 crouching, lurking

[Return to text.](#)

3195 look

[Return to text.](#)

3196 responsibility

[Return to text.](#)

3197 commend

[Return to text.](#)

3198 reputation

[Return to text.](#)

3199 sentenced

[Return to text.](#)

3200 exchange

[Return to text.](#)

3201 compensate, repay

[Return to text.](#)

3202 grief, sorrow

[Return to text.](#)

3203 more firmly/securely

[Return to text.](#)

3204 forced confinement, imprisonment

[Return to text.](#)

3205 provoked

[Return to text.](#)

3206 “What a loss in Heaven is one who can judge what wisdom is!”

[Return to text.](#)

3207 unauthorized, without permission

[Return to text.](#)

3208 boundaries, limits

[Return to text.](#)

3209 flee

[Return to text.](#)

3210 however he can

[Return to text.](#)

3211 oppose

[Return to text.](#)

3212 whip, lash

[Return to text.](#)

3213 courageous

[Return to text.](#)

3214 declared

[Return to text.](#)

3215 hurry

[Return to text.](#)

3216 reinforced

[Return to text.](#)

3217 otherwise

[Return to text.](#)

3218 thy words at random = thy careless/heedless words

[Return to text.](#)

3219 as to what

[Return to text.](#)

3220 is needful/required of.... faithful leader

[Return to text.](#)

3221 attempts, experiments

[Return to text.](#)

3222 results

[Return to text.](#)

3223 courses, directions, roads, paths

[Return to text.](#)

3224 fly

[Return to text.](#)

3225 rumor, report

[Return to text.](#)

3226 even if

[Return to text.](#)

3227 forced, pushed

[Return to text.](#)

3228 quickly

[Return to text.](#)

3229 flee

[Return to text.](#)

3230 declare oneself

[Return to text.](#)

3231 indicates

[Return to text.](#)

3232 found, searched out

[Return to text.](#)

3233 slavelike, meanly

[Return to text.](#)

3234 dread

[Return to text.](#)

3235 why

[Return to text.](#)

3236 counsel

[Return to text.](#)

3237 leave!

[Return to text.](#)

3238 boundaries

[Return to text.](#)

3239 fasten

[Return to text.](#)

3240 (1) easy, (2) courteous

[Return to text.](#)

3241 growing

[Return to text.](#)

3242 in rage = enraged

[Return to text.](#)

3243 guardian of boundaries

[Return to text.](#)

3244 material force

[Return to text.](#)

3245 superior, stronger

[Return to text.](#)

3246 comrades

[Return to text.](#)

3247 moonèd horns = crescent formation

[Return to text.](#)

3248 close-packed battle array, sixteen-man-deep square, perfected by the Romans

[Return to text.](#)

3249 raised/lifted and at the ready

[Return to text.](#)

3250 grain (metaphorical use of the goddess' name)

[Return to text.](#)

3251 [adverb]

[Return to text.](#)

3252 swings

[Return to text.](#)

3253 bundles

[Return to text.](#)

3254 alert

[Return to text.](#)

3255 (1) wings extended, (2) expanded in size

[Return to text.](#)

3256 high peak in the Canary Islands

[Return to text.](#)

3257 Mt. Atlas in Mauritania, Africa

[Return to text.](#)

3258 (1) holding his ground, (2) unremovable

[Return to text.](#)

3259 helmeted

[Return to text.](#)

3260 was lacking

[Return to text.](#)

3261 involved in

[Return to text.](#)

3262 vault

[Return to text.](#)

3263 crash, collision, destruction

[Return to text.](#)

3264 quickly

[Return to text.](#)

3265 the constellation Libra (“the Scales”) is between Scorpio and Virgo/Astrea

[Return to text.](#)

3266 still

[Return to text.](#)

3267 Virgo

[Return to text.](#)

3268 reflects upon, weighs

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁶⁹ i.e., the two pans of the scale

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁷⁰ result

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁷¹ separating, breaking off

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁷² the balance beam

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁷³ addressed

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁷⁴ mud

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁷⁵ destiny

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁷⁶ recognized

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁷⁷ grumbling, complaining, muttering

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁷⁸ i.e., responsible, without any excuse

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁷⁹ region, realm

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁸⁰ bright, gleaming

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁸¹ accustomed, in the habit

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁸² produced, developed

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁸³ moderate

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁸⁴ exhalations of a digestive kind

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁸⁵ soft, mild

[Return to text.](#)

³²⁸⁶ giving off vapors—mist and evaporation

[Return to text.](#)

3287 goddess of morning

[Return to text.](#)

3288 Adam's exhalations were easily "dispersed" (dissipated, scattered) by the "fanning" motion of leaves and the "fuming" of running water

[Return to text.](#)

3289 morning

[Return to text.](#)

3290 heartfelt

[Return to text.](#)

3291 singular, special

[Return to text.](#)

3292 west wind/spring breeze

[Return to text.](#)

3293 goddess of flowers

[Return to text.](#)

3294 early morning (either dawn or about 6 A.M.)

[Return to text.](#)

3295 note, observe

[Return to text.](#)

3296 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

3297 "what the myrrh tree (a gum resin) drops"

[Return to text.](#)

3298 here, a balsam (pine) tree

[Return to text.](#)

3299 accustomed

[Return to text.](#)

3300 plan, aim

[Return to text.](#)

3301 wearisome, irritating, tiring, annoying

[Return to text.](#)

3302 except

[Return to text.](#)

3303 look

[Return to text.](#)

3304 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

3305 ecstasy

[Return to text.](#)

3306 forbidden

[Return to text.](#)

3307 exuded, let fall

[Return to text.](#)

3308 overloaded

[Return to text.](#)

3309 imposition of a limitation

[Return to text.](#)

3310 is it set

[Return to text.](#)

3311 venturesome

[Return to text.](#)

3312 dazed, depressing

[Return to text.](#)

3313 declared

[Return to text.](#)

3314 plucked

[Return to text.](#)

3315 instigator, the Creator

[Return to text.](#)

3316 a portion of

[Return to text.](#)

3317 firmly, soberly

[Return to text.](#)

3318 unusual, unfamiliar, strange

[Return to text.](#)

3319 imagination

[Return to text.](#)

3320 closest, nearest

[Return to text.](#)

3321 function

[Return to text.](#)

3322 vigilant

[Return to text.](#)

3323 bring before the mind

[Return to text.](#)

3324 what we call

[Return to text.](#)

3325 recent

[Return to text.](#)

3326 dismal

[Return to text.](#)

3327 hidden, confined

[Return to text.](#)

3328 a dam or any device holding back water

[Return to text.](#)

3329 disclosing (i.e., making visible, after the darkness of night)

[Return to text.](#)

3330 prayers

[Return to text.](#)

3331 different, variable, changing

[Return to text.](#)

3332 lacked

[Return to text.](#)

3333 suitable, appropriate

[Return to text.](#)

3334 (1) flow of impassioned language, (2) style

[Return to text.](#)

3335 ready and willing

[Return to text.](#)

3336 metrical

[Return to text.](#)

3337 tuneful, musical

[Return to text.](#)

3338 structure, fabric

[Return to text.](#)

3339 harmonious music

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁴⁰ Venus (as morning star, called Lucifer; as evening star, called Hesperus)

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁴¹ promise

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁴² gemlike headband

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁴³ early morning (either dawn or about 6 A.M.)

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁴⁴ attained, achieved, reached

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁴⁵ gleaming, bright

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁴⁶ flees (it)

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁴⁷ moves quickly (rotating once every twenty-four hours)

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁴⁸ i.e., not having fixed orbits

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁴⁹ the known planets: Mercury, Venus, Mars, Saturn, Jupiter

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁵⁰ in fourfold combination

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁵¹ exhibit divergence

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁵² not of different colors, but only of one

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁵³ more usually used for “streams, brooks,” than in the modern meaning of a man-

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁵⁴ sing

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁵⁵ testify, give evidence

[Return to text.](#)

³³⁵⁶ made vocal = sounded, turned into/endowed with music

[Return to text.](#)

3357 always

[Return to text.](#)

3358 accustomed, usual, habitual

[Return to text.](#)

3359 agricultural, pastoral

[Return to text.](#)

3360 pampered boughs = crammed with boughs

[Return to text.](#)

3361 without offspring

[Return to text.](#)

3362 entangled branches?

[Return to text.](#)

3363 the elm becomes the stepparent of the vine's "children," her bunches of grapes

[Return to text.](#)

3364 bunches (of grapes)

[Return to text.](#)

3365 unproductive

[Return to text.](#)

3366 "With pity, Heaven's High King (God) beheld Adam and Eve thus employed"

[Return to text.](#)

3367 see Book IV, above, at lines 168–71

[Return to text.](#)

3368 plans, schemes

[Return to text.](#)

3369 relieve

[Return to text.](#)

3370 food, a meal

[Return to text.](#)

3371 unsettled, fickle, variable, subject to change or alteration

[Return to text.](#)

3372 confident

[Return to text.](#)

3373 moreover, in addition

[Return to text.](#)

3374 resisted

[Return to text.](#)

3375 claim, put forward as an excuse

[Return to text.](#)

3376 unexhorted, uninformed

[Return to text.](#)

3377 satisfied, did, performed

[Return to text.](#)

3378 order, responsibility

[Return to text.](#)

3379 radiant spirits

[Return to text.](#)

3380 shrouded, covered

[Return to text.](#)

3381 brilliant, magnificent

[Return to text.](#)

3382 contrived, built, intended

[Return to text.](#)

3383 placed between

[Return to text.](#)

3384 corresponding

[Return to text.](#)

3385 competent

[Return to text.](#)

3386 islands in the south Aegean Sea

[Return to text.](#)

3387 Greek island

[Return to text.](#)

3388 island off the coast of Asia Minor

[Return to text.](#)

3389 sees, identifies

[Return to text.](#)

3390 headlong

[Return to text.](#)

3391 wing

[Return to text.](#)

3392 beats

[Return to text.](#)

3393 flexible, unresisting

[Return to text.](#)

3394 the altitude attained in soaring

[Return to text.](#)

3395 mythical bird that perpetually renews its life, first burning its old body,
then being reborn from the ashes

[Return to text.](#)

3396 stared at

[Return to text.](#)

3397 solitary

[Return to text.](#)

3398 the phoenix's

[Return to text.](#)

3399 Raphael

[Return to text.](#)

3400 features

[Return to text.](#)

3401 draped

[Return to text.](#)

3402 belt

[Return to text.](#)

3403 covered, bordered, edged

[Return to text.](#)

3404 soft

[Return to text.](#)

3405 dyed (by immersion)

[Return to text.](#)

3406 colored

[Return to text.](#)

3407 dye

[Return to text.](#)

3408 Hermes

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁰⁹ plumage, feathers

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴¹⁰ so that

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴¹¹ circuit wide = wide surrounding space

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴¹² participating in, performing

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴¹³ blessed, beatified

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴¹⁴ an aromatic balsam

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴¹⁵ sported, played

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴¹⁶ beyond

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴¹⁷ aromatic

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴¹⁸ burning, glowing

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴¹⁹ properly

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴²⁰ render distasteful

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴²¹ command

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴²² condescend

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴²³ confer as a gift

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴²⁴ liberality, bounty

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴²⁵ discharging its load

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴²⁶ hoard

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴²⁷ holy, sanctified

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴²⁸ soil

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴²⁹ supply

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴³⁰ suffice

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴³¹ careful

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴³² laying by

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴³³ (1) unneeded, (2) excessive

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴³⁴ moisture

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴³⁵ thicket

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴³⁶ hurried, quick

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴³⁷ [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴³⁸ sustained, supported, confirmed

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴³⁹ most natural

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁴⁰ busies

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁴¹ Mediterranean

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁴² the Black Sea

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁴³ Carthaginian/Phoenician (North African)

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁴⁴ king of the Phaeacian island, now Corfu

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁴⁵ homage, tax

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁴⁶ table

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁴⁷ unfermented juice

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁴⁸ mixes

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁴⁹ sweet

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁵⁰ smooth (creamy) and frothing liquids

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁵¹ lacks

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁵² suitable, appropriate

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁵³ not burned, as incense would be, since there was as yet no fire available to burn them

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁵⁴ original

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁵⁵ grand, imposing

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁵⁶ submissive, subdued

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁵⁷ lack

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁵⁸ condescend

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁵⁹ noontime, midday

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁶⁰ sink down

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁶¹ seventh of the nine angelic orders

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁶² at will = as I please

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁶³ pastoral

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁶⁴ Roman goddess of fruits

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁶⁵ orchard, bower

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁶⁶ (1) from fables rather than real, (2) sham, because pagan

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁶⁷ a beauty competition among Hera, Athena, and Aphrodite; Paris, son of King Priam of Troy, gave the prize to Aphrodite

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁶⁸ “veil” could then mean “cloak” or “mantle”

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁶⁹ weak, shaky

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁷⁰ table

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁷¹ Adam

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁷² generous gifts

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁷³ in part = who is in part

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁷⁴ distasteful, unwelcome

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁷⁵ as “rational” creatures, human beings are required to (and can) think in order to know; their knowledge is therefore of necessity partial. “Intelligential” creatures, however, are endowed with complete knowledge that is of their very essence

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁷⁶ both angels and men

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁷⁷ heat for digestive purposes

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁷⁸ [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁷⁹ unpurified

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁸⁰ land

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁸¹ everything else

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁸² nutritional

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁸³ evening

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁸⁴ dines

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁸⁵ flowing as sweet as honey

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁸⁶ on earth, in the Garden of Eden

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁸⁷ fussy

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁸⁸ food

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁸⁹ so far as one can judge

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁹⁰ in mist = blurred (as an immaterial object)

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁹¹ interpretation, explanation

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁹² [bisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁹³ see footnote 200, above

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁹⁴ to turn corporeal to incorporeal, i.e., to make spiritual that which was material

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁹⁵ is excessive, superfluous

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁹⁶ is emitted/breathed/vaporized (i.e., passes through their “bodies,” is excreted)

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁹⁷ lower-ranking, merely experimentally oriented (rather than the higher, theoretically oriented)

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁹⁸ as from = just as if it had come from

[Return to text.](#)

³⁴⁹⁹ served

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁰⁰ filled to overflowing

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁰¹ unlustful, unlecherous

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁰² food

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁰³ i.e., their natures

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁰⁴ conversation, meeting [trisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁰⁵ splendid radiance

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁰⁶ careful

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁰⁷ shaped, articulated

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁰⁸ condescended

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁰⁹ member of the hierarch (order) of angels [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵¹⁰ perverted, corrupted

[Return to text.](#)

3511 earliest (primeval)

[Return to text.](#)

3512 invested, supplied

[Return to text.](#)

3513 upward jumps

[Return to text.](#)

3514 completed, perfected, supreme

[Return to text.](#)

3515 elevated, refined, purified

[Return to text.](#)

3516 complete instantaneous knowledge requiring no prior thought

[Return to text.](#)

3517 unsuitable, inappropriate

[Return to text.](#)

3518 duration

[Return to text.](#)

3519 He whose

[Return to text.](#)

3520 offspring

[Return to text.](#)

3521 of what

[Return to text.](#)

3522 gracious, helpful

[Return to text.](#)

3523 added, annexed

[Return to text.](#)

3524 lack

[Return to text.](#)

3525 listen, follow me closely/carefully

[Return to text.](#)

3526 remain firm/steady

[Return to text.](#)

3527 hereby notified, warned

[Return to text.](#)

3528 complete

[Return to text.](#)

3529 unalterable

[Return to text.](#)

3530 from which one cannot extricate oneself

[Return to text.](#)

3531 tested

[Return to text.](#)

3532 must will

[Return to text.](#)

3533 guarantee

[Return to text.](#)

3534 [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

3535 ancestor, forefather

[Return to text.](#)

3536 command, single = single command

[Return to text.](#)

3537 raise, stir up

[Return to text.](#)

3538 narrative

[Return to text.](#)

3539 dedicated

[Return to text.](#)

3540 ample, abundant

[Return to text.](#)

3541 daylight hours (since the angel has said, in line 376, that he will stay on earth “till evening rise”)

[Return to text.](#)

3542 region, encircling band

[Return to text.](#)

3543 impose on

[Return to text.](#)

3544 first, original

[Return to text.](#)

3545 sober, serious

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁴⁶ regretful remembrance

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁴⁷ finally, last of all

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁴⁸ permitted

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁴⁹ sketch, draw, portray

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁵⁰ for men, a foreshadowing

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁵¹ calculated by Plato, in his *Republic*, as approximately thirty-six thousand years (i.e., when all the heavenly bodies have returned to their created starting points)

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁵² celestial

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁵³ archangels

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁵⁴ banners, flags

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁵⁵ military banner or flag

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁵⁶ banners with tails/streamers, suspended from a crossbar rather than a pole

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁵⁷ front, foremost

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁵⁸ for distinction serve = used in order to distinguish

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁵⁹ fabric, cloth

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁶⁰ inscribed

[Return to text.](#)

³⁵⁶¹ [trisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

3562 prominently

[Return to text.](#)

3563 enclosed

[Return to text.](#)

3564 as if

[Return to text.](#)

3565 offspring

[Return to text.](#)

3566 unrevoked shall stand = shall stand unrevoked (not
rescinded/annulled/withdrawn, etc.)

[Return to text.](#)

3567 called into being

[Return to text.](#)

3568 he whom

[Return to text.](#)

3569 acknowledge, avow

[Return to text.](#)

3570 gerent = ruler, manager

[Return to text.](#)

3571 swallowed, buried

[Return to text.](#)

3572 fixed stars

[Return to text.](#)

3573 elliptical, irregular

[Return to text.](#)

3574 interwound

[Return to text.](#)

3575 frees from difficulties, invests with calm/placidity

[Return to text.](#)

3576 harmony divine's

[Return to text.](#)

3577 musical intervals

[Return to text.](#)

3578 delightful

[Return to text.](#)

3579 [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

3580 produce, product

[Return to text.](#)

3581 inclining, resting

[Return to text.](#)

3582 fellowship, sharing

[Return to text.](#)

3583 drink deeply of

[Return to text.](#)

3584 secure of = safe from

[Return to text.](#)

3585 limits

[Return to text.](#)

3586 abundant

[Return to text.](#)

3587 (1) celestial, (2) divinely fragrant

[Return to text.](#)

3588 pleasing, agreeable

[Return to text.](#)

3589 (1) rose-colored, (2) rose-scented

[Return to text.](#)

3590 inclined, prepared

[Return to text.](#)

3591 spherical, globular

[Return to text.](#)

3592 (1) constantly flowing, (2) refreshing

[Return to text.](#)

3593 a kind of large tent

[Return to text.](#)

3594 tents

[Return to text.](#)

3595 turn, customary practice

[Return to text.](#)

3596 among

[Return to text.](#)

3597 filled

[Return to text.](#)

3598 lessened

[Return to text.](#)

3599 leave one's place of lodging (break camp)

[Return to text.](#)

3600 Beelzebub

[Return to text.](#)

3601 if you

[Return to text.](#)

3602 in the habit of

[Return to text.](#)

3603 make known, communicate

[Return to text.](#)

3604 both waking = both of us awake

[Return to text.](#)

3605 disagree, be at variance

[Return to text.](#)

3606 countless numbers

[Return to text.](#)

3607 the chief = the best part

[Return to text.](#)

3608 I am to haste...homeward = I will hurry...home

[Return to text.](#)

3609 (1) swift, (2) literally flying (through the air)

[Return to text.](#)

3610 hold, occupy

[Return to text.](#)

3611 (1) headquarters, (2) regions

[Return to text.](#)

3612 angelic orders

[Return to text.](#)

3613 insinuated

[Return to text.](#)

3614 [trisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶¹⁵ Beelzebub

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶¹⁶ separately

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶¹⁷ “He calls together, or else speaks to them separately, or one by one”

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶¹⁸ controlling, governing

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶¹⁹ under him Regent = which were Regents under him

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶²⁰ freed

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶²¹ ensign of the hierarchy

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶²² test

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶²³ corrupt

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶²⁴ familiar

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶²⁵ command, will, right

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶²⁶ person with great and independent power, a ruler

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶²⁷ rank

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶²⁸ charmed, tempted

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶²⁹ the most hidden

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶³⁰ particularly

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶³¹ of long standing

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶³² consider, reflect

[Return to text.](#)

3633 peril

[Return to text.](#)

3634 inexpressible

[Return to text.](#)

3635 safe

[Return to text.](#)

3636 commotions, agitations

[Return to text.](#)

3637 makes illustrious

[Return to text.](#)

3638 put an end to, suppress, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

3639 matter to me of glory...to quell their pride

[Return to text.](#)

3640 in event = in the occurrence

[Return to text.](#)

3641 adroit, skillful

[Return to text.](#)

3642 with

[Return to text.](#)

3643 [five syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

3644 the nine angelic orders were at one time said to be divided into three sub-groupings

[Return to text.](#)

3645 having the form of a globe

[Return to text.](#)

3646 stretched into longitude = stretched lengthwise

[Return to text.](#)

3647 territories, bounds

[Return to text.](#)

3648 explained, translated

[Return to text.](#)

3649 claiming, feigning

[Return to text.](#)

3650 false, slanderous

[Return to text.](#)

3651 having the name, but not the reality

[Return to text.](#)

3652 collected

[Return to text.](#)

3653 artificial representation, copy, counterpart, portrait

[Return to text.](#)

3654 raise

[Return to text.](#)

3655 well consist = are consistent

[Return to text.](#)

3656 perversion, corruption, misuse

[Return to text.](#)

3657 check

[Return to text.](#)

3658 “to boil”

[Return to text.](#)

3659 stringent, rigorous

[Return to text.](#)

3660 flowing

[Return to text.](#)

3661 speaking evil

[Return to text.](#)

3662 invested

[Return to text.](#)

3663 fit, proper, owed

[Return to text.](#)

3664 acknowledge, avow

[Return to text.](#)

3665 uninherited

[Return to text.](#)

3666 marked out the limits of

[Return to text.](#)

3667 careful

[Return to text.](#)

3668 inclined

[Return to text.](#)

3669 nearly

[Return to text.](#)

3670 to be unjust

[Return to text.](#)

3671 dimmed, darkened

[Return to text.](#)

3672 these others

[Return to text.](#)

3673 pacify, mollify

[Return to text.](#)

3674 in time = if in time

[Return to text.](#)

3675 ardent, intensely earnest

[Return to text.](#)

3676 out of season = inopportune, unseasonable, not at the right time

[Return to text.](#)

3677 just him

[Return to text.](#)

3678 hasty, impetuous

[Return to text.](#)

3679 second-best, second-class, subsidiary, auxiliary

[Return to text.](#)

3680 unfamiliar

[Return to text.](#)

3681 life-giving, animating

[Return to text.](#)

3682 destined, fated

[Return to text.](#)

3683 complete

[Return to text.](#)

3684 celestial

[Return to text.](#)

3685 power

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁸⁶ the act of addressing someone

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁸⁷ surround

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁸⁸ (1) flee, (2) fly on wings

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁸⁹ “hoarse murmur echoed applause to his words”

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁹⁰ estranged

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁹¹ settled, decided

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁹² luckless

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁹³ lenient

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁹⁴ bestowed, conferred

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁹⁵ crush, smash

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁹⁶ advise me (to leave)

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁹⁷ (1) dedicated (to evil), (2) doomed

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁹⁸ overhanging, imminent

[Return to text.](#)

³⁶⁹⁹ distinguish not = not distinguish between you and me

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁰⁰ worked

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁰¹ alone

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁰² [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁰³ returned, cast back

[Return to text.](#)

3704 machines, mechanical devices

[Return to text.](#)

3705 fearless

[Return to text.](#)

3706 Abdiel

[Return to text.](#)

3707 open country

[Return to text.](#)

3708 fast by = very near

[Return to text.](#)

3709 reside

[Return to text.](#)

3710 go away

[Return to text.](#)

3711 pleasing

[Return to text.](#)

3712 mutation

[Return to text.](#)

3713 obedient, dutiful

[Return to text.](#)

3714 as it is

[Return to text.](#)

3715 celestial

[Return to text.](#)

3716 brightly shining

[Return to text.](#)

3717 [when all the plain (lines 15 ff.) = subject; met his view (line 18) = verb]

[Return to text.](#)

3718 Abdiel's

[Return to text.](#)

3719 readiness, preparation

[Return to text.](#)

3720 countless numbers

[Return to text.](#)

3721 pre *sent* him [verb, in the present tense]

[Return to text.](#)

3722 valued, good

[Return to text.](#)

3723 incorrect, wicked

[Return to text.](#)

3724 remains to

[Return to text.](#)

3725 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

3726 cliff edge

[Return to text.](#)

3727 lowest region of Hades/Hell

[Return to text.](#)

3728 writhing

[Return to text.](#)

3729 fear, awe, reverence

[Return to text.](#)

3730 were drawn up for battle

[Return to text.](#)

3731 square formation

[Return to text.](#)

3732 and neither

[Return to text.](#)

3733 obstructing

[Return to text.](#)

3734 constricting

[Return to text.](#)

3735 quiescent, unresisting

[Return to text.](#)

3736 quick

[Return to text.](#)

3737 race, species

[Return to text.](#)

3738 Adam

[Return to text.](#)

3739 stretch/extent of land, region

[Return to text.](#)

3740 earth

[Return to text.](#)

3741 border

[Return to text.](#)

3742 ready/eager for battle [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

3743 on nearer view

[Return to text.](#)

3744 upright beams = the upright poles

[Return to text.](#)

3745 crowded

[Return to text.](#)

3746 statements, slogans, arguments

[Return to text.](#)

3747 painted, adorned

[Return to text.](#)

3748 wild, mad

[Return to text.](#)

3749 speed

[Return to text.](#)

3750 thought, expected

[Return to text.](#)

3751 foolish

[Return to text.](#)

3752 “when they were halfway there”

[Return to text.](#)

3753 hostile encounter

[Return to text.](#)

3754 wont to = usually

[Return to text.](#)

3755 like-minded

[Return to text.](#)

3756 descended

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁵⁷ fearful, terrible

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁵⁸ open space

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁵⁹ darkened by ignorance, anger, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁶⁰ foremost part

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁶¹ bristling

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁶² loyalty, devotion, honesty [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁶³ (Abdiel, not Satan, is trusting in God)

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁶⁴ test, probe

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁶⁵ savage

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁶⁶ [second syllable accented]

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁶⁷ wicked, dirty, offensive

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁶⁸ (1) obstruction, obstacle, (2) confrontation

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁶⁹ is Abdiel incensed at Satan? or Satan at Abdiel?

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁷⁰ Satan

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁷¹ submerged, buried, completely covered

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁷² (1) course, (2) following

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁷³ those who

[Return to text.](#)

³⁷⁷⁴ misguided, mistaken

[Return to text.](#)

3775 party

[Return to text.](#)

3776 a few

[Return to text.](#)

3777 principal, great

[Return to text.](#)

3778 (1) sideways, (2) askew, asquint

[Return to text.](#)

3779 rebelling

[Return to text.](#)

3780 (1) assault, (2) test

[Return to text.](#)

3781 (1) free, (2) claim

[Return to text.](#)

3782 reward

[Return to text.](#)

3783 result, outcome

[Return to text.](#)

3784 slaughter

[Return to text.](#)

3785 corrupt

[Return to text.](#)

3786 command

[Return to text.](#)

3787 enslaved

[Return to text.](#)

3788 wickedly, basely

[Return to text.](#)

3789 serving

[Return to text.](#)

3790 censure, reproach

[Return to text.](#)

3791 commands

[Return to text.](#)

3792 heraldic device on the top of his helmet

[Return to text.](#)

3793 violent speed

[Return to text.](#)

3794 injury, damage

[Return to text.](#)

3795 “ten large paces”

[Return to text.](#)

3796 held up

[Return to text.](#)

3797 discomfited, overthrown

[Return to text.](#)

3798 [trisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

3799 [trisyllabic?]

[Return to text.](#)

3800 vastness

[Return to text.](#)

3801 in wonder/amazement

[Return to text.](#)

3802 met, now engaged in combat

[Return to text.](#)

3803 made a harsh, clashing sound

[Return to text.](#)

3804 frenzied, turning furiously

[Return to text.](#)

3805 brasslike, brass-hard

[Return to text.](#)

3806 horrible, dreadful

[Return to text.](#)

3807 spears, javelins, arrows

[Return to text.](#)

3808 covered

[Return to text.](#)

3809 canopy

[Return to text.](#)

3810 armies

[Return to text.](#)

3811 mighty

[Return to text.](#)

3812 tumultuous conflagration

[Return to text.](#)

3813 controlled, ruled against

[Return to text.](#)

3814 of such numbers

[Return to text.](#)

3815 split into factions, discordant

[Return to text.](#)

3816 battle lines

[Return to text.](#)

3817 fierce, cruel

[Return to text.](#)

3818 as if

[Return to text.](#)

3819 cause, influence, turning point

[Return to text.](#)

3820 mighty, vigorous

[Return to text.](#)

3821 shaking, stirring

[Return to text.](#)

3822 battling

[Return to text.](#)

3823 marvelous, amazing

[Return to text.](#)

3824 disorderly

[Return to text.](#)

3825 motion, force

[Return to text.](#)

3826 frightful

[Return to text.](#)

3827 set in opposition, put in the way

[Return to text.](#)

3828 left off

[Return to text.](#)

3829 internal

[Return to text.](#)

3830 quantity, degree, proportion

[Return to text.](#)

3831 spiritual/mental peace

[Return to text.](#)

3832 borders

[Return to text.](#)

3833 puts up with

[Return to text.](#)

3834 join together

[Return to text.](#)

3835 quarrels

[Return to text.](#)

3836 negotiate

[Return to text.](#)

3837 parley

[Return to text.](#)

3838 readied

[Return to text.](#)

3839 visible

[Return to text.](#)

3840 side, direction

[Return to text.](#)

3841 most dense

[Return to text.](#)

3842 space, room

[Return to text.](#)

3843 (1) wind, (2) violence

[Return to text.](#)

3844 bearing, relative position

[Return to text.](#)

3845 destroy one another?

[Return to text.](#)

3846 settle/put an end to/decide/resolve

[Return to text.](#)

3847 advantage

[Return to text.](#)

3848 blocking, parrying

[Return to text.](#)

3849 completely

[Return to text.](#)

3850 divided

[Return to text.](#)

3851 coiling, twisting

[Return to text.](#)

3852 piercing

[Return to text.](#)

3853 breaking the organic continuity of Satan's bodily substance

[Return to text.](#)

3854 fluid, essence

[Return to text.](#)

3855 bloody

[Return to text.](#)

3856 withdrawn

[Return to text.](#)

3857 files of war = rows/ranks of fighters

[Return to text.](#)

3858 outrage, anger

[Return to text.](#)

3859 disgrace

[Return to text.](#)

3860 kidneys

[Return to text.](#)

3861 except

[Return to text.](#)

3862 similar [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

3863 troops serving under a single ensign/banner/flag

[Return to text.](#)

3864 ranks

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁶⁵ soon, at once

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁶⁶ unfamiliar, never experienced

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁶⁷ of the army: military formation

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁶⁸ their: i.e., each of them vanquished “his” boasting opponent

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁶⁹ boasting

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁷⁰ Assyrian sun god

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁷¹ Asmodeus, the demon in the Apocryphal Book of Tobit: see Book 4, line 168, above

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁷² third of the nine angelic orders

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁷³ inferior, lower

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁷⁴ cut, hacked

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁷⁵ “lion of God”

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁷⁶ a Spirit of revenge; Arioeh is mentioned in Genesis 14:1 as a “king of Ellasar”

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁷⁷ “exaltation of God”—although in the Apocryphal Book of Enoch, Ramiel’s lustfulness with mortal women causes him to fall from Heaven

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁷⁸ judgment, sentence

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁷⁹ that which is just

[Return to text.](#)

³⁸⁸⁰ unworthy

[Return to text.](#)

3881 dishonor, disgrace

[Return to text.](#)

3882 fate, destiny

[Return to text.](#)

3883 crushed

[Return to text.](#)

3884 changed

[Return to text.](#)

3885 raid

[Return to text.](#)

3886 stuck, stabbed, pierced: i.e., into the rebel ranks

[Return to text.](#)

3887 hideous

[Return to text.](#)

3888 spiritless, feeble

[Return to text.](#)

3889 ashen

[Return to text.](#)

3890 attacked, captured

[Return to text.](#)

3891 unable to be violated/broken/injured [five syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

3892 close-packed battle array, sixteen-man-deep square, perfected by the Romans

[Return to text.](#)

3893 as a whole

[Return to text.](#)

3894 not exposed/liable

[Return to text.](#)

3895 hateful

[Return to text.](#)

3896 victorious, dominant

[Return to text.](#)

3897 around

[Return to text.](#)

3898 red

[Return to text.](#)

3899 side

[Return to text.](#)

3900 gone away

[Return to text.](#)

3901 devoid

[Return to text.](#)

3902 claim

[Return to text.](#)

3903 seek, aim at

[Return to text.](#)

3904 uncertain

[Return to text.](#)

3905 disdained

[Return to text.](#)

3906 celestial

[Return to text.](#)

3907 ponder

[Return to text.](#)

3908 effective, technically perfect

[Return to text.](#)

3909 an Assyrian deity

[Return to text.](#)

3910 fifth of the nine angelic orders

[Return to text.](#)

3911 principal, first

[Return to text.](#)

3912 fatigued

[Return to text.](#)

3913 split, cracked open

[Return to text.](#)

3914 weapons, armor

[Return to text.](#)

3915 destruction

[Return to text.](#)

3916 darkened

[Return to text.](#)

3917 countenance, face

[Return to text.](#)

3918 invulnerable

[Return to text.](#)

3919 vanquished, crushed

[Return to text.](#)

3920 weak

[Return to text.](#)

3921 dispense with

[Return to text.](#)

3922 complain

[Return to text.](#)

3923 find, discover, produce

[Return to text.](#)

3924 attack

[Return to text.](#)

3925 correctly

[Return to text.](#)

3926 important

[Return to text.](#)

3927 composed of ether or similar celestial material [trisyllabic, second accented, “-eous” elided]

[Return to text.](#)

3928 ground

[Return to text.](#)

3929 only seeing the surface (an erudite pun)

[Return to text.](#)

3930 think

[Return to text.](#)

3931 foam

[Return to text.](#)

3932 modified, worked

[Return to text.](#)

3933 surrounding

[Return to text.](#)

3934 birthplace

[Return to text.](#)

3935 stuffed

[Return to text.](#)

3936 aperture, hole

[Return to text.](#)

3937 (1) distended, amplified, enlarged, (2) spread abroad

[Return to text.](#)

3938 (1) opposite, (2) hostile

[Return to text.](#)

3939 accomplishment

[Return to text.](#)

3940 countenances

[Return to text.](#)

3941 lit up, illuminated

[Return to text.](#)

3942 drooping

[Return to text.](#)

3943 perhaps

[Return to text.](#)

3944 contrivance

[Return to text.](#)

3945 similar

[Return to text.](#)

3946 original elements

[Return to text.](#)

3947 mixed

[Return to text.](#)

3948 arranged, systematized

[Return to text.](#)

3949 granules

[Return to text.](#)

3950 some of them

[Return to text.](#)

3951 melt and mold, build

[Return to text.](#)

3952 missive ruin = missilelike destruction

[Return to text.](#)

3953 kindling

[Return to text.](#)

3954 swift

[Return to text.](#)

3955 conscious Night = Night, aware of what they were doing

[Return to text.](#)

3956 caution

[Return to text.](#)

3957 bright

[Return to text.](#)

3958 armor

[Return to text.](#)

3959 gleaming, radiant, resplendent

[Return to text.](#)

3960 army

[Return to text.](#)

3961 joined/formed into a company

[Return to text.](#)

3962 discover

[Return to text.](#)

3963 “spy of God”

[Return to text.](#)

3964 sober, serious, firm

[Return to text.](#)

3965 confident [adjective, modifying “resolution”]

[Return to text.](#)

3966 buckle

[Return to text.](#)

3967 level, horizontal

[Return to text.](#)

3968 can predict

[Return to text.](#)

3969 the call to arms

[Return to text.](#)

3970 in battle order

[Return to text.](#)

3971 slow

[Return to text.](#)

3972 massive

[Return to text.](#)

3973 of great size

[Return to text.](#)

3974 pulling

[Return to text.](#)

3975 surrounded, enclosed

[Return to text.](#)

3976 their face-to-face meeting

[Return to text.](#)

3977 open

[Return to text.](#)

3978 agreement, settlement

[Return to text.](#)

3979 opening, revelation

[Return to text.](#)

3980 obstinate

[Return to text.](#)

3981 at once

[Return to text.](#)

3982 bring forward

[Return to text.](#)

3983 forms

[Return to text.](#)

3984 opening, aperture

[Return to text.](#)

3985 uncertain, doubtful

[Return to text.](#)

3986 staring, puzzled

[Return to text.](#)

3987 vent = hole, here the “touch-hole”

[Return to text.](#)

3988 most precise, delicate

[Return to text.](#)

3989 vomited

[Return to text.](#)

3990 filled

[Return to text.](#)

3991 enormous

[Return to text.](#)

3992 overflowing amount

[Return to text.](#)

3993 violent, forceful, rapid

[Return to text.](#)

3994 because of

[Return to text.](#)

3995 armor

[Return to text.](#)

3996 scattering

[Return to text.](#)

3997 loosen, open

[Return to text.](#)

3998 pressed close together

[Return to text.](#)

3999 ranks

[Return to text.](#)

4000 unseemly

[Return to text.](#)

4001 discharge, explode

[Return to text.](#)

4002 volley

[Return to text.](#)

4003 frolicking

[Return to text.](#)

4004 amazed

[Return to text.](#)

4005 overthrew

[Return to text.](#)

4006 (1) comprehend, (2) be supported (“stand under”)

[Return to text.](#)

4007 excited

[Return to text.](#)

4008 the angels

[Return to text.](#)

4009 located

[Return to text.](#)

4010 swiftly/easily

[Return to text.](#)

4011 [prosodically, “When *coming towards them so dread* they saw”]

[Return to text.](#)

4012 thrown, so as to cover

[Return to text.](#)

4013 attacked, intruded upon

[Return to text.](#)

4014 great, solid

[Return to text.](#)

4015 headlands

[Return to text.](#)

4016 weighed down, crushed

[Return to text.](#)

4017 distended

[Return to text.](#)

4018 inexorable

[Return to text.](#)

4019 hurling, throwing

[Return to text.](#)

4020 horrible

[Return to text.](#)

4021 disaster, wreck, ruin

[Return to text.](#)

4022 judicious, deliberate

[Return to text.](#)

4023 associate, sharer

[Return to text.](#)

4024 radiance

[Return to text.](#)

4025 sentence, judgment

[Return to text.](#)

4026 hold out

[Return to text.](#)

4027 the whole, the rest of Heaven

[Return to text.](#)

4028 tolerated, allowed

[Return to text.](#)

4029 poured, instilled

[Return to text.](#)

4030 wicked, stubborn

[Return to text.](#)

4031 disturbance, sedition

[Return to text.](#)

4032 curbed, checked

[Return to text.](#)

4033 anointing

[Return to text.](#)

4034 as likes them = as they please

[Return to text.](#)

4035 beyond the power of words

[Return to text.](#)

4036 consider, value

[Return to text.](#)

4037 serpent, snake

[Return to text.](#)

4038 purified

[Return to text.](#)

4039 undreamed

[Return to text.](#)

4040 innate

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁴¹ carried, conveyed

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁴² racing

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁴³ i.e., resembling a shower

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁴⁴ the heavens

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁴⁵ the jewels on the high priest Aaron's breastplate: see Exodus 28:30

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁴⁶ pouring-out

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁴⁷ flashing, glistening, quivering

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁴⁸ exalted

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁰⁴⁹ luminous, gleaming

[Return to text.](#)

4050 drew/led back

[Return to text.](#)

4051 diffused around

[Return to text.](#)

4052 leader

[Return to text.](#)

4053 united

[Return to text.](#)

4054 withdrew

[Return to text.](#)

4055 dutiful, obedient

[Return to text.](#)

4056 usual, habitual, familiar

[Return to text.](#)

4057 unlucky

[Return to text.](#)

4058 unyielding

[Return to text.](#)

4059 foolish

[Return to text.](#)

4060 forming, taking

[Return to text.](#)

4061 reform, win back

[Return to text.](#)

4062 thinking

[Return to text.](#)

4063 finally, in the end

[Return to text.](#)

4064 fate

[Return to text.](#)

4065 test

[Return to text.](#)

4066 desirous

[Return to text.](#)

4067 grant

[Return to text.](#)

4068 army

[Return to text.](#)

4069 dark, dismal

[Return to text.](#)

4070 [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4071 scourges, wounds, afflictions

[Return to text.](#)

4072 stunned

[Return to text.](#)

4073 useless

[Return to text.](#)

4074 wrath

[Return to text.](#)

4075 adorned

[Return to text.](#)

4076 rapid

[Return to text.](#)

4077 customary

[Return to text.](#)

4078 empty

[Return to text.](#)

4079 edge

[Return to text.](#)

4080 unbearable, intolerable

[Return to text.](#)

4081 falling headlong, falling into ruins [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4082 rigorous

[Return to text.](#)

4083 disordered, confused

[Return to text.](#)

4084 defeated army

[Return to text.](#)

4085 opening wide

[Return to text.](#)

4086 filled

[Return to text.](#)

4087 walled

[Return to text.](#)

4088 joyful shouts

[Return to text.](#)

4089 Adam's

[Return to text.](#)

4090 be cautious, take warning

[Return to text.](#)

4091 occurred

[Return to text.](#)

4092 so that

[Return to text.](#)

4093 like him, together with him

[Return to text.](#)

4094 deprived

[Return to text.](#)

4095 spiteful injury

[Return to text.](#)

4096 once and for all, forever

[Return to text.](#)

4097 as companion

[Return to text.](#)

4098 weaker partner, Eve

[Return to text.](#)

4099 i.e., Christ

[Return to text.](#)

4100 "heavenly": muse of astronomy

[Return to text.](#)

4101 Bellerophon's flying horse

[Return to text.](#)

4102 i.e., "above" (beyond) pagan inspiration

[Return to text.](#)

4103 live, keep company

[Return to text.](#)

4104 breathed in

[Return to text.](#)

4105 of thy blending/alloying/preparation

[Return to text.](#)

4106 surroundings

[Return to text.](#)

4107 Bellerophon was unhorsed by Zeus, when attempting to fly up to the gods' home

[Return to text.](#)

4108 to which Bellerophon fell when unhorsed

[Return to text.](#)

4109 wandering aimless, straying (as Bellerophon had done)

[Return to text.](#)

4110 lost, abandoned

[Return to text.](#)

4111 enclosed, contained, confined

[Return to text.](#)

4112 diurnal sphere: the sphere that revolves daily around the earth

[Return to text.](#)

4113 swept away, carried

[Return to text.](#)

4114 above the pole = into Heaven

[Return to text.](#)

4115 compassed round = surrounded

[Return to text.](#)

4116 group or class of persons, here Bacchantes or worshipers of Bacchus

[Return to text.](#)

4117 Orpheus

[Return to text.](#)

4118 mountain range in Thrace, sacred to Bacchus

[Return to text.](#)

4119 ecstasy

[Return to text.](#)

4120 Calliope, muse of epic poetry

[Return to text.](#)

4121 happened

[Return to text.](#)

4122 ignore, disdain

[Return to text.](#)

4123 unsteady, not fixed

[Return to text.](#)

4124 partner in marriage

[Return to text.](#)

4125 wonder

[Return to text.](#)

4126 pensiveness

[Return to text.](#)

4127 exalted

[Return to text.](#)

4128 astonishing, unknown

[Return to text.](#)

4129 disorder, commotion

[Return to text.](#)

4130 turned back

[Return to text.](#)

4131 dismissed, abandoned

[Return to text.](#)

4132 visible

[Return to text.](#)

4133 flowing

[Return to text.](#)

4134 messenger

[Return to text.](#)

4135 purpose

[Return to text.](#)

4136 deigned, condescended

[Return to text.](#)

4137 courteously, generously

[Return to text.](#)

4138 encompassing

[Return to text.](#)

4139 interspersed, poured in

[Return to text.](#)

4140 flowering, blooming, bright

[Return to text.](#)

4141 repose

[Return to text.](#)

4142 recently

[Return to text.](#)

4143 completed

[Return to text.](#)

4144 lacks

[Return to text.](#)

4145 creating, begetting

[Return to text.](#)

4146 invisible

[Return to text.](#)

4147 Chaos

[Return to text.](#)

4148 stay awake

[Return to text.](#)

4149 ask

[Return to text.](#)

4150 send away, allow to depart

[Return to text.](#)

4151 supplicated

[Return to text.](#)

4152 gain, reach

[Return to text.](#)

4153 make, show, prove

[Return to text.](#)

4154 further

[Return to text.](#)

4155 imagining

[Return to text.](#)

4156 the only

[Return to text.](#)

4157 hidden, kept secret

[Return to text.](#)

4158 Lucifer, the morning star

[Return to text.](#)

4159 all were

[Return to text.](#)

4160 position, place

[Return to text.](#)

4161 occupy, hold

[Return to text.](#)

4162 [*fre quent*]

[Return to text.](#)

4163 services (in the religious sense)

[Return to text.](#)

4164 foolishly

[Return to text.](#)

4165 surmised

[Return to text.](#)

4166 loss

[Return to text.](#)

4167 tested

[Return to text.](#)

4168 loosely, at ease

[Return to text.](#)

4169 protecting

[Return to text.](#)

4170 place

[Return to text.](#)

4171 of angels

[Return to text.](#)

4172 wisdom

[Return to text.](#)

4173 arsenal

[Return to text.](#)

4174 like brass

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁷⁵ deposited

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁷⁶ apparatus

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁷⁷ naturally [trisyllabic, second accented, “-eous” elided]

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁷⁸ enduring

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁷⁹ enormous

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁸⁰ desolate

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁸¹ all-creating

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁸² glowing

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁸³ inscribe/draw a circular line/boundary

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁸⁴ depth

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁸⁵ deep

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁸⁶ removed

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁸⁷ (1) earthy, gritty, sedimentary, (2) hellish

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁸⁸ created

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁸⁹ collected and compacted

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁹⁰ separated

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁹¹ in between

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁹² spiritlike

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁹³ the fifth essence, of which substance the heavenly bodies were thought to be composed

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁹⁴ the sun

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁹⁵ tent

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁹⁶ stayed for a while, tarried

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁹⁷ gleaming

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁹⁸ blowing, sent out

[Return to text.](#)

⁴¹⁹⁹ firm or solid structure

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁰⁰ division, distribution

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁰¹ ambient, flowing around

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁰² offensive

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁰³ disorder

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁰⁴ took away

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁰⁵ [trisyllabic, second accented, “-uous” elided]

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁰⁶ disturb, disorder, derange

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁰⁷ embryo [trisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁰⁸ reserved

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁰⁹ uselessly, pointless

[Return to text.](#)

4210 fertilizing

[Return to text.](#)

4211 fluids, essences

[Return to text.](#)

4212 stirred

[Return to text.](#)

4213 generative

[Return to text.](#)

4214 swelling, bulging

[Return to text.](#)

4215 the waters

[Return to text.](#)

4216 great speed

[Return to text.](#)

4217 rolled up

[Return to text.](#)

4218 collecting

[Return to text.](#)

4219 beds, lines

[Return to text.](#)

4220 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

4221 rushing [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

4222 force of movement

[Return to text.](#)

4223 flowing back

[Return to text.](#)

4224 whether, either

[Return to text.](#)

4225 winding

[Return to text.](#)

4226 waterlogged

[Return to text.](#)

4227 comfortable

[Return to text.](#)

4228 current

[Return to text.](#)

4229 “He called the dry land ‘earth’”

[Return to text.](#)

4230 green

[Return to text.](#)

4231 formed

[Return to text.](#)

4232 grainlike

[Return to text.](#)

4233 crenellated, having battlements

[Return to text.](#)

4234 entangled, entwined

[Return to text.](#)

4235 budded

[Return to text.](#)

4236 groups of trees/shrubs

[Return to text.](#)

4237 along

[Return to text.](#)

4238 visit, habituate

[Return to text.](#)

4239 alternately

[Return to text.](#)

4240 mutation, sequence

[Return to text.](#)

4241 not luminous

[Return to text.](#)

4242 at first

[Return to text.](#)

4243 of globular shape

[Return to text.](#)

4244 residence

[Return to text.](#)

4245 going, resorting

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁴⁶ Venus

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁴⁷ Galileo discovered that Venus, like the moon, had phases (then commonly spoken of as “horns”)

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁴⁸ extraction, infusion, absorption

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁴⁹ private property

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁵⁰ with diminution seen = seen with lessened light

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁵¹ ruler, governor, controller

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁵² clothed, vested

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁵³ glad

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁵⁴ east-west course

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁵⁵ flowing forces

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁵⁶ horizontal

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁵⁷ the sun’s

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁵⁸ position

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁵⁹ divided, separate

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁶⁰ decorating

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁶¹ channels, inlets

[Return to text.](#)

⁴²⁶² smaller fish

[Return to text.](#)

4263 schools

[Return to text.](#)

4264 form a mass/mound in

[Return to text.](#)

4265 frolicking

[Return to text.](#)

4266 sprinkled, flecked

[Return to text.](#)

4267 look for

[Return to text.](#)

4268 watch for

[Return to text.](#)

4269 smooth water

[Return to text.](#)

4270 striped

[Return to text.](#)

4271 rolling, surging

[Return to text.](#)

4272 ungraceful

[Return to text.](#)

4273 disturb violently [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

4274 lukewarm

[Return to text.](#)

4275 marshes

[Return to text.](#)

4276 natural

[Return to text.](#)

4277 downy, unfledged

[Return to text.](#)

4278 maturely feathered

[Return to text.](#)

4279 collect

[Return to text.](#)

4280 full-grown feathers

[Return to text.](#)

4281 high

[Return to text.](#)

4282 harsh birdcalls

[Return to text.](#)

4283 looked down on

[Return to text.](#)

4284 in visual survey from the ground, the mass of birds resembles a cloud

[Return to text.](#)

4285 i.e., of the sky

[Return to text.](#)

4286 arranged

[Return to text.](#)

4287 a pattern

[Return to text.](#)

4288 cleave, drive (as per their wedgelike, triangular formation)

[Return to text.](#)

4289 understanding

[Return to text.](#)

4290 reciprocal: those behind, it was said, rested their heads on those in front

[Return to text.](#)

4291 moves gently, undulates

[Return to text.](#)

4292 made a cheerful place of

[Return to text.](#)

4293 evening

[Return to text.](#)

4294 grave, impressive

[Return to text.](#)

4295 songs

[Return to text.](#)

4296 spread out, one after the other

[Return to text.](#)

4297 wet spot, wetness

[Return to text.](#)

4298 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

4299 trumpetlike call [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

4300 the peacock

[Return to text.](#)

4301 filled

[Return to text.](#)

4302 proclaimed, honored

[Return to text.](#)

4303 (1) birdsong [if a noun], or (2) morning [if an adjective modifying “harps”]

[Return to text.](#)

4304 of her sort/kind/species

[Return to text.](#)

4305 brought forth

[Return to text.](#)

4306 dwells

[Return to text.](#)

4307 brushwood

[Return to text.](#)

4308 the wild beasts of the wood

[Return to text.](#)

4309 cattle

[Return to text.](#)

4310 come into being

[Return to text.](#)

4311 earth

[Return to text.](#)

4312 rearing

[Return to text.](#)

4313 brindled, streaked

[Return to text.](#)

4314 lynx

[Return to text.](#)

4315 leopard

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³¹⁶ see Job 40:15–24

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³¹⁷ like

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³¹⁸ hesitating

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³¹⁹ [*between*]

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³²⁰ hippo = horse, potamus = of the river: Milton here translates the Greek

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³²¹ flexible

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³²² tails

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³²³ parts of the body

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³²⁴ finished, perfect

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³²⁵ marking with stripes

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³²⁶ tracks

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³²⁷ very small creatures

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³²⁸ size

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³²⁹ enwrapped

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³³⁰ [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³³¹ ant

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³³² crowded [popular?]

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³³³ most artful, trickiest

[Return to text.](#)

4334 frightful, terrorizing

[Return to text.](#)

4335 hurtful

[Return to text.](#)

4336 supremely, perfected

[Return to text.](#)

4337 goal, purpose

[Return to text.](#)

4338 face down

[Return to text.](#)

4339 savage

[Return to text.](#)

4340 holy feelings

[Return to text.](#)

4341 face

[Return to text.](#)

4342 noble

[Return to text.](#)

4343 be harmonious with, answer to

[Return to text.](#)

4344 likeness

[Return to text.](#)

4345 men

[Return to text.](#)

4346 exact [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

4347 breeding, generation

[Return to text.](#)

4348 control, cultivate

[Return to text.](#)

4349 differentiated, distinguishable

[Return to text.](#)

4350 die-est

[Return to text.](#)

4351 fulfilling

[Return to text.](#)

4352 [the syntax here is uncertain, though the intended meaning is not]

[Return to text.](#)

4353 procession

[Return to text.](#)

4354 heavenly, exalted

[Return to text.](#)

4355 procession

[Return to text.](#)

4356 belt, girdle

[Return to text.](#)

4357 abided

[Return to text.](#)

4358 the stop on a stringed instrument

[Return to text.](#)

4359 produced

[Return to text.](#)

4360 that which is created

[Return to text.](#)

4361 injure

[Return to text.](#)

4362 limit

[Return to text.](#)

4363 the waters above the firmament

[Return to text.](#)

4364 boundless, immeasurable: the reference is to the new world, not to the
hyaline

[Return to text.](#)

4365 [first syllable accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4366 lower

[Return to text.](#)

4367 surrounded

[Return to text.](#)

4368 raised

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁶⁹ visible state, external appearance

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁷⁰ so that

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁷¹ need

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁷² under a spell: i.e., “charm,” as in magic spells

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁷³ immobile

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁷⁴ (1) teller of history, (2) teller of stories

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁷⁵ amply, fully

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁷⁶ inscrutable

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁷⁷ solving

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁷⁸ structure, fabric

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁷⁹ indicates

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁸⁰ daily

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁸¹ provide, supply

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁸² dark (“opaque”)

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁸³ like a point, a dot

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁸⁴ viewing

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁸⁵ wonder

[Return to text.](#)

⁴³⁸⁶ constant, unceasing

[Return to text.](#)

4387 revolving, turning

[Return to text.](#)

4388 inactive

[Return to text.](#)

4389 ingenuity, craft, artifice

[Return to text.](#)

4390 those more

[Return to text.](#)

4391 immeasurable

[Return to text.](#)

4392 caused

[Return to text.](#)

4393 remote from understanding, recondite

[Return to text.](#)

4394 from (“out of”)

[Return to text.](#)

4395 humility

[Return to text.](#)

4396 won over

[Return to text.](#)

4397 whoever

[Return to text.](#)

4398 examine, inspect

[Return to text.](#)

4399 care

[Return to text.](#)

4400 held back, kept apart

[Return to text.](#)

4401 telling

[Return to text.](#)

4402 hearer, listener

[Return to text.](#)

4403 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

4404 pleasing

[Return to text.](#)

4405 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

4406 procession

[Return to text.](#)

4407 mild of manner

[Return to text.](#)

4408 find out

[Return to text.](#)

4409 matters, signifies

[Return to text.](#)

4410 whether or not

[Return to text.](#)

4411 calculate, estimate

[Return to text.](#)

4412 analyze, scrutinize, examine carefully

[Return to text.](#)

4413 wonder, marvel at

[Return to text.](#)

4414 desire, wish

[Return to text.](#)

4415 clever, ingenious

[Return to text.](#)

4416 mistaken

[Return to text.](#)

4417 portray

[Return to text.](#)

4418 express

[Return to text.](#)

4419 preserve, keep

[Return to text.](#)

4420 likelihood

[Return to text.](#)

4421 encircle

[Return to text.](#)

4422 at the center

[Return to text.](#)

4423 not centrally placed

[Return to text.](#)

4424 recurrent sequence

[Return to text.](#)

4425 small circle, with its center on the circumference of another circle

[Return to text.](#)

4426 circle

[Return to text.](#)

4427 you who

[Return to text.](#)

4428 implies

[Return to text.](#)

4429 gleaming, bright

[Return to text.](#)

4430 power

[Return to text.](#)

4431 ineffective

[Return to text.](#)

4432 otherwise

[Return to text.](#)

4433 active force

[Return to text.](#)

4434 in service/office

[Return to text.](#)

4435 part

[Return to text.](#)

4436 [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4437 allege, say

[Return to text.](#)

4438 conceding (arguendo: for the purposes of argument)

[Return to text.](#)

4439 said

[Return to text.](#)

4440 confirm, ratify

[Return to text.](#)

4441 the sun's

[Return to text.](#)

4442 magnetic

[Return to text.](#)

4443 power

[Return to text.](#)

4444 continually moving forward/larger

[Return to text.](#)

4445 continually moving backward/smaller

[Return to text.](#)

4446 six planets

[Return to text.](#)

4447 transverse, crossways

[Return to text.](#)

4448 angles

[Return to text.](#)

4449 the tenth and outermost sphere, the primum mobile, which kept the other spheres in motion

[Return to text.](#)

4450 [trissyllabic, second accented, "-ible" elided]

[Return to text.](#)

4451 zealous

[Return to text.](#)

4452 reaches, meets

[Return to text.](#)

4453 the sun's

[Return to text.](#)

4454 the earth

[Return to text.](#)

4455 clear, transparent

[Return to text.](#)

4456 the moon

[Return to text.](#)

4457 the moon

[Return to text.](#)

4458 assigned, destined

[Return to text.](#)

4459 male light = original, female light = reflected

[Return to text.](#)

4460 space

[Return to text.](#)

4461 deserted [de *sert*]

[Return to text.](#)

4462 [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4463 habitable earth [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4464 obvious to dispute = obviously disputable

[Return to text.](#)

4465 harmless

[Return to text.](#)

4466 evenly

[Return to text.](#)

4467 disturb, make anxious

[Return to text.](#)

4468 humbly

[Return to text.](#)

4469 manner

[Return to text.](#)

4470 circumstances (i.e., rich or poor)

[Return to text.](#)

4471 a point on some scale of measurement

[Return to text.](#)

4472 complications

[Return to text.](#)

4473 afflict, trouble

[Return to text.](#)

4474 at large = fully, amply

[Return to text.](#)

4475 abstruse

[Return to text.](#)

4476 smoke, vapor

[Return to text.](#)

4477 foolish

[Return to text.](#)

4478 irrelevance, presumption

[Return to text.](#)

4479 point, elevation

[Return to text.](#)

4480 descend to

[Return to text.](#)

4481 perhaps

[Return to text.](#)

4482 permission [bisyllabic: *suffrance*]

[Return to text.](#)

4483 usual, customary, habitual

[Return to text.](#)

4484 foolish

[Return to text.](#)

4485 after

[Return to text.](#)

4486 meal, food

[Return to text.](#)

4487 [bisyllabic: *satiate*]

[Return to text.](#)

4488 permeated, inspired

[Return to text.](#)

4489 [trisyllabic, second accented: *satiety*]

[Return to text.](#)

4490 courteous, indulgent

[Return to text.](#)

4491 silent

[Return to text.](#)

4492 proposition

[Return to text.](#)

4493 is in order/form/a structure

[Return to text.](#)

4494 it happened

[Return to text.](#)

4495 unfamiliar, strange [*uncouth*]

[Return to text.](#)

4496 dark, hidden

[Return to text.](#)

4497 a journey

[Return to text.](#)

4498 arranged, formed

[Return to text.](#)

4499 military formation

[Return to text.](#)

4500 breaking out

[Return to text.](#)

4501 accustom

[Return to text.](#)

4502 [trisyllabic, second accented, “-ience” elided]

[Return to text.](#)

4503 barricaded

[Return to text.](#)

4504 ordered, commanded

[Return to text.](#)

4505 narration

[Return to text.](#)

4506 listen

[Return to text.](#)

4507 led, prevailed upon

[Return to text.](#)

4508 herbage, grass

[Return to text.](#)

4509 mild, soft

[Return to text.](#)

4510 steaming

[Return to text.](#)

4511 gliding flow

[Return to text.](#)

4512 near, alongside

[Return to text.](#)

4513 moved, walked

[Return to text.](#)

4514 illuminated (literally: by sunlight)

[Return to text.](#)

4515 weight

[Return to text.](#)

4516 soporific, sleepy

[Return to text.](#)

4517 manifestation

[Return to text.](#)

4518 dwelling, habitation

[Return to text.](#)

4519 needs, requires

[Return to text.](#)

4520 [bisyllabic, first accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4521 vividly, lifelike

[Return to text.](#)

4522 depicted

[Return to text.](#)

4523 cultivate

[Return to text.](#)

4524 famine, shortage

[Return to text.](#)

4525 effect, power

[Return to text.](#)

4526 guarantee

[Return to text.](#)

4527 close by, near

[Return to text.](#)

4528 [five syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4529 look, countenance

[Return to text.](#)

4530 discourse

[Return to text.](#)

4531 lands, territory

[Return to text.](#)

4532 oath/acknowledgment of loyalty

[Return to text.](#)

4533 breathe

[Return to text.](#)

4534 some (the land-bound animals)

[Return to text.](#)

4535 whatever please

[Return to text.](#)

4536 invested, endowed

[Return to text.](#)

4537 understanding

[Return to text.](#)

4538 pressed forward, presumptuously

[Return to text.](#)

4539 filled, fully stocked

[Return to text.](#)

4540 exercise, frolic

[Return to text.](#)

4541 diversion, entertainment

[Return to text.](#)

4542 wield, sustain

[Return to text.](#)

4543 intercessory prayer

[Return to text.](#)

4544 favorably inclined

[Return to text.](#)

4545 be suitable

[Return to text.](#)

4546 eager, ardent

[Return to text.](#)

4547 lacking force/energy

[Return to text.](#)

4548 wearisome, annoying, disagreeable

[Return to text.](#)

4549 mutually, to each

[Return to text.](#)

4550 share

[Return to text.](#)

4551 companion, partner

[Return to text.](#)

4552 suitably

[Return to text.](#)

4553 live

[Return to text.](#)

4554 closely reasoned, discriminating

[Return to text.](#)

4555 communion

[Return to text.](#)

4556 discourse, interchange of thoughts and words

[Return to text.](#)

4557 comfort, alleviate, soothe

[Return to text.](#)

4558 complete, perfect

[Return to text.](#)

4559 display, prove

[Return to text.](#)

4560 imperfection in being single/solitary

[Return to text.](#)

4561 parallel

[Return to text.](#)

4562 friendship

[Return to text.](#)

4563 seclusion, mysteriousness

[Return to text.](#)

4564 birds, beasts, fish, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

4565 pleasure

[Return to text.](#)

4566 test

[Return to text.](#)

4567 unsuitable

[Return to text.](#)

4568 always

[Return to text.](#)

4569 adduced, proposed

[Return to text.](#)

4570 remained, endured

[Return to text.](#)

4571 dialogue

[Return to text.](#)

4572 lofty

[Return to text.](#)

4573 surpasses, is superior to

[Return to text.](#)

4574 restoration

[Return to text.](#)

4575 held apart, separated

[Return to text.](#)

4576 was able to see

[Return to text.](#)

4577 restorative

[Return to text.](#)

4578 inferior, poor

[Return to text.](#)

4579 instilled, insinuated

[Return to text.](#)

4580 manner, appearance

[Return to text.](#)

4581 in order to

[Return to text.](#)

4582 renounce

[Return to text.](#)

4583 lovable

[Return to text.](#)

4584 desist

[Return to text.](#)

4585 change

[Return to text.](#)

4586 “given (by You) grudgingly/with reluctance”

[Return to text.](#)

4587 drawn forth, obtained

[Return to text.](#)

4588 brought forth, produced, created

[Return to text.](#)

4589 knowledge

[Return to text.](#)

4590 open, bold

[Return to text.](#)

4591 forward

[Return to text.](#)

4592 reserved

[Return to text.](#)

4593 worked

[Return to text.](#)

4594 dutiful, compliant

[Return to text.](#)

4595 confirmed

[Return to text.](#)

4596 urged

[Return to text.](#)

4597 statement/speech/discourse

[Return to text.](#)

4598 most choice

[Return to text.](#)

4599 joyous feeling

[Return to text.](#)

4600 aromatic

[Return to text.](#)

4601 frolicking, gamboling

[Return to text.](#)

4602 nightingale

[Return to text.](#)

4603 a marriage poem

[Return to text.](#)

4604 Venus

[Return to text.](#)

4605 strong, passionate

[Return to text.](#)

4606 enraptured

[Return to text.](#)

4607 I touch

[Return to text.](#)

4608 agitation

[Return to text.](#)

4609 either

[Return to text.](#)

4610 support

[Return to text.](#)

4611 removing

[Return to text.](#)

4612 highly finished

[Return to text.](#)

4613 principal goal

[Return to text.](#)

4614 which most excel = which are by and large those that are superior

[Return to text.](#)

4615 perfect

[Return to text.](#)

4616 reduced, lowered

[Return to text.](#)

4617 loosens, goes slack

[Return to text.](#)

4618 shamed

[Return to text.](#)

4619 appears

[Return to text.](#)

4620 as if she were

[Return to text.](#)

4621 created

[Return to text.](#)

4622 incidentally

[Return to text.](#)

4623 finish, complete

[Return to text.](#)

4624 like

[Return to text.](#)

4625 distrusting, lacking confidence in

[Return to text.](#)

4626 discard, reject, send away

[Return to text.](#)

4627 ascribing, assigning

[Return to text.](#)

4628 i.e., self-esteem

[Return to text.](#)

4629 master

[Return to text.](#)

4630 appearances

[Return to text.](#)

4631 worthy of/commanding profound respect

[Return to text.](#)

4632 always

[Return to text.](#)

4633 procreative

[Return to text.](#)

4634 judge, consider

[Return to text.](#)

4635 full of divine grace

[Return to text.](#)

4636 acts of decorum, proprieties

[Return to text.](#)

4637 pleasing

[Return to text.](#)

4638 [verb, second syllable accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4639 frustrated, defeated

[Return to text.](#)

4640 statements, arguments

[Return to text.](#)

4641 lines 609–10: “I who deal with all sorts of arguments, presented to me (my mind) by my bodily senses....

[Return to text.](#)

4642 emitted radiance

[Return to text.](#)

4643 having virtues/powers

[Return to text.](#)

4644 in eminence = in eminent measure (i.e., even more)

[Return to text.](#)

4645 exclusionary, excluding

[Return to text.](#)

4646 restricting, limited

[Return to text.](#)

4647 (1) conducting way, passage, (2) management, skill, artifice

[Return to text.](#)

4648 Cape Verde Islands, in the Atlantic off northwestern Africa

[Return to text.](#)

4649 in the west

[Return to text.](#)

4650 first of all = primarily

[Return to text.](#)

4651 allow, permit, consent to

[Return to text.](#)

4652 happiness, welfare

[Return to text.](#)

4653 free choice

[Return to text.](#)

4654 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

4655 courteous, noble

[Return to text.](#)

4656 always

[Return to text.](#)

4657 circled around

[Return to text.](#)

4658 i.e., while the serpent is sleeping

[Return to text.](#)

4659 among

[Return to text.](#)

4660 attack, assault, try to seduce

[Return to text.](#)

4661 finally

[Return to text.](#)

4662 intensity, strength, ardor

[Return to text.](#)

4663 i.e., quarrel, disagree

[Return to text.](#)

4664 i.e., God or an Angel guest “sitting indulgent” with Adam, as with a friend

[Return to text.](#)

4665 familiar used = treated affably, intimately, courteously

[Return to text.](#)

4666 good-humored

[Return to text.](#)

4667 Adam

[Return to text.](#)

4668 country-style

[Return to text.](#)

4669 Adam

[Return to text.](#)

4670 pardonable

[Return to text.](#)

4671 unreprieved

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁷² (of poetry/music)

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁷³ breaking of relations

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁷⁴ estranged

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁷⁵ forerunner

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁷⁶ theme, subject

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁷⁷ fierce, hard, merciless

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁷⁸ Hector, prince of Troy

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁷⁹ Hector, in great fear, tried to escape Achilles by running away, and was caught after a chase that went three times around Troy's walls

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁸⁰ Italian king

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁸¹ Turnus' promised bride, given to Aeneas instead

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁸² betrothal (engagement) broken off

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁸³ Neptune's ire = Neptune's anger at Odysseus for killing Neptune's son, Polyphemus

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁸⁴ Juno's anger stems from (1) the beauty contest, which she did not win, and which Venus did, the judge being Aeneas' brother, Paris, and (2) the peril Aeneas poses to Carthage, a city sacred to Juno

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁸⁵ puzzled, entangled

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁸⁶ Odysseus

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁸⁷ Cytherea = Venus; Aeneas was her son

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁸⁸ appropriate [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁸⁹ from

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁹⁰ Urania, muse of epic poetry

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁹¹ condescends, vouchsafes

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁹² quietly, comfortably

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁹³ not planned out in advance

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁹⁴ i.e., taking a long time to choose his course, his subject matter, and starting late in life

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁹⁵ diligent, assiduous

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁹⁶ write about, in a literary composition

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁹⁷ theme, subject

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁹⁸ judged, considered

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁶⁹⁹ skill, knowledge

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁰⁰ analyze, anatomize

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁰¹ destruction

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁰² imaginary, not real

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁰³ knightly combat, jousting

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁷⁰⁴ equipment, furnishings

[Return to text.](#)

4705 adorned (painted)

[Return to text.](#)

4706 devices/insignia painted on shields

[Return to text.](#)

4707 ingenious, skillful

[Return to text.](#)

4708 harnesses

[Return to text.](#)

4709 the lower part of a shield

[Return to text.](#)

4710 showy, glittering

[Return to text.](#)

4711 magnificent, rich

[Return to text.](#)

4712 properly ordered

[Return to text.](#)

4713 attendants

[Return to text.](#)

4714 stewards

[Return to text.](#)

4715 clever trickery/devices

[Return to text.](#)

4716 duty, service

[Return to text.](#)

4717 low

[Return to text.](#)

4718 inspire

[Return to text.](#)

4719 i.e., “heroic poem”

[Return to text.](#)

4720 flight

[Return to text.](#)

4721 held/forced down

[Return to text.](#)

4722 evening star

[Return to text.](#)

4723 duty, function

[Return to text.](#)

4724 mediator

[Return to text.](#)

4725 not long before

[Return to text.](#)

4726 enhanced, advanced, made better

[Return to text.](#)

4727 despite

[Return to text.](#)

4728 come about, happen

[Return to text.](#)

4729 circling

[Return to text.](#)

4730 had observed

[Return to text.](#)

4731 traveled

[Return to text.](#)

4732 equatorial

[Return to text.](#)

4733 chariot

[Return to text.](#)

4734 great circle

[Return to text.](#)

4735 coast averse = side opposite

[Return to text.](#)

4736 that which does not arouse suspicion

[Return to text.](#)

4737 path

[Return to text.](#)

4738 Mesopotamian river, which watered Eden

[Return to text.](#)

4739 profound depth in a body of water

[Return to text.](#)

4740 passing swiftly/suddenly

[Return to text.](#)

4741 enwrapped

[Return to text.](#)

4742 the Black Sea

[Return to text.](#)

4743 the Sea of Azov (a lake, in fact)

[Return to text.](#)

4744 flowing into the Arctic Sea

[Return to text.](#)

4745 Syrian river

[Return to text.](#)

4746 Isthmus of Panama, northeastern (Atlantic) side

[Return to text.](#)

4747 sphere, globe

[Return to text.](#)

4748 close, careful

[Return to text.](#)

4749 judgment, opinion

[Return to text.](#)

4750 urchin, little devil/demon

[Return to text.](#)

4751 tricks

[Return to text.](#)

4752 note, notice

[Return to text.](#)

4753 create

[Return to text.](#)

4754 mental capacity

[Return to text.](#)

4755 complaints

[Return to text.](#)

4756 correcting

[Return to text.](#)

4757 dutiful

[Return to text.](#)

4758 earth

[Return to text.](#)

4759 power

[Return to text.](#)

4760 graded, degrees of

[Return to text.](#)

4761 succession

[Return to text.](#)

4762 enemies

[Return to text.](#)

4763 destruction, ruin, woe

[Return to text.](#)

4764 God

[Return to text.](#)

4765 come back

[Return to text.](#)

4766 i.e., man

[Return to text.](#)

4767 happiness, welfare

[Return to text.](#)

4768 extend

[Return to text.](#)

4769 harmed, spoiled

[Return to text.](#)

4770 place

[Return to text.](#)

4771 an origin

[Return to text.](#)

4772 attendants

[Return to text.](#)

4773 hidden, secret

[Return to text.](#)

4774 peer

[Return to text.](#)

4775 thicket

[Return to text.](#)

4776 chance, fortune

[Return to text.](#)

4777 mazy folds = mazelike object, bent/folded

[Return to text.](#)

4778 forcibly compressed

[Return to text.](#)

4779 convert into flesh

[Return to text.](#)

4780 degrade to the level of an animal

[Return to text.](#)

4781 he whom

[Return to text.](#)

4782 whoever

[Return to text.](#)

4783 go down

[Return to text.](#)

4784 liable, subject

[Return to text.](#)

4785 care

[Return to text.](#)

4786 descend, fall

[Return to text.](#)

4787 insult, contempt

[Return to text.](#)

4788 continued

[Return to text.](#)

4789 circle

[Return to text.](#)

4790 frightful, detestable

[Return to text.](#)

4791 wild beast's lair

[Return to text.](#)

4792 harmful

[Return to text.](#)

4793 the serpent's

[Return to text.](#)

4794 secretly

[Return to text.](#)

4795 perfume

[Return to text.](#)

4796 (1) pleasing, (2) thankful

[Return to text.](#)

4797 lacking

[Return to text.](#)

4798 they partake, share in

[Return to text.](#)

4799 discuss

[Return to text.](#)

4800 work at, continue

[Return to text.](#)

4801 getting, doing

[Return to text.](#)

4802 widely, extensively

[Return to text.](#)

4803 continually

[Return to text.](#)

4804 make straight/right

[Return to text.](#)

4805 prescribed authoritatively

[Return to text.](#)

4806 luxuriant

[Return to text.](#)

4807 rebellious, unmanageable

[Return to text.](#)

4808 mocks us

[Return to text.](#)

4809 inclining

[Return to text.](#)

4810 consider

[Return to text.](#)

4811 bursting forth

[Return to text.](#)

4812 set right

[Return to text.](#)

4813 interrupts, stops

[Return to text.](#)

4814 proposed

[Return to text.](#)

4815 purpose

[Return to text.](#)

4816 tedious

[Return to text.](#)

4817 shady paths

[Return to text.](#)

4818 assent

[Return to text.](#)

4819 withdrawal

[Return to text.](#)

4820 whether

[Return to text.](#)

4821 most appropriately

[Return to text.](#)

4822 pure, innocent, unstained

[Return to text.](#)

4823 grave, sober

[Return to text.](#)

4824 steadiness, constancy

[Return to text.](#)

4825 intact, free, untouched

[Return to text.](#)

4826 wanting confidence

[Return to text.](#)

4827 bespatters

[Return to text.](#)

4828 despise

[Return to text.](#)

4829 increase

[Return to text.](#)

4830 overpowered

[Return to text.](#)

4831 bring to bear

[Return to text.](#)

4832 similar, equivalent

[Return to text.](#)

4833 test, endeavor, effort

[Return to text.](#)

4834 attached to his home

[Return to text.](#)

4835 [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4836 made narrower

[Return to text.](#)

4837 alone

[Return to text.](#)

4838 equivalent, equal

[Return to text.](#)

4839 insults, confronts

[Return to text.](#)

4840 judgment, estimate

[Return to text.](#)

4841 forehead, face

[Return to text.](#)

4842 allegation, suspicion

[Return to text.](#)

4843 imagine, fancy

[Return to text.](#)

4844 certain, safe

[Return to text.](#)

4845 to either

[Return to text.](#)

4846 intensely earnest

[Return to text.](#)

4847 man's

[Return to text.](#)

4848 alert

[Return to text.](#)

4849 prescribe, direct

[Return to text.](#)

4850 prescribes

[Return to text.](#)

4851 (1) attend to, take care of, (2) remind

[Return to text.](#)

4852 remain, exist

[Return to text.](#)

4853 outwardly respectable but in fact not

[Return to text.](#)

4854 bribed

[Return to text.](#)

4855 reason

[Return to text.](#)

4856 if you would

[Return to text.](#)

4857 attest, demonstrate

[Return to text.](#)

4858 more certain/confident

[Return to text.](#)

4859 though still

[Return to text.](#)

4860 i.e., Eve has the last word

[Return to text.](#)

4861 mentioned, noticed in passing

[Return to text.](#)

4862 inclined, determined

[Return to text.](#)

4863 a mountain nymph

[Return to text.](#)

4864 a tree nymph

[Return to text.](#)

4865 Diana's

[Return to text.](#)

4866 deportment, manner

[Return to text.](#)

4867 skill [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

4868 coarse, inelegant

[Return to text.](#)

4869 innocent

[Return to text.](#)

4870 goddess of flocks and herds

[Return to text.](#)

4871 goddess of fruit

[Return to text.](#)

4872 god of the orchards and fruit, husband of Pomona

[Return to text.](#)

4873 Ceres/Demeter, goddess of Nature's generative power

[Return to text.](#)

4874 not maternal/the mother of

[Return to text.](#)

4875 injunction

[Return to text.](#)

4876 promised, pledged

[Return to text.](#)

4877 ask him to come to

[Return to text.](#)

4878 luckless, unfortunate

[Return to text.](#)

4879 anticipated

[Return to text.](#)

4880 wicked, wrong, stubborn

[Return to text.](#)

4881 bitter grudge

[Return to text.](#)

4882 planting

[Return to text.](#)

4883 chance, luck, fortune

[Return to text.](#)

4884 cover, overhang, shelter

[Return to text.](#)

4885 gliding

[Return to text.](#)

4886 shrubbery

[Return to text.](#)

4887 work

[Return to text.](#)

4888 imaginary, fabled

[Return to text.](#)

4889 whether

[Return to text.](#)

4890 for whom, and in whose honor, “gardens of Adonis” were planted

[Return to text.](#)

4891 king of the Phaeacians, in Scheria

[Return to text.](#)

4892 Odysseus

[Return to text.](#)

4893 mythical, fabled

[Return to text.](#)

4894 wise

[Return to text.](#)

4895 Solomon

[Return to text.](#)

4896 amorous play

[Return to text.](#)

4897 see 1 Kings 3:1; Solomon’s wife is not named

[Return to text.](#)

4898 marveled at

[Return to text.](#)

4899 confined, shut up

[Return to text.](#)

4900 injure, trouble

[Return to text.](#)

4901 tedded grass = grass spread out for drying

[Return to text.](#)

4902 cattle

[Return to text.](#)

4903 place where milk and cream are stored, butter and cheese are made

[Return to text.](#)

4904 for her = on her account

[Return to text.](#)

4905 plot

[Return to text.](#)

4906 hidden place

[Return to text.](#)

4907 restrained/suppressed/controlled by awe

[Return to text.](#)

4908 pillage, robbery [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

4909 deprived, robbed

[Return to text.](#)

4910 interval

[Return to text.](#)

4911 withdrawn, absent in mind

[Return to text.](#)

4912 dully, stupefiedly

[Return to text.](#)

4913 (1) in compensation, (2) joyously, welcoming

[Return to text.](#)

4914 stirs, rouses

[Return to text.](#)

4915 diverge/depart from

[Return to text.](#)

4916 opportunity

[Return to text.](#)

4917 convenient

[Return to text.](#)

4918 mind

[Return to text.](#)

4919 exalted, eminent

[Return to text.](#)

4920 unformidable, to be dreaded

[Return to text.](#)

4921 if not

[Return to text.](#)

4922 equaled

[Return to text.](#)

4923 turn

[Return to text.](#)

4924 lodger

[Return to text.](#)

4925 directed

[Return to text.](#)

4926 zigzag, wavy

[Return to text.](#)

4927 fiery red

[Return to text.](#)

4928 spirals? (spires = stems, stalks)

[Return to text.](#)

4929 moved gently

[Return to text.](#)

4930 copious

[Return to text.](#)

4931 transformed into serpents

[Return to text.](#)

4932 Hermione/Harmonia = daughter of Ares/Mars and Aphrodite/Venus;
Cadmus' wife [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4933 founder and king of Thebes; he and his wife were both turned into
snakes by Zeus

[Return to text.](#)

4934 Aesculapius, god of healing, portrayed as a serpent at his temple in
Epidauros, in Argos, Greece

[Return to text.](#)

4935 Ammonian Jove = Egyptian/African Jove, supposed to be the
biological father of Alexander the Great, having slept with Olympias, wife
of Philip of Macedonia, in the form of a serpent

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹³⁶ Capitoline (Jove) = Roman Jove, supposed to have fathered Scipio Africanus

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹³⁷ eminence

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹³⁸ track

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹³⁹ at an angle, indirect

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁴⁰ a way to approach [second syllable accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁴¹ cape, promontory

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁴² crooked, twisting

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁴³ extravagant

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁴⁴ ring, band, circle

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁴⁵ around

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁴⁶ obedient [bisyllabic, first accented, “-eous” elided]

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁴⁷ herd disguised = Odysseus/Ulysses’ men, turned by Circe into swine

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁴⁸ like an organ or other similar instrument

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁴⁹ thrust, force

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁵⁰ unrivaled

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁵¹ insatiable

[Return to text.](#)

⁴⁹⁵² majestic, commanding

[Return to text.](#)

4953 secluded

[Return to text.](#)

4954 ecstasy

[Return to text.](#)

4955 deficient

[Return to text.](#)

4956 veiled with specious comments

[Return to text.](#)

4957 prelude, preface, introduction

[Return to text.](#)

4958 uttered, gave forth

[Return to text.](#)

4959 (1) hesitate, (2) disagree about

[Return to text.](#)

4960 capable of speech

[Return to text.](#)

4961 from being

[Return to text.](#)

4962 a marvel, extraordinary event

[Return to text.](#)

4963 despicable

[Return to text.](#)

4964 pleasing

[Return to text.](#)

4965 snakes were thought to improve their eyesight by rubbing their eyes on fennel

[Return to text.](#)

4966 snakes were reputed to suck milk from sheep and goats

[Return to text.](#)

4967 are engaged in

[Return to text.](#)

4968 tempting, charming

[Return to text.](#)

4969 quickly

[Return to text.](#)

4970 feeding ground

[Return to text.](#)

4971 was able to

[Return to text.](#)

4972 lacked

[Return to text.](#)

4973 kept, confined

[Return to text.](#)

4974 in between

[Return to text.](#)

4975 vexatious

[Return to text.](#)

4976 mistress, woman of rank and power

[Return to text.](#)

4977 having a Spirit in his body

[Return to text.](#)

4978 power, quality

[Return to text.](#)

4979 demonstrated, tested, learned about

[Return to text.](#)

4980 due number

[Return to text.](#)

4981 that which is born of Nature, Nature's offspring

[Return to text.](#)

4982 a flat = level ground

[Return to text.](#)

4983 close, near

[Return to text.](#)

4984 guidance [second syllable accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4985 composed, made [second syllable accented]

[Return to text.](#)

4986 oily

[Return to text.](#)

4987 envelops

[Return to text.](#)

4988 a shaking movement

[Return to text.](#)

4989 accompanies

[Return to text.](#)

4990 i.e., the order forbidding that its fruit be eaten

[Return to text.](#)

4991 useless, wasted

[Return to text.](#)

4992 credibility

[Return to text.](#)

4993 offspring

[Return to text.](#)

4994 role

[Return to text.](#)

4995 as if

[Return to text.](#)

4996 rises and falls [bisyllabic?]

[Return to text.](#)

4997 proper, decorous

[Return to text.](#)

4998 actions

[Return to text.](#)

4999 [raised *as of some great matter to begin*]

[Return to text.](#)

5000 standing up, rising (to speak)

[Return to text.](#)

5001 of right = rightful

[Return to text.](#)

5002 knowledge

[Return to text.](#)

5003 natural forces/substances that are productive of active phenomena

[Return to text.](#)

5004 no matter how

[Return to text.](#)

5005 God

[Return to text.](#)

5006 venturing

[Return to text.](#)

5007 kindle

[Return to text.](#)

5008 uttered denunciations against

[Return to text.](#)

5009 fitting, suitable, proper

[Return to text.](#)

5010 sharing

[Return to text.](#)

5011 they employ/make use of

[Return to text.](#)

5012 the gods

[Return to text.](#)

5013 reasons [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

5014 signify

[Return to text.](#)

5015 filled

[Return to text.](#)

5016 all by itself

[Return to text.](#)

5017 impregnated

[Return to text.](#)

5018 favorably disposed, inclining

[Return to text.](#)

5019 incited

[Return to text.](#)

5020 test, taste

[Return to text.](#)

5021 oral utterance

[Return to text.](#)

5022 lack, need

[Return to text.](#)

5023 plain language/terms

[Return to text.](#)

5024 not rational

[Return to text.](#)

5025 not to be suspected

[Return to text.](#)

5026 [pronounced, in British English both then and now, /et/]

[Return to text.](#)

5027 criminal

[Return to text.](#)

5028 noticed, paid attention to

[Return to text.](#)

5029 convivial

[Return to text.](#)

5030 influence, power, effect

[Return to text.](#)

5031 wisdom, understanding

[Return to text.](#)

5032 hidden

[Return to text.](#)

5033 defamed

[Return to text.](#)

5034 left, allowed to

[Return to text.](#)

5035 purpose

[Return to text.](#)

5036 fed

[Return to text.](#)

5037 concealed

[Return to text.](#)

5038 way

[Return to text.](#)

5039 share

[Return to text.](#)

5040 is lacking

[Return to text.](#)

5041 follow

[Return to text.](#)

5042 consider

[Return to text.](#)

5043 knowledge-containing

[Return to text.](#)

5044 divining, prefiguring

[Return to text.](#)

5045 wrongdoing

[Return to text.](#)

5046 action

[Return to text.](#)

5047 perceived, was conscious of

[Return to text.](#)

5048 preface

[Return to text.](#)

5049 soft, coaxing

[Return to text.](#)

5050 at will = ready

[Return to text.](#)

5051 deprived of

[Return to text.](#)

5052 endowed, supplied, invested

[Return to text.](#)

5053 to admiration = marvelously

[Return to text.](#)

5054 to be as he has said they would be

[Return to text.](#)

5055 amplified, expanded

[Return to text.](#)

5056 to the extent that, if

[Return to text.](#)

5057 a share

[Return to text.](#)

5058 fortune, destiny

[Return to text.](#)

5059 cheerful, gay

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰⁶⁰ intoxication, derangement

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰⁶¹ stunned, astonished

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁰⁶² prostrate

[Return to text.](#)

5063 went slack

[Return to text.](#)

5064 fell off, scattered

[Return to text.](#)

5065 doomed

[Return to text.](#)

5066 company

[Return to text.](#)

5067 abandoned, forsaken, desolate, lost

[Return to text.](#)

5068 never be

[Return to text.](#)

5069 condition, manner of existing

[Return to text.](#)

5070 strengthened, soothed

[Return to text.](#)

5071 criminal, infamous

[Return to text.](#)

5072 already tasted

[Return to text.](#)

5073 polluted

[Return to text.](#)

5074 accessible, general, free

[Return to text.](#)

5075 unsanctified

[Return to text.](#)

5076 resolved, determined

[Return to text.](#)

5077 equivalent, equal

[Return to text.](#)

5078 accompany, attend

[Return to text.](#)

5079 powerful, convincing, unavoidable

[Return to text.](#)

5080 extremely great, surpassing excellence

[Return to text.](#)

5081 manifestation

[Return to text.](#)

5082 but short = but since I am short (have less of)

[Return to text.](#)

5083 achieve (such emulation)

[Return to text.](#)

5084 circumstance

[Return to text.](#)

5085 conspicuously [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5086 were it = were it that

[Return to text.](#)

5087 as threatened

[Return to text.](#)

5088 follow

[Return to text.](#)

5089 undergo, endure, bear, experience

[Return to text.](#)

5090 deed, action

[Return to text.](#)

5091 destructive, fatal

[Return to text.](#)

5092 recently

[Return to text.](#)

5093 influenced, won over

[Return to text.](#)

5094 foolishly

[Return to text.](#)

5095 darkened, threatened

[Return to text.](#)

5096 finishing

[Return to text.](#)

5097 primary, first

[Return to text.](#)

5098 repeat

[Return to text.](#)

5099 effect

[Return to text.](#)

5100 amorous play

[Return to text.](#)

5101 strict

[Return to text.](#)

5102 correct, delicate, graceful, polite

[Return to text.](#)

5103 which is of

[Return to text.](#)

5104 wisdom

[Return to text.](#)

5105 quality, character

[Return to text.](#)

5106 sense of taste

[Return to text.](#)

5107 sensible, wise, having sound judgment

[Return to text.](#)

5108 furnished, provided

[Return to text.](#)

5109 enjoyment of taste

[Return to text.](#)

5110 gift, kindness

[Return to text.](#)

5111 potent, powerful

[Return to text.](#)

5112 caress

[Return to text.](#)

5113 a hollow among hills

[Return to text.](#)

5114 diversion, sport, games

[Return to text.](#)

5115 amply, at length

[Return to text.](#)

5116 moist

[Return to text.](#)

5117 pressed down on

[Return to text.](#)

5118 deceitful

[Return to text.](#)

5119 genial

[Return to text.](#)

5120 unnatural

[Return to text.](#)

5121 burdened, hampered, embarrassed, clogged

[Return to text.](#)

5122 turmoil, disturbance

[Return to text.](#)

5123 rightful, proper

[Return to text.](#)

5124 quality of conforming to moral or divine law

[Return to text.](#)

5125 had gone from

[Return to text.](#)

5126 covered himself

[Return to text.](#)

5127 of the tribe of Dan

[Return to text.](#)

5128 Philistine [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5129 Samson's traitorous wife [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5130 defeated, overthrown, brought to nought

[Return to text.](#)

5131 afflicted

[Return to text.](#)

5132 customary

[Return to text.](#)

5133 lust

[Return to text.](#)

5134 evil store = an abundance of evil

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹³⁵ worst, final

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹³⁶ hidden

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹³⁷ (1) shade, (2) the foliage that produces shade

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹³⁸ God or Angels

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹³⁹ peril, danger

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁴⁰ offensive

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁴¹ most improperly

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁴² the banyan

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁴³ western India

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁴⁴ southern India

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁴⁵ shield

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁴⁶ belted

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁴⁷ belt

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁴⁸ screened, shielded, protected

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁴⁹ understanding's

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁵⁰ counsel, advice

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁵¹ both of them (Adam and Eve)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁵² power, authority, rule

[Return to text.](#)

5153 disordered

[Return to text.](#)

5154 alienated

[Return to text.](#)

5155 tone

[Return to text.](#)

5156 interrupted

[Return to text.](#)

5157 begged earnestly, supplicated

[Return to text.](#)

5158 robbed, stripped

[Return to text.](#)

5159 own

[Return to text.](#)

5160 quickly

[Return to text.](#)

5161 easily persuaded

[Return to text.](#)

5162 oppose, contradict

[Return to text.](#)

5163 clearly, distinctly, openly

[Return to text.](#)

5164 send away

[Return to text.](#)

5165 as unchangeable

[Return to text.](#)

5166 enjoyed

[Return to text.](#)

5167 confident

[Return to text.](#)

5168 thing, affair, events, circumstances

[Return to text.](#)

5169 test, endeavor, experiment

[Return to text.](#)

5170 regret, repent

[Return to text.](#)

5171 happen, occur

[Return to text.](#)

5172 [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

5173 follow

[Return to text.](#)

5174 [con *test*]

[Return to text.](#)

5175 confirm, pronounce

[Return to text.](#)

5176 infamous

[Return to text.](#)

5177 spiteful

[Return to text.](#)

5178 corrupted

[Return to text.](#)

5179 complete

[Return to text.](#)

5180 Adam and Eve

[Return to text.](#)

5181 always

[Return to text.](#)

5182 complexly, in multiple fashion

[Return to text.](#)

5183 corrupted, injured, broke, destroyed

[Return to text.](#)

5184 had happened/occurred

[Return to text.](#)

5185 responsible

[Return to text.](#)

5186 clear

[Return to text.](#)

5187 guiltless

[Return to text.](#)

5188 demonstrated

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁸⁹ responsibility, trust

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁹⁰ truest, purest

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁹¹ predicted

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁹² recently

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁹³ succeed

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁹⁴ had to be

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁹⁵ weight

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁹⁶ force

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁹⁷ his will's

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁹⁸ remains

[Return to text.](#)

⁵¹⁹⁹ except

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁰⁰ deadly

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁰¹ be passed

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁰² proclaimed

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁰³ lenity, mercy, indulgence

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁰⁴ release (from a debt)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁰⁵ “Justice must not be scorned (treated with contempt) as the free gift of kindness (bounty) has been”

[Return to text.](#)

5206 one who rules by deputed power, appointed by a ruler to exercise certain powers

[Return to text.](#)

5207 joined

[Return to text.](#)

5208 planned, intended

[Return to text.](#)

5209 descend, fall

[Return to text.](#)

5210 I possess/hold

[Return to text.](#)

5211 alleviate, abate

[Return to text.](#)

5212 judgment, sentence

[Return to text.](#)

5213 conveyed, transferred

[Return to text.](#)

5214 explain, make clear, elucidate

[Return to text.](#)

5215 set free from doubt, convinced

[Return to text.](#)

5216 pacify

[Return to text.](#)

5217 escort, attending company

[Return to text.](#)

5218 be needed

[Return to text.](#)

5219 Satan

[Return to text.](#)

5220 i.e., from the process of judgment, as applied to Adam and Eve

[Return to text.](#)

5221 proved guilty

[Return to text.](#)

5222 proof, demonstration

[Return to text.](#)

5223 i.e., the animal whose body was appropriated, wrongly and without consent, by Satan

[Return to text.](#)

5224 parallel, side by side

[Return to text.](#)

5225 attendant

[Return to text.](#)

5226 descent

[Return to text.](#)

5227 mediator

[Return to text.](#)

5228 received

[Return to text.](#)

5229 either

[Return to text.](#)

5230 visible

[Return to text.](#)

5231 disconcerted, abashed

[Return to text.](#)

5232 disturbed, unsettled, agitated

[Return to text.](#)

5233 visible

[Return to text.](#)

5234 abusive language

[Return to text.](#)

5235 instruction, order, mandate

[Return to text.](#)

5236 assailed

[Return to text.](#)

5237 narrow pathway

[Return to text.](#)

5238 suffer, bear

[Return to text.](#)

5239 miserable

[Return to text.](#)

5240 (1) unbearable, unendurable, (2) unjustifiable

[Return to text.](#)

5241 come upon

[Return to text.](#)

5242 [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5243 [trisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5244 merely, simply

[Return to text.](#)

5245 true

[Return to text.](#)

5246 worth, excellence, honor

[Return to text.](#)

5247 rule, direction

[Return to text.](#)

5248 unfit, improper

[Return to text.](#)

5249 office, role

[Return to text.](#)

5250 quickly

[Return to text.](#)

5251 babbling, talkative

[Return to text.](#)

5252 polluted from the end = corrupted away from the purpose

[Return to text.](#)

5253 faulty, corrupt

[Return to text.](#)

5254 finally

[Return to text.](#)

5255 judgment, sentence

[Return to text.](#)

5256 occult, obscure

[Return to text.](#)

5257 creatures

[Return to text.](#)

5258 crush, smash, break

[Return to text.](#)

5259 Christ's

[Return to text.](#)

5260 captured

[Return to text.](#)

5261 display (of force)

[Return to text.](#)

5262 wrongfully appropriated

[Return to text.](#)

5263 Christ

[Return to text.](#)

5264 Christ

[Return to text.](#)

5265 the serpent's

[Return to text.](#)

5266 his fatal bruise = the Crucifixion

[Return to text.](#)

5267 action of conceiving (becoming pregnant)

[Return to text.](#)

5268 unasked, uninvited, uncommanded

[Return to text.](#)

5269 proclaimed

[Return to text.](#)

5270 youthful coat = sloughed-off skin

[Return to text.](#)

5271 exchanged

[Return to text.](#)

5272 not much = not at all

[Return to text.](#)

5273 shameful, injurious

[Return to text.](#)

5274 satisfied [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

5275 view from opposite sides

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁷⁶ extraordinary, enormous, excessive, hyperviolent/gross/wrong

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁷⁷ i.e., opening the way (and the gates) for Satan

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁷⁸ place, abode

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁷⁹ rule, control

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁸⁰ [adjective, modifying “dominion”]

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁸¹ draws me on = leads me on

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁸² whether, either

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁸³ affinity, harmony

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁸⁴ congenial

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁸⁵ is powerful

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁸⁶ profound depth

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁸⁷ not affording passage

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁸⁸ enterprising

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁸⁹ create

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁹⁰ mainland

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁹¹ communication, passage

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁹² mistake

[Return to text.](#)

⁵²⁹³ miss, mistake

[Return to text.](#)

5294 breathe

[Return to text.](#)

5295 I taste

[Return to text.](#)

5296 take in hand, attempt

[Return to text.](#)

5297 absent

[Return to text.](#)

5298 fatal

[Return to text.](#)

5299 shape

[Return to text.](#)

5300 perceiving by smell

[Return to text.](#)

5301 separately

[Return to text.](#)

5302 fluttering, flapping

[Return to text.](#)

5303 whatever

[Return to text.](#)

5304 swimming together

[Return to text.](#)

5305 Arctic, Satanian: frozen, northern

[Return to text.](#)

5306 block, close up

[Return to text.](#)

5307 fancied

[Return to text.](#)

5308 the River Pechora, in Siberia, flowing down from the Urals into the Arctic Ocean

[Return to text.](#)

5309 Cathay = China

[Return to text.](#)

5310 muddy/wet places

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³¹¹ causing things to be petrified/turned to stone

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³¹² three-pronged fish spear or scepter: wielded by Neptune in creating the Cyclades (islands in the Aegean)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³¹³ one of the Cyclades: it floated until Zeus fixed it in place, for the birth of Apollo and Diana/Artemis

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³¹⁴ the most famous (and the only mortal) Gorgon, Medusa, turned to stone anyone who looked at her

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³¹⁵ harshness, strictness

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³¹⁶ blackish mineral, containing among other things pitch

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³¹⁷ seashore

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³¹⁸ mass, massive structure

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³¹⁹ worked

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³²⁰ the primum mobile or other shell of the universe

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³²¹ (1) without a safeguarding fence, (2) defenseless

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³²² given up

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³²³ easy

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³²⁴ Persian king who invaded Greece in 480 B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³²⁵ biblical Shushan, founded by Tithonus, Memnon's father

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³²⁶ the Dardenelles, the strait between Turkey and southeastern Europe

[Return to text.](#)

5327 beat, whip

[Return to text.](#)

5328 bridge-making

[Return to text.](#)

5329 suspended, hanging

[Return to text.](#)

5330 disturbed

[Return to text.](#)

5331 descended

[Return to text.](#)

5332 flying, flight

[Return to text.](#)

5333 regions, borders

[Return to text.](#)

5334 pushed itself in

[Return to text.](#)

5335 different

[Return to text.](#)

5336 roads, paths

[Return to text.](#)

5337 discovered

[Return to text.](#)

5338 turning, moving

[Return to text.](#)

5339 i.e., steering a central course, through the high point of the sky

[Return to text.](#)

5340 the sun (Uriel) rises under the sign of Aries; it is opposite to Scorpio, which is near Centaurus

[Return to text.](#)

5341 recognized

[Return to text.](#)

5342 unnoticed

[Return to text.](#)

5343 unknowing

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁴⁴ covering

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁴⁵ Christ's/God's

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁴⁶ he (Satan) returned

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁴⁷ luckless

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁴⁸ filled

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁴⁹ follow after

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁵⁰ inevitable, deadly

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁵¹ relationship, connection

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁵² (1) to build/establish a position/structure of defense, (2) to become powerful

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁵³ (1) marvelous, prodigious, (2) bearing portents, omens, signs

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁵⁴ with odds = and more (“and then some!”)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁵⁵ defeat, repulse

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁵⁶ rule

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁵⁷ decision, judgment

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁵⁸ turned away

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁵⁹ Heaven is square

[Return to text.](#)

⁵³⁶⁰ the earth and all our world/universe is round/globular

[Return to text.](#)

5361 test

[Return to text.](#)

5362 i.e., on earth

[Return to text.](#)

5363 slave

[Return to text.](#)

5364 invested with full power/authority

[Return to text.](#)

5365 i.e., the “new kingdom” has, by his action, been exposed to sin and death

[Return to text.](#)

5366 action

[Return to text.](#)

5367 loss, damage

[Return to text.](#)

5368 poison, destruction

[Return to text.](#)

5369 suddenly infected

[Return to text.](#)

5370 (though planets usually influence the earth, they are now struck, in their turn, by the activities of Sin and Death)

[Return to text.](#)

5371 [bisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5372 darkening, loss of splendor

[Return to text.](#)

5373 causeway

[Return to text.](#)

5374 divided-into-parts

[Return to text.](#)

5375 cried out

[Return to text.](#)

5376 walls, gates

[Return to text.](#)

5377 withdrawn

[Return to text.](#)

5378 compared

[Return to text.](#)

5379 anxious, apprehensive

[Return to text.](#)

5380 cut off, stop, hinder

[Return to text.](#)

5381 [adjective, modifying “emperor”]

[Return to text.](#)

5382 i.e., had earlier commanded

[Return to text.](#)

5383 near the mouth of the Volga

[Return to text.](#)

5384 Persian ruler

[Return to text.](#)

5385 greater Armenia

[Return to text.](#)

5386 Tabriz, in northwestern Persia

[Return to text.](#)

5387 Kazvin, in northern Persia

[Return to text.](#)

5388 recently

[Return to text.](#)

5389 deserted

[Return to text.](#)

5390 outermost

[Return to text.](#)

5391 drawing together

[Return to text.](#)

5392 unnoticed

[Return to text.](#)

5393 appearance

[Return to text.](#)

5394 of low rank

[Return to text.](#)

5395 soldier

[Return to text.](#)

5396 canopy

[Return to text.](#)

5397 gleaming

[Return to text.](#)

5398 hellish

[Return to text.](#)

5399 directed, turned

[Return to text.](#)

5400 gaze

[Return to text.](#)

5401 (1) hall of state, (2) raised floor area, used (with pillows) as a kind of couch or sofa

[Return to text.](#)

5402 unformed

[Return to text.](#)

5403 unknown

[Return to text.](#)

5404 travel

[Return to text.](#)

5405 stubborn, difficult, unmanageable

[Return to text.](#)

5406 possessing no creator, since existing from the very beginning

[Return to text.](#)

5407 unfamiliar

[Return to text.](#)

5408 rumor, report

[Return to text.](#)

5409 product

[Return to text.](#)

5410 complete

[Return to text.](#)

5411 beguiled, led astray

[Return to text.](#)

5412 (although there are no stage directions, this being an epic poem and not a drama, Milton clearly intends at this point a burst of laughter from Satan's

devilish audience)

[Return to text.](#)

5413 God

[Return to text.](#)

5414 sudden attack

[Return to text.](#)

5415 move hither and thither

[Return to text.](#)

5416 break, smash, crush

[Return to text.](#)

5417 ordained, established, fixed

[Return to text.](#)

5418 brought low, stumbling

[Return to text.](#)

5419 struggling

[Return to text.](#)

5420 sentence

[Return to text.](#)

5421 presumptuous, audacious

[Return to text.](#)

5422 tumult, disorder, violence

[Return to text.](#)

5423 twisted/twined together

[Return to text.](#)

5424 mythical serpent with a head at each end

[Return to text.](#)

5425 mythical water snake

[Return to text.](#)

5426 swordfish?

[Return to text.](#)

5427 dismal, melancholy

[Return to text.](#)

5428 the bite of which caused intense thirst

[Return to text.](#)

5429 serpents grew from Gorgon blood

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴³⁰ “full of snakes”: one of the Balearic Islands

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴³¹ the dragon whom

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴³² the Pythia = the prophetess of Apollo

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴³³ i.e., the sun’s heat engenders the monster in the mud (“slime”) of the Nile River

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴³⁴ Satan

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴³⁵ mob, crowd

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴³⁶ in station = at their proper post

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴³⁷ proper

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴³⁸ proud, erect

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴³⁹ corruption

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁴⁰ alike

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁴¹ along with

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁴² make worse, weigh down, exasperate

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁴³ view

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁴⁴ unfamiliar

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁴⁵ a Fury, all three of whom had snakes in their hair

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁴⁶ pitchy

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁴⁷ the Dead Sea

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁴⁸ foolishly

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁴⁹ gusto

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁵⁰ nauseated

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁵¹ aversion, disgust

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁵² triumphed over

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁵³ i.e., only once

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁵⁴ extreme hunger

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁵⁵ on certain

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁵⁶ depress, frustrate

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁵⁷ relate/transmit as a tradition [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁵⁸ spread about

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁵⁹ booty

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁶⁰ “snake”: a Titan, first ruler of Olympus

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁶¹ “wide-ruling”: Ophion’s wife

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁶² i.e., more or less the pagan equivalent of Eve?

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁶³ Ops/Rhea/Cybele: wife of Cronos

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁶⁴ Dictaeon Jove = Dicte, mountain in Crete, where Jove/Jupiter/Zeus grew up

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁶⁵ at one time

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁶⁶ actuated/made actual by Adam and Eve

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁶⁷ see Revelation 6:8

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁶⁸ quickly

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁶⁹ suffer, am tormented/troubled

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁷⁰ prey

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁷¹ not limited/bound by his body

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁷² a body, living or dead

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁷³ plain, rude

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁷⁴ mercilessly

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁷⁵ in different

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁷⁶ ripen

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁷⁷ consume, diminish, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁷⁸ devastate, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁷⁹ attribute, ascribe

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁸⁰ permit, allow

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁸¹ winking, tactly permitting

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁸² reward, oblige

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁸³ carried away

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁸⁴ renounced, abandoned

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁸⁵ at random = without consideration/care/control, purposelessly, heedlessly

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁸⁶ dregs, refuse

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁸⁷ till the time when

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁸⁸ filled/stuffed to excess

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁸⁹ gluttoned, satiated

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁹⁰ almost

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁹¹ sucked-dry?

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁹² chokingly/sickeningly overfilled

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁹³ garbage, rubbish, putrid flesh

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁹⁴ throw, fling

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁹⁵ gaping

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁹⁶ will obstruct

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁹⁷ saintliness, holiness

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁴⁹⁸ takes precedence

[Return to text.](#)

5499 like

[Return to text.](#)

5500 weaken, lessen

[Return to text.](#)

5501 i.e., next they sang

[Return to text.](#)

5502 different tasks/responsibilities/mandates

[Return to text.](#)

5503 fitted

[Return to text.](#)

5504 order, authoritative command

[Return to text.](#)

5505 feeble, worn out

[Return to text.](#)

5506 connected with the solstice, i.e., when the sun is halfway between the two equinoxes and, in the summer, at its farthest point from the equator

[Return to text.](#)

5507 pale, white

[Return to text.](#)

5508 planets

[Return to text.](#)

5509 relative positions of the planets, as seen from the earth

[Return to text.](#)

5510 two heavenly bodies at 60-degree angles from one another (60 degrees = one-sixth of the whole zodiac)

[Return to text.](#)

5511 two heavenly bodies at 90-degree angles from one another

[Return to text.](#)

5512 two heavenly bodies at 120-degree angles from one another

[Return to text.](#)

5513 two heavenly bodies at 180-degree angles from one another

[Return to text.](#)

5514 harmful, unwholesome

[Return to text.](#)

5515 conjunction

[Return to text.](#)

5516 the fixed = the fixed stars, in the eighth of the heavenly spheres

[Return to text.](#)

5517 stormy, passionate [trisyllabic, second accented, “-uous” elided]

[Return to text.](#)

5518 north, east, south, west

[Return to text.](#)

5519 storming, raging

[Return to text.](#)

5520 throw into confusion/disorder

[Return to text.](#)

5521 sideways

[Return to text.](#)

5522 at a slanting angle

[Return to text.](#)

5523 centric globe = the earth, which was at the center

[Return to text.](#)

5524 Apollo’s chariot

[Return to text.](#)

5525 celestial equator

[Return to text.](#)

5526 equally

[Return to text.](#)

5527 the Bull

[Return to text.](#)

5528 the Pleiades

[Return to text.](#)

5529 Gemini

[Return to text.](#)

5530 Cancer

[Return to text.](#)

5531 (1) without delay, rapidly, (2) exceedingly

[Return to text.](#)

5532 the Lion

[Return to text.](#)

5533 Virgo

[Return to text.](#)

5534 Libra

[Return to text.](#)

5535 otherwise

[Return to text.](#)

5536 blossoming

[Return to text.](#)

5537 undarkened

[Return to text.](#)

5538 make up for

[Return to text.](#)

5539 Labrador

[Return to text.](#)

5540 strait at the extreme southern tip of South America

[Return to text.](#)

5541 i.e., when Adam and Eve ate the forbidden fruit

[Return to text.](#)

5542 Atreus, Thyestes' brother, killed Thyestes' sons and served them to their father at a banquet

[Return to text.](#)

5543 world inhabited = inhabited world

[Return to text.](#)

5544 nipping, painful

[Return to text.](#)

5545 equivalent

[Return to text.](#)

5546 from the malign stars

[Return to text.](#)

5547 New England

[Return to text.](#)

5548 Samoed shore = Siberia

[Return to text.](#)

5549 i.e., the cave of the winds, in which Aeolus, god of the winds, kept the winds in confinement, when they were not blowing

[Return to text.](#)

5550 burst of wind

[Return to text.](#)

5551 a north wind

[Return to text.](#)

5552 a north wind

[Return to text.](#)

5553 a north wind

[Return to text.](#)

5554 a north wind

[Return to text.](#)

5555 the opposite

[Return to text.](#)

5556 a south wind

[Return to text.](#)

5557 a south wind

[Return to text.](#)

5558 Sierra Leone, in Africa

[Return to text.](#)

5559 thwart of = across

[Return to text.](#)

5560 equally

[Return to text.](#)

5561 Euras/Levant is an east wind

[Return to text.](#)

5562 Ponent/Zephyr is a west wind

[Return to text.](#)

5563 coming from the horizon: east/west rather than north/south

[Return to text.](#)

5564 clamor, loud/harsh sound

[Return to text.](#)

5565 a southeast wind

[Return to text.](#)

5566 a southwest wind

[Return to text.](#)

5567 riot, violence

[Return to text.](#)

5568 irrational creatures [probably, from Latin influence, four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5569 settled aversion, contrariety of feeling/disposition

[Return to text.](#)

5570 leaving off

[Return to text.](#)

5571 fierce, savage

[Return to text.](#)

5572 from without = in addition to

[Return to text.](#)

5573 “he, Adam, sought”

[Return to text.](#)

5574 from, instead of

[Return to text.](#)

5575 recently

[Return to text.](#)

5576 from, instead of

[Return to text.](#)

5577 it would be well/all right

[Return to text.](#)

5578 want to

[Return to text.](#)

5579 satisfy, be useful, answer the requirements, meet the needs of the case, suit, fit

[Return to text.](#)

5580 multiplied, spread

[Return to text.](#)

5581 follow

[Return to text.](#)

5582 curse

[Return to text.](#)

5583 mine own = mine own curses

[Return to text.](#)

5584 remain, continue

[Return to text.](#)

5585 flowing back

[Return to text.](#)

5586 surge, turn back

[Return to text.](#)

5587 fall, descend

[Return to text.](#)

5588 proper order

[Return to text.](#)

5589 advance

[Return to text.](#)

5590 luxurious, highly pleasing

[Return to text.](#)

5591 agreed

[Return to text.](#)

5592 surrender

[Return to text.](#)

5593 himself, Adam

[Return to text.](#)

5594 himself, Adam

[Return to text.](#)

5595 captiously object to/find fault with

[Return to text.](#)

5596 permission

[Return to text.](#)

5597 himself, Adam

[Return to text.](#)

5598 receive, permit

[Return to text.](#)

5599 choice

[Return to text.](#)

5600 procreated, generated

[Return to text.](#)

5601 judgment

[Return to text.](#)

5602 settled, determined

[Return to text.](#)

5603 this day = today

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁰⁴ live too long

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁰⁵ deprived of sensation, unconscious

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁰⁶ confident, safe, free from fear/anxiety

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁰⁷ completely, entirely

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁰⁸ corporeal clod = earthen body

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁰⁹ relieve, calm

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶¹⁰ fated, destined

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶¹¹ considered, thought

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶¹² fact, proof

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶¹³ severity

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶¹⁴ all causes else = all other causes

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶¹⁵ absorption, taking in

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶¹⁶ i.e., causes act according to the capacity of what they *work upon*; what the *cause* of something may be capable of is, in this sense, irrelevant

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶¹⁷ depriving, taking away

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶¹⁸ inside

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶¹⁹ outside

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶²⁰ turning/spinning motion

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶²¹ immaterial (spiritual) rather than material (bodily)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶²² alone

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶²³ use up, consume

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶²⁴ corrupted

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶²⁵ along with me, just as I do/have

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶²⁶ of necessity

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶²⁷ falls

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶²⁸ foolish

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶²⁹ himself, Adam

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶³⁰ shared

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶³¹ Eve

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶³² similar

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶³³ sentence, judgment

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶³⁴ conscience

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶³⁵ before

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶³⁶ noxious exhalations/vapors

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶³⁷ Adam's

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶³⁸ exhibited, showed

[Return to text.](#)

5639 already announced/proclaimed

[Return to text.](#)

5640 [four syllables, first and third accented: ACCepTAbLe]

[Return to text.](#)

5641 sets right

[Return to text.](#)

5642 not long ago

[Return to text.](#)

5643 ring out, reëcho

[Return to text.](#)

5644 attempted

[Return to text.](#)

5645 suits

[Return to text.](#)

5646 allied

[Return to text.](#)

5647 as Satan is

[Return to text.](#)

5648 is missing

[Return to text.](#)

5649 held, as if a mask or screen, in front of her, to conceal the “hellish falsehood” behind it

[Return to text.](#)

5650 except

[Return to text.](#)

5651 would have

[Return to text.](#)

5652 remained

[Return to text.](#)

5653 vagrant, wanton, uncertain

[Return to text.](#)

5654 thinking arrogantly/presumptuously

[Return to text.](#)

5655 overpower, outdo, get the better of

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁵⁶ imagined by me

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁵⁷ not understood by me

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁵⁸ (1) the left side, (2) darkly suspicious/dishonest/corrupt

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁵⁹ withdrawn, taken

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁶⁰ unnecessary, superfluous [five syllables, first, third, and fifth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁶¹ i.e., his correct/right/true number is one (only himself), not two (with her—superfluously—added)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁶² like

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁶³ procreate

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁶⁴ been befallen = happened, occurred

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁶⁵ strait conjunction = narrow connection (“conjunction” carrying heavy sexual overtones)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁶⁶ proper, suitable

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁶⁷ the woman

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁶⁸ obstinacy, contrariness, wickedness

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁶⁹ a far worse = a far worse man than himself

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁷⁰ him

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁷¹ (1) fierce, cruel, (2) clever

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁷² antagonist, enemy

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁷³ destroy

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁷⁴ thus, thereby

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁷⁵ begged earnestly for

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁷⁶ amity, end of hostilities

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁷⁷ renounce, abandon

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁷⁸ unknowingly

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁷⁹ deprive

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁸⁰ whereon I live = of that upon which I live

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁸¹ mild, generous, courteous

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁸² extreme, greatest

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁸³ support

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁸⁴ forsaken, abandoned

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁸⁵ go, turn

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁸⁶ exist, live

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁸⁷ definite, fixed, exact

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁸⁸ fall, descend

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁸⁹ abject, humble

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁹⁰ (1) condition, state, (2) pledge, undertaking

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁹¹ (1) stationary, fixed, (2) unalterable, not subject to change

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁹² lamented, deeply regretted

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁹³ worked

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁹⁴ compassion, pity, sorrow

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁹⁵ recently

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁹⁶ quickly

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁹⁷ moral weakness, instability of mind

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁹⁸ weaker

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁶⁹⁹ entrusted

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁰⁰ imperiled, made subject/open to danger (since he allowed her to go to her labor alone that day)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁰¹ fight

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁰² services, duties, attentions

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁰³ proclaimed

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁰⁴ apprehend, understand

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁰⁵ transmitted

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁰⁶ just event = equitable/impartial/rightful result/outcome

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁰⁷ defrauded, beguiled of

[Return to text.](#)

5708 (1) proper, (2) necessary, (3) owed

[Return to text.](#)

5709 to be depressed/sick/weak

[Return to text.](#)

5710 person, body: Eve herself

[Return to text.](#)

5711 short work (of it)

[Return to text.](#)

5712 function, service

[Return to text.](#)

5713 intense, passionate, excited

[Return to text.](#)

5714 maintained, experienced

[Return to text.](#)

5715 moved, ruled, diverted (turned)

[Return to text.](#)

5716 more attentive = steadier

[Return to text.](#)

5717 despises

[Return to text.](#)

5718 sentence, judgment

[Return to text.](#)

5719 willful disobedience, perversity

[Return to text.](#)

5720 smash, destroy, break

[Return to text.](#)

5721 resolved/decided on

[Return to text.](#)

5722 thus

[Return to text.](#)

5723 (1) concerns [verb], (2) pleases [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

5724 bitterness, spitefulness

[Return to text.](#)

5725 spite

[Return to text.](#)

5726 resistance

[Return to text.](#)

5727 disintegration, decomposition

[Return to text.](#)

5728 slantwise

[Return to text.](#)

5729 struck and glided, passed quickly

[Return to text.](#)

5730 (1) well-timed, (2) early

[Return to text.](#)

5731 harsh, pitiless

[Return to text.](#)

5732 unstable, changeable

[Return to text.](#)

5733 dwelling, cover

[Return to text.](#)

5734 of/belonging to the day

[Return to text.](#)

5735 the sun

[Return to text.](#)

5736 dry

[Return to text.](#)

5737 rouse, excite

[Return to text.](#)

5738 rub, harass

[Return to text.](#)

5739 by friction

[Return to text.](#)

5740 recently

[Return to text.](#)

5741 pushing, shoving, knocking against

[Return to text.](#)

5742 violent, harsh

[Return to text.](#)

5743 kindle

[Return to text.](#)

5744 transverse

[Return to text.](#)

5745 if we pray to Him

[Return to text.](#)

5746 conveniently

[Return to text.](#)

5747 going

[Return to text.](#)

5748 often, habitually

[Return to text.](#)

5749 [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5750 i.e., the prayers

[Return to text.](#)

5751 i.e., Adam and Eve

[Return to text.](#)

5752 golden covering placed over the Ark of the Covenant; regarded as God's resting place and thus the seat of mercy

[Return to text.](#)

5753 anticipatory

[Return to text.](#)

5754 reborn, reformed, restored

[Return to text.](#)

5755 [five syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5756 demeanor

[Return to text.](#)

5757 inferior, poor

[Return to text.](#)

5758 Prometheus' son, and the "Noah" of classical myth

[Return to text.](#)

5759 Deucalion's wife

[Return to text.](#)

5760 [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁶¹ a Titan, daughter of Gaia (earth) by Zeus: goddess of justice

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁶² straying, wandering

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁶³ the prayers

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁶⁴ having no material being/body

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁶⁵ smoked

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁶⁶ near

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁶⁷ Christ

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁶⁸ container in which incense is burned

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁶⁹ tilling, cultivating

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁷⁰ atonement, expiation, sacrifice

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁷¹ implant, transfer

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁷² i.e., the good works of man

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁷³ i.e., the not good works of man

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁷⁴ accept me = receive me with favor

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁷⁵ darkening of His countenance

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁷⁶ Adam

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁷⁷ purge him off = purify him away

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁷⁷⁸ disorder, derangement

[Return to text.](#)

5779 dispose him = make him fit

[Return to text.](#)

5780 happiness

[Return to text.](#)

5781 foolishly

[Return to text.](#)

5782 immortality

[Return to text.](#)

5783 make eternal/everlasting

[Return to text.](#)

5784 tested

[Return to text.](#)

5785 misery, distress, vexation

[Return to text.](#)

5786 renewal of the body at the Resurrection

[Return to text.](#)

5787 restores (yields up), repays, rewards, produces

[Return to text.](#)

5788 sinning

[Return to text.](#)

5789 not long ago

[Return to text.](#)

5790 rank, position

[Return to text.](#)

5791 Horeb/Mt. Sinai

[Return to text.](#)

5792 general doom = Judgment Day

[Return to text.](#)

5793 mythical flower that never fades

[Return to text.](#)

5794 going, proceeding

[Return to text.](#)

5795 forbidden

[Return to text.](#)

5796 inward promptings, workings

[Return to text.](#)

5797 but for a longer period

[Return to text.](#)

5798 have known

[Return to text.](#)

5799 left to itself

[Return to text.](#)

5800 command

[Return to text.](#)

5801 or in = whether on

[Return to text.](#)

5802 i.e., the Garden of Eden, about to become vacant

[Return to text.](#)

5803 pity

[Return to text.](#)

5804 proclaim, announce

[Return to text.](#)

5805 lose heart/courage, droop

[Return to text.](#)

5806 mournful

[Return to text.](#)

5807 stated, pressed

[Return to text.](#)

5808 miserable

[Return to text.](#)

5809 intermingle, blend in

[Return to text.](#)

5810 welcoming place [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5811 band

[Return to text.](#)

5812 double-faced god of gates

[Return to text.](#)

5813 hundred-eyed spy for Jove/Jupiter/Zeus

[Return to text.](#)

5814 messenger of Jove

[Return to text.](#)

5815 opiate rod = sleep-inducing staff

[Return to text.](#)

5816 goddess of dawn [trisyllabic, second accented, “-thea” elided]

[Return to text.](#)

5817 anointed

[Return to text.](#)

5818 prayers

[Return to text.](#)

5819 Adam’s

[Return to text.](#)

5820 efficaciously, powerfully

[Return to text.](#)

5821 will do

[Return to text.](#)

5822 sinned against

[Return to text.](#)

5823 gentle, forgiving

[Return to text.](#)

5824 smash, crush, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

5825 thought of, remembered

[Return to text.](#)

5826 (1) sad, (2) sober

[Return to text.](#)

5827 pleasing, gracious

[Return to text.](#)

5828 to thou

[Return to text.](#)

5829 so high, thus high

[Return to text.](#)

5830 title

[Return to text.](#)

5831 granted, deigned, condescended

[Return to text.](#)

5832 “now the labor is....

[Return to text.](#)

5833 imposed

[Return to text.](#)

5834 tired, laborious

[Return to text.](#)

5835 assented, agreed

[Return to text.](#)

5836 produced on, communicated through

[Return to text.](#)

5837 darkened, obscured

[Return to text.](#)

5838 rosy gleam

[Return to text.](#)

5839 the eagle

[Return to text.](#)

5840 swiftly descended

[Return to text.](#)

5841 circuit

[Return to text.](#)

5842 the lion

[Return to text.](#)

5843 pair

[Return to text.](#)

5844 hart and hind = stag and doe (male and female deer)

[Return to text.](#)

5845 perhaps

[Return to text.](#)

5846 confident

[Return to text.](#)

5847 because of

[Return to text.](#)

5848 liberation

[Return to text.](#)

5849 more bright = brighter

[Return to text.](#)

5850 filled

[Return to text.](#)

5851 this time

[Return to text.](#)

5852 jasper is a highly variegated colored form of quartz

[Return to text.](#)

5853 manifestation, appearance

[Return to text.](#)

5854 bodily

[Return to text.](#)

5855 “that ‘apparition’ was not more glorious when....

[Return to text.](#)

5856 “tents of angels”

[Return to text.](#)

5857 pavilioned = covered with the tents of

[Return to text.](#)

5858 “And Jacob went on his way, and the angels of God met him. And when Jacob saw them, he said, This is God’s host”—Genesis 32:1–2

[Return to text.](#)

5859 see 2 Kings 6

[Return to text.](#)

5860 the prophet Elisha

[Return to text.](#)

5861 treacherously

[Return to text.](#)

5862 made, commenced

[Return to text.](#)

5863 Michael

[Return to text.](#)

5864 the formation in which the Cherubim had halted

[Return to text.](#)

5865 decide, resolve, end

[Return to text.](#)

5866 lowest rank

[Return to text.](#)

5867 clothes

[Return to text.](#)

5868 [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5869 trust, have confidence in

[Return to text.](#)

5870 lofty, exalted

[Return to text.](#)

5871 luminous, bright

[Return to text.](#)

5872 armor

[Return to text.](#)

5873 loose robe

[Return to text.](#)

5874 more brilliant/vivid

[Return to text.](#)

5875 Thessalian town famous for its bright purple dye

[Return to text.](#)

5876 dyed cloth

[Return to text.](#)

5877 Tyre, Phoenician seaport, now in Lebanon

[Return to text.](#)

5878 goddess of the rainbow

[Return to text.](#)

5879 thread

[Return to text.](#)

5880 helmet

[Return to text.](#)

5881 belt of stars

[Return to text.](#)

5882 see Book 6, lines 320–27, above

[Return to text.](#)

5883 i.e., the archangel Michael

[Return to text.](#)

5884 high rank, dignity

[Return to text.](#)

5885 command

[Return to text.](#)

5886 compensate for

[Return to text.](#)

5887 completely

[Return to text.](#)

5888 greedy, grasping

[Return to text.](#)

5889 cultivate

[Return to text.](#)

5890 held fast, tied up

[Return to text.](#)

5891 disclosed, revealed

[Return to text.](#)

5892 quickly

[Return to text.](#)

5893 withdrawal

[Return to text.](#)

5894 delay, temporary extension of time

[Return to text.](#)

5895 fatal

[Return to text.](#)

5896 stop, visit

[Return to text.](#)

5897 gentle

[Return to text.](#)

5898 arrange

[Return to text.](#)

5899 water you

[Return to text.](#)

5900 compared to

[Return to text.](#)

5901 dark

[Return to text.](#)

5902 accustomed as we are

[Return to text.](#)

5903 over-fond = over-affectionate

[Return to text.](#)

5904 daze, stupor, depression

[Return to text.](#)

5905 carrying out, executing

[Return to text.](#)

5906 secluded place

[Return to text.](#)

5907 persistent

[Return to text.](#)

5908 smothering

[Return to text.](#)

5909 visit often [verb, second syllable accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5910 (1) pleasing, (2) feeling gratitude

[Return to text.](#)

5911 lower

[Return to text.](#)

5912 offspring, descendants

[Return to text.](#)

5913 outermost

[Return to text.](#)

5914 (1) bottom part of God's robe, (2) outlying boundaries of His kingdom

[Return to text.](#)

5915 species

[Return to text.](#)

5916 bathed with warm lotions, cherished/roused/stirred up

[Return to text.](#)

5917 nourishing

[Return to text.](#)

5918 [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5919 flat, level

[Return to text.](#)

5920 exact, unmistakable

[Return to text.](#)

5921 lofty, exalted

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹²² disputing, struggling, fighting

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹²³ alloy

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹²⁴ fatal

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹²⁵ steeped (drugged)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹²⁶ sight of the future

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹²⁷ [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹²⁸ open, visible

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹²⁹ “...the hand of the Lord was upon me, and brought me thither. In the visions of God brought He me into the land of Israel, and set me upon a very high mountain....—Ezekiel 40:1–2

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹³⁰ range of vision

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹³¹ [the full verb is “lay stretched out”]

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹³² view

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹³³ Christ

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹³⁴ Adam’s

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹³⁵ Peiping (Beijing), capital of Cathay/China

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹³⁶ khan, emperor

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹³⁷ capital of Temir/Tamerlane’s Tatar empire

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹³⁸ Asian river, flowing from Turkey/Afghanistan to the Aral Sea in Siberia

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹³⁹ Peiping (Beijing)

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁴⁰ Chinese

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁴¹ a Mogul capital in southern India

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁴² a Mogul capital in northern India

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁴³ Malacca

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁴⁴ Hamadan, ancient summer capital of Persian kings

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁴⁵ Isfahan, city in what is now Malaysia

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁴⁶ Byzantium/Istanbul

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁴⁷ Turkestan is a country in central Asia

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁴⁸ see

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁴⁹ name of Abyssinian king

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁵⁰ now Archico, port city on the Red Sea

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁵¹ Mombasa, in modern Kenya

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁵² Kilwa, in modern Tanzania

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁵³ Malindi, in modern Kenya

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁵⁴ port city in what is now Mozambique

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁵⁵ thought to be

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁵⁶ biblical land from which King Solomon obtained gold for the building of the Temple

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁵⁷ river

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁵⁸ in modern Mauritania

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁵⁹ d. 1002, Muslim ruler in Spain and northern Africa

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁶⁰ Fez and Sus are both in Morocco

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁶¹ modern Tlemcen, in Algeria

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁶² Montezuma, Aztec emperor of Mexico

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁶³ capital of the Inca empire; now Cuzco, in modern Peru

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁶⁴ Atahualpa, Inca ruler [five syllables, first, third, and fifth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁶⁵ the Spanish: Geryon = monster, native to Cadiz, in Spain, who was killed by Hercules

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁶⁶ herb used for treatment of eye diseases

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁶⁷ medicinal herb

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁶⁸ obliged, forced

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁶⁹ forbidden

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁷⁰ obtain by descent

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁷¹ ploughland

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁷² under cultivation

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁷³ sward, turf

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁷⁴ to the altar

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁷⁵ at once

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁷⁶ Cain

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁷⁷ unselected, a random choice

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁷⁸ such as first “came to hand”

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁷⁹ courteous

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁸⁰ internal organs, entrails

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁸¹ favorable, gracious

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁸² quick, sudden

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁸³ flash/movement

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁸⁴ other’s (Cain’s) = other’s offering

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁸⁵ Abel

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁸⁶ poured out freely

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁸⁷ harm, evil, misfortune

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁸⁸ (1) action, deed, (2) crime

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁸⁹ attested, confirmed

[Return to text.](#)

⁵⁹⁹⁰ thickened blood

[Return to text.](#)

5991 (1) natural, (2) of his birthplace

[Return to text.](#)

5992 [here, though usually bisyllabic, trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

5993 “but there are many shapes”

[Return to text.](#)

5994 failure to abstain

[Return to text.](#)

5995 noxious, ill-smelling, offensive

[Return to text.](#)

5996 leper

[Return to text.](#)

5997 violent stretching/straining

[Return to text.](#)

5998 fits

[Return to text.](#)

5999 nasal discharge

[Return to text.](#)

6000 belly

[Return to text.](#)

6001 deranged, lunatic

[Return to text.](#)

6002 languishing, wasting

[Return to text.](#)

6003 wasting, emaciation

[Return to text.](#)

6004 a wasting disease

[Return to text.](#)

6005 bubonic plague

[Return to text.](#)

6006 swelling up of body parts

[Return to text.](#)

6007 hideous

[Return to text.](#)

6008 overcame

[Return to text.](#)

6009 dragged, wrenched

[Return to text.](#)

6010 thrust

[Return to text.](#)

6011 beautiful, graceful

[Return to text.](#)

6012 likeness

[Return to text.](#)

6013 degraded

[Return to text.](#)

6014 animal-like

[Return to text.](#)

6015 due

[Return to text.](#)

6016 transitions, journeys

[Return to text.](#)

6017 natural, congenital

[Return to text.](#)

6018 come, go

[Return to text.](#)

6019 blunted

[Return to text.](#)

6020 go/leave first

[Return to text.](#)

6021 now has (in old age)

[Return to text.](#)

6022 depression, stupor

[Return to text.](#)

6023 finally

[Return to text.](#)

6024 concerned, intending

[Return to text.](#)

6025 released, freed

[Return to text.](#)

6026 oppressive

[Return to text.](#)

6027 duty, responsibility

[Return to text.](#)

6028 rendering up = giving back

[Return to text.](#)

6029 wait for

[Return to text.](#)

6030 [trisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

6031 neither

[Return to text.](#)

6032 submit, allow

[Return to text.](#)

6033 “near some of the tents”

[Return to text.](#)

6034 harmony, accord

[Return to text.](#)

6035 he who

[Return to text.](#)

6036 rapid, flying

[Return to text.](#)

6037 imbued

[Return to text.](#)

6038 accidental

[Return to text.](#)

6039 worked

[Return to text.](#)

6040 fused, cast

[Return to text.](#)

6041 carved

[Return to text.](#)

6042 other

[Return to text.](#)

6043 appearance

[Return to text.](#)

6044 upright, righteous

[Return to text.](#)

6045 final

[Return to text.](#)

6046 company

[Return to text.](#)

6047 frivolous, lewd, unchaste

[Return to text.](#)

6048 songs

[Return to text.](#)

6049 came on = advanced, came forward

[Return to text.](#)

6050 serious, weighty, somber

[Return to text.](#)

6051 negotiate, deal

[Return to text.](#)

6052 Venus

[Return to text.](#)

6053 forerunner

[Return to text.](#)

6054 offered to

[Return to text.](#)

6055 summon

[Return to text.](#)

6056 god of marriage

[Return to text.](#)

6057 before anything else?

[Return to text.](#)

6058 fortunate

[Return to text.](#)

6059 meeting

[Return to text.](#)

6060 outcome

[Return to text.](#)

6061 pieces of music

[Return to text.](#)

6062 seized sympathetically

[Return to text.](#)

6063 confess, acknowledge

[Return to text.](#)

6064 propensity

[Return to text.](#)

6065 foreshadows

[Return to text.](#)

6066 goals, purposes

[Return to text.](#)

6067 proper, fitting

[Return to text.](#)

6068 compliance

[Return to text.](#)

6069 smoothen

[Return to text.](#)

6070 unusual, uncommon

[Return to text.](#)

6071 merry

[Return to text.](#)

6072 perfected

[Return to text.](#)

6073 wag

[Return to text.](#)

6074 snares, tricks

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁷⁵ at large = fully, when God sends down the Flood

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁷⁶ robbed, deprived

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁷⁷ began

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁷⁸ crooked, devious

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁷⁹ spiritless, oppressive

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁸⁰ course

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁸¹ man's woe = wo-man

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁸² country, rustic

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁸³ assembled

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁸⁴ prowess, fame

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁸⁵ assembling

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁸⁶ choice [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁸⁷ oxen

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁸⁸ cattle

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁸⁹ with life = alive

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁹⁰ [bisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁹¹ fighting

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁹² recently

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁹³ bloody

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁹⁴ battering rams

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁹⁵ ladders

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁹⁶ underground passages filled with gunpowder, which is then set off

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁹⁷ spear

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁹⁸ [bisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁰⁹⁹ at once

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁰⁰ speeches

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁰¹ i.e., split into parties

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁰² Enoch: see Genesis 5:21–24

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁰³ behavior, deportment

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁰⁴ hooted at

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁰⁵ perished, been destroyed

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁰⁶ [trisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁰⁷ shrink

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁰⁸ join in marriage

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁰⁹ muddled

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹¹⁰ strength, power

[Return to text.](#)

6111 proclaimed

[Return to text.](#)

6112 Enoch

[Return to text.](#)

6113 therefore hated = who was therefore hated

[Return to text.](#)

6114 assailed, invested, surrounded

[Return to text.](#)

6115 alone

[Return to text.](#)

6116 enveloped

[Return to text.](#)

6117 fragrant

[Return to text.](#)

6118 was given

[Return to text.](#)

6119 eternal bliss

[Return to text.](#)

6120 it came about, happened, occurred

[Return to text.](#)

6121 surpassing

[Return to text.](#)

6122 quarrels

[Return to text.](#)

6123 Noah

[Return to text.](#)

6124 wherever they

[Return to text.](#)

6125 struggling

[Return to text.](#)

6126 in large = a great deal

[Return to text.](#)

6127 as if

[Return to text.](#)

6128 i.e., the clouds'

[Return to text.](#)

6129 violently, with full force

[Return to text.](#)

6130 with great force [trisyllabic, second accented, “-uous” elided]

[Return to text.](#)

6131 brought forth young

[Return to text.](#)

6132 dwelled

[Return to text.](#)

6133 not long before

[Return to text.](#)

6134 boat

[Return to text.](#)

6135 barely, with difficulty

[Return to text.](#)

6136 dealt out, given

[Return to text.](#)

6137 descend, fall

[Return to text.](#)

6138 whom to warn = able to be warned

[Return to text.](#)

6139 be destroyed

[Return to text.](#)

6140 booty, spoil, plunder

[Return to text.](#)

6141 gluttony

[Return to text.](#)

6142 self-indulgence, capriciousness

[Return to text.](#)

6143 [contest]

[Return to text.](#)

6144 safely

[Return to text.](#)

6145 moderation

[Return to text.](#)

6146 tested

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁴⁷ debased, degraded

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁴⁸ corrupt

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁴⁹ Noah

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁵⁰ “good against that which is being done”

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁵¹ enticement

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁵² fashion

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁵³ sinful

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁵⁴ proclaiming

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁵⁵ stubbornness

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁵⁶ wreck, ruin

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁵⁷ chosen

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁵⁸ waterfalls

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁵⁹ producing hornlike branches, as it divides and each branch flows on

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁶⁰ destroyed

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁶¹ the Euphrates?

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁶² (1) the Persian Gulf, in particular, or (2) the deep, in general

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁶³ whales

[Return to text.](#)

⁶¹⁶⁴ seagulls

[Return to text.](#)

6165 harsh screams [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

6166 [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

6167 no sanctity

[Return to text.](#)

6168 floating

[Return to text.](#)

6169 as if

[Return to text.](#)

6170 declined, dwindled

[Return to text.](#)

6171 from

[Return to text.](#)

6172 copiously

[Return to text.](#)

6173 quick-moving

[Return to text.](#)

6174 closed

[Return to text.](#)

6175 channels

[Return to text.](#)

6176 loud noise

[Return to text.](#)

6177 aging

[Return to text.](#)

6178 flowing water, here ebbing

[Return to text.](#)

6179 at once

[Return to text.](#)

6180 more trustworthy/steadfast/reliable

[Return to text.](#)

6181 then again

[Return to text.](#)

6182 fall, descend

[Return to text.](#)

6183 calm, tranquil

[Return to text.](#)

6184 quickly

[Return to text.](#)

6185 rainbow

[Return to text.](#)

6186 visible

[Return to text.](#)

6187 banded, striped

[Return to text.](#)

6188 signaling

[Return to text.](#)

6189 at first

[Return to text.](#)

6190 kept alive

[Return to text.](#)

6191 extended, spread out

[Return to text.](#)

6192 like

[Return to text.](#)

6193 border, edge

[Return to text.](#)

6194 cleverly

[Return to text.](#)

6195 give up, resign, surrender

[Return to text.](#)

6196 not long before

[Return to text.](#)

6197 regretting

[Return to text.](#)

6198 i.e., of having created man in the first place

[Return to text.](#)

6199 corrupted

[Return to text.](#)

6200 softens

[Return to text.](#)

6201 obliterate

[Return to text.](#)

6202 gray

[Return to text.](#)

6203 leaves off, breaks away

[Return to text.](#)

6204 determined, set

[Return to text.](#)

6205 put forward

[Return to text.](#)

6206 pleasing

[Return to text.](#)

6207 weaken

[Return to text.](#)

6208 origin, fountainhead

[Return to text.](#)

6209 a certain (substantial)

[Return to text.](#)

6210 swiftly

[Return to text.](#)

6211 young bull, bull calf

[Return to text.](#)

6212 unreprieved

[Return to text.](#)

6213 Nimrod (“hunter”): see Genesis 10:8–10

[Return to text.](#)

6214 cast out, get rid of

[Return to text.](#)

6215 peace, harmony

[Return to text.](#)

6216 contempt, scorn

[Return to text.](#)

6217 Shinar

[Return to text.](#)

6218 pitchy

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²¹⁹ whirlpool

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²²⁰ determine, decide

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²²¹ the Tower of Babel: see Genesis 10:10 and 11:1–9

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²²² differing, unstable

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²²³ erase, obliterate, sweep away, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²²⁴ scatter

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²²⁵ discordant, babbling

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²²⁶ rage, complain

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²²⁷ i.e., the act of building, *not* the structure being built

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²²⁸ “babble” (Babel)

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²²⁹ gift

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²³⁰ intrusion

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²³¹ stops, remains

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²³² assault

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²³³ waste, pain

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²³⁴ starve to death

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²³⁵ seeking

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²³⁶ notwithstanding

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²³⁷ capture, seize, snatch

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²³⁸ authority, direction

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²³⁹ enslave

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁴⁰ Ham, father of Canaan

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁴¹ see Genesis 9:22–27

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁴² depraved, corrupt, malignant

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁴³ special, singular

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁴⁴ the Jews

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁴⁵ Abraham

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁴⁶ deigns, condescends

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁴⁷ immediately

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁴⁸ west of the Euphrates and south of Babylon; the Chaldeans, a Semitic tribe, had migrated to southern Babylonia

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁴⁹ east of the Euphrates, in northwestern Mesopotamia

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁵⁰ those in servitude: servants

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁵¹ Shechem, a city in central Palestine, north of Jerusalem

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁵² in Syria, on the River Orontes

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁵³ Mt. Hermon, to the north: the highest peak in Palestine

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁵⁴ the Mediterranean

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁵⁵ in Haifa, now in Israel

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁵⁶ double-sourced

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁵⁷ landmark, boundary, border

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁵⁸ Abraham's

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁵⁹ see I Chronicles 5:23

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁶⁰ Christ

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁶¹ crush, smash, break

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁶² soon

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁶³ due time = in the time that, properly, it should take

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁶⁴ Isaac

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁶⁵ Jacob

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁶⁶ emptying

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁶⁷ to lodge, to dwell temporarily

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁶⁸ Joseph

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁶⁹ scarcity, famine

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁷⁰ subsequent, following

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁷¹ (1) occupant, (2) stranger, foreign

[Return to text.](#)

6272 [bisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

6273 from

[Return to text.](#)

6274 enslavement

[Return to text.](#)

6275 refuses

[Return to text.](#)

6276 not poured out from bodies

[Return to text.](#)

6277 thrusting/forcing in

[Return to text.](#)

6278 plague

[Return to text.](#)

6279 boils

[Return to text.](#)

6280 blisters

[Return to text.](#)

6281 cover, bulge with

[Return to text.](#)

6282 also all

[Return to text.](#)

6283 turn, sweep

[Return to text.](#)

6284 darkness

[Return to text.](#)

6285 potent, obvious

[Return to text.](#)

6286 Pharaoh

[Return to text.](#)

6287 not long before

[Return to text.](#)

6288 sent away

[Return to text.](#)

6289 army

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁹⁰ his former guests, the Jews

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁹¹ as if

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁹² controlled

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁹³ column

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁹⁴ take away, clear off, disappear (make disappear)

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁹⁵ unyielding, hardened in evil, insensible to moral influence

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁹⁶ prevents, wards off, prohibits

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁹⁷ in the space between the two groups, Egyptians and Jews

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁹⁸ derange

[Return to text.](#)

⁶²⁹⁹ Pharaoh's

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁰⁰ shatter, smash, break

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁰¹ in battle formation

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁰² troops, soldiers

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁰³ [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁰⁴ of the Red Sea

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁰⁵ quickest, shortest, most direct

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁰⁶ penetrating

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁰⁷ thus called to arms

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁰⁸ the Jews

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁰⁹ not experienced (as the Canaanites definitely were) in war

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³¹⁰ lead/send them

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³¹¹ “not trained (or, by implication, not having anything to do with) weapons and armor (warfare), unless people are drawn on (led on) by reckless impetuosity”

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³¹² create, initiate, begin building

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³¹³ council of seventy elders, chosen by Moses: see Exodus 24:1–9

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³¹⁴ derived from the twelve sons of Jacob

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³¹⁵ belong

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³¹⁶ symbols

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³¹⁷ images

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³¹⁸ Christ

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³¹⁹ smash, crush

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³²⁰ narrate, tell, speak

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³²¹ image, emblem

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³²² command

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³²³ coffer, chest

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³²⁴ divine law

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³²⁵ mercy-seat of gold = golden covering

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³²⁶ the ark? God Himself?

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³²⁷ i.e., one lamp for each of the seven known planets

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³²⁸ see Joshua 10:12

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³²⁹ Israel

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³³⁰ subdue, overcome

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³³¹ depravity

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³³² expose, reveal, show

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³³³ (1) insubstantial, (2) foreshadowing (Christ)

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³³⁴ atonements

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³³⁵ so that

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³³⁶ verification, i.e., freeing (justifying) man from the penalty of (original) sin, man being thus made righteous

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³³⁷ outward rites

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³³⁸ carry out, execute, accomplish

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³³⁹ (1) can be plainly seen, shown, (2) is declared

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁴⁰ only

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁴¹ confidently yield themselves up to

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁴² trained, educated

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁴³ images

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁴⁴ Christ

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁴⁵ except

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁴⁶ David

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁴⁷ same

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁴⁸ tell, declare, relate

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁴⁹ David's

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁵⁰ Solomon

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁵¹ recorded

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁵² “added (heaped) to the sum (total: large) of the people's (the popular) faults”

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁵³ as to = so as to make Him

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁵⁴ to be a

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁵⁵ the Babylonian Captivity, 606–536 B. C.

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁵⁶ bearing in mind

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁵⁷ established: as fixed as

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁵⁸ Cyrus, Darius, Artaxerxes

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁵⁹ made ready, so inclined

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁶⁰ rebuild

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁶¹ poor/low

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁶² condition, degree of prosperity

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁶³ watch over, look after

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁶⁴ strive for

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁶⁵ priests

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁶⁶ Antipater (a Roman appointee), father of Herod

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁶⁷ obstructed, hindered, excluded

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁶⁸ majestic

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁶⁹ Bethlehem

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁷⁰ in military formation

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁷¹ overburdened

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁷² outlet

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁷³ prefect

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁷⁴ capital bruise = injury to his head

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁷⁵ fatal (“capital” also = “fatal, mortal”)

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁷⁶ [bisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

6377 having spatial position

[Return to text.](#)

6378 defeat, trample

[Return to text.](#)

6379 Christ

[Return to text.](#)

6380 remedy

[Return to text.](#)

6381 Satan's

[Return to text.](#)

6382 lack

[Return to text.](#)

6383 satisfied, repaid

[Return to text.](#)

6384 Christ

[Return to text.](#)

6385 shameful

[Return to text.](#)

6386 credited (to them)

[Return to text.](#)

6387 though their merits are based on

[Return to text.](#)

6388 lawful

[Return to text.](#)

6389 actions, deeds

[Return to text.](#)

6390 reviled

[Return to text.](#)

6391 full payment of a debt

[Return to text.](#)

6392 seize wrongfully

[Return to text.](#)

6393 [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

6394 profit, good thing, favor, kind deed

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁹⁵ (1) accept, (2) submit to

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁹⁶ crush, smash, break, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁹⁷ temporary, in merely human time

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁹⁸ their death

[Return to text.](#)

⁶³⁹⁹ lifting/floating/carrying through the air

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁰⁰ definite, fixed

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁰¹ always

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁰² his salvation = the saving of the soul which Christ brings to men

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁰³ fully flowing

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁰⁴ Christ

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁰⁵ (1) celebrating, (2) being victorious

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁰⁶ Satan's

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁰⁷ in Hell

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁰⁸ defeated, overthrown, brought to nought

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁰⁹ those with distinguished reputations

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴¹⁰ the living

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴¹¹ finish, final stage

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴¹² filled with, full of

[Return to text.](#)

6413 from

[Return to text.](#)

6414 be brought forth/produced

[Return to text.](#)

6415 induced (in others)

[Return to text.](#)

6416 be plentiful, overflow

[Return to text.](#)

6417 become of, happen to

[Return to text.](#)

6418 the Holy Spirit

[Return to text.](#)

6419 destroy

[Return to text.](#)

6420 endured, sustained, maintained

[Return to text.](#)

6421 endow, invest, supply

[Return to text.](#)

6422 languages

[Return to text.](#)

6423 place

[Return to text.](#)

6424 profit, gain

[Return to text.](#)

6425 except

[Return to text.](#)

6426 the “wolves” of the Roman Catholic Church

[Return to text.](#)

6427 bodily, fleshly, corporeal

[Return to text.](#)

6428 left them enrolled = were (had been) left them in written form
(recorded)

[Return to text.](#)

6429 venture, dare

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴³⁰ consider, judge

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴³¹ fallacious, outwardly respectable

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴³² formalities, ceremonies

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴³³ fulfilled

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴³⁴ withdraw

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴³⁵ respite

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴³⁶ at last, finally

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴³⁷ flaming, burning

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴³⁸ duration

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴³⁹ in conclusion

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁴⁰ [bisyllabic? (the etymology being “see” + “er,” and Michael being, by God’s specific direction, here a seer into the future)]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁴¹ traversed

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁴² course, movement

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁴³ (1) through all, (2) even more than

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁴⁴ always

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁴⁵ overthrowing

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁴⁶ in conclusion

[Return to text.](#)

6447 suitable, corresponding [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

6448 highest place, peak

[Return to text.](#)

6449 vision

[Return to text.](#)

6450 strictly defined/expressed

[Return to text.](#)

6451 demands, requires, insists on

[Return to text.](#)

6452 look at

[Return to text.](#)

6453 at whose front = in front of whom

[Return to text.](#)

6454 the act of departure

[Return to text.](#)

6455 actively

[Return to text.](#)

6456 foretelling

[Return to text.](#)

6457 arranged, adjusted, ordered

[Return to text.](#)

6458 humble, submissive

[Return to text.](#)

6459 season fit = appropriate time

[Return to text.](#)

6460 share

[Return to text.](#)

6461 agreed, of one mind

[Return to text.](#)

6462 serious and sustained reflection

[Return to text.](#)

6463 inform, give counsel

[Return to text.](#)

6464 favorable, gracious

[Return to text.](#)

6465 granted

[Return to text.](#)

6466 brilliant, flashing, swift [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

6467 marsh

[Return to text.](#)

6468 raised [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

6469 vehement, intense, merciless

[Return to text.](#)

6470 waves (of heat)

[Return to text.](#)

6471 like

[Return to text.](#)

6472 scorched

[Return to text.](#)

6473 scorch

[Return to text.](#)

6474 (of Eden)

[Return to text.](#)

6475 moderate

[Return to text.](#)

6476 reluctant, tardy, dawdling

[Return to text.](#)

6477 lying below

[Return to text.](#)

6478 i.e., then the angel (and his troop) disappeared

[Return to text.](#)

6479 some time ago

[Return to text.](#)

6480 tested

[Return to text.](#)

6481 hermit

[Return to text.](#)

6482 accustomed to, in the habit of

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁸³ ready

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁸⁴ favored, fortunate

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁸⁵ full summed = feathers fully formed/grown, i.e., poetic capacity fully matured

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁸⁶ beyond

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁸⁷ John the Baptist

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁸⁸ sublimely majestic, commanding reverence

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁸⁹ reverent wonder

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁹⁰ considered

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁹¹ unnoticed

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁹² discovered

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁹³ his worthier = (1) Christ being worthier than John, or (2) one who is his (John's) worthier; the meaning is unchanged either way

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁹⁴ Christ

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁹⁵ Satan

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁹⁶ celebrated [adjective]—but does it mean that the assembly is “famed” or that Satan did not want to be (“would not be”) less famed?

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁹⁷ Satan is “nigh thunder-struck” by God's voice

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁴⁹⁸ Satan “surveys” (looks carefully at, examines) Christ, who is “the exalted man”

[Return to text.](#)

6499 filled

[Return to text.](#)

6500 residence, dwelling, citadel

[Return to text.](#)

6501 of the highest rank (*not* “equals”)

[Return to text.](#)

6502 wreathed

[Return to text.](#)

6503 council

[Return to text.](#)

6504 frightened

[Return to text.](#)

6505 serious, morose

[Return to text.](#)

6506 as are counted

[Return to text.](#)

6507 world, earth

[Return to text.](#)

6508 easily led

[Return to text.](#)

6509 awaiting

[Return to text.](#)

6510 in Milton’s time, “shall” still carried the sense of “will have to, must”

[Return to text.](#)

6511 attained, accomplished

[Return to text.](#)

6512 endure, undergo

[Return to text.](#)

6513 “bruised”

[Return to text.](#)

6514 shattered, broken

[Return to text.](#)

6515 as a forerunner

[Return to text.](#)

6516 claims, aspires

[Return to text.](#)

6517 Christ

[Return to text.](#)

6518 is He

[Return to text.](#)

6519 holds

[Return to text.](#)

6520 Satan does not yet identify *this* Son of God with Christ

[Return to text.](#)

6521 features, characteristics

[Return to text.](#)

6522 peril

[Return to text.](#)

6523 allows, permits

[Return to text.](#)

6524 well put together/hidden

[Return to text.](#)

6525 position of leadership/chief importance

[Return to text.](#)

6526 somber, malign

[Return to text.](#)

6527 warlike enterprise

[Return to text.](#)

6528 convey, carry

[Return to text.](#)

6529 no time was then = at that moment there was no time

[Return to text.](#)

6530 absolute ruler

[Return to text.](#)

6531 prospered, been successful

[Return to text.](#)

6532 smooth

[Return to text.](#)

6533 equipped

[Return to text.](#)

6534 corrupt, undermine

[Return to text.](#)

6535 he whom

[Return to text.](#)

6536 Satan's

[Return to text.](#)

6537 contrary unweeting = not knowing to the contrary

[Return to text.](#)

6538 assembly

[Return to text.](#)

6539 occupied, familiar with [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

6540 she doubting

[Return to text.](#)

6541 cover

[Return to text.](#)

6542 exhibit, set forth

[Return to text.](#)

6543 try, attempt

[Return to text.](#)

6544 to be less arrogant/prideful

[Return to text.](#)

6545 Satan's

[Return to text.](#)

6546 than Job

[Return to text.](#)

6547 trickery, deceit

[Return to text.](#)

6548 employ

[Return to text.](#)

6549 Christ

[Return to text.](#)

6550 beginnings

[Return to text.](#)

6551 [four syllables, first and third accented, third elided]

[Return to text.](#)

6552 patient/long-suffering endurance

[Return to text.](#)

6553 body, bulk

[Return to text.](#)

6554 so that

[Return to text.](#)

6555 marveling

[Return to text.](#)

6556 rhythms

[Return to text.](#)

6557 theme, subject

[Return to text.](#)

6558 combat

[Return to text.](#)

6559 lead astray

[Return to text.](#)

6560 hymns

[Return to text.](#)

6561 prayers

[Return to text.](#)

6562 sang

[Return to text.](#)

6563 Bet ha-Arabah, biblical site near the north shore of the Dead Sea [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

6564 proclaim, make public

[Return to text.](#)

6565 ripe, full-grown

[Return to text.](#)

6566 keep company/live with

[Return to text.](#)

6567 the paths

[Return to text.](#)

6568 consorting, fitting, harmonizing

[Return to text.](#)

6569 Christ too seems unsure of his prior existence

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁷⁰ the Jews’

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁷¹ wondered at

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁷² time, period

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁷³ extinguish, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁷⁴ justice

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁷⁵ divine, celestial

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁷⁶ privately

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁷⁷ above example = unprecedented

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁷⁸ sheep pens

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁷⁹ feeding trough in a stable

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁸⁰ place

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁸¹ the star’s

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁸² formed, carved, set

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁸³ see Luke 2:25–35

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁸⁴ see Luke 2:36–38

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁸⁵ similar

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁸⁶ considered, studied, meditated upon

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁵⁸⁷ learning experience, endeavor, affliction, temptation

[Return to text.](#)

6588 established previously

[Return to text.](#)

6589 forerunner

[Return to text.](#)

6590 not easily, with difficulty, barely

[Return to text.](#)

6591 prevailed upon

[Return to text.](#)

6592 pouring, washing

[Return to text.](#)

6593 highest point

[Return to text.](#)

6594 complete

[Return to text.](#)

6595 hidden, retired, unknown

[Return to text.](#)

6596 dark, gloomy

[Return to text.](#)

6597 (1) shadows, (2) dark figures, ghosts, specters

[Return to text.](#)

6598 commend, advise

[Return to text.](#)

6599 the best

[Return to text.](#)

6600 soon, in a little while

[Return to text.](#)

6601 covering, shelter

[Return to text.](#)

6602 keep, protect

[Return to text.](#)

6603 lodged, sheltered

[Return to text.](#)

6604 he neither

[Return to text.](#)

6605 tame, gentle

[Return to text.](#)

6606 hurtful, harmful

[Return to text.](#)

6607 looked fixedly/fiercely

[Return to text.](#)

6608 at a distance

[Return to text.](#)

6609 Christ

[Return to text.](#)

6610 alone

[Return to text.](#)

6611 consumed, exhausted

[Return to text.](#)

6612 for that = because

[Return to text.](#)

6613 desert, wilderness

[Return to text.](#)

6614 forced, compelled

[Return to text.](#)

6615 public report, rumor

[Return to text.](#)

6616 rustic

[Return to text.](#)

6617 stubble, stumps

[Return to text.](#)

6618 doubt

[Return to text.](#)

6619 strict discipline, harshness

[Return to text.](#)

6620 not permissive

[Return to text.](#)

6621 dismal

[Return to text.](#)

6622 travel around

[Return to text.](#)

6623 roam

[Return to text.](#)

6624 recourse

[Return to text.](#)

6625 of Uz, in eastern Palestine

[Return to text.](#)

6626 test

[Return to text.](#)

6627 make clear [trisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

6628 king of Israel, who meets his death after a weltering confusion of prophecies: see I Kings 22

[Return to text.](#)

6629 Ramoth-Gilead, fortified position east of Jordan

[Return to text.](#)

6630 hesitating, balking

[Return to text.](#)

6631 Ahab's

[Return to text.](#)

6632 caused to chatter

[Return to text.](#)

6633 had in charge = was supposed to do

[Return to text.](#)

6634 [trisyllabic, accent on second]

[Return to text.](#)

6635 [bisyllabic, second elided]

[Return to text.](#)

6636 “What can I feel less than desire....? (reading “less” as an adverb) or “How could anything make me do less than desire....? (reading “less” not as an adverb but as a verb, said by the O.E.D. to have become obsolete when Milton was twenty-five years old)

[Return to text.](#)

6637 attentively

[Return to text.](#)

6638 i.e., copartner if not “disposer” (one who controls)

[Return to text.](#)

6639 predictions, omens

[Return to text.](#)

6640 shares

[Return to text.](#)

6641 grief

[Return to text.](#)

6642 private, individual

[Return to text.](#)

6643 united with me

[Return to text.](#)

6644 constituted

[Return to text.](#)

6645 [four syllables, first and third accented?]

[Return to text.](#)

6646 slave

[Return to text.](#)

6647 stared at

[Return to text.](#)

6648 think evil of

[Return to text.](#)

6649 as good = they might/just as well not have known at all

[Return to text.](#)

6650 flee

[Return to text.](#)

6651 superintending

[Return to text.](#)

6652 tiny point

[Return to text.](#)

6653 whining

[Return to text.](#)

6654 cut short

[Return to text.](#)

6655 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

6656 heathen

[Return to text.](#)

6657 “at least, if you are inquired for, it shall be”

[Return to text.](#)

6658 indignation

[Return to text.](#)

6659 volition [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

6660 wrung, extorted

[Return to text.](#)

6661 someone who is

[Return to text.](#)

6662 profit, advantage

[Return to text.](#)

6663 renounce, recant, disclaim

[Return to text.](#)

6664 (1) restraint, (2) rebuff

[Return to text.](#)

6665 free

[Return to text.](#)

6666 spoken, uttered

[Return to text.](#)

6667 sweet-sounding

[Return to text.](#)

6668 characteristic of/belonging to forests or woods

[Return to text.](#)

6669 flute

[Return to text.](#)

6670 authoritative direction/admonition

[Return to text.](#)

6671 marvel at

[Return to text.](#)

6672 courtyards, grounds

[Return to text.](#)

6673 help, serve

[Return to text.](#)

6674 see Numbers 22:5 through 24:25

[Return to text.](#)

6675 corrupt

[Return to text.](#)

6676 still

[Return to text.](#)

6677 scorn

[Return to text.](#)

6678 purpose

[Return to text.](#)

6679 feigned semblance

[Return to text.](#)

6680 earthy

[Return to text.](#)

6681 lying down, resting

[Return to text.](#)

6682 recently

[Return to text.](#)

6683 clearly, distinctly

[Return to text.](#)

6684 lived in lodgings

[Return to text.](#)

6685 see John 1:40

[Return to text.](#)

6686 see John 1:41

[Return to text.](#)

6687 afterward

[Return to text.](#)

6688 displayed, exhibited

[Return to text.](#)

6689 caught up = taken

[Return to text.](#)

6690 Elijah: see 2 Kings 2:1–12

[Return to text.](#)

6691 Bet ha-Arabah, north of the Dead Sea: see John 1:28

[Return to text.](#)

6692 north of the Dead Sea: see Deuteronomy 34:3

[Return to text.](#)

6693 in Samaria: see John 3:23

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁹⁴ Salim, in Samaria: see John 3:23

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁹⁵ stronghold east of the Dead Sea, earlier destroyed but rebuilt by Herod

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁹⁶ the Sea of Galilee

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁹⁷ region east of the Jordan River, between the Sea of Galilee and the Dead Sea

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁹⁸ willows

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁶⁹⁹ laments, complaints

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁰⁰ carried/swept away

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁰¹ withdraw, disappear

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁰² uphold, maintain, justify

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁰³ completed, brought about, done

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁰⁴ consecrated

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁰⁵ (1) foreknowledge, beneficent care, (2) divine intervention

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁰⁶ Christ

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁰⁷ strength

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁰⁸ greeting

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁰⁹ raised

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷¹⁰ remarkable

[Return to text.](#)

6711 cold

[Return to text.](#)

6712 Herod

[Return to text.](#)

6713 not found

[Return to text.](#)

6714 acknowledged

[Return to text.](#)

6715 see Luke 2:34

[Return to text.](#)

6716 murmur, complain

[Return to text.](#)

6717 pondered

[Return to text.](#)

6718 hides, keeps dark

[Return to text.](#)

6719 extraordinarily

[Return to text.](#)

6720 heavenly greeting

[Return to text.](#)

6721 completion

[Return to text.](#)

6722 traversing, traveling, treading

[Return to text.](#)

6723 alone

[Return to text.](#)

6724 purpose, aim

[Return to text.](#)

6725 statement made in a preliminary way, hint

[Return to text.](#)

6726 undisturbed

[Return to text.](#)

6727 resourceless

[Return to text.](#)

6728 assembly

[Return to text.](#)

6729 examined, tested

[Return to text.](#)

6730 enticement

[Return to text.](#)

6731 similar

[Return to text.](#)

6732 a “womanizing” demon: Asmodeus in *Paradise Lost*, Book 4, line 146,
and Asmodai, in *Paradise Lost*, Book 6, line 365

[Return to text.](#)

6733 demonic womanizer/seducer, who usually descended upon sleeping
women

[Return to text.](#)

6734 surpassing

[Return to text.](#)

6735 well-spoken

[Return to text.](#)

6736 mixed

[Return to text.](#)

6737 dreadful, frightful

[Return to text.](#)

6738 temperament

[Return to text.](#)

6739 enervate, weaken

[Return to text.](#)

6740 bring to nought, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

6741 magnet

[Return to text.](#)

6742 irregular

[Return to text.](#)

6743 dote on = be infatuated with

[Return to text.](#)

6744 complexion

[Return to text.](#)

6745 dalliance

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁴⁶ narration

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁴⁷ nymph, attendant on Artemis, twin sister of Apollo [trisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁴⁸ daughter of Oceanus, mother of Atlas [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁴⁹ nymph-huntress who fled from all would-be lovers [bisyllabic, first accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁵⁰ mother of Dionysus, by Zeus [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁵¹ Antiope, seduced and impregnated by Zeus [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁵² rescued from a satyr by Poseidon, who then seduced her [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁵³ nymph pursued by Pan and transformed into a reed to escape him [bisyllabic, first accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁵⁴ transgressions, escapades

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁵⁵ god of the wild woods

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁵⁶ habits, practices

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁵⁷ Alexander the Great [trisyllabic, second accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁵⁸ carelessly

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁵⁹ Scipio Africanus, 236–183 B. C., who triumphed in Spain and in the Second Punic War

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁶⁰ sent away

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁶¹ a young Spanish captive to whom, it was said, he had been attracted;
she loved someone else

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁶² food

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁶³ intention, plan

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁶⁴ (1) condition, (2) greatness, power

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁶⁵ deliberation

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁶⁶ foolish, insipid

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁶⁷ encompassed

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁶⁸ girdle/belt

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁶⁹ see Homer's *Iliad*, 14:214–18

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁷⁰ i.e., “how one look from his majestic brow (seated as on the top of
virtue’s hill) would....

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁷¹ shame, disapprove

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁷² dejected

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁷³ ostentatious ornament not necessarily composed of, but resembling,
feathers

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁷⁴ whim, caprice

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁷⁵ display of disregard

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁷⁶ confused, destroyed

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁷⁷ is starving

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁷⁸ consent

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁷⁹ signal

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁸⁰ “if there were reason (cause)”

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁸¹ energetic

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁸² for the first time

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁸³ ascribe/attribute to

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁸⁴ as long as

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁸⁵ extreme hunger, starvation

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁸⁶ held intimate mental intercourse

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁸⁷ where God directed Elijah to hide from King Ahab: see 1 Kings 17:2–3

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁸⁸ i.e., in his dream

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁸⁹ lentils, peas, beans (“plain/simple food”)

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁹⁰ at once

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁹¹ lifted (went up)

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁹² have knowledge of

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁷⁹³ view, landscape

[Return to text.](#)

6794 shed, stall

[Return to text.](#)

6795 hollow, valley

[Return to text.](#)

6796 singing

[Return to text.](#)

6797 walks, passageways

[Return to text.](#)

6798 spread out

[Return to text.](#)

6799 of a

[Return to text.](#)

6800 having been taught

[Return to text.](#)

6801 more decorously

[Return to text.](#)

6802 dutifully

[Return to text.](#)

6803 remain, wait, continue

[Return to text.](#)

6804 Hagar: see Genesis 21:14–19

[Return to text.](#)

6805 her son was Ishmael, whose son was Nebaioth: see Genesis 25:12–13

[Return to text.](#)

6806 would have

[Return to text.](#)

6807 Elijah

[Return to text.](#)

6808 thereafter as = according to how

[Return to text.](#)

6809 approve of

[Return to text.](#)

6810 offer, present

[Return to text.](#)

6811 vigor, energy, capacity

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸¹² see Daniel 1:8–16

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸¹³ hesitate, be reluctant

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸¹⁴ need

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸¹⁵ supplied, furnished

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸¹⁶ taste, quality

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸¹⁷ framed (contained)

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸¹⁸ ambergris, at one time used in cooking

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸¹⁹ small freshwater stream

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸²⁰ flowing

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸²¹ reputation

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸²² the Black Sea

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸²³ near Naples

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸²⁴ plain, low

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸²⁵ dainties

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸²⁶ deflected, turned aside

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸²⁷ splendid, magnificent

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸²⁸ tablelike board

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸²⁹ spread abroad, poured out

[Return to text.](#)

6830 slender

[Return to text.](#)

6831 Trojan youth taken by Zeus as his cupbearer

[Return to text.](#)

6832 handsome prince carried off by Hercules

[Return to text.](#)

6833 now...now = first this, then that

[Return to text.](#)

6834 danced

[Return to text.](#)

6835 stood as if they were

[Return to text.](#)

6836 horn of plenty (*corum copiae*): Amalthea was the all-bountiful goat that suckled infant Zeus

[Return to text.](#)

6837 daughters of Night and guardians of the tree that bore golden apples

[Return to text.](#)

6838 told, related

[Return to text.](#)

6839 middle region of Britain: see Chrétien de Troyes, *Lancelot*

[Return to text.](#)

6840 mythical region west of Cornwall, in Britain

[Return to text.](#)

6841 knights of King Arthur's court

[Return to text.](#)

6842 concordant, harmonizing

[Return to text.](#)

6843 a gentle wind, but not so soft as a breeze

[Return to text.](#)

6844 goddess of flowers

[Return to text.](#)

6845 hesitates, fears [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

6846 act of prohibition

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁴⁷ prohibits (under Jewish law)

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁴⁸ food, sustenance, victuals

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁴⁹ courteous, excellent, noble

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁵⁰ attendants, servants

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁵¹ moderately, restrainedly

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁵² push forward

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁵³ careful attention

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁵⁴ splendid, pretentious

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁵⁵ [four syllables, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁵⁶ scorn, disdain

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁵⁷ showy

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁵⁸ dissatisfied

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁵⁹ instead

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁶⁰ appropriately

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁶¹ obvious

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁶² fetched-from-afar

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁶³ completely, entirely

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁶⁴ troublesome, persistent

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁶⁵ (1) temperament, (2) moderation

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁶⁶ management

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁶⁷ poor circumstances

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁶⁸ draw, obtain

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁶⁹ suite, train, company of servants

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁷⁰ or keep

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁷¹ foolish, stupid, giddy

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁷² at

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁷³ ruler of Judea, 63–43 B.C., and Herod's father [four syllables, second and fourth accented?]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁷⁴ Semitic tribe located south of the Dead Sea; traditionally, descendants of Esau, son of Isaac and elder twin of Jacob

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁷⁵ heap up [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁷⁶ exceedingly

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁷⁷ virtue, valor, wisdom

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁷⁸ once gained

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁷⁹ virtue, valor, wisdom

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁸⁰ see Judges 6–8

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁸¹ see Judges 11–12

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁸² David

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁸³ Lucius Quinctius Cincinnatus, legendary hero, called from farming in 458 B.C. and, for urgent military reasons, made dictator; sixteen days later, having won the war, he resigned as dictator and went back to his farm

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁸⁴ Gaius Fabricius Luscinus, consul in the early third century B.C., who refused all bribes, gifts, and favors; after his death, since he left nothing for his daughter's dowry, it was provided by the Senate

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁸⁵ Manius Curius Dentatus, also early third century B.C., was a successful general who gave all booty to the Roman republic and then, like Cincinnatus, retired to his farm

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁸⁶ Marcus Atilius Regulus, captured in the First Punic War (with Carthage) was paroled on condition he present Carthage's demands to Rome and then return; he advised rejection of Carthage's terms, then returned as he had agreed, and was tortured to death: see Horace, *Odes* 3:5

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁸⁷ lacking, missing

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁸⁸ snare, trap

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁸⁹ diminish

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁹⁰ sharpness

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁹¹ anything that

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁹² similar

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁹³ "yet not for that reason is"

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁸⁹⁴ crown

[Return to text.](#)

6895 every

[Return to text.](#)

6896 shows, remains

[Return to text.](#)

6897 governs, controls

[Return to text.](#)

6898 [adjective, accent on first syllable]

[Return to text.](#)

6899 protecting, guarding

[Return to text.](#)

6900 noble

[Return to text.](#)

6901 i.e., to give up a kingdom

[Return to text.](#)

6902 high-souled, nobly valiant

[Return to text.](#)

6903 receive, lay claim to: i.e., nobler to give or refuse than to take a kingdom

[Return to text.](#)

6904 to be without, omitted

[Return to text.](#)

6905 confused, perplexed

[Return to text.](#)

6906 (1) proven wrong, (2) futile

[Return to text.](#)

6907 (1) convicted, (2) vanquished, overcome

[Return to text.](#)

6908 flawed, unsound

[Return to text.](#)

6909 direction

[Return to text.](#)

6910 summoning up, regaining control of

[Return to text.](#)

6911 Christ

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹¹² ask advice/counsel of

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹¹³ see Leviticus 8:8: sacred means of divination attached to (not necessarily set into) the high priest's breastplate, though exactly what the Urim and Thummim were (both words = grammatically plural) is not known

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹¹⁴ [bisyllabic]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹¹⁵ special preparation/readiness

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹¹⁶ stand firm, hold out

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹¹⁷ i.e., though there are many fighting "against thy few in arms"

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹¹⁸ professing

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹¹⁹ upright, uplifted, exalted

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹²⁰ having been brought to the temperament/state of mind

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹²¹ Alexander the Great

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹²² kingdom of Persia, founded by Cyrus and overthrown by Alexander at Arbela in 331 B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹²³ in Spain, when Scipio was probably less than thirty years old

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹²⁴ Mithradates—though by then (66 B.C.) Pompey had reached the age of forty

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹²⁵ Julius Caesar

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹²⁶ seek

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹²⁷ splendid display

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹²⁸ what are

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹²⁹ swarm

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹³⁰ valued

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹³¹ separately, individually

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹³² produced

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹³³ declares

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹³⁴ Alexander the Great was so identified

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹³⁵ Romulus was so identified

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹³⁶ reveal, show

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹³⁷ morally ugly/perverved

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹³⁸ Scipio Africanus

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹³⁹ Carthaginian

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁴⁰ prove

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁴¹ am from, came

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁴² en masse, without distinction

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁴³ i.e., and with reason

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁴⁴ thankful blessing

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁴⁵ false

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁴⁶ stripped

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁴⁷ goodness, kindness

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁴⁸ Roman emperor, A.D. 14–37

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁴⁹ He caused the Hasmonean uprising by plundering Temple treasures, desecrating the altar, and more

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁵⁰ Judah Maccabeus, who led the Hasmonean uprising; he was born in Modin

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁵¹ opportunity's

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁵² tortured

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁵³ peaceful

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁵⁴ intervention, mediation

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁵⁵ Saul: see I Samuel 9ff.

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁵⁶ leave, give up

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁵⁷ beginnings

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁵⁸ i.e., the mountain's

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁵⁹ the Tigris and the Euphrates

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁶⁰ open, level country

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁶¹ lesser, smaller

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁶² grain

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁶³ soil

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁶⁴ view

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁶⁵ without springs or headsprings (sources of rivers)

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁶⁶ (1) hastened, (2) gotten where we wanted to go

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁶⁷ Armenian river, flowing into the Caspian Sea

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁶⁸ unapproachable

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁶⁹ desert

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁷⁰ capital city of Assyrian empire after about 1100B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁷¹ king of Assyria, husband of Semiramis

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁷² king of Assyria, d. 722 B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁷³ in 726B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁷⁴ immense city on the Euphrates

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁷⁵ just as

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁷⁶ Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylonia, 605–562B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁷⁷ king of Persia: Cyrus captured Babylon in 538B.C. and released the captive Jews

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁷⁸ in southern Persia: residence and burial place of Cyrus, Darius, Xerxes, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁷⁹ northeast of Persepolis, ancient capital of Bactria, now in Afghanistan

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁸⁰ summer residence of Darius

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁸¹ Parthian capital, southeast of the Caspian Sea [five syllables, first, third, and fifth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁸² Shushan, city at northwestern tip of Persian Gulf, capital of Susiana/Elam and later of Persia

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁸³ river east of Tigris, flowing through Susa/Shushan

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁸⁴ Macedonian

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁸⁵ seminomadic culture in western Asia, famous for bow-wielding cavalry

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁸⁶ capital of Selucid empire, founded by Seleucus I Nicator; located on the Tigris

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁸⁷ city in northwestern Mesopotamia, south of the Tigris

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁸⁸ city in Armenia, southeast of the Black Sea; located on the Araxes River

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁸⁹ town at northeastern end of Persian Gulf, near the juncture of the Tigris and the Euphrates

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁹⁰ city on the Tigris, near Seleucia [trisyllabic, first and third accented; first letter silent]

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁹¹ founder of Parthian empire, ca. 248 B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁹² (1) extravagant, (2) unchaste, lewd

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁹³ city on the Orontes River, capital of Syria

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁹⁴ fierce “barbarian” people living north and east of the Black and Caspian Seas

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁹⁵ region northeast of Parthia

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁹⁶ fearsomeness

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁹⁷ lozenge/diamond-shaped military formation

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁹⁸ half-rhomb military formation

[Return to text.](#)

⁶⁹⁹⁹ i.e., with most of the army concentrated in the center

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁰⁰ Christ

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁰¹ splendor, pomp, display

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁰² swift

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁰³ border

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁰⁴ eastern Parthia, a region west of the Indus River

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁰⁵ Kandahar, in modern Afghanistan

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁰⁶ northern Parthia, between Bactria and Parthia

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁰⁷ Hyrcania: province of ancient Persian empire, southeast of the Caspian Sea

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁰⁸ region in the Caucasus, *not* Spain

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁰⁹ Media-Atropatena, west of Parthia, between the Caspian Sea and Armenia

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰¹⁰ near Nineveh, south of Armenia, on the Tigris: part of Assyria

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰¹¹ see footnote 104, above

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰¹² southeastern Persia: Susa was its capital

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰¹³ Basra, north of Persian Gulf, south of Susa

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰¹⁴ port, harbor

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰¹⁵ lacked

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰¹⁶ foot soldiers

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰¹⁷ an army had two horns/wings

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰¹⁸ soldiers in armor

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰¹⁹ loaded

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰²⁰ soldier-diggers

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰²¹ flat, level, smooth, even

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰²² one-humped swift camels

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰²³ filled

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰²⁴ Tatar king in Boiardo's romance *Orlando Innamorato* ("Roland in Love")

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰²⁵ fortress of King Gallophrone, Angelica's father

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰²⁶ bravest, most chivalric

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰²⁷ pagan

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰²⁸ high nobles

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰²⁹ pressed forward

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰³⁰ win over

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰³¹ make secure/safe [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰³² contemptible, small

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰³³ note

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰³⁴ progenitor, ancestor

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰³⁵ descendants of the tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh, religiously and politically at odds with the Jews

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰³⁶ molest, injure

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰³⁷ Hyrcanus II, made king of Judah by Rome; he was attacked by Antigonus; both were abducted by Parthians

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰³⁸ in spite of

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰³⁹ alliance, treaty

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁴⁰ modern Khabar, near the Euphrates: see 2 Kings 17:6, 18:11

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁴¹ inhabitants of Media, in Parthia

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁴² i.e., those of Joseph's sons, Ephraim and Manasseh: see note 130, above

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁴³ political cunning

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁴⁴ praiseworthy, fair-seeming

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁴⁵ remiss, neglectful

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁴⁶ scheming, crafty

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁴⁷ evidence

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁴⁸ wield

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁴⁹ confronted (him) as

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁵⁰ see 1 Chronicles 21:1ff.

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁵¹ counting, making a census of

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁵² except

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁵³ idle, useless, of no significance/value

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁵⁴ look to, have a care for

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁵⁵ with blind speed

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁵⁶ go after, pursue

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁵⁷ fit, suitable

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁵⁸ polished

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁵⁹ little won

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁶⁰ heal, make good

[Return to text.](#)

7061 defeats, frustrates

[Return to text.](#)

7062 new wine in process

[Return to text.](#)

7063 splinters, chips

[Return to text.](#)

7064 battering

[Return to text.](#)

7065 despairing

[Return to text.](#)

7066 central Italy: Tyrrhenian Sea to the south, Apennine Range to the northwest, the plain split by the River Tiber

[Return to text.](#)

7067 northern

[Return to text.](#)

7068 Rome

[Return to text.](#)

7069 galleries, colonnades

[Return to text.](#)

7070 [trisyllabic, first and third accented]

[Return to text.](#)

7071 memorial structures, commemorating military success

[Return to text.](#)

7072 arches

[Return to text.](#)

7073 noteworthy (interesting)

[Return to text.](#)

7074 citadel (fortress) built on top of a hill

[Return to text.](#)

7075 majestic, dignified

[Return to text.](#)

7076 part of the Capitoline Hill

[Return to text.](#)

7077 of limits/bounds

[Return to text.](#)

7078 visible

[Return to text.](#)

7079 adjusted, placed

[Return to text.](#)

7080 optical instrument

[Return to text.](#)

7081 craftsmen [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

7082 stream, flowing

[Return to text.](#)

7083 magistrates

[Return to text.](#)

7084 governors of provinces

[Return to text.](#)

7085 attendants carrying bundles of rods with an ax wrapped inside, the blade projecting

[Return to text.](#)

7086 symbols

[Return to text.](#)

7087 one-tenth of a legion

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁸⁸ cavalry: one-tenth of a wing (flank)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁸⁹ garments, dress, clothing

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁹⁰ from Rome to Brindisi, seaport in southern Italy

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁹¹ from Rome north to the Adriatic Sea

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁹² Aswan, in southern Egypt on the Upper Nile

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁹³ region in the Upper Nile, considered (but in fact not) an island

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁹⁴ North African king, ca. 105B.C.

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁹⁵ i.e., the Mediterranean Sea off the northwest African coast

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁹⁶ Chersonese: the Malay Peninsula

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁹⁷ Ceylon or Sumatra

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁹⁸ turbans

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁰⁹⁹ Gaul (now France)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁰⁰ Cadiz

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁰¹ people east of Germany, between the Vistula and the Volga

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁰² the Sea of Azov, northeast of and connected to the Black Sea

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁰³ politeness

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁰⁴ distant, remote, secluded

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁰⁵ Tiberius

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁰⁶ island south of Naples

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁰⁷ Roman province (Naples, Pompeii, etc.)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁰⁸ Sejanus, finally executed in A.D. 29

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁰⁹ [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹¹⁰ showy

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹¹¹ of citrus wood

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹¹² marble from the Atlas mountains in North Africa

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹¹³ three then-famous Italian wines, from Sezza, near Rome, and Cales and Falernia, near Mt. Vesuvius

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹¹⁴ two then-famous Greek wines: see Horace, *Odes* 3:19

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹¹⁵ ornaments

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹¹⁶ foreign, bizarre, uncouth

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹¹⁷ pillaging

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹¹⁸ (1) arrogant, (2) outrageous

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹¹⁹ unchaste

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹²⁰ because of

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹²¹ because of

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹²² (1) theatrical performances, (2) their daily existence

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹²³ overly refined, soft

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹²⁴ “besides my own”

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹²⁵ shameless

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹²⁶ fussy, fastidious

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹²⁷ always

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹²⁸ submit to

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹²⁹ liberty, licence

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹³⁰ see Exodus 20:2–3, Deuteronomy 6:12–15, and Matthew 4:8–10

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹³¹ propose

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹³² grant, gift

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹³³ test

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹³⁴ state

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹³⁵ the lesser rulers

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹³⁶ i.e., blowing from the four quarters of the earth

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹³⁷ called: that is, Satan is currently called god both of earth and of Hell

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹³⁸ test

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹³⁹ devoted

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁴⁰ most authoritative

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁴¹ “Then spake Jesus.... saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses’ seat.... Matthew 23:1–2

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁴² see Luke 2:42–49

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁴³ contained

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁴⁴ the first five books of the Old Testament

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁴⁵ heathen, pagans

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁴⁶ to admiration: wonderfully

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁴⁷ appropriate [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁴⁸ weapons

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁴⁹ convinced

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁵⁰ affording a wide view

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁵¹ i.e., either “native” or “hospitable” to those not native

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁵² (1) niche, coastal indentation, (2) privacy

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁵³ public park northwest of Athens

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁵⁴ secluded place

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁵⁵ nightingale

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁵⁶ mountain near Athens

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁵⁷ river running from Mt. Hymettus south into the sea

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁵⁸ Aristotle

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁵⁹ developed, produced (as Alexander's tutor)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁶⁰ park east of Athens

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁶¹ Athenian colonnade, with painted frescoes, where Zeno the Stoic taught

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁶² measures, rhythms: the term was used both in music and in poetry

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁶³ attained

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁶⁴ Aeolic: Greek dialect used by Sappho, Alcaeus, and others

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁶⁵ songs

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁶⁶ (1) the Doric dialect of Greek, (2) the choral lyric poetry written in that dialect (as, e.g., by Pindar, who was himself a speaker of the Boeotian dialect)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁶⁷ "born in/of Meles": the River Meles, in Asia Minor, was one of Homer's supposed birthplaces [five syllables, first, third, and fifth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁶⁸ Apollo

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁶⁹ claimed

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁷⁰ iambic trimeter, used in dramatic scenes

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁷¹ wisdom

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁷² full of wisdom

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁷³ make one's way, go, resort

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁷⁴ ruled, commanded, controlled, directed

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁷⁵ Athenian harbor building, construction of which was suspended in 339 B.C. because of Demosthenes, 384–322, famous Athenian orator

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁷⁶ thundered

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁷⁷ region between Balkans and Greece: famous for Philip II and his son, Alexander the Great

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁷⁸ Persian king; on Sparta's side in the war against Athens

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁷⁹ dwelling

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁸⁰ sweetly flowing

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁸¹ given an additional name, title, or epithetic description

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁸² Aristotle and his pupils were peripatetic (“walking about”)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁸³ Epicurus and his followers

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁸⁴ consider, meditate upon

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁸⁵ inadequate

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁸⁶ even if

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁸⁷ acknowledged, admitted

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁸⁸ Socrates

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁸⁹ Plato

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁹⁰ Pyrrho, Sceptic founder

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁹¹ Epicurus

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁹² disdaining

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁹³ wishes, desires

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁹⁴ stratagems, contrivances

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁹⁵ claim, assume

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁹⁶ whoever

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁹⁷ as if they were

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁹⁸ select, of special excellence

[Return to text.](#)

⁷¹⁹⁹ eraser

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁰⁰ like

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁰¹ Hebrew

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁰² sprinkled, spread

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁰³ impersonating, playing the part of

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁰⁴ means of adornment/embellishment, veneer, paint

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁰⁵ Satan

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁰⁶ in those cases where

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁰⁷ politicians

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁰⁸ used up, exhausted

[Return to text.](#)

7209 fussily

[Return to text.](#)

7210 massive, copious

[Return to text.](#)

7211 utter, discourse

[Return to text.](#)

7212 whip lashes

[Return to text.](#)

7213 foretell

[Return to text.](#)

7214 perceive distinctly

[Return to text.](#)

7215 guides, gives directions

[Return to text.](#)

7216 instructive red-lettered text printed in prayer book margins

[Return to text.](#)

7217 sullen, dark

[Return to text.](#)

7218 absolute, entire

[Return to text.](#)

7219 calm, patient

[Return to text.](#)

7220 excursion, journey

[Return to text.](#)

7221 severely, very much

[Return to text.](#)

7222 flowing together, meeting

[Return to text.](#)

7223 either Tropic: both circles of the celestial sphere

[Return to text.](#)

7224 premature

[Return to text.](#)

7225 falling

[Return to text.](#)

7226 equivalent

[Return to text.](#)

7227 agitated

[Return to text.](#)

7228 roots extending as far into the earth as the tree extends into the air

[Return to text.](#)

7229 completely

[Return to text.](#)

7230 covered

[Return to text.](#)

7231 stopped

[Return to text.](#)

7232 undismayed

[Return to text.](#)

7233 hood with gray fur, worn by clerics

[Return to text.](#)

7234 caused to subside

[Return to text.](#)

7235 horrible, ugly

[Return to text.](#)

7236 make trial of

[Return to text.](#)

7237 effective

[Return to text.](#)

7238 i.e., clearly sounded/uttered/brought forth

[Return to text.](#)

7239 twig, shoot, slender branches

[Return to text.](#)

7240 welcome, greet, give thanks for

[Return to text.](#)

7241 plan, trick, stratagem

[Return to text.](#)

7242 encounter, meeting

[Return to text.](#)

7243 (1) relaxed, calmed, (2) determined

[Return to text.](#)

7244 outrage [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

7245 his usual

[Return to text.](#)

7246 unconcerned, artless

[Return to text.](#)

7247 befalls

[Return to text.](#)

7248 storming

[Return to text.](#)

7249 gusts, blasts

[Return to text.](#)

7250 the larger universe

[Return to text.](#)

7251 i.e., the human body

[Return to text.](#)

7252 harmful, injurious

[Return to text.](#)

7253 point to, mark

[Return to text.](#)

7254 directed

[Return to text.](#)

7255 time, period, occasion

[Return to text.](#)

7256 exerted influence

[Return to text.](#)

7257 assault

[Return to text.](#)

7258 ill-omened

[Return to text.](#)

7259 portents, omens

[Return to text.](#)

7260 rage

[Return to text.](#)

7261 in what degree = at what level/rank

[Return to text.](#)

7262 parley

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁶³ agreement, treaty

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁶⁴ examine

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁶⁵ disdained

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁶⁶ winged beast, half horse, half griffin (head and wings of an eagle)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁶⁷ lofty

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁶⁸ a large building

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁶⁹ need, demand, call upon

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁷⁰ lineage

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁷¹ knock, strike

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁷² see Psalms 91:11–12 and Matthew 4:5–7

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁷³ son of Poseidon and Gaia (earth)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁷⁴ in North Africa

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁷⁵ Hercules

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁷⁶ defeated

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁷⁷ stood to see = stood intending/hoping to see

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁷⁸ sphinx

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁷⁹ i.e., the riddle

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁸⁰ a river

[Return to text.](#)

7281 struck

[Return to text.](#)

7282 celebrations

[Return to text.](#)

7283 a compact body of persons

[Return to text.](#)

7284 wings

[Return to text.](#)

7285 Jesus

[Return to text.](#)

7286 difficult, uncomfortable

[Return to text.](#)

7287 standing place, position

[Return to text.](#)

7288 joyous, well-pleased

[Return to text.](#)

7289 restored, renewed, mended

[Return to text.](#)

7290 weakened, injured

[Return to text.](#)

7291 hymns

[Return to text.](#)

7292 temporary dwelling

[Return to text.](#)

7293 endowed, supplied

[Return to text.](#)

7294 expel, vanquish

[Return to text.](#)

7295 dispossessed

[Return to text.](#)

7296 streets, roads

[Return to text.](#)

7297 hell

[Return to text.](#)

7298 [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

⁷²⁹⁹ destroyer, slayer, conqueror

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁰⁰ alone, unseen

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁰¹ contestant, actor, champion (of God)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁰² authoritative, important

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁰³ modify, moderate [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁰⁴ bring to, change, restore

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁰⁵ right, proper, correct

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁰⁶ lacking

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁰⁷ operative influences, accomplishments

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁰⁸ medical science/art/practice

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁰⁹ physical/mental states

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³¹⁰ from

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³¹¹ now considered to be by Menander rather than Euripides

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³¹² David Pareus, 1548–1622, German Protestant theologian

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³¹³ i.e., (1) act, (2) chorus, (3) act, (4) chorus, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³¹⁴ in the time

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³¹⁵ a state governed by an absolute ruler/dictator

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³¹⁶ d. ca. A.D. 389; he probably was not the author of *Christ Suffering*

[Return to text.](#)

7317 stage plays, usually comic

[Return to text.](#)

7318 seriousness

[Return to text.](#)

7319 [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

7320 meter

[Return to text.](#)

7321 having no stanzaic patterning

[Return to text.](#)

7322 at that time

[Return to text.](#)

7323 important

[Return to text.](#)

7324 having stanzas (strophes) of varying form

[Return to text.](#)

7325 created?

[Return to text.](#)

7326 extended

[Return to text.](#)

7327 i.e., that which is

[Return to text.](#)

7328 organization, management

[Return to text.](#)

7329 arrangement, ordering

[Return to text.](#)

7330 narrative, story

[Return to text.](#)

7331 boundary, limit

[Return to text.](#)

7332 nearby

[Return to text.](#)

7333 withdrawn

[Return to text.](#)

7334 form, compose

[Return to text.](#)

7335 as much as

[Return to text.](#)

7336 i.e., then visited

[Return to text.](#)

7337 in addition

[Return to text.](#)

7338 follow up on, pursue

[Return to text.](#)

7339 attempt

[Return to text.](#)

7340 in front of

[Return to text.](#)

7341 exercise

[Return to text.](#)

7342 tribe of Dan (Manoa and Samson's tribe), northwest of Judah

[Return to text.](#)

7343 ridge, elevation

[Return to text.](#)

7344 accustomed, in the habit of

[Return to text.](#)

7345 enslaved

[Return to text.](#)

7346 imposed on

[Return to text.](#)

7347 breathe

[Return to text.](#)

7348 unhealthy

[Return to text.](#)

7349 flow, current of air

[Return to text.](#)

7350 improvement

[Return to text.](#)

7351 (1) draw breath, (2) recover

[Return to text.](#)

7352 Philistine national god

[Return to text.](#)

7353 hard-work-requiring

[Return to text.](#)

7354 ignorant/irrational/false belief

[Return to text.](#)

7355 permission

[Return to text.](#)

7356 plebeian, common, general

[Return to text.](#)

7357 unvisited, uncrowded

[Return to text.](#)

7358 crowding, pressing

[Return to text.](#)

7359 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

7360 development, training, education

[Return to text.](#)

7361 special

[Return to text.](#)

7362 work laboriously

[Return to text.](#)

7363 brass, brasslike, as strong as brass

[Return to text.](#)

7364 chains, shackles

[Return to text.](#)

7365 assigned compulsion

[Return to text.](#)

7366 building containing machinery (here water-driven) for processing, manufacturing, etc.

[Return to text.](#)

7367 except

[Return to text.](#)

7368 defect, failure, guilt

[Return to text.](#)

7369 robbed, stripped

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁷⁰ clumsy, awkward

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁷¹ confident

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁷² be subordinated

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁷³ wields

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁷⁴ ordering, management

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁷⁵ (1) probably, (2) appropriately

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁷⁶ goals, purposes

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁷⁷ curse, poison, slayer, ruin

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁷⁸ demand, call for

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁷⁹ ended, destroyed

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁸⁰ (1) silent, (2) always

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁸¹ every, any, all

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁸² see Genesis 1:3

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁸³ (1) first, beginning, (2) primary

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁸⁴ empty, destitute of life/activity

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁸⁵ in which the moon was thought to hide between its old and new phases

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁸⁶ relegated, fastened

[Return to text.](#)

⁷³⁸⁷ visible

[Return to text.](#)

7388 extinguished, destroyed

[Return to text.](#)

7389 at will = at pleasure/choice

[Return to text.](#)

7390 tomb, burial place

[Return to text.](#)

7391 susceptible, amenable, exposed

[Return to text.](#)

7392 two or more

[Return to text.](#)

7393 steps

[Return to text.](#)

7394 sprawled, spread out

[Return to text.](#)

7395 slack, feeble

[Return to text.](#)

7396 clothes

[Return to text.](#)

7397 garments

[Return to text.](#)

7398 in battle formation

[Return to text.](#)

7399 (1) forging, (2) invention

[Return to text.](#)

7400 brass

[Return to text.](#)

7401 upper-body armor

[Return to text.](#)

7402 from the Black Sea region, famous for their metalworking [four syllables, second and fourth accented]

[Return to text.](#)

7403 tunic, upper garment

[Return to text.](#)

7404 too strongly to be resisted/endured (“supported”)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁰⁵ thrust, struck, trampled

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁰⁶ Ascalon: ancient Philistine port city

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁰⁷ rearing and raging

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁰⁸ twisted, writhed, bent, reversed

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁰⁹ covered with layer(s) of metal

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴¹⁰ dirtied, fouled, polluted

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴¹¹ whatever

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴¹² common

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴¹³ unlike the Jews, the Philistines were not circumcised

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴¹⁴ the suffix “lechi” = lifting up/casting away of the jawbone: see Judges 15:14–17

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴¹⁵ mighty

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴¹⁶ Gaza

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴¹⁷ gatepost/stake

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴¹⁸ used to lock the gates

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴¹⁹ south of Jerusalem, more than thirty miles from Gaza

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴²⁰ see Numbers 13:22 (“anak” = “giant,” in Hebrew)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴²¹ on which day only very short journeys were permitted

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴²² and in addition

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴²³ i.e., loaded like

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴²⁴ he whom

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴²⁵ tell in myths/fables

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴²⁶ the giant Atlas

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴²⁷ unite, combine

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴²⁸ uncertain, changeable

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴²⁹ man has been

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴³⁰ more unusual

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴³¹ incoherent

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴³² Eshtaol and Zora: west of Jerusalem, in the valley of Sorec (Sorek) (see line 229, below)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴³³ swellings

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴³⁴ name, inscription on coins

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴³⁵ i.e., most of them

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴³⁶ raise, uplift

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴³⁷ poor, inferior

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴³⁸ have paired = been equal

[Return to text.](#)

7439 crosswise, sideways

[Return to text.](#)

7440 blame, accuse, challenge

[Return to text.](#)

7441 ordering, arranging

[Return to text.](#)

7442 Timnath, Philistine city

[Return to text.](#)

7443 so that

[Return to text.](#)

7444 Samson's parents

[Return to text.](#)

7445 proposed, planned

[Return to text.](#)

7446 inmost

[Return to text.](#)

7447 influence, incitement

[Return to text.](#)

7448 pressed, pushed

[Return to text.](#)

7449 opportunity, the course of events

[Return to text.](#)

7450 stemming from (the marriage)

[Return to text.](#)

7451 foolish

[Return to text.](#)

7452 [three syllables, second stressed]

[Return to text.](#)

7453 showily beautiful

[Return to text.](#)

7454 accomplished: completed, perfected

[Return to text.](#)

7455 because of

[Return to text.](#)

7456 outburst

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁵⁷ gave up = surrendered

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁵⁸ challenge, fight

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁵⁹ negligent

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁶⁰ is in servitude

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁶¹ all alone

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁶² engaged in

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁶³ canvassing: soliciting (as for votes, in an election)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁶⁴ praise, adorn

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁶⁵ “Israel’s governors and heads of tribes”

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁶⁶ assembled

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁶⁷ see Judges 15:8

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁶⁸ fleeing

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁶⁹ planning, considering, estimating

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁷⁰ benefited, profited

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁷¹ besieged

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁷² certain

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁷³ victim, quarry

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁷⁴ small ropes, braided for strength

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁷⁵ common

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁷⁶ a principal Philistine city

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁷⁷ rather than

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁷⁸ Succoth and Peniel: Israelite cities (see Judges 8:4–9)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁷⁹ the tribe of Ephraim, in the hill region north of Bethel

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁸⁰ see Judges 12:1–4

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁸¹ Semitic tribe frequently hostile to Israel

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁸² the Ephraimites were identified by their inability to pronounce the “sh” in “shibboleth”: see Judges 12:5–6

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁸³ “my nation/people (“mine”) may easily neglect me”

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁸⁴ “unless there be those who think God does not exist”

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁸⁵ hidden, unknown

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁸⁶ teacher, learned man

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁸⁷ suspect

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁸⁸ disordered

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁸⁹ enwrapped

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁹⁰ are confused/perplexed/entangled

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁹¹ endless, everlasting

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁹² commands, laws

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁹³ obligation (see Deuteronomy 7:2–5)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁹⁴ lacked

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁹⁵ a person who had vowed to abstain from sex: see Numbers 6:2ff.

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁹⁶ deceitful

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁹⁷ put/go down

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁹⁸ plead, claim

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁴⁹⁹ frees, releases, acquits

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁰⁰ Dalila

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁰¹ heavy, full of care

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁰² consider

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁰³ strange, unfamiliar

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁰⁴ guided, led

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁰⁵ bent

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁰⁶ notable

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁰⁷ destroyer, poison

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁰⁸ splendor

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁰⁹ wished for

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵¹⁰ God

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵¹¹ slave

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵¹² decide, declare

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵¹³ equally

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵¹⁴ biblical Timnath: see Judges 14:1–20

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵¹⁵ corrupted

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵¹⁶ i.e., of gold

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵¹⁷ false

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵¹⁸ major

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵¹⁹ eluded

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵²⁰ a jest/joke

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵²¹ flattering

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵²² speech

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵²³ batteries = (1) battering rams, (2) artillery

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵²⁴ to make a military assault

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵²⁵ exhausted (from “watching” too long/much)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵²⁶ firm, steadfast

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵²⁷ addiction to women

[Return to text.](#)

7528 working laboriously

[Return to text.](#)

7529 instigation, incitement

[Return to text.](#)

7530 attack

[Return to text.](#)

7531 unspoken

[Return to text.](#)

7532 harsh, unyielding

[Return to text.](#)

7533 account

[Return to text.](#)

7534 mob, crowd

[Return to text.](#)

7535 lineage

[Return to text.](#)

7536 assemblage [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

7537 reproach

[Return to text.](#)

7538 opened

[Return to text.](#)

7539 mistrust, distrust

[Return to text.](#)

7540 ready, willing

[Return to text.](#)

7541 find room for, hold, shelter

[Return to text.](#)

7542 literally, the enclosed space where jousting took place; metaphorically, “enter lists” = to fight/challenge

[Return to text.](#)

7543 God

[Return to text.](#)

7544 shut His eyes

[Return to text.](#)

7545 bow

[Return to text.](#)

7546 defeat

[Return to text.](#)

7547 deprive, strip

[Return to text.](#)

7548 frustrate, confound

[Return to text.](#)

7549 reason

[Return to text.](#)

7550 that it be unsettled/uncertain

[Return to text.](#)

7551 connection, opportunity

[Return to text.](#)

7552 deal, negotiate

[Return to text.](#)

7553 this time

[Return to text.](#)

7554 leave, abstain, refrain

[Return to text.](#)

7555 forehead

[Return to text.](#)

7556 made public

[Return to text.](#)

7557 fictitious narratives

[Return to text.](#)

7558 Tantalus, Zeus' son, was thus punished for telling the gods' secrets to his friends

[Return to text.](#)

7559 [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

7560 ordering, arranging

[Return to text.](#)

7561 a fine/penalty

[Return to text.](#)

7562 free, release

[Return to text.](#)

7563 pleads, petitions

[Return to text.](#)

7564 instrumentality [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

7565 lofty, high-souled

[Return to text.](#)

7566 impulse

[Return to text.](#)

7567 sons of Anak: the race of giants

[Return to text.](#)

7568 celebrated, proclaimed

[Return to text.](#)

7569 confrontation

[Return to text.](#)

7570 false

[Return to text.](#)

7571 venereal trains = love's tricks/snares

[Return to text.](#)

7572 sign of favor

[Return to text.](#)

7573 i.e., red wine

[Return to text.](#)

7574 away from

[Return to text.](#)

7575 the sun's beams?

[Return to text.](#)

7576 soft?

[Return to text.](#)

7577 fluid

[Return to text.](#)

7578 ruined, destroyed

[Return to text.](#)

7579 something to stare at

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁸⁰ plentiful, flowing, excessive

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁸¹ healthy-looking, strong

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁸² break down, destroy

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁸³ garbage, refuse, offal

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁸⁴ to trouble, molest, injure

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁸⁵ unoccupied

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁸⁶ violence, shock

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁸⁷ see Judges 15:18–19

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁸⁸ point to, indicate, foretell

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁸⁹ entertain, deal with

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁹⁰ natural

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁹¹ state of mind, disposition

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁹² fantasy, whim, inclination

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁹³ pursue, perform

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁹⁴ receive

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁹⁵ that which produces pain/suffering

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁹⁶ limited

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁵⁹⁷ kidneys

[Return to text.](#)

7598 employ, perform

[Return to text.](#)

7599 appearances, symptoms

[Return to text.](#)

7600 corresponding

[Return to text.](#)

7601 sensation, feeling

[Return to text.](#)

7602 excite, stir up

[Return to text.](#)

7603 incurable

[Return to text.](#)

7604 continue to cause pain, fester

[Return to text.](#)

7605 [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

7606 necrosis, destruction

[Return to text.](#)

7607 conscious

[Return to text.](#)

7608 irritate

[Return to text.](#)

7609 abate

[Return to text.](#)

7610 [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

7611 particular, intimate

[Return to text.](#)

7612 temperate, abstinent

[Return to text.](#)

7613 exceedingly

[Return to text.](#)

7614 strength

[Return to text.](#)

7615 as if

[Return to text.](#)

7616 assignment

[Return to text.](#)

7617 defied, incited

[Return to text.](#)

7618 repeatedly [adverb]

[Return to text.](#)

7619 roll, catalogue

[Return to text.](#)

7620 written, placed, entered

[Return to text.](#)

7621 strength

[Return to text.](#)

7622 learned, carefully thought out, practiced

[Return to text.](#)

7623 belief, conviction

[Return to text.](#)

7624 searched for, obtained

[Return to text.](#)

7625 mild, soothing

[Return to text.](#)

7626 restore

[Return to text.](#)

7627 (1) changing, (2) unstable, fickle

[Return to text.](#)

7628 path

[Return to text.](#)

7629 crowd, mob

[Return to text.](#)

7630 lax, stray, random

[Return to text.](#)

7631 like

[Return to text.](#)

7632 formally, seriously

[Return to text.](#)

7633 chosen, picked

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶³⁴ protection, safeguard

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶³⁵ honored

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶³⁶ abandon

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶³⁷ [noun]

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶³⁸ unclean, polluted

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶³⁹ rough

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁴⁰ excessive

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁴¹ conclusion

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁴² in that way

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁴³ servant, officer

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁴⁴ acted

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁴⁵ biblical Tarshish: see 2 Chronicles 9:21 (“the ships of Tarshish bringing gold, and silver, ivory, and apes, and peacocks”)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁴⁶ Javan, son of Japhet, was the founder of Ionia: the islands of Greece

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁴⁷ Cadiz

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁴⁸ show, display, finery

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁴⁹ apparatus, rigging, implements of war

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁵⁰ beautiful, smartly made

[Return to text.](#)

7651 flags, banners

[Return to text.](#)

7652 strut, flutter

[Return to text.](#)

7653 forerunner

[Return to text.](#)

7654 retinue, suite: i.e., maids, female attendants

[Return to text.](#)

7655 unchanging, firmly resolved

[Return to text.](#)

7656 overloaded

[Return to text.](#)

7657 prepared

[Return to text.](#)

7658 preparation

[Return to text.](#)

7659 pulled after it, led to

[Return to text.](#)

7660 wicked, evil

[Return to text.](#)

7661 condition

[Return to text.](#)

7662 accustomed

[Return to text.](#)

7663 as if

[Return to text.](#)

7664 propose, urge

[Return to text.](#)

7665 chiefly, principally

[Return to text.](#)

7666 test

[Return to text.](#)

7667 pushed, driven

[Return to text.](#)

7668 skillful

[Return to text.](#)

7669 so that

[Return to text.](#)

7670 trained, habituated

[Return to text.](#)

7671 interior, inward

[Return to text.](#)

7672 exaggerations

[Return to text.](#)

7673 overloaded

[Return to text.](#)

7674 counterbalanced

[Return to text.](#)

7675 likely, natural

[Return to text.](#)

7676 pressing, persistent

[Return to text.](#)

7677 make public, proclaim

[Return to text.](#)

7678 because of

[Return to text.](#)

7679 discussion

[Return to text.](#)

7680 interpret as

[Return to text.](#)

7681 unsettled, variable, fickle

[Return to text.](#)

7682 (1) mind, (2) affection, love

[Return to text.](#)

7683 his first wife: see lines 219–27, above

[Return to text.](#)

7684 intended, planned

[Return to text.](#)

7685 confinement

[Return to text.](#)

7686 “that was sufficient/did it for me”

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁸⁷ this way

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁸⁸ wholly, entirely

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁸⁹ not risked

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁹⁰ not afraid

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁹¹ sharers

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁹² foolish

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁹³ harsh, grim, bitter

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁹⁴ forced, compelled

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁹⁵ frantic

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁹⁶ passion, appetite

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁹⁷ irreconcilable

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁹⁸ knowing that I had been

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁶⁹⁹ decides, ordains

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁰⁰ worked, prevailed

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁰¹ officers of the executive government

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁰² swore, solemnly entreated

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁰³ insisted, urged

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁰⁴ communal, general

[Return to text.](#)

7705 backward

[Return to text.](#)

7706 struggle

[Return to text.](#)

7707 well-founded

[Return to text.](#)

7708 common, widespread

[Return to text.](#)

7709 considerations

[Return to text.](#)

7710 prescribing, imposing

[Return to text.](#)

7711 offensively

[Return to text.](#)

7712 over, in preference to

[Return to text.](#)

7713 frivolity, lack of serious thought

[Return to text.](#)

7714 I who

[Return to text.](#)

7715 acknowledged, openly declared

[Return to text.](#)

7716 the Philistines'

[Return to text.](#)

7717 subject of a realm, citizen

[Return to text.](#)

7718 thou mine = thou under my protection

[Return to text.](#)

7719 free

[Return to text.](#)

7720 goes by the worse = gets the worst of it

[Return to text.](#)

7721 by

[Return to text.](#)

7722 outbursts/volleys of sound (words)

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷²³ spare, give, yield

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷²⁴ occasion, opportunity

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷²⁵ acutely

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷²⁶ lack

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷²⁷ accident

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷²⁸ out of their houses

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷²⁹ attention

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷³⁰ duty, function

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷³¹ up to, until

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷³² pleasant

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷³³ fits not = is not suitable

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷³⁴ separated, disunited, estranged

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷³⁵ tricks

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷³⁶ devices, contrivances

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷³⁷ nets and snares

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷³⁸ annulled

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷³⁹ “they are like the deaf adder that stoppeth her ear, which will not hearken to the voice of charmers” (Psalm 58:4–5)

[Return to text.](#)

7740 disdain

[Return to text.](#)

7741 betray

[Return to text.](#)

7742 leave

[Return to text.](#)

7743 despised

[Return to text.](#)

7744 finally, at last

[Return to text.](#)

7745 affront, exult

[Return to text.](#)

7746 displaying excessive affection/regard for one's wife

[Return to text.](#)

7747 complete, unqualified

[Return to text.](#)

7748 slavery

[Return to text.](#)

7749 explain, interpret

[Return to text.](#)

7750 judging, criticizing

[Return to text.](#)

7751 hold, reckon

[Return to text.](#)

7752 inexorable, irreconcilable

[Return to text.](#)

7753 pursuing, petitioning

[Return to text.](#)

7754 bid (directed) to go (to leave)

[Return to text.](#)

7755 affairs

[Return to text.](#)

7756 the Jews

[Return to text.](#)

7757 slandered

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁵⁸ recited, sung, narrated

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁵⁹ higher than

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁶⁰ ties, agreements

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁶¹ incense, perfume

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁶² Sisera, a Canaanite hostile to the Jews, fled their pursuit; Jael, wife of Sisera's host, drove a nail through his head as he lay sleeping: see Judges 4, 5

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁶³ criminal

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁶⁴ is discontented

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁶⁵ evident, obvious

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁶⁶ receive, hold

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁶⁷ find, light upon

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁶⁸ consult upon

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁶⁹ the "secret" referred to in line 384, above

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁷⁰ best man at a wedding: Samson's first wife was subsequently married to his former best man

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁷¹ neither would both wives have

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁷² destined, ruinous, deadly

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁷³ for that = because

[Return to text.](#)

7774 limited, very little

[Return to text.](#)

7775 formed, created, produced

[Return to text.](#)

7776 prefer

[Return to text.](#)

7777 basis, inner/essential part

[Return to text.](#)

7778 implanted

[Return to text.](#)

7779 serious, calm

[Return to text.](#)

7780 defending

[Return to text.](#)

7781 (1) sundering, separating, (2) clinging, adhering

[Return to text.](#)

7782 on, along

[Return to text.](#)

7783 disorderly, troubling

[Return to text.](#)

7784 out of the right path

[Return to text.](#)

7785 excessive fondness

[Return to text.](#)

7786 corrupted

[Return to text.](#)

7787 a woman

[Return to text.](#)

7788 joins/unites (with her virtue)

[Return to text.](#)

7789 arbitrarily/absolutely authoritative

[Return to text.](#)

7790 proper

[Return to text.](#)

7791 dread mixed with veneration

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁹² sever, quit

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁹³ smile she = whether she smiles

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁹⁴ frown, scowl

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁹⁵ been involved in

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁹⁶ hidden, secret, recondite

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁹⁷ “the giant”

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁹⁸ home

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁷⁹⁹ can guess/predict

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁰⁰ magnificent, splendid

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁰¹ dress

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁰² whether

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁰³ freight

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁰⁴ mischance, luck

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁰⁵ see Deuteronomy 3:1–11

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁰⁶ see Numbers 13:33

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁰⁷ a race of giants dwelling east of the River Jordan: see Deuteronomy 2:10–11

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁸⁰⁸ see Genesis 14:5

[Return to text.](#)

7809 unnatural, amazing, vast, monstrous

[Return to text.](#)

7810 tested

[Return to text.](#)

7811 in camp: on a campaign

[Return to text.](#)

7812 listed field: battlefield divided into lists (areas for jousting tournaments)

[Return to text.](#)

7813 rumor, common talk

[Return to text.](#)

7814 challenge to single combat

[Return to text.](#)

7815 shackles, fetters

[Return to text.](#)

7816 away from

[Return to text.](#)

7817 the circumcised, the Jews

[Return to text.](#)

7818 deadly

[Return to text.](#)

7819 in order to be

[Return to text.](#)

7820 destroyed by treachery

[Return to text.](#)

7821 room (in a house)

[Return to text.](#)

7822 close-banded = closely joined

[Return to text.](#)

7823 get the better of

[Return to text.](#)

7824 expedients, stratagems

[Return to text.](#)

7825 showy

[Return to text.](#)

7826 armor

[Return to text.](#)

7827 body armor: rings (or plates) of metal covered with canvas, linen, or leather

[Return to text.](#)

7828 upper-body armor

[Return to text.](#)

7829 vant-brace: armor for forearms

[Return to text.](#)

7830 leg armor

[Return to text.](#)

7831 glove of leather, covered with metal plates

[Return to text.](#)

7832 weaver's beam: wooden cylinder in a loom, on which, before weaving, the warp is wound (see 1 Samuel 7:7)

[Return to text.](#)

7833 i.e., seven laminations (layers) of leather

[Return to text.](#)

7834 rattling, noisy

[Return to text.](#)

7835 raging

[Return to text.](#)

7836 stiff-spined

[Return to text.](#)

7837 as long as

[Return to text.](#)

7838 invoke

[Return to text.](#)

7839 supported

[Return to text.](#)

7840 notices, cares about

[Return to text.](#)

7841 acknowledges

[Return to text.](#)

7842 Samson's

[Return to text.](#)

7843 labor

[Return to text.](#)

7844 coarse-growing, rank, rough

[Return to text.](#)

7845 conquered, overcome

[Return to text.](#)

7846 thine (your) people

[Return to text.](#)

7847 indulgent, beneficent

[Return to text.](#)

7848 challenge

[Return to text.](#)

7849 rebel

[Return to text.](#)

7850 tongue-valiant

[Return to text.](#)

7851 treaty

[Return to text.](#)

7852 well-known (and bad)

[Return to text.](#)

7853 see Judges 14:10–19

[Return to text.](#)

7854 booty, loot

[Return to text.](#)

7855 indicated, proved

[Return to text.](#)

7856 crafty intriguers

[Return to text.](#)

7857 forced, compelled

[Return to text.](#)

7858 so

[Return to text.](#)

7859 engaged in, employed

[Return to text.](#)

7860 secret enemies

[Return to text.](#)

7861 holding no official position

[Return to text.](#)

7862 treaty

[Return to text.](#)

7863 gave up = surrendered

[Return to text.](#)

7864 undertook, ventured, dared

[Return to text.](#)

7865 solitary

[Return to text.](#)

7866 familiar, well-known

[Return to text.](#)

7867 i.e., revealing the secret of his strength to Dalila, who then cut off his hair

[Return to text.](#)

7868 tricks, sophistries, evasions

[Return to text.](#)

7869 challenger

[Return to text.](#)

7870 challenges

[Return to text.](#)

7871 for the third time, three times in succession

[Return to text.](#)

7872 trivial, minor, unimportant

[Return to text.](#)

7873 undertaking, business

[Return to text.](#)

7874 little, slight, no great

[Return to text.](#)

7875 exercise

[Return to text.](#)

7876 examine, inspect, evaluate

[Return to text.](#)

7877 comment on, carp about

[Return to text.](#)

7878 Philistine god

[Return to text.](#)

7879 unaccustomed

[Return to text.](#)

7880 give in return, cause

[Return to text.](#)

7881 front line of battle formations

[Return to text.](#)

7882 offensive arrogance

[Return to text.](#)

7883 is appropriate for

[Return to text.](#)

7884 bewildered

[Return to text.](#)

7885 huge/massy frame

[Return to text.](#)

7886 large

[Return to text.](#)

7887 blow (of the hand)

[Return to text.](#)

7888 frame, body

[Return to text.](#)

7889 peril

[Return to text.](#)

7890 acts of bravado/defiance

[Return to text.](#)

7891 marching

[Return to text.](#)

7892 unconcerned, indifferent, uncaring

[Return to text.](#)

7893 passionate

[Return to text.](#)

7894 temper

[Return to text.](#)

7895 common talk

[Return to text.](#)

7896 publicly declare

[Return to text.](#)

7897 the greatest

[Return to text.](#)

7898 benefit, profit

[Return to text.](#)

7899 my death

[Return to text.](#)

7900 pleasing, proper

[Return to text.](#)

7901 overcome, vanquish

[Return to text.](#)

7902 violent, truculent

[Return to text.](#)

7903 bold

[Return to text.](#)

7904 zealous, assiduous

[Return to text.](#)

7905 frenzied, furious

[Return to text.](#)

7906 their deliverer

[Return to text.](#)

7907 military stores/equipment

[Return to text.](#)

7908 disdains

[Return to text.](#)

7909 speed

[Return to text.](#)

7910 flash

[Return to text.](#)

7911 performs, fulfills, discharges

[Return to text.](#)

7912 perplexed, confused, disordered

[Return to text.](#)

7913 panicked, overwhelmed, astonished

[Return to text.](#)

7914 act of worship, religious observance

[Return to text.](#)

7915 moral strength/courage

[Return to text.](#)

7916 everything

[Return to text.](#)

7917 endowed

[Return to text.](#)

7918 deprived, stripped

[Return to text.](#)

7919 in reserve, still to come

[Return to text.](#)

7920 making his way

[Return to text.](#)

7921 skillfully worked

[Return to text.](#)

7922 at full speed

[Return to text.](#)

7923 fluent

[Return to text.](#)

7924 distinguish, mark out

[Return to text.](#)

7925 pageants, parades, displays

[Return to text.](#)

7926 standard, degree

[Return to text.](#)

7927 evidence

[Return to text.](#)

7928 strengthened, cheered (often by alcohol)

[Return to text.](#)

7929 clowns

[Return to text.](#)

7930 actors

[Return to text.](#)

7931 mimes, burlesque actors

[Return to text.](#)

7932 furnish

[Return to text.](#)

7933 diversion

[Return to text.](#)

7934 afflict, strain, make miserable

[Return to text.](#)

7935 look to

[Return to text.](#)

7936 worker at low/servile/hard/distasteful tasks

[Return to text.](#)

7937 frolic, exercise

[Return to text.](#)

7938 enjoined, commanded

[Return to text.](#)

7939 formal decision

[Return to text.](#)

7940 pained

[Return to text.](#)

7941 defiance

[Return to text.](#)

7942 pay back

[Return to text.](#)

7943 God's favor

[Return to text.](#)

7944 one pledged to abstinence

[Return to text.](#)

7945 glorifying

[Return to text.](#)

7946 legal

[Return to text.](#)

7947 compels

[Return to text.](#)

7948 saying, maxim

[Return to text.](#)

7949 anger

[Return to text.](#)

7950 relax rules, grant dispensations/permission

[Return to text.](#)

7951 waking, stirring

[Return to text.](#)

7952 incline toward, prepare

[Return to text.](#)

7953 prognostication, prediction

[Return to text.](#)

7954 obtain, invent, provide for

[Return to text.](#)

7955 devices, usually but not necessarily mechanical

[Return to text.](#)

7956 assault, attack

[Return to text.](#)

7957 confine

[Return to text.](#)

7958 test

[Return to text.](#)

7959 technical skill

[Return to text.](#)

7960 fatal

[Return to text.](#)

7961 must

[Return to text.](#)

7962 drag

[Return to text.](#)

7963 take off, lay aside

[Return to text.](#)

7964 chains

[Return to text.](#)

7965 surrounded

[Return to text.](#)

7966 irritate

[Return to text.](#)

7967 violent

[Return to text.](#)

7968 arrogant, immoderate

[Return to text.](#)

7969 guarantee, promise

[Return to text.](#)

7970 round about, all around

[Return to text.](#)

7971 quantity, degree

[Return to text.](#)

7972 my inducement = what has led/brought me

[Return to text.](#)

7973 frolic, exercise

[Return to text.](#)

7974 desire

[Return to text.](#)

7975 share

[Return to text.](#)

7976 share, participate in

[Return to text.](#)

7977 tried to make use of

[Return to text.](#)

7978 disinclined, opposed

[Return to text.](#)

7979 liberal, magnanimous

[Return to text.](#)

7980 courteous

[Return to text.](#)

7981 of his sentence/punishment

[Return to text.](#)

7982 would be

[Return to text.](#)

7983 high-souled kindness

[Return to text.](#)

7984 pardon, forgive, release

[Return to text.](#)

7985 agreeable

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁸⁶ property, estate

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁸⁷ accomplish

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁸⁸ numbered down = counted out, paid down

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁸⁹ miserable

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁹⁰ firm, settled, determined

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁹¹ lacking, missing

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁹² accustomed

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁹³ lay up = save

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁹⁴ elevated, dignified

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁹⁵ [adjective]

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁹⁶ on garrison (protection, defense) duty

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁹⁷ body of troops

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁹⁸ laughable, absurd

[Return to text.](#)

⁷⁹⁹⁹ empty, unavailing

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁰⁰ action, accomplishing

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁰¹ formed

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁰² consistent/harmonious with

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁰³ of the same tribe, they are in a sense next of kin

[Return to text.](#)

8004 place, population

[Return to text.](#)

8005 disastrous, evil

[Return to text.](#)

8006 happening

[Return to text.](#)

8007 sorrow, grief

[Return to text.](#)

8008 assent

[Return to text.](#)

8009 wait, delay

[Return to text.](#)

8010 express (fast)

[Return to text.](#)

8011 abates, stops for a while

[Return to text.](#)

8012 flee

[Return to text.](#)

8013 dreadful, terrible

[Return to text.](#)

8014 event

[Return to text.](#)

8015 confused, disordered, deranged

[Return to text.](#)

8016 upshot, conclusion

[Return to text.](#)

8017 details, particulars

[Return to text.](#)

8018 excess, more than enough

[Return to text.](#)

8019 promptly, hastily

[Return to text.](#)

8020 quickly

[Return to text.](#)

8021 bursting out

[Return to text.](#)

8022 worthless, vain

[Return to text.](#)

8023 discord, quarrel

[Return to text.](#)

8024 finally, in the end

[Return to text.](#)

8025 narration

[Return to text.](#)

8026 business

[Return to text.](#)

8027 high street = main road

[Return to text.](#)

8028 gotten done

[Return to text.](#)

8029 all abroad = widely

[Return to text.](#)

8030 thought, decided

[Return to text.](#)

8031 hall, amphitheater

[Return to text.](#)

8032 quality, rank

[Return to text.](#)

8033 benches

[Return to text.](#)

8034 at a distance

[Return to text.](#)

8035 inconspicuous, unnoticed

[Return to text.](#)

8036 diversions

[Return to text.](#)

8037 distinctive clothing, uniform

[Return to text.](#)

8038 flutes

[Return to text.](#)

8039 tambourines

[Return to text.](#)

8040 soldiers in full armor

[Return to text.](#)

8041 split

[Return to text.](#)

8042 raising an outcry for

[Return to text.](#)

8043 fearful, terrible

[Return to text.](#)

8044 slave

[Return to text.](#)

8045 as opponent/adversary

[Return to text.](#)

8046 the guard

[Return to text.](#)

8047 bowed

[Return to text.](#)

8048 test

[Return to text.](#)

8049 sinews

[Return to text.](#)

8050 confined, shut in

[Return to text.](#)

8051 wrenching

[Return to text.](#)

8052 commingled

[Return to text.](#)

8053 common/ordinary people

[Return to text.](#)

8054 outside

[Return to text.](#)

8055 (1) coils, wrappings, (2) pen, enclosure

[Return to text.](#)

8056 happy

[Return to text.](#)

8057 proud, lofty

[Return to text.](#)

8058 swallowed

[Return to text.](#)

8059 preferring him (their idol)

[Return to text.](#)

8060 Shiloh

[Return to text.](#)

8061 derangement, madness

[Return to text.](#)

8062 i.e., the spirit of frenzy

[Return to text.](#)

8063 injured

[Return to text.](#)

8064 diversion

[Return to text.](#)

8065 unknowingly

[Return to text.](#)

8066 foolish, stupid

[Return to text.](#)

8067 onto

[Return to text.](#)

8068 corrupt

[Return to text.](#)

8069 powers

[Return to text.](#)

8070 serpent

[Return to text.](#)

8071 rural, farmhouse

[Return to text.](#)

8072 discharged

[Return to text.](#)

8073 rendered weak

[Return to text.](#)

8074 the phoenix

[Return to text.](#)

8075 wrapped

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁷⁶ sacrificial fire, complete destruction

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁷⁷ brought forth, generated

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁷⁸ at the time

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁷⁹ long-lived (for centuries)

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁸⁰ (1) redeemed, acquitted, (2) ended

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁸¹ original location of the Philistines

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁸² (1) boundaries, (2) lands

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁸³ lay hold = grasp

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁸⁴ lineage

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁸⁵ vessels of water

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁸⁶ dried blood

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁸⁷ condition, state

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁸⁸ rites (funereal)

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁸⁹ procession

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁹⁰ recorded, written

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁹¹ story

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁹² come, proceed

[Return to text.](#)

⁸⁰⁹³ inscrutable

[Return to text.](#)

8094 disposition

[Return to text.](#)

8095 organize [verb]

[Return to text.](#)

8096 absolute

[Return to text.](#)

8097 will, purpose, pleasure

[Return to text.](#)

8098 acquisition

[Return to text.](#)

8099 sent away

[Return to text.](#)